SCOTTISH HISTORY SOCIETY
COLLIGITE FRAGMENTA
NE PEREANT
ESTD 1886

11.12.08.

Library of the Theological Seminary,

PRINCETON, N. J.

Division DA750

Section SA21

v.32

PUBLICATIONS

OF THE

SCOTTISH HISTORY SOCIETY

VOLUME XXXII

THE SCOTS BRIGADE IN HOLLAND

VOL. I

JANUARY 1899

Scottish History Society
Publications. 32

PAPERS

ILLUSTRATING THE HISTORY OF

THE SCOTS BRIGADE

IN THE SERVICE OF THE UNITED NETHERLANDS

1572–1782

Extracted by permission from the Government Archives at The Hague, and edited by

JAMES FERGUSON

VOL. I

1572-1697

EDINBURGH

Printed at the University Press by T. and A. CONSTABLE

for the Scottish History Society

1899

CONTENTS

PAGE

General Introduction, ... ix

List of the Successive Colonels of the Scots Brigade, . . xxxiv

DIVISION I

The War of Independence, 1572-1609.

Introductory Narrative, ... 3

(1.) Preliminary Extracts from the Archives of Holland. 1573-1587, ... 36

(2.) States of War. 1579-1609, ... 43

(3.) Commissions granted by the Council at the East side of the Meuse, the Governor-General, the Earl of Leicester, and the Council of State. 1581-1595, . 76

(4.) Extracts relating to the claims of Colonel Bartholomew Balfour and the position of the Scottish Officers. 1586-1594, ... 96

(5.) Papers relating to the Claims and Embassies of Colonel Sir William Stewart of Houston, Sir William Murray, and Others, and Reports of the Dutch Embassies to England and Scotland in 1588, 1589, and 1594. 1588-1595, . . . 115

(6.) Extracts from Resolutions of the States-General, Letters of Recommendation, and Requests and Petitions sent to the Council of State. 1594-1609, 177

DIVISION II

The Time of the Twelve Years' Truce, 1609-1621.

PAGE

INTRODUCTORY NARRATIVE, ... 221

(1.) States of War. 1610-1618, ... 226

(2.) Extracts from Correspondence, Recommendations, Resolutions, Reports, and Requests. 1609-1611, . 234

(3.) Extracts relating to the Services and Claims of Sir William Balfour and Captain Henry Balfour. 1611-1615, ... 250

(4.) Extracts relating to the Services and Claims of Colonel Lord Buccleuch and his Son the first Earl of Buccleuch. 1611-1620, ... 256

(5.) Resolutions, Reports, Requests, Recommendations, etc. 1612-1620, ... 270

DIVISION III

The Thirty Years' War, 1621-1648.

INTRODUCTORY NARRATIVE, ... 307

(1.) States of War. 1621-1648, ... 318

(2.) Resolutions, Reports, Requests, Recommendations, etc. 1621-1629, ... 335

(3.) Resolutions relating to Captain William Douglas. 1626-1629, ... 358

(4.) Further Extracts relating to the Services and Claims of Sir William Balfour. 1627-1634, ... 369

(5.) Extracts relating to the Claims and Services of the Earl of Buccleuch. 1623-1635, ... 378

(6.) Papers relating to the Earl of Morton's Regiment, commanded by Lord Kinfauns. 1629-1630, . . 396

PAGE

(7.) Resolutions, Despatches, etc., relative to recruiting in England and Scotland. 1632-1638, . . . 406

(8.) Resolutions, Reports, Requests, Recommendations, etc. 1630-1645, ... 438

DIVISION IV

The Age of William of Orange and the British Revolution, 1649-1697.

Introductory Narrative, ... 465

(1.) States of War. 1649-1689, ... 489

(2.) Papers illustrating the Position of the Brigade during the War with the English Commonwealth. 1652-1653, ... 519

(3.) Papers illustrating the Position of the Brigade during the War with Great Britain. 1664-1668, . . 521

(4.) Papers relating to the Despatch of the Brigade to England on the occasion of the Duke of Monmouth's Rebellion. 1685, ... 536

(5.) Papers relating to the Recall of the Brigade by King James in 1688. 1688, ... 542

(6.) The Revolution of 1688, and the period in British Service to the Peace of Ryswick. 1689-1697, . 566

GENERAL INTRODUCTION

The papers embraced in this and the subsequent volumes consist of documents, transcribed in Holland, illustrating the services of the Scots regiments to the United Netherlands during the long period of more than two hundred years for which the Scots Brigade formed part of the permanent military establishment of the Dutch Republic, except for an interregnum of about ten years between the Revolution of 1688 and the Peace of Ryswick, when these troops were in British pay, and in the direct service of Great Britain under King William III. They consist of two classes: (*a*) Documents from the archives of the United Netherlands at the Hague, relating to part of the sixteenth, the seventeenth, and the eighteenth centuries; and (*b*) the Rotterdam Papers, a collection of regimental papers which were kept in the regiments, and afterwards preserved among the records of the Scots Church at Rotterdam, from which they were removed to the municipal archives at the Town Hall, where they still remain. In the first volume are embraced the documents from the Dutch Government archives relating to the period prior to the service of the Brigade in Great Britain after the Revolution of 1688: in the second it is proposed to include the further documents from the State archives for the period from 1697 to the final merging of the Brigade among the Dutch national troops, and the departure of the British officers: and in the third, the Rotterdam Papers, which form a separate series, will be printed.

The sources from which the papers contained in the first two volumes are drawn consist of several series of records preserved in the 'Rijks Archief' at the Hague. They include

extracts from the Resolutions of the States-General, from the secret resolutions of the same, from the 'Instruction Books,' the files of the incoming documents, and separate portfolios of requests, from the diplomatic correspondence, the secret diplomatic correspondence, and the reports of the ambassadors given to the States-General on their return to the Hague. They also include extracts from the resolutions of the Council of State, from the collection of letters sent to the Council of State, from the commission books of the Land Council at the east side of the Meuse, which preceded the Council of State (1581-84) and of the Council of State, and from the portfolios marked Military Affairs. The names of the officers are taken from the States of War, which are documents made up with the object of showing the military establishment for the time being, and the proportion in which its expenses fell to be defrayed by the separate provinces which constituted the United Netherlands.

It will be noted that the archives of the United Netherlands at the Hague do not furnish illustrations of the earlier history of the Scottish troops, the reason being that it was only after the Union of Utrecht, and the reconciliation of the Walloon Provinces with the King of Spain, that the permanent central government of the outstanding provinces took shape. Previous to this the Scottish troops were either in the service of Holland and Zealand alone, or in that of the States-General of the whole associated provinces of the Low Countries during the campaigns against Don John of Austria. As, however, special interest attaches to the early services of the Scots in the war of independence, there are prefixed to the papers which form the proper subject of the volume, a series of extracts from the Resolutions and Pay Lists of Holland which supply the blank. With this exception the mass of material has rendered it necessary to confine the reproduction to the archives of the United Netherlands. To search for and publish the whole documents relating to the Brigade in the Low Countries

would involve ransacking not only the independent archives of Holland, but those also of Zealand, Guelderland, and probably other provinces, and certainly those of the great garrison towns like Breda, Bois-le-Duc, and Maestricht. But a considerable amount of material has been obtained from the Records of Holland, which has been found valuable for purposes of illustration and explanation, while the annotation in regard to the *personnel* of the officers has been much assisted by extracts from the Oath Books and Commission Books.

The extent of time covered by the subject, and the clear-marked character of the periods into which the history divides itself, indicated the method which has been adopted in the arrangement of the materials. The papers have been collected in sections corresponding to distinct historical developments, and a short historical introduction, noting the services of the Scots regiments, as far as they can be traced, prefixed to each section. The documents have themselves been arranged, irrespective of the series of Dutch records from which they come, in chronological order, subject, however, to the collecting together, where this seemed advisable, of those relating to a particular subject or the claims of a particular individual.

THE SUCCESSION OF THE REGIMENTS

The Scots Brigade in Holland began by the enlistment of separate companies, each complete under its own captain. At what time these were embodied into a distinct regiment it is difficult to say, but they underwent the experience afterwards undergone by the Black Watch, and by every administrative battalion of rifle volunteers. *Colonel* Ormiston is referred to in 1573. In 1586 the Scots companies were divided into two regiments under Colonels Balfour and Patten, and by the time of the Spanish Armada, if not indeed before, the elder regiment seems to have had its complete regimental organisation. The second regiment was brought over complete by Lord Buccleuch in 1603. The third was formed on a readjustment in 1628, and

although from 1655 to 1660 the three were again converted into two, and between 1665 and 1672 the third regiment became completely Hollandised, and its place was taken, in 1673, by a newly raised one, the two older regiments had an unbroken existence from 1588, if not from 1572, and from 1603 respectively, while the third, dating from 1673, substantially represented the one formed in 1628.[1]

But while from 1628 onwards there were substantially three permanent regiments in service, on special occasions the number was increased. Thus in the campaign against Don John of Austria, Stuart's regiment also served, and from the allusion to other colonels, it would seem that there were others in the pay of other provinces. In 1629 the Earl of Morton's regiment, commanded by Lord Hay of Kinfauns, served at the siege of Bois-le-Duc. In 1697-98 three additional Scottish regiments, Ferguson's, Lord Strathnaver's, and Hamilton's, were temporarily employed, replacing the English Brigade, and again during the time of Marlborough three regiments (Lord Portmore's, Lord Strathnaver's, and Hamilton's) were employed, and reduced after the Peace of Utrecht. Again a fourth regiment, commanded by the Earl of Drumlanrig, was in service from 1747 to 1753.

CAVALRY, ETC.

The services of the Scots were not confined to the infantry arm. During the earlier period there seem to have been at least two companies (squadrons or troops) of Scottish cavalry and sometimes more in the service of the States. Captain Wishart received a commission as captain of horse-arquebusiers in March 1586, and served until 1615 or 1616, when his company appears to have been transferred to Sir William Balfour, who commanded it till 1628. William Edmond received a commission as captain of lancers in 1588, and led his squadron at least

[1] See List of Colonels, pp. xxxiv-xxxv.

until his succession to the command of the infantry regiment in 1699; and his son Thomas came from the infantry to a cavalry command in 1625. Patrick Bruce was commissioned as captain of a hundred lancers in 1593, and Thomas Erskine and Henry Bruce appear as cavalry captains in 1599. Captain Hamilton, a gallant Scottish cavalry captain, fell in the decisive charge at Nieuport in 1600. In 1604, after much deliberation and some remonstrance, the States accepted the offer of Archibald Erskine to raise a company of cuirassiers; and the troubles of a cavalry captain, the anxieties of the magistrates of Zwolle in connection with his troop, and the questions that arose on his death in 1608, will be found illustrated in the papers.[1] In 1617 and 1620 Robert Irving and William Balfour appear as cavalry captains, the former probably being succeeded by the younger Edmond, and at the close of the Thirty Years' War, William Hay and Sir Robert Hume occupy a similar position.

The papers also disclose the names of artillerymen and engineers, while of the infantry officers some, such as William Douglas and Henry Bruce, distinguished themselves as inventors and scientific soldiers. John Cunningham won reputation as an artillery officer at Haarlem, nor was he the only Scot who commanded the artillery. On 30th June 1608, James Bruce's request to succeed Peter Stuart was refused. Breda also requested that James Lawson, a Scot, should be appointed cannoneer of the city. Samuel Prop, engineer, appears in the States of War.

MILITARY ORGANISATION, PAY, ETC.

The numbers of the companies varied. Originally the ordinary strength appears to have been one hundred and fifty for each ordinary company, and two hundred for the colonel's (or life) company. Of the one hundred and fifty, one hundred

[1] Pp. 196, 204, 215, and 275.

were musketeers (or harquebusiers) and fifty pikemen. In 1598 the companies were temporarily reduced to one hundred and twenty heads.[1] How long the pikemen were continued is not certain, but General Mackay's Memoirs show that 'old pikemen' served in the Scottish campaign of 1689-90. (See documents showing establishment under William the Silent, p. 43, Commissions, pp. 82-93.) The sergeant-major and the provost-marshal appear in 1587, the 'minister' in 1597, and the lieutenant-colonel and quartermaster in 1599. The establishment of a company will be found detailed in the commissions printed on pp. 76-95. It will be noted that in some cases one or two pipers are mentioned, and in others none. In 1607 the colonels remonstrated against the English and Scots companies being reduced to seventy rank and file, 'pesle-mesle avec la reste de l'armée.'[2] In 1621 it was resolved to increase the foreign companies to one hundred and twenty.

The number of companies in a regiment seems to have varied, but in the reorganisation into three regiments in 1628 it was fixed at ten companies.[3] The difficulties that attended the supply of men for the regiments, and the competition of foreign states in the British recruiting field, are illustrated by a series of documents relating to the recruiting in England and Scotland between the years 1632 and 1638.[4]

The rates of pay for the different ranks in the time of William the Silent are shown by a document from the archives of the Council of State, prefixed to the States of War of 1579-1609.[5] The commissions of 1586 and subsequent years also show the agreed-on pay, and indicate a method of payment which led to many questions. Thus for Colonel Balfour's company of two hundred men, he was entitled to £2200 of forty Flemish grotten (or groats?) per pound per month, each month being calculated as consisting of thirty-two days, but the monthly

[1] Meteren, fol. 311. [2] P. 241. [3] MS. of Holland.

[4] Pp. 406-437. In 1641 there was presented to the Scottish Parliament a letter from the Prince of Orange in favour of officers sent over 'for re-enforcing their regiments, which are greatly decayed and diminished.'—Scots Acts.

[5] P. 43.

payment was only made each forty-eighth day, and the balance of one-third of the pay thus retained constituted the arrears which led to so many claims on the part of the Scottish officers, to the issue of letters of marque by the King of Scotland in the case of Colonel Stuart, and to the compromises for slump sums or annual pensions, in his, Sir William Murray's, Colonel Balfour's, and other cases. In 1588 the objections of the Scottish captains to this system, and their insistence on obtaining some security for the settlement of their arrears, led to the dismissal of some of them by the States-General, and to the others being required to sign a declaration expressly stating their acquiescence in the practice.[1] In 1596, however, the states of Holland improved the position somewhat by paying the troops for which they were responsible every forty-second, instead of every forty-eighth day.

When in 1678 the Brigade had been fully established on its reorganised basis, the capitulation of that year expressly stipulated, that the pay of the soldiers was to be increased 'd'un sous de plus par jour.' In 1774 the men had 'twopence a week more pay than the Dutch troops.'[2] At that time a captain's pay came to at most £140 sterling yearly, a colonel's was not above £350, and a lieutenant's about £40, while that of the Swiss companies was much higher.

The appointments of subaltern officers seem originally to have been made by the captains, who raised and brought over the companies. Later on they seem to have been made by the Prince of Orange, who also filled any vacancy in the higher ranks occurring in the field, commissions being subsequently issued by the States-General confirming his appointment.[3] In

---

[1] Pp. 97-105 See also Meteren, fol. 311.

[2] *Strictures on Military Discipline.*

[3] See terms of subalterns' commissions, printed in *Two Scottish Soldiers* (D. Wyllie and Sons, Aberdeen), and also the commissions printed in the appendix to Major Bernardi's *Memoirs*. The commissions thus granted by the prince were registered by the states of the province on whose 'repartition' the company was. In 1688 the captains received commissions on separate parchments from the Prince of Orange and from the States-General (*Two Scottish Soldiers*).

1608 the states of Holland resolved that the captains on their repartition should not be allowed to fill vacancies in their lieutenancies and ensigncies without the previous consent of the states or of the committee, who reserved the right of appointment, and this right appears also to have been exercised by other provincial states.

In 1588, after the departure of the Earl of Leicester, the States revised and reformed their whole military establishment, and instituted the system of allocating regiments or companies to be directly paid and supported by the different provinces, which is referred to when they are described as 'on the Repartition' of Holland, of Zealand, of Guelderland, or of any other province. 'Ils en firent,' says Meteren, 'les repartissions sur chasque province selon qu'elles estoyent quotisées et qu'elles contribuoyent ens charges de la guerre, selon aussi que chasque Province le pouvoit porter, ce que causa des bons et remarquables effets. Les gens de guerre,' he adds, 'pouvoyent asseurement sçavoir en quelle Province ils pouvoyent aller poursuiyvre leur payement, tellement que s'il y avoit quelque faute en cela on le pouvoit incontinent sçavoir et le conseil d'Etat y pouvoit remedier.' In addition to the ordinary contributions of the provinces, extraordinary contributions were levied on the more wealthy provinces, and the revenue derived from them was administered by the Council of State. At the end of each year the central authority settled accounts with the respective provinces, in regard both to the ordinary and to the extraordinary contributions.

One result of this somewhat complicated system was that the regiments were frequently divided between two provinces, and indeed in 1655 the states of Holland resolved, in view of the fact that of several regiments one portion stood on their repartition and another on that of other provinces, to bring all the forces on the Repartition of Holland together in complete 'Holland regiments'; but it seems doubtful whether this was ever fully carried out, although the two Scots regiments

in 1655, and the three in 1662, are described as Holland regiments. Certainly in the latter part of the century Mackay's regiment was on the Repartition of Guelderland, and in 1698 one regiment at least was on the repartition of more than one province.

UNIFORM, ARMS, AND EQUIPMENT

The appearance of the Scottish soldiers in the early years of their service can be gathered from occasional indications in the papers. In carrying the pike in the Low Countries, they found themselves armed with a weapon similar to that which in the hands of the Scottish spearmen had often repelled the charges of England's chivalry. The Spaniards regarded the pike as *la señora y reyna de los armas*, but at 'push of pike' they found their match in the sturdy English infantry, and the 'sure men' of the Scots Foot. The arquebuse gave place to the musket, and in 1689 one at least of the regiments was in whole or in part fusiliers.

In 1559, Prince Maurice prescribed a uniform equipment for the troops in the service of the States;[1] and the approved weapons seem to have been strictly insisted on.[2] Thus it is

[1] 'Parmy l'Infanterie ceux qui portoyent des Picques debvoyent avoir un Heaulme, un Gorgerin avec la Angrasse devant et derriere, et une Espée. La picque devoit estre longue de dix-huict pieds, et tout cela sur certaines peines establiés. Il falloit pareillement que la quatriesme partie de ceux qui portoyent des Picques fussent armés de garde bas jusques au coulde, et au bas de larges tassettes. Les Mousquetaires debvoyent avoir un Heaulme, une Espée, un Mousquet portant une balle de dix en la Livre, et une Fourchette. Les Harquebusiers debvoyent avoir un Heaulme, une Espée, une bonne Harquebuse d'un calibre qui debvoit porter une balle de vingt en la Livre, mais en tirant une balle de 24 en la Livre, et chacun avoit ses gages et sa solde a l'advenant. Nous avons trouvé bon de dire cecy, afin que nos successeurs puissent sçavoir de quelles armes on s'est servy en ce temps en Pays-Bas en ceste guerre' (Meteren, fol. 451, where the cavalry equipment is also described. See also fol. 416. The fourth part of the pikemen were to be picked and seasoned soldiers, of whom Mackay records that they stood by and were cut down with his brother, their colonel, at Killiecrankie, when the 'shot' men broke and fled).

[2] Resolutions of Holland.—'1605, Dec. 28th.—Circular Letter to all Colonels and Cap^ns of Foot. The States-Gen. requiring strengthening of the forces

noted that new levies were good men, but 'armed after the fashion of their country.'[1] It has been thought that the Highland dress was worn by some at least of the Scots who fought at Reminant in 1578, and it would seem that at various periods a considerable number of recruits were drawn from the Highlands. In 1576 an 'interpreter for the Scottish language' was appointed in connection with 'the affair and fault of certain Scotsmen,'[2] and in 1747, the orders had to be explained to some of the men of Lord Drumlanrig's regiment in their own language,[3] because they did not understand English.

Even in the days of Queen Elizabeth, 'the red casaques' of the English soldiers had attracted attention in the Low Countries. From at least the time of the reorganisation in 1674, the Scots Brigade was clothed in the national scarlet. In 1691, Mackay's regiment wore red, lined with red, and Ramsay's red, lined with white. Lauder's being then in Scotland, the colour of its facings has not been recorded, but from a picture of an officer serving in it in the middle of the eighteenth century, it would appear that then at least its facings were yellow. Curious evidence as to the uniform of the Brigade in 1690 is preserved by a Highland tradition. It is said that before Major Ferguson's expedition to the Western Isles in 1690, the people of Egg were warned of its coming by a man who

---

without delay, all companies to be brought to their full number of men, conform the state of war, and this on or before March 1st, certainly before March 10th, new style: and though this ought to be done at the expense of the Cap^ns^, the States-Gen., H. Ex^y^, and the Council of State have resolved that for this once for the cost of transportation shall be allowed: to the French, English and *Scots*, 8 guilders for each soldier . . . . . and that of this transportation-money 3/4^th^ shall be paid out to the said cap^ns^, viz.: half down and the balance on arrival of the recruits, who must be able-bodied men of arms, properly armed, conform to regulations, also with side-arms, and the musketeers with muskets; the muskets to be of full length and 4 feet long, shooting balls of 12 in the pound; no boys or elderly men shall pass muster, and the servants and boys of the Colonels shall no longer be counted as belonging to the Companies, for them they have to provide from their pay as Colonel.'

[1] P. 272. [2] P. 39.

[3] Order Book of Lord Drumlanrig's regiment.—*Kinmundy Papers.*

had the gift of 'second-sight,' and that those who were taken prisoners testified to the accuracy of his description, seeing the troops, 'some being clad with red coats, some with white coats and grenadier caps, some armed with sword and pike, and some with sword and musket.'[1] The author of *Strictures on Military Discipline*, comparing the position of the Scots with that of the Swiss, observed, 'They enjoy no privilege as British troops, except the trifling distinction of being dressed in red, taking the right of the army when encamped or on a march, and having twopence a week more pay for the private men than the Dutch troops have.'

'The question of rank,' says the author of the 'Historical Account,' 'which in military affairs is a serious matter, seems to have been decided between the English and Scots by the antiquity of the regiments, perhaps rather by the seniority of the colonels, but as royal troops, both always ranked before the troops of the United Provinces or those belonging to German princes, which right never was contested with regard to the Scots Brigade until the year 1783.' Dr. Porteous the chaplain, in his 'Short Account,' takes higher ground and says: 'Being royal troops, they claimed, they demanded, and would not be refused the post of honour and the precedence of all the troops in the service of the States. Even the English regiments yielded it to the seniority of the Scots Brigade. This station they occupied on every occasion for two hundred years, and in no instance did they appear unworthy of it. They never lost a stand of colours; even when whole battalions seemed to fall, the few that remained gloried in preserving these emblems of their country.'[2]

---

[1] Lord Archibald Campbell's *Records of Argyll.*

[2] Vol. ii. will contain illustrations of two occasions on which the matter of precedency was raised in questions with allied or temporarily serving troops, one being with Danish and one with electoral troops.

RELATIONS OF THE REGIMENTS TO THE DUTCH GOVERNMENT AND THE BRITISH MONARCH

There were always elements of difficulty and delicacy in an arrangement by which the subjects of one state served in a body as soldiers of another. The Netherlands looked to Austria, to France, and to England in succession for a ruler whom they might substitute for the King of Spain. Queen Elizabeth was too astute to accept the sovereignty; but through the substantial aid she afforded, the impignoration to her of the cautionary towns, and the appointment of her favourite as Governor-General and Captain-General, she as nearly as possible in fact annexed the Netherlands after the death of William the Silent. But the rule of the Earl of Leicester, ineffective in the field, and productive of heartburnings and jealousies in the council and the camp, rendered the States very suspicious of further foreign interference. Thus when, in 1592, King James asserted his position as equivalent to that of his haughty cousin of England—whose idiosyncrasies he is found palliating to the representatives of the States, as weaknesses of her sex—by granting a commission to Colonel Balfour to command all the Scots troops in the Dutch service, the States refused to recognise it, and affirmed their determination that none could serve in their lands on any other commission than that of the States-General.[1] In 1604 they again refused to receive Lord Buccleuch as 'general of his nation' as recommended by King James, although it was pressed as due to Scotland, and appropriate, there having been a general of the English troops, and the Scots being raised to an equal strength with the English.[2] In 1653 the complete conversion of the British troops into 'national Dutch' was canvassed, and in 1665 it was carried out; but after the reorganisation under William Henry of Orange, when the new English Brigade was formed, and the old Scots was increased and resumed its own national character, the combined British Brigade was definitely placed under the com-

[1] Pp. 106-113.

[2] Pp. 188-193.

mand of a British officer, whose rank, pay, and precedence were clearly fixed by the capitulation of January 1678, entered into by the Prince of Orange as Captain-General and the Earl of Ossory. It was expressly stipulated that the general should be a natural subject of the King of Great Britain, and that, should his Majesty call the regiments to his service at home, the States should allow them to be embarked at a port to be selected. When, however, the critical occasion arrived and the king sought to exercise the right of recall in 1688, the States refused to let the regiments go, or to recognise the binding character of the capitulation, founding with some special pleading on what appears to have been a failure on the part of the Dutch government to fully carry out its terms in reference to the increase of the pay. But the troops were recognised in Britain as a part of the British army, and the officers' commissions subsisted in spite of a change from the one establishment to the other. 'While,' says the 'Historical Account,' 'the British regiments were in the pay of Holland, the officers' commissions were in the name of the States, and it was not thought necessary they should have other commissions, even when they were upon the establishment of their own country, until vacancies happened, in which case the new commissions were in the king's name. Thus when Colonel Hugh Mackay came over to England on the recall of the Brigade in 1685, King James promoted him to the rank of major-general, not considering him the less as a colonel in his army that his former commission was in the name of the States. And when the same General Mackay, who held his regiment by a Dutch commission, was killed, the regiment was given a few days after to Colonel Æneas Mackay, whose commission[1] is English, and in the name of King William and Queen Mary.'

[1] This commission is said in a note to be now (1794) in possession of his grandson, Colonel Æneas Mackay, with several other commissions of officers of the Brigade in the same form and style.

Colonel Hugh Mackay, who had received a commission as Major-General

The officers of the Brigade had to take an oath on receiving their commissions as captains or in higher rank. In 1588, they were also required to sign a declaration stating their acquiescence in the system of pay. In 1653, during the war with the English Commonwealth, a new form of oath was devised, and again in 1664 in the war with Great Britain, when the regiments were temporarily converted into 'national Dutch,' the officers were required 'in addition to the usual military oath,' to take one to the effect that they were under no obligation to obey, and would not obey any commands except those of the States-General, and the States their pay-masters, or others indicated in the said oath of fealty, and that they acknowledged none but the States as their sovereign rulers. It is also noted that the new commissions then issued were in Dutch.

Upon the reorganisation of the Brigade under William Henry of Orange, and General Mackay, it was placed on a more distinctive footing as British troops than ever before. The British standing army was in its infancy, and the Scots and English Brigades in Holland formed a very large proportion of its strength. Their position in the Netherlands was analogous to that of Douglas's (the Earl of Dumbarton's) regiment, now the Royal Scots, and of others in the service of France. As Douglas's regiment became the 1st of the Line, and two of the English-Dutch regiments that were formed in 1674 and came over in 1688, the 5th and 6th, so the three Scottish regiments, had they remained in British pay after 1697, would have ranked very high in the British army list.

---

from King James in 1685, took oath on Feb. 9th, 1686 on a commission as Major-General of Infantry before the President of T. H. M. For the terms of the commission at this period, see *Two Scottish Soldiers* (App.), where three of General Ferguson's are printed. While he commanded the Cameronians, to which he was transferred from the Scots-Dutch in 1692, in virtue of a commission in English form granted by William and Mary in 1693, he received one in Dutch in 1698 as captain of a company, that regiment being temporarily in Dutch pay in 1697-99.

It may indeed be questioned whether the old regiment dating from the days of William the Silent might not have claimed precedence even over the Royal Scots, on the ground that while that regiment's descent is clear and continuous from the union of a Scots regiment in France with the survivors of Gustavus Adolphus's Scots troops, its earlier traditions, though august and ancient, are more or less mythical. Certainly the old and the second regiments would have been at least on an equal footing with the 3rd Buffs—formerly the old English Holland regiment—while the third was entitled to rank along with the fifth and sixth.

In the eighteenth century the position of those serving in the Brigade as entitled to all the privileges of British subjects was emphatically recognised. 'Even the children,' says Dr. Porteous the chaplain, in his 'Short Account,' 'born in the Brigade were British subjects without naturalisation or any other legal act. The men always swore the same oaths with other British soldiers, and by an Act of Parliament, 27 Geo. II. the officers were obliged as members of the British state serving under the Crown to take the same oaths with officers serving in the British dominions. The beating orders issued by the War Office were in the same terms with those for other regiments: "*To serve His Majesty King George in the regiment of foot commanded by* —— ——" accordingly all the men were enlisted to serve His Majesty, not the States. Their colours, their uniform, even the sash and the gorget were those of their country, and the word of command was always given in the language of Scotland.'

Such was their footing, until in 1782 the States-General resolved, 'That after the first of January 1783, these regiments shall be put on the same footing in every respect with the national troops of Holland, and the officers are required to take an oath of allegiance to the states of Holland *and renounce their allegiance to Great Britain for ever* on or before the above-mentioned day. Their colours, which are now British, are to

be taken from them and replaced with Dutch ones, and they are to wear the uniform of the Provinces ; the word of command is to be given in Dutch ; the officers are to wear orange sashes, and carry the same sort of spontoons as the officers of other Dutch regiments.' By the oath prescribed for the officers they were bound to affirm that during their service they would 'not acknowledge any one out of these Provinces as their sovereign.'

This time there was no recovery for the Brigade. Fifty-five of the officers refused to take the oath, resigned their commissions in March 1783, and came over to Britain. They were placed on half-pay without delay, and in 1793 His Majesty King George III. 'being pleased to revive the Scots Brigade,' a regiment of three battalions, 'the Scotch Brigade' of the British service, subsequently numbered as the old 94th regiment of the line, was raised, to which they were appointed.

RECURRENCE OF SAME NAMES AMONG THE OFFICERS

In one respect the Scots Brigade was peculiarly Scottish. Probably no military body ever existed in which members of the same families were so constantly employed for generations. 'The officers,' says Dr. Porteous, 'entered into the service very early ; they were trained up under their fathers and grandfathers who had grown old in the service ; they expected a slow, certain, and unpurchased promotion, but almost always in the same corps, and before they attained to command they were qualified for it. Though they served a foreign state, yet not in a distant country, they were still under the eye of their own, and considered themselves as the depositaries of her military fame. Hence their remarkable attachment to one another, and to the country whose name they bore and from whence they came ; hence that high degree of ambition for supporting the renown of Scotland and the glory of the Scots Brigade.' The discipline of the Brigade, enforced with far less severity than was customary in the German and Swiss regiments in the same service, was acknowledged, and the

author of the 'Historical Account' observes that 'the rule observed in the Brigade of giving commissions only to persons of those families whom the more numerous class of the people in Scotland have from time immemorial respected as their superiors, made it easy to maintain authority without such severity.' The Scots officers also took care to let the foreigners under whom they served know that the methods of enforcing discipline in vogue in Continental armies would not do with Scottish soldiery,[1] for 'Scotsmen would not easily be brought to bear German punishments.' 'Gentlemen of the families,' says the writer of the *Strictures*, 'of Balfour Lord Burley, Scott Earl of Buccleuch, Preston of Seton, Halkett of Pitfirran, and many of different families of the name of Stewart, Hay, Sinclair, Douglas, Graham, Hamilton, etc., were among the first who went over,' and a glance through the States of War shows how repeatedly many of these names recurred in the Brigade throughout its service. These lists indicate that the counties on the shores of the Forth, and in particular Fife, had the closest connection with the brigade, but Perthshire, Forfar, Aberdeenshire, and the Highlands, more especially after General Mackay entered it, and other parts of Scotland had their representatives under its colours. No name was more honourably or more intimately associated with its fortunes than that of Balfour, which in the first century of its existence supplied at least seventeen or eighteen captains, among whom were Sir Henry Balfour and Barthold Balfour, both colonels of the old regiment in the sixteenth century, Sir David Balfour and Sir Philip Balfour (son of Colonel Barthold), both colonels of the second and third regiments during part of the Thirty Years' War, and another Barthold Balfour, who fell in command of the second regiment at Killiecrankie. In the later years four Mackays, Major-General Hugh of Scourie, killed at Steinkirk; Brigadier-General Æneas, his nephew, who died, as the result of wounds received at Namur; Colonel Donald killed at

[1] *Strictures on Military Discipline.*

Fontenoy,[1] son of the Brigadier; and Colonel Hugh Mackay, held at different times the command of the same regiment. The second regiment had three colonels of the name of Halkett, and the third one. Two Hendersons, brothers, in succession commanded the second regiment, and another, a generation later, the third. The names of Erskine, Graham, and Murray occur twice, and those of Douglas, Stewart, Scott, Colyear, and Cunningham thrice among the commanding officers. To enumerate the other members of these and other families, such as Coutts, Livingstone, Sandilands, L'Amy, Lauder, who held commissions, would be endless, but at one time the colonel, lieutenant-colonel, and major of one regiment were all Kirkpatricks, being probably a father and his two sons. Twice the colonel and lieutenant-colonel of one regiment were both brothers of the name of Mackay. That this family character was not confined to the old regiments, but extended to those temporarily in service in 1697-98, is shown by the fact that when Colonel Ferguson's regiment left the Dutch service in 1699, there were five of his name among its officers,[2] while another was, in 1694, promoted a captain in Lauder's.

THE BRIGADE AS A MILITARY SCHOOL

Scarcely less remarkable was the Brigade as a training ground for officers who gained reputation in after-life in the service of Great Britain and of foreign countries. Some of the Dutch officers served in the civil wars; several of Marlborough's major-generals and brigadiers came over as captains and field-officers in 1688, and it is remarkable what a proportion of those serving under the colours in that fateful year afterwards attained to high commands.[3] But the phenomenon was marked in later years. Writing in 1774 the author of the *Strictures* enumerates Colonel Cunningham of Entricken,

[1] Or Tournay.

[2] List of Officers in 'Abstract of the Money due to Colonel Ferguson's Regiment on the Establishment from the 14th April 1699 to the 1st December 1700.'—*Kinmundy Papers*.

[3] Pp. 479-481.

'whose behaviour at Minorca and on other occasions did him much honour,' General James Murray, brother of Lord Elibank, Governor of Quebec after the death of Wolfe, and known as 'Old Minorca,' from his gallant defence of that island, Sir William Stirling of Ardoch, General Graham of the Venetian service, Colonel (then Lieutenant-General) Graham, secretary to the Queen of Great Britain, Lieutenant-Colonel Francis M'Lean, Lieutenant-General in the Portuguese service, Simon Fraser, Lieutenant-Colonel of the 24th regiment and Quarter-Master-General in Ireland, who fell as a General at Saratoga, Thomas Stirling, Lieutenant-Colonel of the 42nd, the Honourable Alexander Leslie, Lieutenant-Colonel of the 64th, James Bruce, David Hepburn, the Honourable John Maitland, brother of the Earl of Lauderdale, James Stewart, son-in-law of the Earl of Marchmont and Lieutenant-Colonel of the 90th, Major Brown of the 70th, James Dundas of Dundas, Sir Henry Seton, Bart., and Colonel Sir Robert Murray Keith. To these should be added Robert Murray of Melgum, afterwards General Count Murray[1] in the Imperial service.

INCIDENTAL FEATURES OF THE DOCUMENTS

The general character of the service, and the conditions under which the Scots lived, fought, and were paid in the Low Countries can only be gathered from a perusal of the papers themselves. It has been shrewdly said that the Dutch were more careful to record matters of money than feats of arms, and to the actual services in the field the official papers contain only few direct references. But here and there such references occur, and the date of a widow's petition, or a marked change in the *personnel* of a State of War, dots the i's and strokes the t's of a dry allusion in an old folio to some forgotten skirmish or the carnage of a great battle. The pension lists, and the applications of widows (among whom those of Sir Robert

[1] Count Murray was either Robert Murray or his son. The son was certainly in the Austrian service. Whether the father was is uncertain.

Henderson and Lieutenant-Colonel Allan Coutts were most importunate), also illustrate how the Scottish officers intermarried with the people among whom they lived, and occasionally with Italian and Spanish gentlewomen and noble ladies of Brabant and Flanders. Specially interesting also are the letters of the Scottish sovereigns,—particularly that of King James on the battle of Nieuport in 1600,[1]—and King Charles's solicitude for the ransom of the Scottish prisoners taken at Calloo in 1638.[2] The appointment by the States-General of two of their number to attend the funeral of Lieutenant-Colonel Henderson, 'with the short mantle,' in the same year, indicates exceptional gallantry on the part of one of a family which had already shed its blood and given its life for the cause of which Holland was the guardian.[3] Now and then a flash of humour enlivens the story of eager spirits and niggard paymasters, as when 'to this suppliant the answer must for the present be "Patience."' A pleasant feature is the occasional recommendations by some of the provincial municipal authorities of the Scottish captains stationed in their cities, and although there are occasional complaints of the conduct of the troops,—owing generally to the pay being in arrears,—and a warning by an English commander, in 1615, as to the feeling getting up between a Scots and a Dutch company, two of whose soldiers had had a fracas,[4] the general relations of the Scots with the Dutch population seem to have been consistently friendly and cordial. Indeed, during the Twelve Years' Truce one of the complaints of the inspecting officers was the extent to which the soldiers left their garrisons to work for the country-people; while another subject of animadversion was the occasional enlistment of Dutchmen to fill vacancies in the companies. A frequent offence was the passing off of outsiders to bring up the numbers of the company, in order to pass review at full strength on a sudden inspection, and one unfortunate, Robert

[1] P. 180. [2] P. 449. [3] P. 449. [4] P. 279.

Stuart, was sentenced to be hung in 1602 for too successfully thus passing off six sailors in the ranks of an infantry company.[1] The absence of officers in Scotland for too long a time is also commented on, and the result of John de Witt's report on Captain Gordon's company in 1609 was its being disbanded.[2] A melancholy account is given of the state of Erskine's cavalry squadron in 1606,[3] and among the papers is an apology for insubordination by some of Wishart's troopers tendered to a court-martial.[4] The proceedings of the court-martial on Sergeant Geddie, charged with murder in 1619, are also interesting;[5] and the spirit of the old Scottish family feud is illustrated by David Ramsay's energetic protest, in 1607, against the slayer of his relative 'coming in his sight,'[6] as well as by Lord Buccleuch's claim for justice in respect of the slaughter of Captain Hamilton.[7] The experiences of the surgeon are indicated by Dr. Balcanqual's petition in 1618;[8] and the regard of the troops for their chaplain is shown by the Reverend Andrew Hunter's long service, his receipt of an increase of pay in 1604, his Latin memorials of 1611 and 1618, and the interesting and honourable letter of the colonels in 1630, in which they ask a further allowance for his widow, and state their readiness 'to provide for our own minister.'[9] The divorce of Captain Scott,[10] the marriage of Captain Lindsay with the released lady,[11] and the lawsuit of Captain Waddell with the Countess of Megen[12] and the pupil-heir of the great house of Croy, recalling as it does the happier experiences of Quentin Durward, all find their way into the national archives.

The claims presented by Scottish officers on account of the arrears of their pay, or of that due to relatives whom they represented, and the deliberations of the States upon such claims constitute a very large amount of the documents preserved. The main question appears to have been to what extent the United Netherlands, as constituted by the Union of Utrecht, were responsible for services rendered to the whole of the

[1] P. 185. [2] P. 236. [3] P. 204. [4] P. 272. [5] P. 299. [6] P. 208.
[7] P. 199. [8] P. 292. [9] P. 438. [10] P. 291. [11] P. 351. [12] P. 357.

Netherlands before the separation of the reconciled provinces. This is the substantial question raised in Colonel Stuart's claims, and in those of Sir William Balfour as the heir of his father, Sir Henry. It required the issue of letters of marque, authorising Colonel Stuart to recoup himself at the expense of Dutch shipping, to bring the States-General to a serious consideration of his claims for services, which, whether technically rendered to the 'nobles, Prelates, and burgesses sitting at Antwerp,' to 'the nearer union,' or to the States of Holland and Zealand, were equally instrumental in securing the liberty and independence of the Dutch Republic. His claims and those of Sir William Balfour alike ended in a compromise; and the system of liquidating liabilities and securing fidelity by a large balance of deferred pay was fruitful of similar claims and compromises with others, such as the heir of Lord Buccleuch, who compounded his father's arrears, as to the liability for which there had been no question, for a pension, the promise of a regiment, and at least temporary freedom from the maintenance of a near though unacknowledged relative, who ultimately took her place among the Scott clan as 'Holland's Jean.' Among the papers relating to Colonel Stuart's claims will be found two most interesting reports by Dutch ambassadors of their visits to England and Scotland, containing passages delightfully illustrative of the character of 'Queen Bess,' of the court and conduct of King James, and of the general relations between the Protestant powers.[1] One of the most valuable documents in a historical sense, and most interesting to the student of character and manners, is the graphic narrative of the Dutch ambassadors who attended the baptism of King James's son, Prince Henry.[2]

AUTHORITIES FOR HISTORY OF THE BRIGADE

A word should be added as to the special authorities for the History of the Brigade, which are frequently referred to in

[1] Pp. 121 and 132. [2] P. 154.

this and the narratives prefixed to each period into which the papers have been assorted. In 1774 there was published 'Strictures on Military Discipline, in a series of letters, with a Military Discourse: in which is interspersed some account of the Scotch Brigade in the Dutch Service, by an Officer.' This officer is said to have been Colonel James Cunningham;[1] and the book advocates reforms in the equipment and pay of the Brigade, the restoration of complete recruiting in Scotland, and, indeed, the enlargement of the force and the association with its infantry battalions of a proportion of the other arms.

In 1794, this was followed by 'An Historical Account of the British Regiments employed since the Reign of Queen Elizabeth and King James I. in the Formation and Defence of the Dutch Republic, particularly of the Scotch Brigade.' It was written just at the time when King George 'had been pleased to order that these regiments should be embodied anew,' and gives, in about a hundred pages, a concise and fairly complete account of the services of the Brigade. The information contained in the Dutch papers, however, corrects it in some points, and the writer has fallen into the common mistake of not observing that King William handed over six and not merely three Scots regiments to the Dutch Government in 1697, and of confounding the three old regiments with the three temporarily in the Dutch service at that time and during the war of the Spanish Succession. The error is a natural one, for when the Brigade returned at the Peace of Ryswick Walter Philip Colyear commanded one of the old regiments, while his brother Sir David Colyear, raised to the peerage as Lord Portmore, was colonel of one of the additional ones, taken into service in 1701.

In 1795 there was also published 'An Exhortation to the Officers and Men of the First Battalion of the Scotch Brigade. Delivered at the Castle of Edinburgh on the 7th of June 1795,

[1] See Steven's *History of the Scotch Church at Rotterdam*, p. 261.

a few days before the battalion received their colours, to which is added a Short Account of the Brigade by William Porteous, D.D., chaplain to the battalion.' The author of the 'Historical Account' had compared the position of the officers of the Brigade in Holland after the war with Great Britain began to that of officers who had, in the execution of their duty and without any fault or error on their part, fallen into the hands of the enemy, and had contended that 'whatever the means may have been by which a British regiment has fallen into the enemy's hands, it cannot be in the power of that enemy to extinguish or abolish it.' In addressing the newly-formed battalion, the chaplain used words which indicate that its embodiment was regarded in Great Britain not as the creation of a new but as the resurrection of an old regiment. 'Our ears,' said Dr. Porteous, 'have been accustomed to hear of the fame of the Scotch Brigade; of the moderation, sobriety, and honesty, as well as of the courage and patience of this corps; you have not to erect a new fabric, but to build on the reputation of your predecessors, and I am confident you will not disgrace them.' His 'Short Account,' while covering much the same ground as the 'Historical Account,' contains some additional particulars. There is also a short notice of the Brigade appended to Grose's *Military Antiquities*, and a note upon it in Steven's *History of the Scotch Church at Rotterdam.*

Among the papers of Mrs. Stopford Sackville, at Drayton House, Nottinghamshire, is a copy of a document (after 1772), 'Facts relative to the Scotch Brigade in the Service of Holland.'

There are of course allusions to the services of the Scots in the many English, Dutch, French, Spanish, and Italian histories of the War of Independence. For the time of Prince Maurice, the best authority is Orler's *Lauriers de Nassau*, and for that of his brother the *Memoires de Frederick Henry Prince d'Orange.* For the campaigns of William Henry, the *Memoirs* of *Bernardi* and of *Carleton*, the *Life of William III.*, and the *History of Holland* supply a limited amount of information.

The Editor has to record his sense of the assistance he has received from Dr. Mendels and M. d'Engelbronner who transcribed the documents at the Hague, and whose intelligent researches have greatly aided the work of annotation, and particularly from Colonel de Bas, the keeper of the Archives of the Royal House of Orange at the Hague, who supplied valuable information as to the succession of the regiments in the eighteenth century; and also to express his grateful thanks to many friends and correspondents in Scotland and elsewhere, too numerous to enumerate, who, by supplying particulars as to their ancestors who served in the Brigade, or otherwise, have enabled him in many cases to identify the individuals whose names appear in the States of War. Similar acknowledgments are due to Mr. J. Rudolff Hugo, and to the Rev. J. Ballingall, Rhynd, Perthshire, who have undertaken the labours of carrying out and revising the translation of the Dutch documents.

It had originally been intended to print the Dutch text as well as the English translation of the Dutch documents, but the volume of material was so great that on careful consideration the Council were satisfied that they must confine themselves to printing the English translation of Dutch originals, and the French text alone of documents in French. For the convenience of scholars the complete transcripts of the original Dutch here translated, and of other documents, including the lists from the Commission and Oath Books, which the Editor has used in the preparation and annotation of these volumes, will be deposited and preserved in the Advocates' Library, Edinburgh. J. F.

KINMUNDY, ABERDEENSHIRE,
11th Novr. 1898.

LISTS OF THE COLONELS OF THE REGIMENTS OF THE SCOTS BRIGADE

A—The Three Old Regiments of the Scots Brigade

I. 1572-1688.[1]

1573	[Ormiston][2]		
1574-1580	Sir Henry Balfour[3]		
1585	[Cunningham][4]		
1586	Barthold Balfour[5]		
1594	Alexander Murray		
1599	Sir William Edmond		
1603		Lord Buccleuch	
1606	Sir William Brog		
1612		Sir Robert Henderson	
1622		Sir Francis Henderson	
1628		Sir John Halkett	
1629		Sir David Balfour	Earl of Buccleuch
1633			Sir James Livingstone, Lord Almond
1636	Sir James Sandilands		
1639	James Erskine	Sir Archibald Douglas	
,,		John Kirkpatrick	
1640			Sir Philip Balfour
1646			Sir William Drummond
1655	Walter Scott		
1660			John Henderson
1662			Louis Erskine
1673	Henry Graham		
1675			Sir Alex. Colyear
1677	Hugh Mackay		
1680			James Douglas
1684		Barthold Balfour	
1685			John Wauchope
1688			George Ramsay

II. 1688-1697.

1689		George Lauder	
1692	Æneas Mackay		Sir Charles Graham

[1] The dates from 1594 are those of the commissions, and the lines below the names of Sir William Drummond (Earl of Roxburgh) and Louis Erskine denote a break in the continuity of the regiments, which otherwise is complete. In 1655 the three regiments were formed into two. In 1675 Colyear was appointed first colonel of a new regiment raised during the preceding year to replace Louis Erskine's, which under de Fariaux had become wholly Dutch.

[2] Appears as colonel in the Pay Lists of Holland.

[3] Appears in Pay Lists of Holland.

[4] Referred to in the Resolutions of Holland.

[5] The date 1586 is that of the first mention as colonel.

III. 1698-1782.[1]

1698	Robert Murray	George Lauder	Walter Philip Colyear.
1716		A. Halkett	
1719	John Cunninghame.		
1730	James Cunninghame		
1733	Lamy		
1741		Villegas	
1742	D. Mackay		
1745	Marjoribanks		
1746		Charles Wm. Stewart	
1747			C. Halkett.
1754		J. Stuart	
1758			J. Gordon.
1773	H. Mackay		
1775	J. Houston		
1776			R. Dundas.

B—Regiments temporarily in the Service of the States

157— 1586		William Stuart Aristotle Patton.	
1629		Earl of Morton's (commanded by Lord Hay of Kinfauns)	
1697-99	James Ferguson	John, Lord Strathnaver	George Hamilton.
1701	Sir David Colyear, Lord Portmore[2]	John, Lord Strathnaver[3]	George Hamilton.
1704	John Dalrymple[4]	John, Marquis of Lorn[5]	
1706	William Borthwick	John, Marquis of Tullibardine	
,,	John Hepburn		
1709	James Douglas		
1710		James Wood	
171—			
1717			
1747-1753	Henry Douglas, Earl of Drumlanrig		

[1] From a list kindly supplied by Colonel F. de Bas, and compared with one made by M. d'Engelbronner.

The three regiments were subsequently (1786-89) respectively numbered 22, 23, and 24. Twenty-two being the regiment commanded by Sir Henry Balfour, Sir William Brog, and General Mackay; 23 Lord Buccleuch's, and 24 the Earl of Buccleuch's and Lord Almond's.

[2] Lord Portmore 1699, Earl of Portmore 1703. Cf. p. 507, n. 4.

[3] Afterwards 19th Earl of Sutherland.

[4] Afterwards Earl of Stair.

[5] Afterwards Duke of Argyll.

DIVISION I

THE WAR OF INDEPENDENCE

1572-1609

INTRODUCTORY

In the year 1572 the landing of the Sea Gueux at the Brill proved that the Netherlands, though lying crushed and bleeding under the iron heel of the Duke of Alva, had been stunned but not conquered. It was followed by a widespread uprising, and by the influx of English aid. At what precise moment the first Scottish company disembarked upon Dutch soil it is impossible to say, but it would seem that the Scots were not behind their southern neighbours. Count Louis of Nassau was beleaguered in Mons by the veterans of Alva, Kirkcaldy of Grange was holding Edinburgh for Queen Mary. 'Le Prince d'Orange,' says Le Petit, 'pour venir seconder le Comte Ludovic son frère estant dans Mons en Hainaut ne manquoit de devoir à lever gens de toutes partes tant en Allemagne, Angleterre qu' Ecosse et France.' On the 21st of June, the Scottish Privy Council, on account of the famine in Edinburgh, 'detenit aganis our Sovereign Lord,' and in order that 'the idle men and soldiers be not drawn to any desperate necessity, but may have commodity to serve and live either within the realm, or to pass to the wars in Flanders or other foreign countries,' issued a proclamation ordering all such to quit the city by the evening of the 23rd. Before the first year of the long struggle that was to be crowned with success closed, Scots were fighting side by side with the Dutch burghers on the ramparts of beleaguered Haarlem.

After the first assault on 20th December, the Prince of Orange threw reliefs with supplies into the town, including some Scots.[1] Again, in the end of January 1573, the Scots, under the command of Balfour,[2] were among the force of

[1] Mendoza and Meteren.

[2] On 16th September 1572, the Regent Mar, in the name of King James, had granted a passport and recommendation to 'Henricus Balfourius noster civis, nobili loco natus, et qui in statu rerum domi turbulento semper meliores partes est secutus' . . . 'cum cohortem fere ducentorum militum ad clarissimum Auraniæ principem ducturus esset.'—*P. C. Reg.*

four hundred who cut their way over the frozen lake, with eighty sledges laden with munitions and food.[1] It was to John Cuningham, a Scotsman, that the besieged committed the command of the battery which they directed upon the great cavalier which the Spaniards had constructed, and so well did he work his guns that in half a day he 'put this cavalier to the ground, for which,' says the historian,[2] 'he acquired great honour in the town.' The Spaniards endeavoured to restore it and brought up artillery, but Cuningham each time destroyed it completely. On the 15th of April, Captain Balfour with his Scots made a 'camisade' or night attack on the Spanish lines at Russemburch, forced them, defeated a large body of troops, and carried back four standards. Towards the close of the siege, when the Spaniards were debating whether to renew an assault that had been repulsed, a Scottish sergeant threw himself from the wall and staved off the attack, by assuring Don Frederick, on pain of his life, that the town could not hold out long on account of the want of food. Scots also took part in the last unsuccessful attempt at relief. When finally the day of capitulation came, the fate of the Scots was at first uncertain. The French were beyond the pale of mercy, for they had already been spared at Mons; the Germans were recognised as 'neutrals, and free to serve any prince they pleased,' and, according to Le Petit, it had been declared to the Scots that mercy had been given them. Meteren says that they and the English held themselves assured 'des belles promesses.' But the Spaniards, once in possession, held that the Scots and English as well as the French, were subjects of princes with whom the king was in peace and confederation, and, therefore, they were 'tous justiciez, les gentilhommes par l'espée, les autres par la corde, ou plongez en mer.'[3] More than eighteen captains and ensigns with all the rest of the Walloon, Scottish, and English troops, to the number of 500, thus perished. 'En la ville,' says Meteren, 'furent tués plus de 2000 hommes, outre quelque peu qui eschapperent secretement et le Capitaine Ecossois Balfour, qui eschappa sous promesse d'attenter quelque chose contre la vie et personne du Prince d'Orange comme il le

[1] Mendoza. [2] Le Petit. [3] Renom de France.

declarat luymeme au dit Prince, disant aussi, que puis qu'il en avoit un remords de conscience, qu'il estimoit n'etre pas tenu en une si mauvaise promesse.' For the remorse he carried with him for a feigned compliance with a dishonourable proposal, Balfour was to atone by a record of distinguished service, and eight years later by an honourable death fighting against great odds.[1]

The Spaniards entered Haarlem on the 14th of June. On the 6th, the Scottish Privy Council had granted a licence to 'Captain Thomas Robesoun' to levy 300 men for the 'defence of Goddis trew religioun aganis the persecutiouris thairof' in the Low Countries. He was obliged to give a bond that he would comply with certain conditions, his cautioner being John Monteith of Kerse. The conditions were: 'That he shall not lift or transport any captains, members of bands, or soldiers presently in the king's service without special licence from the Regent; that he cause the like number of culverins, hagbuts, and other hand-guns, morions, and corselets to be brought again into the realm before 1st February next to come; that he shall cause his men live upon their own charges without oppression till they are transported, and that he and they shall not be partakers with any Scottish subjects against

[1] There is some authority for the view that the vehicle of this proposal was James Hamilton of Bothwellhaugh, the assassin of the Regent Murray, who is said to have scouted a suggestion made to him to deal similarly with Admiral Coligny, but whose name appears in connection with Spanish intrigues for the removal of the Prince of Orange. De Lettenhove says:—'Lorsque James Hamilton s'etait rendu a Amsterdam près du Duc d'Albe c'etait pour conférer avec Alboinos et lui indiquer un capitaine ecossais, fort courageux et propre a cette entreprise, qui se trouvait avec les Gueux à Harlem et qui se rendit a Delft, peut étre pour prendre part aux troubles et pour y profiter du desordre. A defaut de ce Capitaine Hamilton eut recours et sans plus de succès à un autre Ecossais qui ramait à Nantes sur les galères de Charles IX.' And on January 14th, 1577, Wilson wrote to Lord Burghley (St. Pap. For.), 'Hamilton who escaped out of prison from Brussels, and with whom Don John promised Mr. Harvey that he would not deal, has received money of him to persuade the Scots to revolt by whom he was delivered out of prison, and for whom, especially for Balfour, the Colonel, and some others, he got pardon of the Duke of Alva at the taking of Haarlem, with condition that the said Balfour should then kill the Prince of Orange by one means or another.' On 1st May, Wilson reported to Walsingham that Colonel Balfour had promised to 'work the feat' of getting a Scot into England with letters from Don John to the Scottish Queen.

others; that they shall not in passing to the Low Countries invade or pillage any subjects or friends and confederates of this realm; that they shall noways serve with any Papists against the Protestant professors of the Evangel of Jesus Christ; that he shall not muster his men within sixteen miles of Stirling Castle under a penalty of 5000 merks; and that he should be answerable for the full redress of all plundered goods.'

On 16th July similar licences were granted to Captain John Adamson, whose cautioner was John Adamson, burgess, Edinburgh, and to Captain Diones Pentland, whose cautioner was James Sandelandis of Calder, who were also taken bound not to enrol on the south side of the Forth. The English agents in reporting Captain Robeson's licence to their own Government drew attention[1] to it as an illustration of 'how the nation is given to stray abroad, some into Sweden and some into Flanders, whither more will to the Prince of Orange if they had comfort given them.'

The fall of Edinburgh and the Peace of Perth had now deprived many Scotsmen, 'both King's men' and 'Queen's men,' of employment at home, and the Spaniards were to find that the methods exemplified at Haarlem were the most injudicious that could be employed against the Scots. They would have been wiser if they had followed, as the Dutch were to do, the policy of the Emperor Charles v., 'qui ne vouloit pas qu'on irritast les Escossois, sachant bien que les Escossois estoient pauvres mais gens vaillants qui n'avoient pas beaucoup a perdre.'[2]

The arrival of 500 Scots was indeed reported to England along with the news of the fall of Haarlem, and an anonymous letter from Stirling, of July 26th, depicts the state of feeling, which soon bore fruit in substantial succours. 'The calamity of that good country (Flanders) is not only lamented by them, but goodwill borne to relieve part of their burden. Some number of men of war are already repaired thither, others upon the arriving of his' (the Prince of Orange's) 'servant, Captain Ormiston, are in preparation, but the third sort are desirous to hazard themselves if they were certain of his pleasure and what assured entreatment they might look for. They

[1] State Papers, Foreign.

[2] Meteren, fol. 310.

are not such as have been hired by wages in former wars, but rather some in the rank of nobility who have done valiant service in the cause of religion and repressing civil sedition here.[1] For that purpose is Captain Montgomery, a gentleman of approved truth and good credit, directed towards him to understand the condition of their affairs, and to return speedily with resolution of his pleasure.'

On 2nd August, Robert Montgomery wrote to Killigrew thanking him for his good offices, stating that he was 'directed by the Regent to go towards Flanders to offer the Prince of Orange 1000 horsemen and 2000 footmen to assist him in the general cause under Lord Cathcart, and praying that he would inform the Queen, so that if they should arrive upon any of her coasts in their voyage they might find her favour and goodwill.'

On September 12th, Thomas Morgan wrote to Lord Burghley from Zealand that '400 Scots had arrived at Zierickzee who made an attempt on Barrow, but the Dutch, who should have backed them, having fled away, they had to retire.' Next day, he reported that 'Montgomery of Scotland is come to the Prince to make offer of service with 2000 light horse. Two hundred Scots have arrived in Zealand, who say that seven ensigns more are coming.'[2] The arrival was reported to the enemy at Bruges, with the information that their leader was 'ung homme de belle taille avec la barbe quelque peu rossette.'[3] This was probably Ormiston, who appears in the pay-lists of

[1] Although from the tone of some authors, it would seem that Englishmen serving in foreign armies were always 'volunteers' and Scotsmen 'mercenaries,' the position of both was the same, except in regard to the English troops sent over by Queen Elizabeth under the treaty by which she obtained possession of the cautionary towns. Otherwise both nations sent spontaneous help, troops of both received Dutch pay, and in later years both the English and Scots Brigades were on the same footing. If King James was unsuccessful in asserting, in 1594, his claim to give his own commission to the Commander-in-Chief of the Scots, this was no doubt owing to the experience the States retained of the Earl of Leicester. The parallelism in other respects is curiously complete. As Stanley and Rowland Yorke betrayed Deventer and the Zutphen Sconces, and the English garrisons delivered Gertruydenberg and Alost, so Patton and Sempill betrayed Gelder and Lier, and Boyd joined with the Prince of Chimay in handing over Bruges to the Prince of Parma.

[2] State Papers, Foreign.

[3] For the earliest recorded names of Scottish officers, see the Pay-lists of Holland, *infra*.

Report from Flushing, made at Bruges, 8th September 1573:—'Le rappor-

Holland as colonel in 1573-74. In 1575 he had been succeeded by Colonel Henry Balfour, among the chequered incidents of whose career appears to have been the slaughter of his predecessor in a duel.[1] A month later, Bingham reported from Delft, '1600 Scots have arrived in Holland and Zealand, and the Lord of Caker is bruited to be coming with 1000 horsemen. The league between the Prince and the Scots grows very great, and there is motion of marriage for the young King of Scotland to the Prince's daughter.'

The principal event of 1574 was the famous siege and relief of Leyden. From Delft the Prince of Orange was organising succour, and the Grand Commander Requesens massed large forces in the vicinity of Bommel, Gorcum, and Louwensteyn to threaten the Dutch from that side. But all the places were well provided, and seven companies of Scots under Colonel Balfour were so stationed round them to hinder his enterprises by piercing the dykes, and otherwise, that he accomplished nothing.[2] Nor although Spanish intrigue was busy did it succeed in doing more than disclosing its designs to the Scottish colonel,[3] while other Scots companies

teur dit en premier lieu que Samedi dernier, entre huict et neuf heures du matin il est arrivé de Flessinghe. La où il ait veu descendre quelque quantité d'Escochois mesme que depuis vendredi et samedy il en seroit bien arrivé, que à la Vere que Flessinghes bien huict cens dont les cinq cens serroyent arrivés a Flessinghes, ne sachant le nom de leur chef forsque s'estoit ung homme de belle taille, avec la barbe quelque peu rossette.

'Demandé s'il n'avoit entendu de la part que l'on vouloit envoyer les dits Escochois dit avoir entendu de Betremieu de Dunder qu'ilz attendoyent le conte de la Marche avec xv^{e} hommes de Ghetye à autre, et quand il seroit arrivé qu'ilz volloyent aller assigier Termuden.'—Appendix to Renom de France.

Some of the Scots were sent in October to share in the investment of Middelburgh.—Le Petit.

[1] 1574. Lettres de remission du Capitaine Henry Balfour de ce qu'il avait tué Andreas Ormeston couronnel des Capitains Escossois au camp près de la Bommel le jour d'Avril 1574. (Registre des dépèches, etc., du Prince Guillaume d'Orange.)

[2] The Grand Commander, says Mendoza, sent Hierges into the Isle of Bommel with infantry and light cavalry, 'tant pour gaster le pays en couppant les grains, comme pour executer quelque menée qui se tramoit la ville de Bommel où estoient en garnison quelques compagnies d'Escossois avec le Colonel Balfour l'un de ceux qui leur avoit commandé dans Harlem mais cette entreprise ne sortit aucun effect.'

[3] Sp. Papers, September 1574.—'They talked amongst themselves, however, about Captain Ellis [Villiers?] going to Bomel and there arranging with Colonel Balfour for him and his men when they leave there to go to Rotterdam

shared in Boisot's gallant efforts to succour the beleaguered city.[1]

In 1575 the Scottish companies suffered severely. In the end of July Hierges with a strong force appeared before Oudewater, which was held by a small garrison of two French, one German, and one Scottish company, whose captain was absent.[2] Le Petit says that the Scots abandoned an outlying fort at the sluice of the canal, without setting fire to it or withdrawing the stores, as they should have done; but under the French captain, St. Marie, a gallant defence of the town was made, and the Scottish lieutenant was killed on the ramparts along with Captain St. Marie at the final assault. The garrison had consisted of 400 men according to the Dutchman Meteren, and of 2800 according to the Spaniard Mendoza, but both agree that the Spaniards swept into the town, in Mendoza's words, 'avec tel massacre et effusion de sang que dédans ne resterent que vingt hommes en vie.' From Oudewater Hierges passed on to Schoonhoven, which was held by 700 French, Dutch, and Scottish soldiers. The defences were weak and the townsmen unpatriotic, and the garrison, who awaited for a whole day the assault at a breach 300 paces in length, accepted an honourable composition. These losses were followed by the famous attack in which the Spaniards forced their way on foot through the sea to the isle of Schouwen in spite of the fire of the Zealand ships and the troops drawn up to oppose them on

---

or Delft or wherever Orange might be, in order to capture or kill him. They would also surrender one of these towns, and on their doing these two things the colonel and the captains were to have 20,000 crowns cash, and as much more for the men. In case they fail to capture Orange, but surrender the town, they are only to receive 15,000 crowns amongst the whole of them; whilst if, on the contrary, they capture him and do not surrender the town, they are to have 30,000 between them. In addition to this, the colonel asks for a pension of 1000 crowns, and the captains 300 with an employment. They would sign an agreement as desired. Guaras says Ellis [Villiers] is a man of experience, and has served Orange for a long time, but he and the rest of the English are dissatisfied with him.'

[1] Le Petit. Meteren, in relating the unsuccessful attempt of the Zealanders upon Antwerp, who had bribed thirty Spanish soldiers in the castle, says, 'Ceux du Chasteau et de la Ville estoient déja en armes car ils furent advertirent par un capitaine Escossois qui y estoit prisonnier.'

[2] Le Petit. Meteren says the Scots company was 'sous Dincwerc.'

land. A panic seized the French, Scots, and English troops, the gallant Admiral Boisot was killed, and the fugitives took refuge in a fort half a league from Ost-Duiveland, and in Vianen.[1] Vianen soon fell, and the Spaniards pressed on to Bomené, which was held by 600 old soldiers, Scots, French, and English under Monsieur de Ly. After it had been bombarded, a proposal was made for a capitulation, but some Spanish soldiers were overheard saying that 'these hens and rebels should be thrown from the walls into the sea as the only consideration they deserved,' and it was resolved to resist to the last. The first assault was repulsed, and when at last the Spaniards gained the place they put all who were in it to the edge of the sword. The strength of the Scottish companies had now been reduced by a half.[2]

There was, however, no difficulty in filling the reduced ranks. On 2nd January 1576, the Spanish authorities were informed that 'some Scottish soldiers had landed at Brill, no doubt a portion of the 2000 men which Colonel Balfour went to raise in Scotland,' and the siege of Zierickzee, beleaguered till midsummer, was prolonged by the Scottish and English reinforcements received.[3] The Archives of the House of Orange record that so late as the 1st of June its relief was attempted by '2000 hommes d'Ecosse'; but the letter sent to the town had been intercepted, the besieged did not co-operate, 'et venans nos gens au lieu destiné ils furent tellement repoussez par les ennemis que nous y perdions beaucoup de gens.'[4]

---

[1] Mendoza.

[2] Renom de France in his *Histoire des Troubles des Pays Bas*, in giving an account of the forces of the Dutch in this year, 1575, says, 'En Zuyt Hollande quatre regiments dont estoient coronels le S^r^ de Noyelle-Montigney 2° Hellin, 3. La Garde, et 4° Walford,* le premier de Wallons le second d'Allemand, le 3^me^ de François et le 4^e^ d'Escossois, que avoient este pleins au commencement et depuis reduite fil à fil à la Moitié. Car autant qu'il pouvoit tenoit les enseignes pleines.'

[3] Renom de France.

[4] The Spaniards were still flattering themselves with the coming success of their attempted intrigues with the foreigh troops.

St. Pap., Guaras to Zayas.—'26th April 1576.—With regard to the matter of the plan of Flushing I have had several conferences with Col. Chester, the English-

* Henri Balfour Ecossais au service des Etats de Hollande, puis des Etats Generaux. Il commandait douze enseignes d'Escossais. The English companies were in garrison.

The closing months of 1576 introduce a new phase of the struggle in the Netherlands. The Spanish Fury had desolated Antwerp early in November, and a few days later the Pacification of Ghent was signed, by which the provinces of Utrecht, Brabant, Flanders, Artois, Hainault, and the others forming the southern Netherlands, associated themselves with Holland and Zealand. The Scots troops had hitherto been in the service of Holland alone, or of Holland and Zealand combined. They were now to pass for a brief period into that of the comprehensive States-General of the whole Netherlands.

On 3rd December the Prince of Orange wrote to the Regent Morton referring to 'la bonne assistance d'hommes qu'en ces guerres nous avons par notre bon adveu et congié receu d'Ecosse,' announcing the treaty with the other provinces, and continuing thus: 'Comme les Etatz d'Hollande après cette paix faicte avoyent délibéré de licentier le Couronnel Balfour avecq les compagnies Ecossaises qu'il a par deça, j'ai estimé qu'il seroit meilleur veu qu'il s'estoit toujours si vaillament porté, de l'employer es aultres provinces du pays en si bonne occasion qui se presente contre les espagnols qui a faict que je l'ay bien voulu recommander aux Estatz Generaulx du Pays Bas assemblez à Bruxelles, lesquels aussy par ma recommendation ont traicté avecq luy, l'ayantz accepté en leur service.'[1]

The English State Papers mention that on the 21st the States

---

man, and have agreed that he and Colonel Daburd [Balfour?] of the Scotch forces will deliver the town of Flushing to his Majesty for 300,000 crowns and all the plunder that the soldiers can take.

'. . . They expect to carry the business through by pretending that all our forces are to go by land or sea to capture the isle of Walcheren or Zealand, which will certainly cause Orange to send a great force of English and Scotch to defend the island, who will be on our side. . . . Orange, moreover, will send Col. Daburd [Balfour] to defend Flushing, and as both of the Colonels think that Orange must shortly come to ruin, and they are looking out for themselves, they may be depended upon to carry through this service. . . . They are awaiting a reply and are much grieved at the death of the Grand Commander.'

It required a very different condition of affairs, with the Low Country employers of the Scots and English troops divided against themselves, and passing one by one back to the side of King Philip, and the hand of the astute and attractive Parma, before such intrigues produced even the limited effects afterwards obtained in a few exceptional cases.

[1] Archives of the House of Orange, Nassau.—Groen van Prinsterer.

sent sixteen ensigns of Scots under Colonel Balfour to lie in garrison about Limburg, and the printed resolutions of the States-General record the accepting in service of Colonel Henry Balfour the Scot with twelve Scots ensigns (*i.e.* companies) in good order and well armed.[1]

On 9th November it was also resolved to accept and treat with a Scots cavalry captain for 200 horse, if ready to pass muster, and on the 16th to pay to the Scots captains, Wm. Moncriff and Ogilby, £40 Artois. On 9th December the Scots at Sas-van-Gand were ordered to the country of Oultre-Meuse, and successive guides (the Sieur de Franchenbergh, John Laureys, and Thomas Wales) appointed to conduct them there. On 20th December Balfour's regiment was ordered 'to be provided at once with 1500 lbs. of powder and 90 lbs. of "mesches."'

The Scottish regiment had not long to wait for their first encounter. 'Au mois de Janvier,' says Meteren, 'les Escossois qui estoient au service des Etats souz le Colonel Balfour rencontrerent au pais de liege par de la Meuse pres de Jupil une troupe d'Espaignols en une vallée qu'ils chargèrent et les different tellement que plusieurs y demeurerent et le reste se sauva en la ville de Maestricht.' The contemporary account sent to Lord Burghley stated: 'The Scots who lie at Bingen, near Maestricht, were by the Spaniards disquieted with 1500 horsemen, but the Scots being 1600, unto whom Commendator Burnenstein joined unawares his 300 reiters, repulsed the Spaniards to the loss of 100 horsemen and of the Scots not past 12 men slain and very few hurt.' There was also a very mysterious capture by Colonel Balfour's Scots of certain deputies of Amsterdam (which still adhered to the King of Spain), who were probably on their way to or from Don John of Austria, which resulted in caution being given by a burgher of Amsterdam for 'what the Scots or their Colonel claim.' In March the States refused to withdraw the Scots at Don John's demand. On 18th April they resolved[2] to give letters of recommendation to the Colonel of the Scots to his king 'du bon debvoir et offices qu'il a faict avec ses gens au

[1] Resolutions of the States-General, 1576-1577.—De Jonge. Resolutions dated 5th and 6th November.

[2] Manuscripts of States-General.

Pays Bas,' and on 11th May he was paid £6000 Artois 'pour la recompense à luy promise'; and it was resolved to write 'au Roy et Regent du Royaulme d'Escoisse que le Colonel et ses compagnies ont bien et lealement servy à sa Majesté Royale Catholique et Estats des Pays Bas.' On 7th June 'le Col. Balfour Escossois ayant prins congé des Estatz a esté remerchié de son service.'

But Colonel Balfour was soon recalled. The reconciliation of February 1577 was clouded over, Don John of Austria had seized Namur, and both sides were preparing for another struggle. On 10th October 1577 'Captain Henry Balfour, late colonel of the Scottis companis that served in Holland under the obedience of the Prince of Orange, and last under the commandment of the Estates in the Low Countries,' presented to the Scottish Privy Council a supplication stating that after his return from service in the Low Countries, the Estates being constrained to renew the war for their just defence had sent him a commission[1] as colonel over certain companies of footmen of this nation under his regiment to be levied and transported there, and asking licence to 'strike drummis, display handsenzies, and lift and collect the said companies.' The council, understanding 'that the said Estaitts hes presentlie ado for the commonweill and support of their countre, and that our countremen quhilkis of befoir hantit in the wearis are desyrous to be in service,' remembering also 'how honorablie and thankfullie they were dealt with be the saidis Estaitis at their last being in Brabant and departing thairfra,' granted the desired licence to Captain Hary Balfour and the Captains chosen by him, each to levy 'twa hundrieth wageit men of weir' under conditions similar to those of 1573. Captain Preston's Bond (printed in full in the *P. C. Register*) contains the additional condition 'that he shall not take away in his company any landit men prohibit to depart by Act of Parliament without special licence.'

Though the commission refers to ten companies, fourteen

[1] The commission, dated Brussels, 8th September 1577, and designing Balfour as 'chief et Colonell de dix enseignes de pretons [?pietons] Escossoyes,' is engrossed in the *P. C. Register*. See vol. ii. p. 641.

were actually levied and the dates of the licences and names of the captains were as follows:—

Sept.	23.	Alexander Campbell (his cautioners being Kennedy of Bargany and Bellenden of Stonehouse).
Oct	16.	Capt. John Ramsay.
„	16.	„ Edward Preston (cautioner David Preston of that Ilk).
„	17.	„ Henry Balfour (his cautioner being Michael Balfour of Montquhanney, afterwards the first Lord Balfour of Burleigh).
„	17.	„ David Murray (of Hillfield).[1]
„	18.	„ Robert Masterton.
„	22.	„ Henry Acheson (cautioner, A. Acheson of Gosford).
„	22.	„ Patrick Acheson.
„	22.	„ Adam Montgomery of Braidstane.
„	23.	„ James Oliphant (cautioner, Laurence Lord Oliphant).
„	23.	„ David Spalding.
„	26.	„ Andrew Traill.
Nov.	19.	„ Thomas Newton.
Dec.	4.	„ Patrick Ogilvie.

In the following year Captain John Strachan received a similar licence on 21st August.

The companies must have been rapidly raised, for on 24th November the Flemish general, La Motte, sent Colonel Balfour's secretary to receive the money intended for the masters of the ships which had brought the Scots into the country.[2] They were at once sent to the front. In December some Walloon soldiers reported that ten or eleven companies of Scots who should join the other troops at Ruremonde were still 'à l'entour de St. Tron.' On 9th January it was reported from Namur that troops could not be spared, because the camp of the Estates was so near and reinforced by four thousand Scots.

In the army now assembled, says Lettenhove, 'elle mette en ligne treize enseignes d'Ecossais.' They were practically for the

[1] See *P. C. Register*, 25th February 1580-81, vol. iii. p. 359.

[2] Gachard's *Actes des Etats Generaux*.

first time in the open to face in a pitched battle the most highly trained, best equipped, and fiercest soldiery of the century. For the Scottish regiment the fight was not to be that of a fair field, but their experience of the stroke of Parma, and of the Spanish and Italian cavalry, was to be gained

> 'In the lost battle
> Borne down by the flying.'

On the last day of January 1578 the army of the Estates was falling back towards Gemblours, closely followed by the Spanish array. The thirteen Scottish companies, with some English, formed part of the 'battle' or main body, and the force was marching with large advanced and rear guards. Its course led it along the margin of a boggy and almost impassable ravine, and the Prince of Parma observed that the order of the troops composing the rearguard was loosened and invited attack. Without a moment's hesitation, he sent word to Don John to support him, and led the Spanish cavalry across the ravine, breathed his horses, and swept down on the cavalry of the Estates. They and the infantry of the rearguard were broken and driven in upon the main body, and the flying cavalry not only burst through the formation, but actually rode down the men of the main body. They were followed by the furious Spanish charge, and in a few minutes the army of the Estates was routed. 'En vain,' says Lettenhove, 'les Escossois opposent-ils une courageuse resistance.' The magnitude of their loss indicates that they fought longest, but the only result was that they suffered more than those who were fighting for their own hearths and homes. 'La plus grand tuerie,' says Meteren, 'se fit des Escossois et autres qui y estoient de la parti des Etats de Hollande et Zealande. Le Sieur de Montigny et Balfour, colonel des Escossois se comportans valeureusement eschapperent en combattant.' 'The greatest loss,' says Le Petit, 'fell upon Balfour's Scottish regiment, who was there wounded and saved himself, as did the Lord of Montigny, after having first done well all that was possible.' The number of the prisoners was small compared to that of the dead, but their fate was no better, for though Cabrera asserts that Don John liberated the Scottish prisoners, Tassis, one of his leading officers and

councillors who was present, expressly states that 'the greater part of the captives who were Scots were afterwards thrown off the bridge at Namur into the river,' while the other historians declare that the prisoners were all hung. The probability is that all were killed, and that, as at Haarlem, the Spaniards showed their impartiality between the two alternatives of suffocation. The result of the victory was that several important places fell into the hands of Don John. 'Louvain,' says Strada, 'not awaiting a summons, turning out the Scottish garrison, rendered themselves to Gonzaga of their own accord. To Mechlin and Vilvoorde,[1] newly garrisoned by the States, Gonzaga came too late.'

The States set themselves to raise fresh forces. 'Depuis furent aussi decretez nouveaux regimens d'Angleterre et d'Ecosse.'[2] 'Colonel Stuart,' says Le Petit, 'with his regiment of Scots returning from Dantzig, where he had been in the service of the city and commonwealth against the King of Poland, was accepted by the States-General.'[3] The Belgian merchants in London in March found the means to enable one hundred and twenty Scots 'come back from the defeat' to return to the Low Countries, and embarked them for Antwerp; while in April King James wrote saying that he attended to the desire expressed through the conservator George Hacquet, 'touching the countermandment of some companies which had made themselves ready to go to the service of the States.'[4] Exactly six months after the rout of Gemblours, the hostile armies again confronted each other near the little village of Rymenant in the vicinity of Mechlin. The army of the States

[1] Lettenhove mentions Colonel Stuart as at Vilvoorde, and Colonel Preston at Bruges.

[2] Renom de France.

[3] It would seem that he had previously served in Holland. On 10th October 1575 he had written to Lord Burghley stating that, 'having received commission from the Prince to serve with 300 soldiers of his own nation, being in doubt to find arms ready, or of reasonable prices in Scotland, he desires that he may have licence to transport out of England 100 corselets with pikes, and 200 calivers with their furniture.' On 4th June 1577, a request of William Stuart, Scottish gentleman, captain of two companies, and lieutenant-colonel of the Scottish regiment, had been presented to the States-General.—Res. of States-General. As to him and his claims, see, *infra*, p. 115.

[4] *Actes des Etats Generaux.*

occupied a strong position, and in advance was posted Colonel John Norris with the English and Scottish troops, which had only arrived an hour before after a long march which they had made to join the army. The battle began very gently at first between the Spanish and English, then cavalry on both sides joined in, and 'Robert Stuart[1] bringing up with him some Scots foot, Don John sent in Ferdinando de Toledo with the rest of those active foot under his command,' and followed with his main body. Parma led the attack in person, seizing a pike from a soldier, and assailed by both horse and foot the Scots and English fell back, 'sometimes retiring, sometimes facing about and firing.' They set fire to the village and Parma, observing the order of their retirement, began to suspect its object, and before long found himself in face, not only of the Scots and English, who had taken up a new position supported by the artillery, but of the whole army of the Estates. The brave Spanish foot and the mixed cavalry again attacked, but after a fierce struggle, Don John, declining to commit his whole force to an assault on an entrenched position strongly held, drew off his army and retired. 'Some companies of Scots,' says Strada, 'made themselves remarkable, who either in bravery or not able to endure the heat of their running and the day, the sun putting the whole sky into a flame, stripped themselves, contented only with their shirts, some casting off these too, and tying them about their middles, came on naked among the armed men.' But the author of a work of last century,[2] who had served in the Scots Brigade, says, 'What Strada mentions of the Scots in that battle throwing away their cloaths and fighting naked was no more than the Highlanders throwing aside their plaids to be less embarrassed, after having brought the vanguard of Don John's army into the ambuscade that was laid for them, and where they suffered greatly, but Strada deals much in the marvellous and makes mysteries of very plain facts.'[3] According to the Dutch

[1] *Sic*, Strada.

[2] *Strictures on Military Discipline, with some account of the Scots Brigade in the Dutch Service.*

[3] Meteren says, 'C'etoit un jour auquel il faisoit une fort grand chaleur, tellement que les Ecossois et autres soldats se despouillerent et combattirent en

authorities the action lasted nearly eight hours, and the Spaniards left 1000 dead upon the field. A few days afterwards Colonel La Garde with 500 French arquebusiers, and Colonel Balfour with 1000 Scots took the town of Aerschot, Don John's army being only two leagues distant.

The year 1579 marked the development of another stage in the history of the Netherlands, and the substantial separation of the country into the future Dutch Republic on the one hand and the future Belgian provinces on the other. Already on 29th December 1578 the Union of Utrecht, by which the northern provinces of Holland, Zealand, Gelderland, Utrecht, Friesland, Overyssel, Groningen, and, for the time being, Ghent, drew more closely together, had been formed, and the foundations of the future United Netherlands laid. The Walloon provinces, on the contrary, were in negotiation with the Prince of Parma. Indeed, the main bond of the larger union had been the fear of the Spanish troops. The southern provinces were Catholic in sentiment, and the fear of the Spanish, Italian, and German troops on the royal side was succeeded by an active jealousy of the Scots, English, and French troops, who fought so well under the banners of the Estates. 'The nobles of Flanders were disgusted,' says Renom de France, 'because the Prince of Orange preferred Englishmen, Scots, French, and Germans to military command, and held them in too much state and esteem.' The numbers of the foreign troops, including the Scots, had been considerably increased,[1] and there

chemise, laquelle ils attacherent entres les jambes, et firent tout ce qui se pouvoit faire pour se defendre contre un si grand nombre de gens qui tous estoyent gens experimentés et vieux soldats. Le Colonel Jean Norris, fils du Lord Rycort, se porta fort bravement avec ses Anglois. . . . Semblablement les Escossois sous le Colonel Stewart et autres.' Le Petit says: 'A la premiere charge les Colonels Norreys, Anglois, et Balfour, Ecossois, avec leur gens (dont aucuns combattirent nuds en chemise comme ils se rafreschissoyent du travail du grand chemin qu'ils avoyent fait pour se rendre à l'armée) se monstrerent fort valeureuse et y firent paroistre leur vertu à les repousser et puis à les poursuyvre.' Cerisier also notes the fact that the Scots fought 'en chemise.' Renom de France says, 'Ceci arresta bien le progrés du Seigneur Don Juan.'

[1] In the Appendix to Renom de France's *Histoire des Troubles des Pays Bas* is given a state ('dressé' in 1579) of the forces of the enemy, 'estans presentement tant a Wervy qu'à l'environ sous la conduicte du seigneur de la Noue,' which contains the following:—'huict compagnies d'Anglois sous le Coronel Norris.' . . . 'dix-huict compagnies escossoises le séze soulz le Coronnel

were difficulties with them owing to their pay not being forthcoming. On the 3rd of January it was resolved[1] that the Count Hohenlo should command in chief in the town of Maestricht, Colonel Balfour being there with his regiment, to whom the best contentment that it shall be possible to make shall be given. In March there was a complaint from Mechlin of the depredations of the Scots and English soldiers, and the important city of Bois-le-Duc was lost to the Estates, because of its refusal to admit any of the English, Scots, and French troops sent to it from Brussels, although it was invited to select from the three nationalities tendered. The arrangement for the command and garrison of Maestricht was not carried out when the Prince of Parma laid siege to it. On the 2nd of March he advanced on Antwerp. His army was withstood at Borgherhout by forty ensigns, 'tant Walons, François et Anglois que Escossois,' who skirmished well for two hours, till the odds being too great, they set fire to the village of Borgherhout, and retired fighting to a position under the walls of Antwerp, where the advance was checked by the fire of the cannon. The engagement lasted till evening, more than 400 men being killed, mostly on the side of the Spaniards, and was witnessed from the walls by the Archduke Mathias and the Prince of Orange. With characteristic rapidity Parma moved his army from the west to the eastern side of the theatre of war, and commenced his famous siege of Maestricht, the garrison of which consisted only of 1000 men, 'tant François, Walons, Escossois, qu'autres,' aided by 1200 well-armed burgesses and 2000 peasants. After a heroic defence of four months it was carried by assault, and 'peu de soldats des Etats en eschapperent que tout ne fut tué.'[2]

The Walloon provinces were finally reconciled to Spain in the summer of 1579, but part of Brabant and Flanders adhered to the Prince of Orange. On the 22nd of October, a gallant

---

Balfour et deux venues depuis, à cent hommes chascune compagnie tant harquebouziers que piques font en tout deux mil hommes combattans.' . . . 'Et si attendent le regiment du Corronel Stuart de huict compagnies escossoises qui font huict cens hommes combattans parti picques et harquebouziers.' . . . 'Cavallerie . . . autres soixante chevaulx escossois en la forme de leur pays.'

[1] *Actes des Etats Generaux.* [2] Le Petit.

piece of service was performed by Colonel Balfour and his Scots. Information had reached Bruges that it was feasible to surprise Menin, and scaling-ladders having been secretly prepared at a country-house of the Burgomaster's, Colonel Balfour left Bruges on the evening of the 21st, picked up his Scots companies at Roosendaal, and before four o'clock in the morning, was under the walls of Menin, with a brewer of the town who had been persecuted by the Walloons as his guide. At the same time four companies from Courtray arrived at the other side of the town in boats, and as four o'clock sounded the ramparts were simultaneously escaladed, the sentinels driven in, the guard defeated, and the town taken.[1] Curiously enough at the same time the Walloon forces in the neighbourhood and part of the garrison of Menin were engaged in a similar attempt on Courtray, which was defeated owing to their leader hearing the commander of Courtray, who was listening for the alarm at Menin, ask a sentinel if he heard anything, and on being told 'no,' reply 'the time is near.' In Menin the Scots secured a large amount of booty which the Walloons had collected there. On the 16th November, it fell to the Scots captains 'Seton and Mornou' to conduct to Menin the prisoners taken by De la Noue in a cavalry action near Halewijn.[2]

---

[1] Renom de France says, 'D'ailleurs l'opinion des capitaines du Roy portoit que Menin surprinse mal à propos faisoit beaucoup de mal à toutes les provinces reconciliées.'

[2] In the 'Estat des gens de guerre servans aux États revoltés, la soulde d'iceux et repartissement des provinces,' given by Renom de France (Jan. 1580).

Among the troops assigned to be paid by Flanders were :

'Les 18 compagnies Escossois du Colonel Balfour.

Treize compagnies Anglois du Colonel Noritz.

Et les compagnies de Setton, Mornault, etc.'

(An item of Colonel Henry Balfour's estate (given up in eik dated 7th January 1593) was a debt of 'ane thousand florence' due to him by 'Capt. Henry Seytoun.')

Among those assigned to Zealand were :

'Cinq compagnies du Colonel Stuart Escossois.

Les compagnies fussent estoffées de cent cinquante testes, avec les capitaines et officiers traictez comme s'ensuit.

Le capitaine par mois 90 liv., le lieutenant à 45 liv., l'enseigne à 40 liv., deux sergeants à raison de 24 liv. chascun, quattre caporaux à 16 liv., fourrier our clercq 12⅔, deux tambours chascun 12 liv., un chirurgien à 12⅔, montant en effet chascune compagnie à 1700 liv.'

The captains of Stuart's regiment appear from the documents afterwards sub-

In January 1580, Parma took by assault the castle of Mortagne, which was garrisoned by three companies of Scots and English. There were Scots companies in the force of the gallant La Noue, when he was defeated and taken prisoner at Ingelmunster in May. And in November, Balfour, who had so long commanded the oldest Scottish regiment, met a soldier's death. 'Le Colonel Balfour General des Escossois au service des Etats, estans en garnison à Bruges en Flandre, sortit avec sa compagnie de Cavallerie, et attaqua au village de Wassenaar (du Franc de Bruges) quelque Cavallerie legére du Prince de Parma qu'il diffit; mais y survenant secours Balfour qui n'avoit que soixante chevaux après avoir vaillament combattu, fut defait et tué, non toutefois sans grande perte des Espagnols. Son corps fut rapporté à Bruges et honorablement enterré. Il fut fort regretté pour les bons services qu'il avoit fait en Flandre, aussi ne mourut il point pauvre. Sa femme accoucha tost après en la dite ville.'[1]

In February 1581, the town of Courtray fell owing to the dislike of the townsmen to receive an addition to the garrison, and a stratagem of the enemy. The garrison consisted of two or three Scottish companies, and a letter was written to the governor purporting to be from friends offering to introduce an additional force secretly by a little meadow near the castle. At night the governor going to receive them discovered his mistake when too late, but the assailants found the Scots already turned out in good order in the market-place, where they defended themselves for four hours, but were finally all killed along with many of the townsmen. In the following month the Scots in garrison at Vilvoorden mutinied for want of pay, and drove away Colonel Stuart, their commander, but with much difficulty they were appeased; and Stuart's regiment was afterwards sent with a French one to Flanders to occupy the attention of the malcontent element in that province. The

---

mitted by him to the States-General to have been himself, James Stuart, Andrew Stuart, Thomson and Anstruther.

[1] The training the Scots were receiving in the Netherlands was carefully watched from London, for in the instructions by Cecil for Sir R. Bowes, dated 18th Sept. 1579, his attention was called to the fact that, 'the Scottish nation is at this day stronger in feats of arms than it was aforetime, by reason of their exercise in civil wars at home, and their being abroad in the Low Countries.'

Scots who were with La Garde when he recovered the Chateau of Baerle from the malcontents set fire to it. In the beginning of October, Parma laid siege to Tournay, which was in sore straits, when, in the end of November, the Scottish Colonel Preston set out from Menin with thirty horse, 'with a great courage' cut his way through the lines of the Germans forming part of Parma's force, defeated the company of the Prince of Chimay, took thirty prisoners and entered the town. Unfortunately one of his soldiers was heard to say that they had been to near Dunkirk in vain to meet the promised French succours under the Duke of Anjou (a mistake because their leader's object had been to surprise Bourbourg or Gravelines),[1] which so discouraged the besieged that it hastened the surrender.[2]

While the Prince of Parma was besieging Oudenarde in the summer of 1582, a force consisting almost wholly of English under Colonel Norris, and Scots under Colonel Seton,[3] was sent into Flanders and quartered near Ghent, with the view of relieving it. Scottish troops—probably the same—formed part of the force which fell back fighting before Parma under the walls of Ghent, from which the Prince of Orange watched the combat along with the Duke of Anjou, as he had watched a similar one with the Austrian Archduke Mathias from the

---

[1] See *Strictures on Military Discipline*, etc., p. 69.

[2] A document from the archives of Ypres of about this date, quoted by Lettenhove, mentions as quartered at Bruges, 'le regiment du Colonel Preston fort de dix bannières de cent cinquante hommes, et les cornettes du Mauregnat, de Robert Maxwell et d'Archibald Hamilton.' Richard Preston, second son of Archibald Preston, second baron of Valleyfield, and Giles Semple was a colonel in the service of the States of Holland.—Douglas's *Baronage*.

In Feb. 1584-5 Gavin Hamilton, brother of the deceased Captain Archibald Hamilton, brought an action against the widow and William Balfour, son and heir of Colonel H. Balfour, for a sum of 1200 guilders Flemish money, and the value of two horses, all received from said deceased Captain Archibald Hamilton.—*Acta et Decreta*.

On 6th July 1581, a quaint proclamation was made by the Scots Privy Council against the transport of loose women to Flanders, which proceeded on the preamble, that since His Majesty's subjects went there to serve, 'thair hes cumit thairfurth of this realm many and divers trowpis and cumpanis of licht women, uncumly and indecent in thair maners, countenance, behaviour and array, not being mens wyffis or having ony necessar knawin effaires or bissyness.' . . . 'to the tynsale of the great reputatioun quhilkis the said subjectis in the partis aforssaid hes to thame acquirit sin thair cuming thairto.'

[3] Bentivoglio.

defences of Antwerp. In August of that year Captain William Sempill, and his brother, who was his lieutenant, treacherously betrayed the town of Lier to the enemy, 'pour se venger de quelque disreputation ou tort (selon qu'il disoit) les Etats luy avoient faict.'[1]

In January 1583 occurred the treacherous attempt of the Duke of Anjou to make himself unfettered master of Antwerp, which was known as the French Fury. When the subsequent accommodation was made between the Estates and the Duke, the English and Scottish troops who had mutinied in the 'pais de Waes,' taken prisoners, and held the principal inhabitants to ransom, took the same oath as the French, moved from the country of Waes towards Rupelmonde, and crossed the Scheldt to succour Eindhoven, now besieged by the Prince of Parma. There were Scots in the army which took the Chateau de Viersel, but it was too late to save Eindhoven, which fell on the 23rd of April, having been defended by some French and Scots companies 'qui s'acquitterent fidèlement de leur devoir tant a fortifier qu'à tenir la place.' On the 20th of June, Parma, having learned that there were differences between the English and the Scots on one side, and the French on the other, in the army under Maréchal Biron, which lay at Roosendaal, attacked it suddenly and defeated it. Several places in Flanders having fallen into the hands of the enemy, to prevent which the Scots and other troops, sent by the Prince of Orange, had been despatched too late, the authorities of Bruges sent to Colonel Boyd, 'whom they had themselves made colonel,'[2] and persuaded him to come to Bruges with his regiment of Scots, which was in their pay, and abandon Menin, where he had been in garrison. In the following year the Prince of Chimay, who had temporarily joined the party of the Estates and had been made Governor of Flanders, and Colonel Boyd, with apparently the approval of the majority of the citizens, who were mostly Catholics, changed the magistracy, with the result

[1] Meteren. See note 2, p. 26. According to a document, quoted by Lettenhove, dated 4th Dec. 1582 (Arch. of Bruges), the army of the Estates then contained 13 cornets of English and 13 of Scots. There were 20 German, 54 French, and 18 raised in the country.

[2] Meteren.

that Bruges also became 'reconciled to the king.' But the Dutch historian notes that the most part of the Scottish soldiery and captains did not bear the Prince much affection, and when they left the town and were offered employment under Parma, only Colonel Boyd and some captains would accept it. Shortly before the English garrison of Alost, being unable to get their arrears, had sold the town to Parma, and taken service under the Spanish colours. An attempt was made to play a similar game at Ghent, but it was unsuccessful, and among the persons compromised were the Englishman Rowland Yorke, who was afterwards the author of a greater treason, and Seton, a Scottish lieutenant, who confessed that he had been with Parma, and promised to deliver Denremonde.[1]

On the 10th July 1584, William the Silent, Prince of Orange, perished by the pistol of the assassin Gérard. The progress of the Prince of Parma in reducing the southern provinces had been so far successful that he now proceeded to take the preliminary steps for the reduction of Antwerp. Three leagues below the city, on the opposite banks of the Scheldt, were two forts, Lillo and Liefkenshoeck, built to secure the passage of the river. Liefkenshoeck was carried by storm on the day of the Prince of Orange's death, but Lillo was gallantly held by Teligny, son of the brave De la Noue. The Spaniards planted four pieces of artillery against it, on a dyke, but just then the Zealanders sent four Scottish companies under the conduct of Colonel Balfour,[2] who, having entered the fort, as soon as the garrison perceived the enemy and the position he had occupied at once made a sortie to capture the cannon. But the dyke was very narrow and the enemy's trenches strong against assault, and they could not push their attack so far. However, they killed a good three hundred of his men, and returned bringing as their prisoner the principal miner, who revealed all the mines that had been prepared.[3] The fort made so good a defence that Parma ultimately gave up attempting to take

[1] Meteren.

[2] Barthold or Bartholomew Balfour, who served till 1594, and is found in 1603 acting as factor to the first Lord Balfour of Burleigh. Renom de France says that 'à la suite de certains differends il se retira en 1594.'

[3] Meteren.

it, and afterwards said that but for the way Lillo had been held he would have had Antwerp six months sooner.

The respite of Antwerp was not for long. Ghent having been 'reconciled,' and all Flanders subjugated, Parma returned, and the famous siege began in earnest. The Scots bore their part manfully in the defence. Among those who fell in the fight at Austruweel on 13th August was Captain Gordon. After Teligny was taken prisoner, in the attempt to reach Zealand and lay the need of the garrison before their countrymen, Captain Prop went successfully on the same dangerous mission; and in the bloody struggle on the Kowenstyn Dyke the side next the river was committed to the English and Scots. Parma himself had to leap to the waist in water with a pike in his hand, 'when he saw that his men would go no more to the charge on that side, seeing that the English and Scots were there doing their duty so well.'[1] When owing to the flinching of the Dutchmen on the other side, the islanders had sullenly to fall back, they left many dead on the bloodstained dyke. 'The English and Scots under Balfour and Morgan,' says Motley, who, writing at a time when the echoes of the Trent affair were scarcely stilled, generally shows scant appreciation of the British services to the Netherlands, 'were the very last to abandon the position which they had held so manfully seven hours long.'[2]

It would seem that Scottish soldiers also took part in Count Hohenlo's unsuccessful attempt upon Bois-le-Duc, for when Cleerhaghen, the guide of the enterprise, leapt into the moat after all was lost, he was saved by a Scottish soldier.

If Napoleon's maxim was that 'Antwerp in French hands was a pistol held at the head of England,' its capture by the Spaniards was sufficient to spur Queen Elizabeth to action. The Earl of Leicester landed with a large auxiliary force, and was made Governor-General and Captain-General of the Netherlands. Scots troops were detailed to share in the assault when he took Doesburg in September 1586, but the achievements of the campaign were unequal to the excellence

[1] Meteren.

[2] Captain James, one of the English officers, wrote, that after the Dutch gave way 'the Scots seeing them to retire left their string. The enemy pursued very hotly: the Englishmen stood to repulse and were most put to the sword.'

of the force at his command, and before long the relations between him, Prince Maurice of Orange, and the other officers in the service of the States in the days of William the Silent, were strained. Renom de France mentions Colonel Balfour among those to whom Leicester 'se rendit bientot odieux,'[1] and the delivery of the city of Gueldres to the enemy by Colonel Aristotle Patton,[2] in January 1587, is stated by Meteren to have been an act of vengeance, because 'Leicester estoit corroucé contre luy et qu'il avoit menacé de vouloir mettre Stuart en sa place.' Scots troops were in the force which in Leicester's absence Prince Maurice led to Brabant with the intention of relieving Sluys, and marched to meet the earl on his return to Zealand. On the final departure of Leicester,

[1] Renom de France says that the old 'chefs de guerre,' including Balfour, 'tous se joindirent aux Contes Maurice de Nassau et Hohenlo.'

Leicester himself confirms this.—'1586, 11th July.—I have no liking for Balford here, he is a bad fellow, and wholly at others' direction and not mine: indeed, if the Master of Gray come not, he will look to be colonell-generall over them all, which I will no way consent to.'—*Leicester Correspondence.*

[2] The booty acquired by the famous freebooter, Colonel Schenck, in whose absence Patton was commanding the garrison, and against whom also he had a grievance, was appropriated by Patton, to which the proverb was applied, 'Du diable vient au diable vat.' 'Ce Patton,' says Le Petit, 'par le moyen de son grand argent en telle sorte acquis epousa la veuve diseteuse du feu Penthus de Noyelle Sr. de Bours qui aida ci arracher le chasteau d'Anvers des mains de l'Espagnol: Ceste Dame estoit de la maison de Bieure que le Sr. de Champaigny pensoit bien epouser, mais ses gouttes et l'argent de Patton l'en empescherent le soir mesmes qu'il la devoit affiancer.' Shortly before his death, in 1589, Schenck encountered and defeated Patton, who only saved himself by swimming his horse across the Lippe. In a list of the army of the Prince of Parma in 1588, after the Spanish, Italian, German, and Walloon infantry, there came 'Irlandais regiment du Sr. de Stanley, Ecossois regiment de Paton entremeslé de Walons.' Meteren says that in the army for the invasion of England were eight companies of Scots, and that Captain Sempill, who had surrendered Lier, was sent to Scotland. He was a frequent intermediary between the Spanish Court and the Catholic earls. On 15th February 1588-89, Thomas Pringall, who had served twelve years, four under the States, and the rest under the Duke of Parma, was executed at Edinburgh. He had been sent by Colonel Sempill to the Earl of Huntly before Christmas, and had been in Scotland with Sempill the preceding Easter, when Sempill 'escaped by his mother sending him a rope, by which he conveyed himself out of a window, being lodged in one Gurley's house.' Colonel Sempill was, it is thought, a son of David Sempill first of Craigbet, brother of the third Lord Sempill. See 'Colonel William Sempill,' *Scotsman*, 10th August 1896, by T. G. L. For a full account of his betrayal of Lier, see '*Geschiedens der Stadt Lier*,' by Anton Bergmann.

the conduct of the war fell wholly into the able hands of Prince Maurice, and the Scottish regiment is to be found almost continually in the army with which he won his triumphs. Upon the destruction of the Spanish Armada, the Duke of Parma turned the fine army he had amassed to work at home, and promptly besieged Bergen-op-Zoom.[1] Scots were sent to the city from Brill and Ostend, and on 11th November, Balfour, coming from Tholen with 500 picked men 'tant gens du pais-bas que Escossois,' co-operated with a sortie made by the garrison.[2] During the following night Parma raised the siege.

The services of the Scottish troops in the campaigns of 1589 and 1590 are not specially recorded by the historians; but 'Balfour, Colonel of the Scots, with ten ensigns,'[3] was present at the sieges of Zutphen, Deventer, Hulst, and Nimeguen in 1591. In February 1592 the Estates sent Count Philippe of Nassau with his regiment and the Scottish regiment of Balfour, making in all twenty companies, to the assistance of Henry IV. of France. In 1593 Balfour's regiment was again with Prince Maurice, and at the siege of Gertruydenberg it was posted at the west of the town, the Scots and North Hollanders together facing one of the great ravelins.[4] Scots also took part in a fruitless attempt to surprise Bruges in November, when the troops lost their way in a dark night, and Balfour himself was wounded in the foot, serving with Count William of Nassau, in a skirmish with Verdugo's troops who were retreating to Groningen.

---

[1] Orlers, in the *Lauriers de Nassau*, mentions that in the question of the governorship, 'Les Anglais tenoyent plus le parti de Drurij que de Morgan, les gens des Pais Bas et les Ecossais suivayent le parti de Morgan.'

[2] According to *Strictures on Military Discipline*, etc., 'Colonel Scott commanded 500 Scots of the garrison and behaved with great bravery.' There was, however, an English officer of the name of Scott.

[3] Their position is marked in the illustrations in the *Lauriers de Nassau*. See also as to Zutphen, Renom de France; and Deventer, Meteren, fol. 333.

[4] Meteren, Orlers, Le Petit. After the reduction, the Prince 'put General Balfour with his regiment, which had suffered greatly, into that place, giving him the command, his brother, Prince Frederick Henry, whom he appointed governor, being yet too young to have any command.'—*Strictures on Military Discipline*, etc. and *Hist. Account.*

In 1594 Balfour retired from the Dutch service,[1] and the command of his regiment passed to Colonel Alexander Murray. It is said that on the return of the Dutch ambassadors from the christening of the Prince of Scotland,[2] a great many Scottish gentlemen went over to Holland, taking with them about 1500 men.[3] Murray's regiment (still of ten companies) was present at the relief of Coevorden and the siege of Groningen in that year. In March, Captains Brogh and Egger of the Scottish regiment had taken part, along with four Dutch captains, in an enterprise on Maestricht. They were to go to the suburb of Wyck in large boats, and after embarkation cut their pikes short, having been afraid to do so before lest cavalry should be encountered on the march. The ends of the staves were thrown overboard, and soon after the captains were alarmed by hearing a fisherman say there must be some of the enemy about, as pikestaffs were floating down the Meuse. They then heard from the town that the guard had been doubled, and resolved to abandon the enterprise, Captain Brogh saying that he was not going to lead his men to certain butchery. The captains were blamed for their decision, but Brogh by a long course of good service showed that, whether he judged rightly or wrongly on this occasion, the decision was due to no want of courage. Two of his fellow-officers, Captains Robert Waddell and Melville met a soldier's death on 16th July under the walls of Groningen.[4] The Scottish regiment was in October 1595 again one of two sent to assist Henry IV., under Justinus of Nassau. A Captain Balfour also took part with Heraugière (the officer who had so cleverly surprised Breda in 1589) in the defence of Huy, and Scots troops shared in the obstinate defence of Hulst in 1596, Captains Balfour and Egger being both killed in repulsing one of the assaults. In January 1597, Murray's regiment of ten companies formed part of the force under Prince Maurice at the victory of Turnhout; and though the infantry did not arrive in time to share in the fight, Edmond led three cornets of cavalry in their charge on the regiments of Barlotte and

[1] See *infra*, p. 114. [2] See *infra*, p. 154.
[3] *Strictures on Military Discipline*, p. 71; *Hist. Account.*
[4] Bor, iii. 832.

Hachicourt, met the Spanish cavalry when they returned to the charge, and distinguished himself 'notablement.' Two additional ensigns of Scots were raised; and at the sieges of Rheinberg, Meurs, Groll, Brevoort, Entscheiden, and Lingen,[1] Murray had twelve companies under his command. At Meurs four companies of Scots were stationed before the Kerckporte, and on the evening of 28th August, Captain Waddell was killed in the trenches. At Brevoort the Scots forced the Meesterporte, at Lingen they chased back a sortie of the garrison into the town, while the pictorial representation of the place bears the note, 'Ici faisoient les soldats de Morreau des mines et combattoient la ville.' In 1598 half the Scots were left in the force detailed by Prince Maurice to guard the Betuwe. In 1599 the foot companies were again filled up, so that each company consisted of 150 men, and the colonel's company of 200, while among new cornets of cavalry was one of 'Hamilton Escossois.' An attempt was made in that year to secure Nimeguen for the Spaniards by the exiled Earl of Bothwell, who was at Brussels. He had secured two agents, one of them at least apparently a Scot, Robert Lungden (Lundin), and they relied upon corrupting Captain Masterton, who was in the town with four companies of Scots, and who had 'been of the faction of the Earl of Bothwell in Scotland.' But Masterton discovered the affair, and Lungden was decapitated at the Hague, 'regretting much to have undertaken such a design.'

The cavalry captain, Edmond, took the Count Bucquoy prisoner in an action near Sevenaer. At the siege of Bommel the Scots were at first lodged upon the Isle of Voorn; on the 19th of May, Colonel Murray being on the ramparts[2] ('sur le boulevard de Hohenlo'), and not stooping sufficiently when the besiegers' artillery fired, was struck on the top of the head 'tellement que le test fut rompu dont il mourut.' 'C'estoit,' says Meteren, 'un fort habile homme, et qui avoit acquis beaucoup d'honneur par ses services.' Two days later an assault was made on the trenches, which did not succeed on account

[1] Orlers. In the cases of Meurs and Groll, the twelve ensigns are (certainly by inadvertence) described as under Balfour, in all the other cases as under Murray.

[2] The spot is marked in Orlers's illustration.

of some misunderstanding between the Scots, French, and English. But Captain Brogh, who commanded the Scots, brought back a Spanish captain prisoner, and the English captain, Aldena, another.[1] On 8th July a bridge was thrown from Voorn to Herwarden, and on the same day ten Scots companies crossed it. They were followed by others, and a fortification thrown up, which was fiercely attacked by the Spaniards, who were repulsed by the Sieur de la Noue, Horace Vere, and Edmond, who was then 'Colonel of the Scots.' In November Prince Maurice sent some troops to Emmerick, where, admission being refused, Colonel Edmond came to the Craenporte, and with the help of some Germans within, burst the gate, entered with little loss, and passed to the Steenporte, which he opened to admit the rest of the force.

In January 1600, Count Louis of Nassau and Colonel Edmond took Wachtendonc in Gelderland, while the Scots also took part in the reduction of the fort of St. Andrew.

A dark day for the Scottish regiment, though an honourable one for the cause of the United Provinces, was near at hand. In the summer of 1600 Prince Maurice led a well-equipped army into Flanders. He had just settled down to the siege of Nieuport, when news came that the Archduke Albert was advancing with all his forces. The Spaniards rapidly reduced certain forts into which Prince Maurice had thrown garrisons, and contrary to the terms of the surrender, massacred those who had held Snaeskerke. The expeditious advance of the Archduke with his well-appointed army astonished Prince Maurice, who received the news after midnight. He at once despatched Count Ernest of Nassau towards Ostend with Edmond's Scottish regiment of twelve companies, the Zealand regiment of seven companies, four companies of cavalry, and two guns, to seize and hold the bridge of Leffingen, near the fort of Albert, which was still held by his troops. The little force found the bridge already occupied by the Archduke's troops, who were in too great strength to be assailed, and were increasing in numbers every moment. They resolved, however, to endeavour to hold their ground. As to what exactly

[1] Meteren.

occurred accounts differ. The Spaniards attacked in overwhelming force, and according to Meteren, the cavalry at once took to flight, and the infantry, seeing this, were equally alarmed, and commenced to flee, throwing down their arms.[1] Le Petit, on the other hand, says that the Count, having fought valiantly for a long time, and not being able to hold his ground longer, was constrained to yield, after having lost his two guns and 800 men, of whom the most were Scots. Bentivoglio's account is, 'These soldiers of the enemy gave at unawares upon the Catholics, who, finding themselves so much superior in numbers, and with the advantage of such fresh success, soon routed the adversary and made a bloody slaughter among them.' Broken and ridden down by the pitiless Spanish lancers and the cruel Italian horse, the Scots were driven into the sandhills and the sea, and the regiment lost no less than 600 men. All were killed, for the prisoners taken were, in breach of the faith pledged, miserably massacred. Of the twelve captains of companies who had marched in the early hours of the summer morning along the downs, Arthur Stewart, John Kilpatrick, John Mitchell, Hugh Nisbet, and John Strachan lay dead on the field; Robert Barclay and Andrew Murray 'being prisoners, and having received the faith of those who held them,' were massacred in cold blood. Colonel Edmond, Sergeant-Major Brogh, and Captains Caddel, Henderson, and Ker alone remained to gather the wrecks of a gallant regiment. Count Ernest and Colonel Edmond were pursued to Fort Albert, and the fugitives who fled inland were slaughtered up to the very palisades of the fort.[2]

After their victory and massacre the troops of the Archduke halted, while the question of further advance was discussed, and Prince Maurice had time to transport his whole force

[1] Orlers (who was present according to the *Hist. Account*) says that 'after having bravely defended themselves as good soldiers, they were put to flight, all the loss having fallen on the side of the Scots, so that well-nigh 800 were left on the ground, among whom were eleven captains, and many lieutenants and other officers.' These figures tally with the others if the Dutch are included.

[2] It is curious that all the four Zealand captains killed were murdered in the same way as Barclay and Murray, after having surrendered. The fact that five Scottish captains were killed in the fight suggests that their regiment stood its ground longer.

across the haven of Nieuport and array it in order of battle before the attack was delivered.[1] In the great fight that followed, in which the English troops so distinguished themselves, Captain Hamilton's cornet of cavalry was in the rear-guard, and probably took part in the charges that finally decided the fate of the battle. Captain Hamilton himself was killed.[2] When the army of the Archduke was finally driven back in rout, a stern revenge was taken for the slaughter of the morning. 'Car de la part des Escossois,' says Le Petit, 'pour expiation de la mort de leurs compagnons qui le meme jour avoient esté tues comme nous avons dit, il n'y avoit nulle mercy.' 'Le lendemain,' says Meteren, 'les Escossois en tuerent encores quelque trente ou quarante de sang froid, pour se venger des Zelandois et Escossois qu'on avoit tués contre la promesse et l'accord de l'Archeduc tant en Forts de Snaeskercke que des Escossois qui furent tués sur le rivage.'

The great struggle at Nieuport practically exhausted the operations of the year, and the Estates sent Colonel Edmond to Scotland 'to remake his regiment.'

In the famous siege of Ostend, which lasted from 5th July 1601 to 20th September 1604, the Scottish troops bore their own part in the defence. One of the principal works was

---

[1] Cette defaite,' says Cerisier, 'qui devait perdre Maurice, fut ce qui le sauva . . . cette bataille en retardant la marche des ennemis luy laissa le tems pour choisir les postes les plus avantageux, et faire les dispositions les plus sages.' *Tableaux de L'Histoire Generale des Pays Bas.*

[2] In his *Life of Lord Wimbledon*, Dalton states, 'Among the British officers killed at Newport was a cavalry officer who rode with Edward Cecil in the last charge, and was slain in Cecil's sight when they were both pursuing the enemy. This officer was Captain Hamilton, a gallant Scot, who once made, to use Cecil's own words, "the gallantest retreat I ever heard of." Hamilton had been sent out with some Dutch cavalry under Count Louis of Nassau. . . . The Spaniards came down on them in force . . . and they retreated skirmishing, the officers taking in turns to keep the enemy at bay with a few of their men, while the rest of their body retreated. "At last," says Cecil, "it came to Captain Hamilton's turn to make the last retreat, always most difficult and dangerous (which the Dutch loveth not, therefore left it to him), and because the horses were weary and the enemy was gaining ground upon them, Hamilton fell into the rear of his men, and so long maintained the skirmish with the pursuing Spaniards that the States horse had time to make their retreat far enough. In the end his horse was killed under him, notwithstanding which he, leaping over a body, made his retreat on foot and so escaped."'

known as the Schottenberg. When the gallant Comte de Chatillon, son of the great Coligny, standing on the top of the Sandhill on 10th September, along with Colonel Van der Noot, Colonel Uchtenbrook, and Brogh, now Lieut.-Colonel of the Scottish Regiment, had the top of his head carried off by a cannon-ball, the fragments of his skull wounded Colonel Brogh in the face. When in December Sir Francis Vere, feeling himself unable to hold out longer unless reinforced, and anxious to gain time, opened negotiations with the Archduke, it was to Captain Sinclair of the Scots and two Zealand captains that the duty of receiving the Spanish plenipotentiaries, Serrano and Ottignies, was assigned. After the fierce assault which followed the Christmas negotiations, the States resolved to relieve the garrison, and to renew the change every four or six months, and among the officers of rank sent to the city in January 1602 was William Edmond, now designed as 'Chevalier et Colonel des Escossois.'[1]

Before the siege closed the States had permanently in their pay another Scottish regiment brought over by the Lord Buccleuch.[2] In May 1604 it is recorded[3] that His Excellency sent five companies of the new Scots regiment, with Captain Sinclair of the old Scots, and that soon afterwards Captain Hamilton was wounded and retired, being succeeded in his command by Captain Moore, while a little later Colonel Sinclair was killed.[4] In August the Governor deputed Sir William Brogh and Adolphe van Gelder to receive the in-

---

[1] Edmond had, in August 1601, been sent with some cavalry to occupy Mons, but was not admitted. The freedom of access by sea rendered a system of relief possible, and allowed of considerable leave. In May 1604 the Governor wrote that of five Scottish captains, only one, Captain John Brachton, was at his post.'

[2] 'His Majy hath been pleased to assent to the leavying of the new Regts in Scotland, for which purpose there is order already gone to the Lord of Bucklugh, who is to command them.'—Sir R. Cecil to Winwood, August 12, 1603.—St. Pap. Holland.

[3] 'Siege of Ostend' (Huguenot Society), by Belleroche, *Fleming's Diary*.

[4] According to the *Hist. Acct.*, at an earlier stage of the siege, when Sir Francis Vere had resolved to abandon the outworks, Captain Sinclair undertook the defence of part of the *faussebraye* of his own accord, and a reinforcement arriving the abandonment was countermanded. Sir John Ogle, however, in his continuation of the 'Siege of Ostend,' added to Vere's *Commentaries*, denies this.

structions of the Government as to the course he should pursue, in view of the impossibility of holding out long, even within the inner defences of 'New Troy.' The Schottenberg was taken in September, and when the garrison finally marched out on the 22nd of that month, the English and Scottish troops formed the rear-guard, and were the last to leave the ground so long and obstinately defended.

The Scots had not, during the long siege, been absent from other operations of the war. A Captain Hamilton was mortally wounded before Grave, and a detachment of 200 under Colonel Edmond formed part of the picked force with which Count Lewis made his dashing foray into Luxembourg in 1602, riding as far as the Ardennes, and penetrating one hundred miles into hostile country.

At a review held by Prince Maurice after the taking of Grave, the Scottish companies present were—Edmond's (160), Brogh's (120), Henderson's (100), Sinclair's (94), and Balfour's (116). Scots troops were also engaged in the fight before Bois-le-Duc in August of the following year, and in May 1604, when Prince Maurice was besieging Ysendyke, the sudden attack of the enemy upon Cadzand, which formed his base of operations, was only defeated by the steadiness of two Scottish companies, who taken by surprise, as they were, by a force which had already landed 600 men, charged them at once with such vigour that they routed them, drove them back to their galleys, and took forty prisoners and eight of their vessels. Had the design succeeded Prince Maurice would have lost all his boats and ammunition; and the expedition which took Sluys would have ended in failure. In the campaign of 1605, it was the firmness of Buccleuch's Scottish infantry and four English companies (defying with their level pikes the utmost efforts of the Spanish troops to break their formation)[1] that extricated the cavalry of the Estates when committed to an unequal combat with the masses of the enemy's horse, near Mulheim, and enabled them to repass the river. In July 1606, half of Edmond's cavalry company formed part of the force which

[1] In this campaign there were also English, Scottish, and Irish regiments in Spinola's army.

successfully resisted the attempt of the Spaniards to cross the Waal into the Betuwe, and when in the following month Spinola laid siege to Rheinberg, it is noted that 'in the Isle and on the other side of the Rhine Sir William Edmond, colonel of the Scots, was in command, because that was a place it was above all necessary to guard well.' Spinola determined to attack the entrenchments on the other side of the Rhine, while Prince Maurice approached with his army from Wesel, and entrenched himself on the opposite bank awaiting the arrival of his bridge. But the Prince lost his opportunity to succour these entrenchments, and on 3rd September Colonel Edmond like his predecessor Murray received a wound in the head as he was looking over the rampart, of which he died. 'C'etoit,' says Meteren, 'un vieux capitaine qui avoit long temps servy les Etats. Il estoit Colonel d'un Regiment Escossois, et homme qui de bas lieu estoit par sa valeur parvenu a grand honneur.'[1]

After his death the besieged were disheartened, abandoned the entrenchments the following night, and withdrew their troops into the island and the city. Prince Maurice found himself unable to relieve the place. It was surrendered, and on 12th October the garrison marched out, bearing with them the body of Colonel Edmond.

The campaign of 1606 practically concluded the war, for although the Twelve Years' Truce was not signed till 9th April 1609, there were no more military operations of magnitude, and none in which the share of the Scottish troops has been recorded. The first chapter of the history of the Scots Brigade closes dramatically with the bearing by the garrison of Rheinberg through Spinola's camp of the body of the veteran colonel of the old regiment.

---

[1] Sir John Ogle had written shortly before, 'I fear Sir Wm. Edmonds will return in no tryumphe from that place, though for his particular, men doubt not but he will deserve honourably.'

I. PRELIMINARY EXTRACTS FROM THE ARCHIVES OF HOLLAND

EXTRACTS FROM THE ARCHIVES OF THE STATES OF HOLLAND AND WEST VRIESLAND, illustrating the earlier history of the Brigade, prior to the commencement of the Records of the United Netherlands, after the separation of the reconciled provinces.

From the Archives of Grand Pensionnaries.

(1) *From Accounts and Pay Lists showing personnel of officers*

STATEMENT OF TOTALS of the 3d Account rendered by Franchoys Valckesteyn deceased, formerly Treasurer of War of the Land of Holland and that from the first of June anno 73 to the last of July anno 74, in pounds, shillings and pence of 40 groots.

Paid Out

1st Payment to German soldiers, Walloons, Frenchmen, Englishmen.[1]

Scots

1ª	,,	to Captain Baulfour . . .	£8015	0	0
2ª	,,	to Captain Robinson . . .	3837	0	0
3ª	,,	to Colonel Ormeston . . .	50	0	0
4ª	,,	to Captain Pentlandt . . .	6021	5	6
5ª	,,	to Alexander Cembell . . .	3301	0	0
6ª	,,	to Captain Edmeston . . .	2254	0	0
7ª	,,	to Captain Trell	3427	0	0
8ª	,,	to Captain Melluyn . . .	1925	0	0
9ª	,,	to Captain Oggelby . . .	7746	0	0
10ª	,,	to Captain Adamsz . . .	4394	15	0
5ª	Somma	. . . . .	40,970	6	6

Pay

20ª	,,	to Colonel Ormeston . . .	500	0	0
21ª	,,	to Johan Pentlandt, lieut. . .	200	0	0

[1] Cap. Greve, Cap. Genffort, Thomas Morgan, Cap. Prys, Cap. Brandt, Cap. Maurisz, Cap. Palmer, Cap. Lagan, Irish Captn.

STATEMENT OF TOTALS of the 4th and last Account rendered by the late franchoys Van Valckesteyn, etc.

Paid Out

Scots

1ª	,,	to Captain Baulfour . . .	£114	0	0
2ª	,,	to Johan Pentlandt . . .	3973	6	0
3ª	,,	to Captain Oggelby . . .	3598	6	6
4ª	,,	to Captain Cambel . . .	141	17	0
5ª	,,	to Captain Wm. Edmeston . .	29	16	0
6ª	,,	to the Compʸ of Robert Melluyn .	412	0	0
5ª	Somma of payment made to Scottish Companies .		8269	5	6

Pay

15ª	to Johan Edmeston	41	11	0

This account with the heirs of F. v. V. has been closed by Commissioners for the State on Feb. 12th, 1577, new style.

EXTRACT from the Account of Nicolas van der Laen of his Receivership-General expiring on the last day of July anno 1574.

Paid Out

To Expenses (?) and to bring the soldiers from England and Scotland.

1ª	Somma	£8962 19 0
	including for the soldiers of Cap. Trell. . .	xijᶜxxix

EXTRACT from the first general Account of Jacob Muys, Receiver-General of Finances (Jan. 1st, 1575—May 31st, 1577).

Paid Out

To Captains native, . . . Ditto foreign, . . . Scottish and English.

547	lv	Pentland	£12,294	12	0
558	lvj	Cambol	13,638	14	6
570	lvij	Trel	16,469	4	6
		under Beaufor [1]			
576	lviij	Ja. Kuyng or Smit . . .	11,568	1	0
584	lix	Wm. Emeston	12,146	16	0
588	lx	Thomas Robynsson . . .	5,509	13	0
590	lxi	Johan Edmeston in Thomas Pluoist (?) . . .	3,580	0	0
639	lxvj	Paid to Discharged Captains . .	36,212	18	0
		1st Grand Total of Payments to Captains .	544,517	10	0

[1] In Feb. 1577-78 a complaint was made to the Scots Privy Council by Capt. William Yorstoun, who had served in March 1575 in Col. H. Balfour's regiment, who maintained that Col. Balfour had received payment of his whole wages from the Estates of Holland and Brabant.

Pay

663	viij	Baulfour	6,421 8 0

Sundry Noblemen

686	xx	Wm. Stuart	870 0 0

Sergeant-Majors

725	xliij	John Edmeston . . .	680 11 0

(2) *Extracts from the Manuscript Resolutions of the States of Holland (Military Affairs)*

1574

Aug. 28th. To offer de Noyelles the colonelcy of 5016 compies Walloons and others at 100 crowns monthly. Accepted and promised to do good service; letters of appointment.

Sep. 2. The Scottish compies recently arrived in this country to be stationed in the Crimpenerwaart under the colonelcy of Noyelles.

Sep. 4. Cap. Pentelan is ordered with his company to go to Delfshaven in the place of the compy of Captain Morgan.

Ditto. Cap. J. Blaer, Scottish nobleman, on certain conditions allowed to touch certain 100 guilders, now in the hands of Cap. Pentlin and owing to Cap. Nielvinck.

Sep. 10. Treasurer-General to be advised on petition of J. Blaer, Scots.

Sep. 25. The Treasurer-Gen. of Finances J. Taffin to treat at Rotterdam with the Burgomasters about 15 or 1600 guilders required for the departure of Cap. Ogelby and his compy of Scots, already discharged.

Oct. 5th. Mayor and Aldermen of Boskoop notified to receive 2 compies of Scots in garrison and to accommodate and lodge them without hindrance.

Oct. 9th. Order on the Receiver-General in favor of Captain Oggelby, Scotchman, for 1500 guilders, for what is owing to him and his compy, to be paid from the excises at Rotterdam.

Oct. 21. Order for the payment and departure of the discharged Scottish soldiers of Captain Oggelby.

Oct. 27. Capitaine Oggelbie Ecossois pour quelque contentement de ses depens depuis qu'il est cassé, s'adressera à ceux des Finances de S.E. et le Thesaurier Tafin.

Nov. 1st. Order on C. P. Beaumont Mayor of Rotterdam for 18 Last rye the proceeds to be used for the discharge of the soldiers of Cap. Oggelby.

Nov. 26th. The 2 Scottish compies on board of vessel outside of Rotterdam and arrived there from Bommel, to be stationed the one at Dordrecht, the other at Schoonhoven.

1575

Aug. 20. Henceforth all captains appointed by H. Excy to take oath before the Council (Landraat) and a proper record to be kept thereof.

Aug. 26. Captain Stuart allowed an order for 60 guilders, one month's pay.

Ditto. Resolution on petition of Col. Balfour of the Scottish Regt, whether entitled to the 2 chains of Robbeson.

Sep. 13. Receiver Muys to pay Col. Balfour 1500 glds. for his pay from June to August provided it can be done from the current quota; for what he is further in arrear for services with his soldiers at Bommel, amounting to 2947 guilders, to provide conform to advice of His Excy.

Sep. 22. The Scottish Cap. Smith to make affidavit of having again provided for the vacancies (in his Compy), and then for this time to let him pass muster.

Oct. 7th. Col. Balfour to be paid by the Receiver-General 800 guilders yearly for his services.

Oct. 18th. Col. Balfour to be paid 950 guilders for his voyage, on reduction of what is due for former services, by Receiver Muys, from the money of Cap. Mailsant.

1576

May 11th. The pay of the 3 enlisted Compies of Scots allowed on the share (of Holland) in the general loan, to be repaid within a month by the Union.

May 22d. Committee to treat with all captains, in the first place with the Colonel of the Scots, to bring the pay from 32 days to 6 weeks or 48 days, with interest for the days thereby reduced, in proportion of the pay and at the rate of 12%.

June 1st. The back pay due to the Scottish Col. Balfour to be provided for from the first loan with certain merchants of Dordrecht of 8 or 10 thousand guilders, under security of the revenue of the Mint at that place.

June 19th. Mayors of towns to provide for the future payment, maintenance, and enlisting of soldiers at 42 days for a month, at the usual pay.

July 6th. The Committee to arrange with Col. Balfour.

July 10th. Cap. Cornille with his Compy to leave Woerden with the Compy of Despontain, to be replaced by the Scottish Compy of Captain Hector.

Aug. 7. Committee to inquire at Gouda, of Captain Michiel, into the affair and fault of certain Scotchmen at Crimpen and Elshout, also (into the complaints) against their Lieut. and officer; the Committee to be allowed an interpreter for the Scottish language.

Aug. 7th. The Committee to make proper provisions at Gouda for the pay of the soldiers, and to have the Scottish and English Compies march there.

Aug. 8th. On account of the understanding of certain Scots at Crimpen, etc., with the enemy, resolved to divide them up.

1577

Feb. 22. All captains to pay their men 45 stivers each, half monthly, while the engagement remains at 1100 guilders monthly for 100 men.

May 25th. Those of Finances to discharge first the Scottish and then the English Comp^{ies} in Holland, as soon as the necessary funds shall be on hand.

June 9th. Cap. Cromwell (to be stationed) in the fort at Campen, and Captain Nysbeth again at Dordrecht, and there to be discharged by Commissioner Orteil.

1578

Aug. 27th. The pay of J. Cuningham of 150 guilders per month (to be reduced) to 100.

1579

Sep. 14th. Cap. J. van Cuincham having accepted the office of L^{t} Gen. (*sic*) of the Regt. of 10 Comp^{ies} of Count Willem of Nassau at 200 guilders monthly from the nearer Union, his pay in Holland of 100 guilders monthly no longer to be paid.

Sep. 18th. To stop the pay of J. Cuningham because he draws from the nearer Union 200 guilders as L^{t} Gen. of Count Willem of Nassau.

Sep. 24th. Those of Sevenbergen to deliver to the Secretary within 14 days the documents (required) for a settlement with Captain Nysbeth, etc.

1581

Jan. 4th. Res. with reference to the back pay of Col. Stuart and his Regt.

Jan. 19th. H. Exc^{y} protesting against the order of the Committee with reference to the payment of Col. Stuart in so far as the necessary funds are not forthcoming, which endangers Brussel, Vilvoorden or Malines, the towns give their opinion thereon.

April 26th. Col.'s Pension to the widow of Col. Balfour and his son at 800 guilders yearly; some raise difficulties.

April 29th. Final settlement for the services of the Scottish Captain Mestertoin and the back pay of his soldiers.

June 7th. The Comp^{y} of J. Nysbeth to be sent from Geertruydenberg to Amsterdam and employed against the enemy in Vriesland.

June 10th. Final settlement with the Scottish Captain Mestertoin for his services and of his previous [claims].

July 4th. The States not being able to furnish for their share more money than already granted, Regt. Stuart has as an exception to be provided for by the generality.

July 11th. 2000 guilders to Col. Stuart to take the field.

Ditto. Cap. P. Merlyn allowed a month's pay for 150 men and bounties, provided it be deducted from Holland's quota to the generality as well as the 2200 guilders for Col. Stuart.

1582

May 23. Committee to administer with Count Hohenlohe the oath to the colonels and captains conform to the new ordinance of His Exc^{y}.

June 22. To continue to insist to the Deputies of the States General that Holland is not liable for back pay of Col. Stuart; if hard pressed to report.

1583

Sep. 19th. The Scots ordered by His Exc^{y} to The Clundert to be allowed 3 stivers each, daily, for 14 days.

1585

Feb. 17th. Captain D. Charreté to allow Col. Koningham to stop at Fort Noordam on his way to Geertruydenberg with his Comp^{y}, where he is ordered by Count Hohenlo.

April 24th. His Grace, the Council of State and Count Hohenlo written to, regarding filling the vacant colonelcy of Smits.

Sep. 19th. The Captains, Lieutenants and Ensigns at Bergen to be paid out of the 40,000 guilders, and to satisfy the Scottish Captains before sending them to their garrisons.

Ditto. Councillor-Commissioners to Count Hohenlo to insist on prompt payment to the Scottish Captains of one month's pay, that otherwise payment shall be made on a certain draft.

Nov. 8. Agreement with the Deputies of Zeeland on the reduction and the pay of the Comp^{y} of Scots under Balfour.

Nov. 15. All captains in gar. in Holland and Zeeland to discharge all Scottish soldiers, on pain of not being paid.

1586

Jan. 14th. Cap. J. Balfour and others to have patience for what the interest is behind, until the payment shall be provided for.

Nov. 26th./Dec. 9th. The G^{d} Pensionary and the Committee to proceed in every possible manner with the Council of State for the reduction of the soldiery, as well of the English and Scottish as the Netherlanders, horse and foot; all superfluous salaries to be stopped, and likewise all that are necessary to be reduced.

Nov. 10th. His Exc^{y} having ordered all soldiers garrisoned under his command in the towns of Holland to receive daily 3 stivers for their keep; the Mayors of Schiedam to point this out to the Captain of the Scottish Comp^{y} there stationed, and that this must satisfy him.

1587

Feb. 13th. Distribution of the Scottish and English Compies and transportation to their destination at the Country's expense, the magistrates to find accommodation for the Scottish Compies with maintenance at 3 stivers per head.

Feb. 17th. Res. on the reception of the Scottish and English Compies; and how to act.

Feb. 18th. Res. on form of oath for Cols and soldiers.

Feb. 23d. For the Scottish Compies in gar. in the towns of Holland by command of His Excy, each to be maintained at 150 head, authority to draw on the receiver Thomas at Dordrecht.

April 13th. J. Verbaas,[1] Scotchman, Ensign of Captain Trel, 50 glds as recompence for the wound he received at Zutphen.

Aug. 4th. To also pay each of the Scottish Companies one month's pay and to insist on the States General resolving on the cloth and the settlement.

Aug. 19th. Commissioners to Count Hohenlo notified regarding the pay of 5 squads of horse and 7 compies of Scots for the expedition and reception of German soldiery, etc.

Aug. 22d. The expenses incurred by Rotterdam, for the transportation of the Compy of Cap. R. Schotte to Haarlem, for supplies and shipments, to be borne by the Country.

---

[1] Probably Forbes, of which the local Aberdeenshire pronunciation is Forbés.

II. STATES OF WAR

1579-1609

Extracts (without date)

Infanterie estant prtement en service pour servir en campaigne.

Item, le Regiment du Colonel Balfour[1] de 15 Enseignes a 150 testes traites et armes comme dessus.[2]

---

[1] Colonel Hary or Henry Balfour served as a captain at Haarlem, and colonel of the Scottish Companies from 1574 to his death in 1580. For his services, see pp. 11-21. Killed at Wassenaar, November 1580. Married Cristian Cant, sister of Captain David Cant. (See *P. C. Reg.* ii. p. 676.) Repeated recommendations in favour of his heirs, especially on July 5th, 1594, and May 1603, and see representations and claims by his son, Sir William Balfour, in 1605. His will is recorded in the Edinburgh Commissariat Records on 3rd June 1587, with an 'eik' on 5th August 1590, and a statement of 'omitted' on 7th January 1593-4.

Sir Henry Balfour's widow, Cristian Cant, subsequently married Captain John Balfour (*Acta et Decreta*, February 1584-85) of Wester Pitcorthie, who was serving in Flanders in 1586, and had died before 17th November 1592. On 30th January 1598-9, a discharge was granted to 'Cristiane Cant, relict of Capt. John Balfour, and Peter, Bishop of Dunkeld, now her spouse.'

It would seem that there were two Henry Balfours at an early period in the service of the Low Countries. The colonel killed at Wassenaar was a younger son of Bartholomew Balfour of Mackareston in Menteith, who was killed at Pinkie in 1547, full brother of James Balfour of Boghall and Easter Tarrie, and half-brother of Colonel Bartholomew Balfour, who subsequently commanded the regiment. He had two sons, Sir William Balfour and Henry (described in the Sinclair MS. as 'colonel,' but who does not appear to have attained higher rank than that of captain or lieutenant), who seems to have died between 1605 and 1613.

Among the MSS. of B. R. T. Balfour of Townley Hall, Drogheda, the representative of Sir William Balfour, are the following documents:—

June 18, 1561 (*sic*) Dillenburg Castle.—Commission from William, Prince of Orange, to Sir Henry de Balfour, a Scottish gentleman of prudence and experience in warfare, to arm and equip a ship and to levy soldiers for the same, to go to the coasts of Spain and Portugal, in order to attack the Prince's enemies and do damage to their persons and goods. He is expressly forbidden to do damage to any subjects of the Queen of England, the Kings of Denmark and Sweden, or any other potentate well disposed to the Christian religion or the Prince.

June 15, 1574.—Commission from William, Prince of Orange, to Sir Henry Balfour to be colonel and superintendent of all the companies of Scots foot-guards in his service.

Nov. 5, 1575.—Order by the nobles and delegates of the cities of Holland for the issue of a yearly pension of 800 florins of 20 stivers apiece to Henry Balfour

1500 Harqueboustiers } £25,500.
750 Picques . . }
Le traictement du Colonnel Balfour, £1200.

for so long as he shall live and show himself friendly to the people of Holland, in consideration of his services against the Spaniards.

Dec. 22. 1576.—Brussels, Commission from the King to Henry de Beaufort to be colonel of 16 ensigns of Scots foot soldiers, at a yearly salary of 500 livres, with suitable salaries specified for the inferior officers.—*Hist. MS.* 10 Rep. App. vi. p. 255.

According to *Douglas's Peerage*, Sir James Balfour of Pittendreich (second son of Andrew Balfour of Mountquhanny), who married the heiress of Burleigh, and was the father of Sir Michael Balfour, created in 1606 Lord Balfour of Burleigh, and Sir James, created in 1619 Lord Balfour of Clonawley, had a fourth son, Henry, 'a general in Holland.' He is also said to have had a sixth son, David, a captain in his brother's regiment, who was drowned in crossing to Holland; and it will be seen (p. 203) that there was also another son, John, who (mentioned as Captain John in the Sinclair MS.) in 1606 offered to raise a company, and had apparently previously served.

The following pedigree (showing 'descent of the Balfours in Holland'), taken from the Sinclair MSS. at Crawford Priory, was communicated to the editor by Mr. C. B. Balfour of Newton Don:—1. Sir Henry Balfour, Knight, brother of Sir Michael Balfour, first Lord Balfour of Burleigh, emigrated to Holland and married Anne, daughter of Sir Paul Bax. He had issue. 2. Lieutenant-Colonel James Balfour; married Anne, daughter of Philip Stewart, and had issue. 3. Lieutenant-Colonel Patrick Balfour; married Elizabeth Fleming, and had issue. 4. Lieutenant-Colonel John Balfour; married Vincentia Moggo, and had issue. 5. Lieutenant-Colonel Patrick Balfour; married Adriana Leydekken, and had issue. 6. Captain John Adrian Balfour.

It would, however, rather seem that the Henry, brother of Lord Balfour of Burleigh, has been confounded with the other Henry, who was really a colonel if not a general; and that he and his own brother David have also been transposed, both by Douglas and in the Sinclair MS. According to an Irish MS. by Bishop Reeves (communicated by Mr. B. T. Balfour of Townley Hall), it was David and not Henry who married Anne Bax, while Henry married Maria de Leon. The latter alliance appears to be confirmed by the Dutch Service Lists, and the Henry who was the husband of Maria de Leon or van Leeuwen died as a captain.

It is further confirmed by the following note from Holland, made by Baron Æneas Mackay, and communicated by Lord Reay:—

'Anna Bax mar., 30 Oct. 1607, Captain David Balfour, and had four children. 1. daughter; 2. Paulus [Patrick?] Balfour, born 11 July 1610; 3. James Michael Balfour, born 22 Nov. 1611; 4. Marcelis Robert Balfour, born 6 March 1613. James Michael Balfour, captain at Gertruydenberg, mar., in Feb. 1637 at de Klundert, Agatha [*sic*] Stuart. They had children, David Balfour, born 10 April 1639; Jacoba Balfour, born 2 Feb. 1644, mar. Johan van Stapele.

'The brother of Anna Bax, Marcelis Bax, had a daughter who in 1632 married Cornelis van Stapele. She had two children, Johan, who married Jacoba Balfour, and Anne Maria van Stapele (b. 1635), who married Patrick Balfour, and had a son, Cornelis Balfour, born 24th Sept. 1669.'

Le Regiment de Stuart[1] de 10 Enseignes traites et armes comme dessus.

Sic { 1500 Harqueboustiers / 750 Picques . . } £17,000.

Le traictement du Colonnel, £996.

Etat et recueil a quoy montent les Regiments et compaignies Infanterie estans en service comme presentem̄ ils sont payes.

Le Regiment de 15 enseignes Ecossois soubz le Col. Balfour montent y companys le traictem̄ Colonnel a la somme de £29,629.

Les Regimens et compaignies ainsy remis et redresses a 150 testes chaque compaignie comme cy devant est dict il semble a monseigneur Le prince d'Oranges que se pourront repartir en deux trouppes l'une en Geldres et l'autre en flandres puis que l'ennemy a la teste vers Geldres ou Frize.

Pour Geldres, etc.

Item, le Regiment de Stuwart:

1000 Harqueboustiers.

500 Picques . . . 10 Enseignes.

L'Infanterie qui servira en campagne pour Brabant ou Flandres.

Le Regiment de Balfour a 150 testes—15 Enseignes.

1500 Harqueboustiers.

750 Picques.

Du nouveau pied conceu par Monseig[r] le Prince d'Oranges pour dresser

---

In a Brussels paper of 28th July 1808, 'Lieutenant-Colonel Balfour de Burleigh is named Commandant of the Troops of the King of the Netherlands in the West Indies.' The name Balfour of Burleigh has also been observed on a door-plate in Utrecht in the present generation.

The difficulty in tracing the various officers of the name who served one or two centuries ago must, however, be great, as Sir Robert Sibbald states that in his time, at the beginning of the eighteenth century, there were no less than thirteen landed proprietors of the name in Fife. (Note communicated by Major Balfour of Fernie.) The Balfours of Tarrie and Mackareston in Menteith were of the same stock as the Lords Balfour of Burleigh, being descended from a younger son of Sir Michael Balfour of Burleigh (1450), who married Elizabeth Douglas, and the direct line of whose eldest son ended in the heiress of Burleigh who married Sir James Balfour of Pittendreich (Sinclair MS.).

It seems therefore clear that the original Colonel Balfour was Sir Henry Balfour of the Mackareston family, who was killed in 1580, being then 'General of the Scots,' and that at a later period there were two Henrys in the Dutch service, neither of whom appears to have attained a higher rank than captain, one being that Colonel Henry's son, who died before 1613, and the other being Henry, brother of the first Lord Balfour of Burleigh, who died in 1615 (see p. 61).

[2] This refers to what is mentioned in a previous section with reference to the English Regiment of Noritz:

'dont les 100 y compruys les officiers seront harqueboustiers et les restans 50 picques a raison de 1700 livres pour chaque compaignie.'

[1] Sir William Stuart of Houston. See p. 115.

les compaignies d'Infanterie de 150 testes dont les cent y compruys les officiers seront Harqueboustiers et les restans 50 armes portent picques revenans pour ung mois de gages a 1700 florins.

Le cap[ne] par mois .	£90	Quatre corporautz .	£64
Lieutenant . .	45	Fourier ou clercq . .	12
Enseigne . . .	40	Deux tambourins . .	24
Deux sergeants .	48	Ung chirurgin . .	12
		S[a]	£335

Aussy reste encore 137 testes desquels il faut oster 50 corseletz reste 87 harqueboustiers lesquels seront traictez cõme sensuyt.

Les 45 a £8 .	£360	10 a £20 . .	£100
12 a 9 .	108	8 a 11 . .	88
		S[a]	£656

12 Mousquetiers.

6 a £12 .	£72	2 a £15 . .	£30
2 a 14 .	28	2 a 16 . .	32
		S[a]	£162

Les 50 corseletz seront traictez cõme sensuyt :

14 a £9 .	£126	2 a £14 . .	£28
13 a 10 .	130	2 a 16 . .	32
9 a 11 .	99	2 a 18 . .	36
8 a 12 .	96		
		S[a]	£547

Soma totale a quoy monte le mois degages pour 150 testes traictez et armez cõme dessus, ... £1700

Regiment of Colonel William Stewart.

[This is from Collection : Council of State.
Portfolio : 'Hoplieden' (captains) 3.
Bundle : General settlement with Col. Morgan, and with other captains, 1572-1581.
23 Folios : General settlement with Col. Stewart, and divers documents pertaining thereto.]

Life Company[1] [*i.e.* the Colonel's] March 1st, 1579—April 18th, 1581.
Capt Dallachy . . . ,, ,,
Mangrief . . . ,, ,,
Penthone [Renton ?] . ,, ,,

[1] From the settlement which Colonel Stewart finally made in 1593, it would seem that at 1st March 1579 there were five companies in his regiment, namely, his own, James Stuart's, Andrew Stewart's, Thomson's, and Anstruther's. (See also pp. 16, 19, and 20.) In December 1586 it was resolved that the Scots should be divided into two regiments, one of ten companies under Balfour, and one of four companies under Patton. In the following year Patton betrayed Gueldres, and went over to the Prince of Parma, and in 1588 he appears as colonel of a regiment of 'Scots mixed with Walloons.' (See note, p. 26,

Trottar . . .	,,	,,
Thomson . . .	,,	,,
Amstratter,[1] . .	,,	,,
Gordon,[2] . . .	,,	,,
Blayr . . .	,,	,,
Haultain, now Patton,	,,	,,

The Col.'s staff.

1579

Exhibe par Monseig[r] le Prince d Oranges en l'assamblee des Etats gnaulx le 12 de decembre.

L'Estat quil semble a son Ex[e] pouvoir estre suyoy pour la Levee de l'armee quil juge estre necessaire a estre mise sus pour l'annee qui vient.

---

also p. 96.) In 1587 Balfour's regiment consisted of twelve companies, including those of Dallachy and Blair. Probably these were two of Patton's regiment, which he did not take over, and which were joined with the ten under Balfour's command. William Renton or Penton [Panton] appears in the general list of 1586, and his son Andrew, as drawing a pension, in 1595. Captain William Moncrieff was killed on the Kowenstyn Dyke before Antwerp in 1585. See petition of his widow, Bentgen Jansz, November 1618.

[1] Anstruther. Probably one of the family of Anstruther of that Ilk. In 1578 six of them were serving at the same time in the Scots Guards in France. 'Peter Anstruther, a captain in Flanders, who died in 1589,' is mentioned by Wood in *The East Neuk of Fife* as probably a younger son of John Anstruther of Anstruther, who married *c.* 1527 as his second wife Elizabeth Spens of Wormiston. (Note communicated by Sir Ralph Anstruther of Balcaskie.)

[2] 'The year of God 1585 Captain Alexander Gordon (brother to William Gordon of Gight) was Governor of the fort of Tour-Louis besyde Antwerp when it was rendered to the Duke of Parma: which fort was manfullie defended by Captane Alexander Gordon a long time against the Spaniards with the loss of much of his owne blood and the lyves of many of his soldiers. Then was he maid Governor of Bergen-op-Zoom, by Prince Maurice his excellence, and thairafter maid colonell of a Scottish regiment. In end coming home to visit his friends in Scotland he was slain in Menteith by some evil willers, who had secreitlie layed an ambush for him. He married Jacobee Pedralis of Aungadere, ane Italian gentlewoman by whom he had two sons, George Gordon and Captain John Gordon. This captain John Gordon was slain in Holland, and had a son called Alexander Gordon.'—Sir Robert Gordon's *History of the Earldom of Sutherland.*

A Captain Gordon was killed before Antwerp on 13th August 1584. The pedigree of the Gordons of Gight, given in the *Thanage of Fermartyn*, states that William Gordon, who succeeded to Gight on the slaughter of his kinsman 'on the shore of Dundee by the Master of Forbes and the Goodman of Towie,' had three brothers—(2) Captain John Gordon, who was killed at Donibristle in the celebrated attack made on that house by the Earl of Huntly when the Earl of Moray was killed; (3) Alexander, killed in the wars of Holland; (4) George, killed by the Master of Menteith.

La quelle debvrait estre prest pour le printemps tant des gens de cheval que de pied pionniers artillerie et esquippage.

Gens de cheval, etc.

Gens de pied pour la campaigne.

Ecossois. 2000 harquebousiers mil corpselets.

Exhibe p. le tresorier de guerre, van Beke, le 22 de Decembre.

Estat en brief a quoy revient ung mois de gaiges soldees et traictemēt des gens de guerre tant de cheval que de pied que l'on entendt presentemēt entretenir pour le service de messieurs Les Estats ensamble les traictements des chefs du camp avec les trains de vivres et de l'artillerie coē il sens^{t}.

Gens de piedt pour la Camp^{ne} Asscavoir.

A deux milles Harquebousiers et mil corpselets Ecossois ils se pourront mestre en 20 comp^{ies} soubs 2 Regiments pour le d. mois aux pris chacune comp^{ie} et le traictement couronnel revenans ensemble a la somme de £42480

1586

Rendered Nov. 28th.

Cavallerie

Captain Wisschard.[1]

Hollande Infanterie

Col. Balfour[2] £1800

---

[1] Alexander Wishart received commission in March 1586 as cavalry captain in recognition of his 'good service at the dyke of Kowenstyn.' Obtained on 7th June 1592 an Act discharging legal proceedings in Scotland at the instance of the States or their Confederates against him and his spouse, until they are paid the debts due to them by the inhabitants of Bommel in Guelderland (*P. C. Reg.*). On March 14th, 1616, a quarrel having broken out at Leith between Sir William Balfour and Captain Alexander Wishart, Sir William offering a stroke of a rod to Captain Wishart, and he, after his sword was broken, having shot a pistolet at the said Sir William, they were warded in the Castle of Edinburgh, and formally reconciled by the Privy Council, to prevent 'distraction and factions among the Scottis captains and commanderis in the Low Countries.' See frequent references to him and his company, *infra*.

[2] Bartholomew Balfour, Colonel of the old Scots Regiment from 1585 or 1586 to 1594. Served at Antwerp and *passim* to 1594 (*supra*, pp. 24-28). He was wounded near Groningen, and left the Dutch service in 1594, on account of differences with the Estates, receiving an honourable pension (pp. 20, 56, and 114). On 6th January 1603 an action was raised by Sir Michael Balfour of Burley and Colonel Bartill Balfour, his factor. Sir Michael had imported arms from France for the defence of the country, was charged for duty, and brought a suspension, which was sustained (*P. C. Reg.*). Commission for his 'compagnie colonelle'

Gordon[1]	£1120
Cant[2]	1530
Waddel[3] réduit et estimé a 200 testes . .	2020
Blaire[4]	1720
Melvil[5]	1540
Trail[6]	1450
Prop[7] réduit et estimé a 200 testes . .	2200
Kiets	1180

Frize

Meldrom.[8]

At the end appears a list of 64 Comp[ies]:

1588 on p. 84. Colonel Bartholomew was a younger son of Bartholomew Balfour of Mackareston, in Menteith (killed at Pinkie 1547), by his second wife, Margaret Drummond, daughter of Alexander Drummond of Carnock, previously wife of Macaulay of Ardincaple. 'She bore to him,' says Lord Strathallan, in his *Genealogy of the Drummonds*, 'Colonel Bartholomew Balfour, the father of Sir Philip Balfour, both knowen for valiant men in the wars of the Netherlands.'

Colonel Bartholomew married Beatrix Cant, whose will, in which she bequeathed a dyamont ring to her nephew, Sir William Balfour, is noted in the Edinburgh Commissariat Register, vol. xlvii. It is dated January 28th, 1611, and she is designed as 'sumtyme spous to Colonell Barthilmo Balfour of Ridhews.' In 1589 Bartholomew Balfour, 'coronator,' and his wife bought Prior Letham, which was sold in 1597. In 1601 he bought 'Reidheuchis,' in the parish of Currie, Midlothian, which was sold by his son Philip in 1618. He was alive in 1605. Besides Sir Philip, afterwards colonel of a regiment, he had a second son, James, a captain in Holland, and was probably the grandfather or great-grandfather of Brigadier Bartholomew Balfour killed at Killiecrankie in 1689 (see p. 70, note). See also pp. 96 *et seq.*, 114, and 245.

[1] See note, p. 47.

[2] David Cant, brother-in-law of Colonel Henry Balfour, dead July 1592, when John Mitchell succeeded him. Recommendation in favour of the widow of his brother and heir, Walter Cant, on 5th July 1594, and see claims of his nephew, Sir William Balfour, *infra*, pp. 252-255. See also as to a dispute to which Walter Cant, younger, was a party, which had been 'remitted to the decision of the Colonels and Captains of the Scots Companies in Flanders,' 25th October 1581.—*P. C. Reg.*

[3] William Waddell left service in 1594, and was succeeded by his brother Robert, formerly his lieutenant. 'Captain Waddell' appears in pension list of 1597.

[4] The widow and two children of Captain Blair appear in pension list of 1595.

[5] An Alexander Melville was killed before Groningen, 15th July 1594, but his commission as captain was dated 3rd February 1589.

[6] (David) Trail, dead before March 31st, 1590, when Captain William Brog succeeded him. His widow and heir were recommended in 1594.

[7] John Prop, sent to States from Antwerp, 1585. Dead in June 1596, when succeeded by Arthur Stuart. His widow was receiving pension in 1599, and his children appear in 1607.

[8] Captain Meldrum's widow appears in pension list of 1595.

Anglois

Including (apparently by mistake)—

Rally	1180
Boswel	£1180
Guillame Morray [1]	1700
Dallachy [2]	,,
Wm. Nysbeth [3]	,,
Alex. Morray [4]	,,
Renton [5]	,,
Jan Balfour [6]	,,

[1] Sir William Murray of Pitcairly, second son of Sir William Murray of Tullibardine (ancestor of Duke of Athol), left the Dutch service in September 1588, and was succeeded in his company by Alexander Murray, his brother (pp. 89 and 106), who had previously commanded a company. He had claims against the States, which were settled in 1594 when he came over as ambassador from King James, and received a pension, settled first on himself and subsequently on his children (see pp. 74, 153, and 233). He received another recommendation from King James in 1599, when he came over to settle the affairs of his brother, Colonel Murray, killed at Bommel. Douglas (followed by Burke) and the *Chronicles of the Families of Atholl and Tullibardine* state that Sir William Murray, tenth Baron of Tullibardine, who married Catherine Campbell of Glenurchy, and died in 1562, had Sir William, who succeeded him; Alexander, a colonel in the service of the States of Holland; James of Purdoves, and Andrew Murray. Sir William, the eldest son, who married Lady Agnes Graham, and died in 1583, had John, his heir, Sir William of Pitcairly, Alex., said to have died young, and Mungo of Dunork. But it would seem that Colonel Alexander Murray really belonged to the later generation.

[2] Captain John Dallachy continued to serve until 1599, when he was succeeded in October (being dead) by John Kilpatrick. Probably killed at Bommel. His widow (Elizabeth Crichton) and two children appear in list of 1607. See recommendation 'en sa vieillesse' by King James, April 1599. Attended Dutch ambassadors in Scotland in 1594.

[3] William Nisbet. Received captain's commission on 17th Oct. 1581, in succession to Captain John Nisbet, in the regiment of Count Diedrich Sonoy (p. 76). The name Nisbet occurs until 1600, when Hugo Nisbet succeeded his father, and was killed at Nieuport. The children of Captain John, and the widow (El. Forbes) and children of Captain William appear in pension list of 1607.

[4] Alexander Murray succeeded his brother in his company in 1588, became colonel of the Scottish Regiment in 1594. Killed at Bommel, 1599 (see p. 29).

[5] See note, p. 47.

[6] A Captain John Balfour, who had previously served with distinction, received a commission as cavalry captain in March 1586 (p. 79). A John Balfour also appears in list of 1587, and then disappears. This was probably Captain John Balfour of Wester Pitcorthie, second husband of Christian Cant, dead in 1592, who had in 1586 a law-suit with Alexander Balfour of Denmylne for redelivery of 'twa blankis' left with him on leaving for Flanders. In 1594 a Captain John Balfour is mentioned by the ambassadors of the States as seen by them at the Scottish Court. This was probably Captain John Balfour, brother of David

Montgomery	£1700
Olifart	,,

1587
Rendered Dec. 31st.

Foot

Companies of 200 men

Actual number at the last muster.

Col. Balfour	200

Companies of 150 men

Cant	148	Hay	144
Waddel	120	Guil[e] Morray	150
Treil	144	Jan Balfour	103
Blair	150	Prop	137
Nysbet	135	Alex. Morray	126
Dallachy	150		

List of pay

Col. Balfour with one S[r] major at 80£ and one Provost Marshal at 50£ monthly	£530

1588 and 1589

Foot soldiers paid by Holland

	Estimated			Estimated	
Col. Balfour	200 men	£2200	Hay, now Melvil,[1]	130 men	£1500
Waddel	130	1500	Prop	130	1500
Cant	150	1700	Morray	130	1500
Dallachy	130	1500	Trail	130	1500
Nysbet	130	1500			

Balfour of Bandon, who, along with Margaret de Primzie, his spouse, entered into a contract with Michael Balfour of Mountquhanny and Andrew Balfour, his son, on 7th June 1598. On 6th September 1599 Andrew Balfour of Strathor granted an obligation for 8000 marks to Margaret de Primzie, relict of Captain John Balfour. Bandon was possessed by this family from at least 1498 to 1642. From the resolutions of Holland it appears that Captain John Balfour, who had a claim in respect of Captain John Petam's company, was appointed second sergeant-major in July 1597, the Prince of Orange being unwilling to supersede Sergeant-Major Brog, and Holland having three months before appointed Balfour. On March 15th, 1605, a petition was referred to the committee from Margrieta Proignere, widow of the late Captain Balfour, and before him widow of the late Captain Johan de Petain. The widow of Captain John Balfour appears in the pension list of 1609. In April 1606 John Balfour, brother of Baron Balfour of Burley, presented a request to raise a company, which was not disposed of (p. 203).

[1] Alexander Melville, commissioned February 3rd, 1589. Killed at Groningen 15th July 1594. His widow (Maria Rigg) appears in pension list of 1597. For names of children, see list of 1607. A branch of the Fife house of Melville is still represented in Holland.

Pay on Holland

Col. Balfour with one S[t] major at 80£ and one Provost Marshal at 50£ . . . £530

Settling of Accounts with the Captain Mathias Ralling

Exhibitum, Aug. 24, 1592.

Escompte faict de la part des Estatz généraulx des Provinces unies du Pays Bas avec le Capitaine Mathias Ralling, des services par Iceluy faicts avecq sa Compaignie de gens de pied, depuis le XIV[e] de Janvier 1587, jour de sa première moustre, jusques au XXIV[e] de Juillet ensuivant, que Alexandre Mouray est venu en sa place. Faict en libvres, soulx et deniers de 40 gros pièces.

Premièrement revient au Cap[ne] depuis le 14[e] Janvier 1587, qu'il a esté premièrement par moustre a la ville de Rotterdam, trouvé fort de 150 testes, jusques au 20[e] febvrier ensuivant inclus, faisant 37 jours à l'advenant de [c]£17 par mois			
La somme de	£1965	12	6
Encores depuis le 21[e] de Febvrier 1587 que la dite compaignie a de recheff passé moustre en la ville de Delff et trouvé fort de 141 testes (en retirant le sergeant Maior illecq passé et non paye par le dit Cap[ne]) . Jusqu'au 7[e] de May ensuivant faisant le temps de deux mois 12 Jours, à l'advenant de £1610 par mois .			
revient	4823	15	0
Encores depuis le 8[e] de May 1587 jusqu'au 28[e] de Juillet que Alexandre Mouray est venu en sa place, faisant deux mois 18 jours, à l'advenant de £1360 par mois, pour 116 testes			
revient	3485		
Somma	9274	7	6
de quoy rabatu le sixiesme denier à cause du moindre nombre, changement des noms, et desspenses tombées passant par le plat pays, reste . . .	7728	13	4
y adiousté £600, quoy luy a (été) donné en récompense du service qu'il a fait devant date de la dite moustre			
Revient ensemble: huict mille trois cents vingt et huict libvres, treize souls, quatre deniers . . .	8328	13	4

Payements faicts à l'encontre et premièrement en argent

Premièrement payé par le Recepveur général le 19[e] Janvier 1587	£1700	0	0
le 26[e] Janvier à Michel Gordon, gentilhomme de la compaignie, ...	15	0	0

le 23e de Mars 1587 par descharge sur le recepveur de Hollande £1620, mais comme suivant la reveue, il n'a esté payé là dessus que £1177, partant seullement ici	£1177	0	0
le 25e de May 1587 encore	1360	0	0
Encores par ceux d'Hollande par les mains de Lodensteyn le 25e d'Avril 1587	1550	8	0
par les mesmes par de Lint sur l'escript de son Excce et ordonnance du 20e de May 1587 . . .	834	12	0
Première Somme	6637	0	0

Aultres payements faicts par prestes, vivres et armes

Par Thomas Rochusz surquoy ordonnance a suivy du 20e Febvrier 1587	£121	2	6
Par ceulx de Cluyndert, surquoy ordonnance a suivy du 25e Febvrier 1587	35	0	9
Par Biermans, recepveur à Aernhem par 31 recepisses, depuis le 8e d'Avril 1587 jusques au premier de Juille ensuyvent	1544	0	0
Par Caesvell 20 musquettes, 84 harquebuses, avecq les furnitures, trois rondasses, 40 corcelettes, 40 picques	1444	0	0
La portion pour ceste compaignie des vivres despartis au Régiment Escossois en l'expédition faicts en Brabant, l'an '87	568	14	8
Encores de Mierop par ceulx de Wesip . . .	258	0	0
De Thomas Rachusz par ceulx de Geertruydenberge .	11	13	6
De Regelinck par ceulx de Schombourg . . .	44	3	0
Encores par de Lint	31	15	6
De Lodenstein, par ceulx de Delff . . .	48	15	10
Encores par ceulx de Wesip	8	10	2
Encores par Iceulx	24	16	2
Encores par Thomas Rochusz	71	1	0
De Mierop par ceulx de Sevenbergen . . .	18	16	0
Encores à l'hospital à Leyde	5	3	0
à l'hospital à Delff	19	10	0
à l'hospital à Dordrecht	17	15	0
à l'hospital à Amsterdam	3	1	11
à l'hospital à la Haye	0	24	0
Par ceulx d'Utrecht	36	6	7
Encores rabaton au Capitaine selon la vieille Coustume le Centième denier de tous les ds payements, excepté des £1700 qu'il a receu du Recepveur général où le dt rabatement a esté une fois fait, faisant £9190, 19s. 3d. de quoy le co denier monte . . .	90	18	2

Seconde Somme	£4345 17 5
Totale Somme	10982 17 5

Revient doncques trop receu : deux mille six cent, quarante et quatre libvres, quatre souls, 1 denier (£2644, 4s. 1d.) . . . . . .

Ainsy faict et descompté à la Haye, à condition que s'il se trouve avoir esté quelque chose davantage et profite par ceste compaignie soit en logements par le plat pays ou qu'ils ayent les despens es villes sur les bourgeois ou quelque chose d'aultre qui n'est point spécifié cy dessus en ceste descompte soit en vivres, armes, munitions, vestemens au aultrement, que tout cela pourra estre cy après sans aulcune contradiction rabatu au payement qui en sera faict, selon qu'il comment.

Faict le 23e d'Aougst 1592. Signé C. Aerssen.

Matthias Ralling.

1595

Rendered Nov. 18th.

Cavalry

Edmond[1] 100 men £2275

Foot soldiers paid by Holland

Col. Morray	200 men	£2264	Wm. Waddel[4]	150 men	£1748
Wm. Balfour[2]	150	1748	John Michel[5]	,,	,,
Wm. Brog[3]	,,	,,	John Prop .	,,	,,

[1] Sir William Edmond, a native of Stirling, received commission as captain of a company of lancers 10th June 1589 (p. 90). Succeeded Alexander Murray in command of the old Scots Regiment in 1599. Recommended (p. 179). For his services see pp. 29-35. Killed at Rheinberg Sept. 1606. Widow and children recommended by King James 1611.

[2] William Balfour received commission, in February 1594, as captain, in succession to Colonel Barthold Balfour, whose lieutenant he had been (p. 92). Served at Huy in 1595, and was killed at Hulst in 1596, being succeeded, on 30th August, by Archibald Buntin. On 25th May 1598 an application was made by David Balfour, servitor to Mr. Henry Balfour, advocate, against Sir Michael Balfour of Balgonie, as to the sum of 400 crowns received by him from the deceased Captain William Balfour.

[3] Sir William Brog. Captain, March 31st, 1590. Sergeant-Major, 1588. Recommended by King James, 1599. Lieutenant-Colonel, 1600. Colonel in succession to Sir William Edmond, September 12th, 1606. Commanded the regiment till 1636. Specially selected in 1595 to act as sergeant-major of the force under Justinus of Nassau which went to relieve Cambrai and co-operate with Henry IV. of France (see Commission, p. 94). He was dead by 13th March 1636.

[4] William Waddel, appointed August 3rd, 1595, in succession to G. Johnston (deceased), having already filled the place for some time. Johnston had been appointed, on July 18th, 1594, in succession to Robert Waddell, who had been killed before Groningen on July 15th. (Robert had succeeded his brother William shortly before.) Was killed at Meurs in 1597. The children of Captain Waddel appear in the pension list of 1599. For their names, see list of 1607.

[5] John (or James) Mitchell succeeded Captain Cant on 28th July, 1592. He

Wm. Nysbeth	150 men	£1748	John Strachan[1]	150 men	£1748
John Dallachy	,,	,,	James Egger[2]	,,	,,

Pay on Holland

Col. Morray	£400	0	0
The pension of the Prince of Scotland of 5000£ yearly, of which the share of Holland amounts to 2655£, 19s. 4d., which is monthly	221	6	2

Wardens

Brog Warden (St Major) of the Scots . . .	30	0	0

N.B. Is Brog to be allowed to fill the two offices of Warden and Captain at the same time, this must be looked into.

Officers of Justice

Alex. Murray,[3] Provost Marshal of the Scots . .	50	0	0

Pay on Zeeland

The pension of the Prince of Scotland, etc.,	£653	13	0	£54	9	5

Pay on Utrecht

Ditto	274	14	0	22	17	10

Pay on Groningen and Ommelanden

Ditto	366	5	5	30	10	5

Pay on the Veluwe (Gelderland)

Ditto	325	0	0	27	1	8

---

was killed at the battle of Nieuport in 1600, and his widow appears in the pension list of 1608.

[1] John Strachan received commission, in succession to Alexander Melville, on 18th July 1594. Killed at Nieuport 1600. His widow (Anna Kirkpatrick) in pension list of 1607.

[2] James Egger (Edgar) received commission December 11th, 1589, on king's recommendation (new company). Killed at Hulst before 30th August 1596, when he was succeeded by his lieutenant and brother Alexander Egger. Widow and children in pension list of 1599. Two children, Nicholas and Margaret, are noted in 1607. In 1599 Nicholas Edgar, heir of Captain James Edgar, his father, was retoured in the lands of Patrick Edgar, merchant in Edinburgh, and, as heir of his father, in part of the lands of Lymphoy and Hillhousefield in the baronies of Restalrig and Broughton. Edgar of Wedderlie, in Berwickshire, was an ancient family of Saxon origin, which, like the Hepburns and Rentons, held their lands of the old Earls of Dunbar. A branch of the name settled in Dumfriesshire, and in the sixteenth century a rich burgess of the name, Patrick Edgar, lived in Edinburgh, and his family were owners of Peffermiln, where their arms showed connection with the house of Wedderlie. In 1596 Captain James Edgar, a gentleman of Scotland, who had served the French king, received a passport for himself and his page to go through England to France.—*The Scottish House of Edgar.*

[3] Alexander Murray received commission as Provost Marshal on 31st May 1595.

Pay on Overyssel

The pension of the Prince of Scotland, etc.,	£175	0	0	£14	11 8

Pay on Vrieslandt

,, ...	549	8	1	45	15 8

Other payments made by the Receiver from the balance of the contribution of Brabant

The widow of Cap. Meldrom 250£ yearly and monthly .	£20	16	3
The widow of Cap[n] Blaire, with her 2 children . .	33	6	8
Bartholt Balfour, formerly Colonel, at 1000£ . .	83	6	8
Andries Penton,[1] son of Guillaume Penton, 150£ yearly .	12	10	0
The widow of Johan Cuninga[2] at 300£ . . .	25	0	0
,, ,, Cap[n] Hans Craeck, 100£ . . .	8	6	8

1597

Rendered June 2d

Footsoldiers paid by Holland

Col. Morray	200 men	£2264	Michel	150 men	£1748
Waddel	150	1748	Strachan	,,	,,
Dallachy	,,	,,	Stuart[3]	,,	,,
Nysbeth	,,	,,	Alex. Egger[4]	,,	,,
Brogh	,,	,,	Brontin[5]	,,	,,

Pay on Hollandt

Col. Morray	£400	0	0

Pensions on Hollandt

The Pension of the Prince of Scotlandt of £5000, etc. (see 1595).

Wardens

Brog St Major of the Scots	30	0	0

Officers of Justice

Alex. Murray, Provost Marshal of the Scottish Regt .	50	0	0

[1] Or Renton.

[2] John Cunningham is recorded as having distinguished himself as an artillerist at the siege of Haarlem. He is referred to in the resolutions of Holland in 1585 as Colonel Cunningham. In 1581, being then 'commander of the artillery,' he received a commission as 'Assistant' (Adjutant) to Count William Louis of Nassau, at Dockum (see p. 77), and in the same year a commission for the relief of Naijesijl (p. 78). He married Anna van Duivenvoorde.

[3] Arthur Stuart succeeded Captain Prop, June 16th, 1596. Killed at Nieuport 1600. His widow (Anna van Leeuwen) appears in pension list of 1607.

[4] Succeeded his brother August 30th, 1596. Killed at Meurs before November 28th, 1597.

[5] Archibald Buntin (?) succeeded William Balfour 30th August 1596. Dead before August 12th, 1599. Probably killed at one of the sharp actions near Bommel.

Ministers

Andreas Hunterus,[1] Minister of the Scottish Regimen^{t}		£30	0 0

Other pensions pay^{e} at the Office of the Receiver-General

Col. Balfour	£1000 yearly	£83	6 3
Cap. Waddel	700	58	6 8
Widow of J. Cuninga	300	25	0 0
,, ,, Cap. Meldrom	250	20	16 6
,, ,, ,, Blaire and 2 children	400	33	6 8
The same additionally	150	12	10 0
Widow of Cap. J. Craeck	100	8	6 9
,, ,, ,, Melvil	400	33	6 8
Andries Penthon, son of Cap^{n} G^{me} Penthon	150	12	10 0

1598

Footsoldiers

Col. Morray	160 men	£1852	Michel	120 men	£1435
Andries Morray[2]	120	1435	Strachan	,,	,,
Dallachy	,,	,,	Stuart	,,	,,
Nysbeth	,,	,,	Robt. Bercley[3]	,,	,,
Brog	,,	,,	Bontin	,,	,,

Compan^{ies} from the undivided (war) expenses and now charged to Holland

Caddel[4]	150 men	£1748	Hamilton[5]	150 men	£1748

[1] Andrew Hunter was for a long time chaplain. See representations by him (p. 245) in 1611 and later.

[2] Andrew Moray succeeded William Waddell, November 26th, 1597. Captured and killed at Nieuport, 1600. Captain Andrew Moray, fifth son of Robert Moray of Abercairney, and Catherine Murray (of Tullibardine), died in Holland without issue (*Douglas's Baronage*). An older brother was Sir David of Gorthy, and a third Mungo Moray of Craigie, who married a daughter of George Halkett of Pitfirran. A younger brother, James, also died without issue.

[3] Robert Barclay succeeded Alexander Egger, November 20th, 1597. Captured and killed at Nieuport, 1600. King James shortly afterwards gave his brother, David Barclay of Struiy (*sic*, Urie or Towie?), a letter of recommendation. See *infra*, p. 181, Requests by his widow 1604, and son 1607; also p. 211.

[4] James Caddell received commission (new company), 15th August 1596. Question with Utrecht as to his arrears, 1604. On 7th August 1595 the authorities of Holland considered a letter from the Prince 'strongly recommending Jaques Caddel, for his good qualities and services, as L^{t}, to be granted the company he served in.' He died as lieutenant-colonel in 1618, having served in the Juliers campaign. He married Catherina van Duivenvoorde, and on her petition their son Thomas received extraordinary pay in Colonel Brogh's Company, until he should be able to carry arms.—Res. of Holland, 1618.

[5] John Hamilton received commission (new company) 15th August, 1596. (Must be distinguished from Cavalry Captain John Hamilton, who received his commission as such on April 14th, 1599, and was killed at Newport). On 13th November 1621 a petition was presented to the Scottish Privy Council by Captain

Pay

Col. Morray	£400 0 0

Wardens

Thos. Nysche,[1] S^{t} Major of the Scots . . .	80 0 0

Officers of Justice

Alex. Murray, Provost Marshal of the Scots . .	50 0 0

Ministers

Andreas Hunterus, Minister of the Scottish Reg^{t} .	30 0 0

Pensions payable at the Office of the Receiver-General for settlement of accounts and previous services

Col. Balfour, yearly . . .	£1000	£83 6 3
The children of Cap^{n} Waddel, deceased .	600 yearly	50 0 0
Widow Johan Cuninga . . .	300	25 0 0
,, Cap^{n} Meldrom . . .	250	20 16 8
,, ,, Blair, with her 2 children .	400	33 6 8
The same additionally . . .	150	12 10 0
Widow Cap^{n} Mellvil . . .	400	33 6 8
Andries Renton, son of Cap^{n} Guillaume Renton	150	12 10 0

Summary of the divided monthly war expenses or required to be divided over the 7 provinces, etc., conform the statement rendered July 4th 1598

Undivided (war) expenses

Additional 13 English Comp^{ies}, etc.	
The pension of the Prince of Scotland at 5000£ yearly which pro month amounts to	£416 13 4
2 Comp^{ies} of Scots, each of 150 men, at 1265£, 18s. 4d., together monthly	2531 16 8

1599 [2]

Cavalry

Edmond . . .	80 men . . .	£2125

Harry Bruce to stop proceedings against him 'for the slaughter of Captain John Hamilton in single combat in the Low Country of Flanders some seventeen years ago.' But John appears to have been a mistake for William (p. 66). See representation for when in garrison at Nymguen in 1601 (p. 184). A Captain Hamilton was killed at Grave in 1602, and one of the name had been in service in 1594 (see p. 177). Captain John Hamilton had died before January 16th, 1620, when he was succeeded by Captain Marjoribanks, and had 'served more than forty years.' See resolution in favour of a petition by his daughter, *infra*.

[1] Thomas Niche, formerly lieutenant of Captain Murray, received his commission as sergeant-major (*sic*) on 6th October 1598. He was probably killed before Rheinberg in 1601, for Prince Maurice there appointed Archibald Erskine to succeed him on July 22nd, 1601.

[2] This is a curious list, and really represents the state of the regiment after

Footsoldiers paid by Holland

Col. Edmondt	. .	150 men	. . . £2014

---

the battle of Nieuport in 1600. The Holland lists for 1599 and 1600 are as follows:—

1599	1600
Col. Murray and R. Henderson.	Col. Edmond.
Bruntin and Col. Edmond.	Henrison.
Andro Murray.	*Murray.*
Dallachy and Kilpatrick.	*Kirkpatrick.*
Nysbeth.	Nysbeth and his son *Hugo Nysbeth.*
Brogh.	Brog.
Mitchel.	*Michel,* with James Phls and Sincler.
Strachan.	*Strachan.*
Stuart.	*Stewart* and Neisch.
Berclay.	*Berclay.*
	Daniel Mackigny.
	Allane Coutes.
	Henry Balfour.
	Caddel.
	Ker.

The list of 1600 indicates very plainly the effects of the disaster at Nieuport. The names in italics are the officers who fell. The others recorded by the historians as present were, besides Colonel Edmond and Sergeant-Major Brog, Henderson, Caddel, and Ker. Robert Henderson, the first of three brothers who were to distinguish themselves in the Dutch service, had succeeded to Colonel Murray's company in June 1599. Caddel, and Hamilton, whose name does not appear, and who may have been in garrison elsewhere (his name appearing under Utrecht in 1604), commanded the two companies added in 1596, and John Ker received his commission on April 24th, 1599, as captain of a new company then raised. On September 15th, 1599, the States-General had resolved to maintain 'at the general expense 13 companies of Scots, viz., the life company at 150 men, and 12 other companies, each of 113 men.' On 3rd July 1600, they resolved 'that all the Scots remaining after the defeat they lately suffered shall be divided over the 4 companies of which the captains are still living.' Edmond, Henderson, Brog, and Caddel appear in later lists. Ker received a letter of recommendation from King James on 27th December 1600, having been called to Scotland on private affairs (p. 182). Archibald Johnston was appointed in his place shortly before.

It would seem that while Murray's, Kirkpatrick's, Nisbet's, Strachan's, and Barclay's companies were completely wiped out, Mitchel's and Stuart's were so far extant that they could still be held to exist, and Sinclair and Neish to be successors of their former captains. Colonel Edmond brought over 800 Scots in October, and the States ordered three new companies to be formed. These were evidently Mackenzie's, Balfour's, and Coutts's.

Robert Henderson was the second son of James Henderson of Fordell, and Jean, daughter of William, tenth baron of Tulliebardine. His elder brother,

Daniel Makingny[1] 113 men £1502 | Allyn Coutys[2] 113 men £1502

Sir John Henderson, married first a daughter of Sir Michael Balfour of Burleigh, and second, Anna, daughter of Sir Robert Halkett of Pitfirran. It is curious that while Douglas mentions Sir Francis Henderson (the fourth son) as killed at Bergen-op-Zoom in the Dutch service, he merely says that Sir Robert and Sir James (the third son) distinguished themselves in the Danish, Swedish, and French wars. On 17th March 1618, there was submitted to the Scots Privy Council a complaint by John Boyle of Kilburn against Robert Galbraith of Culcreuch, as cautioner for him 'at the hands of Sir Robert Henderson of Kiniegask (Finnegask?) Coronell over the Scottis Regiment in the country of Flanders.' Robert Henderson was transferred to Lord Buccleuch's regiment soon after its formation, and ultimately succeeded to the command. In 1610 he commanded the Scots regiment (made up from the Dutch companies) sent along with two English ones in English pay to Cleves, and distinguished himself at the siege of Juliers. He, and not his brother Sir Francis, was killed at Bergen-op-Zoom in 1622. His widow, Anna Kirkpatrick, recommended by King James and the Scottish Council, was granted an annuity in recognition of his good service. For an account of his last moments, see Introduction to Div. III. Petitions by his widow in 1622, 1624 and 1626.

John Kirkpatrick succeeded Captain Dallachy on 15th October 1599, having been formerly lieutenant of the company. He was killed at Nieuport. His widow (Susana Splitkoff) appears in the pension list of 1607, and with her children, *John*, Maria, and Helena, in 1609.

James Caddel received his commission on August 15th, 1596, served as lieutenant-colonel of the Scots regiment in the expedition to Juliers and Cleves in 1610; died before January 14th, 1617, when succeeded by Thomas Edmond.

John Ker has been already referred to. He was recommended by King James in December 1600 (see p. 152), having been in Scotland for private affairs, which necessitated his leaving the service of the States, and being anxious to dispose of his company to a friend.

The name of another Scotsman of an ancient house who fell has been preserved by a communication from a descendant at Vienna to his chief in Scotland.

James Wemyss of Caskieberran (1554), whose wife was Janet Durie, younger son of David Wemyss of that Ilk, had eight sons, of whom, according to tradition, five went to Flanders. From a Cornelius Wemyss killed at Nieuport, whose eldest son entered the Venetian service, came the Italian family of Wemyss.—*Memoirs of Wemyss of Wemyss*, by Sir William Fraser.

[1] Daniel Mackigny (Donald? Mackenzie) received his commission on October 24th, 1600, when Colonel Edmond had first brought over 800 Scots. In 1608, his company was in garrison at Aardenburg (see p. 214). His wife's name was Beatrix van Berchem, and his son, John Mackenzie, was appointed ensign in his company in succession to William Grant, on his petition on 16th February 1618. He was dead before the 9th of July, when a petition from his widow was considered.

[2] Allan Coutts received a captain's commission in 1600, became lieutenant-colonel of Sir William Brog's regiment, and had died before May 12th, 1631, when he was succeeded as captain by George Keir. Petitions by his widow, Christina Boswell, in 1631 *et seq.* Coutts of Auchtertoul was an ancient family in Cromar, in Aberdeenshire.

Henry Balfour[1]	113 men	£1502	Jacques Caddel	113 men	£1502
Brog	,,	,,	Robert Henrison	,,	,,
Cincler[2]	,,	,,	Archibald Arskyn[3]	,,	,,

Pay on Holland

Col. Edmond	£400
W^m Brog, L^t Col. of the Scots	100

Wardens

Thos. Ewink,[4] s^t major of the Scots	80
Thos. Maesterton[5] quarter master of the Scots, usually 36 when with the army, 14 additional here	36

Officers of Justice

Wm Carcadie,[6] Provost marshal of the Scottish Reg^t . .	50

Ministers

Andreas Hunterus, minister of the Scottish Reg^t . .	30

Extraordinary pay, when with the army

Cap^n Meesterton q^r m^r of the Scottish Reg^t, with the army 14 guilders monthly, additional pay, facit for 6 months .	84

Zeeland

from the undivided (war expenses)

Bruse[7]	113 men . . .	£1572

[1] Henry Balfour had, in 1611, been a captain for twelve years. He then petitioned for a lieutenant-colonelcy, and again in 1613, and in 1614 for a lieutenant-colonelcy or sergeant-majorship. He was dead before August 4th, 1615, when he was succeeded as captain by Robert Coutts. He is designed as Sir Henry Balfour in the recommendation of the British Ambassador of 1611, and had also the recommendation of the Princess Elizabeth, wife of the Elector-Palatine. Maria de Leon, widow of Captain Henry Balfour, appears in the pension list of 1618. Probably brother of first Lord Balfour of Burleigh (see p. 44 note).

[2] William Sinclair received commission 1600. A Captain Sinclair distinguished himself, and was killed at Ostend.

[3] Archibald Erskine received commission as captain 24th August 1601. Offered to form company of Cuirassiers in December 1604. Offer ultimately accepted (p. 196 *et seq.*). Stationed at Zwolle. Died before 3rd December 1608. Referred to as Sir Archibald Erskine in the resolutions of Holland.

[4] Thomas Ewing.

[5] Thomas Masterton, see p. 29. Appointed quartermaster in 1597.—Records of Holland.

[6] William Carcadie (Kirkcaldy or Cathcart?).

[7] Sir Walter Bruce. On 21st January 1604, his company was in Ostend (p. 187). In 1610, his company was in Zealand, and in 1621-22, at Bergen-op-Zoom. Dead before June 1st, 1627, when he was succeeded by William Douglas.

Utrecht

from the undivided (war expenses)

Hamilton . . . 113 . . . 1502

Pensions payable at the office of the Receiver General for settlement of accounts and previous services :—

Col. Balfour 1000 guilders yearly	£83	6	8
The children of Cap^{n} Waddel	50	0	0
Widow Cap^{n} Melvis 400	33	6	8
,, ,, Blair with 2 children 400	33	6	8
the same additionally 150 yearly	12	10	0
Widow Cap^{n} Cuninga	25	0	0
,, ,, Craik	8	6	8
Guill^{e} Morray 400 guilders yearly	33	6	8
Widow Cap. Dallachy	50	0	0
Andries Renton son of Cap^{n} Guillem Renton	12	10	0
Widow Cap. Meldron 250 yearly	20	16	8
,, ,, Prop 500	41	13	4
,, and children of Jacques Egger 250	20	16	8

1599/1604

Cavalry (of Holland)

Edmond . . 80 men . . £2125

Footsoldiers paid by Holland

Col. Edmondt pikes and muskets	150	£2014	Guill^{e} Cincler	113	£1502
Daniel Macqingny	113	1502	Jacques Caddel	,,	,,
Allane Coutis	,,	,,	Thos. Neyse	,,	,,
Henry Balfour	,,	,,	Robert Hendersonne	,,	,,
Brogh	,,	,,			

Pay on Holland

Col. Edmondt £400 0 0

Wardens

Thos. Neyssche, s^{t} major of the Scots	80	0	0
Thos. Meisterton q^{r} m^{r} ,, ,, ordinary, 36, when with the army, 14£ more, here the ordinary	36	0	0

Officers of Justice

Alex. Murray, Provost marshal of the Scottish Regt	50	0	0

Ministers

Andreas Hunterus, Minister	30	0	0

Extraordinary Pay when with the Army

Cap^{n} Maesterton being with the army £14 monthly above the ordinary pay, facit for 6 months	84	0	0

Pensions the same as for 1599, except Murray, Dallachy, Prop and Egger, who do not appear.

Zeeland, Foot, Undivided

Bruce	113 men	£1572

Utrecht, Foot, Undivided

Hamelton	113	1502
Karr (pikes and muskets)	113	1460

Extra State, 1599

Cavalry of Holland

Thomas Areskyn[1]	1138	9 0½
Henry Bruce[2]	Ditto	

1601

Footsoldiers paid by Holland

Edmond 150 spears and muskets . . . £2014 0 0

D. Makinge	113 men	£1502	Chincler	113 men	£1502
Aleyn Coutis	,,	,,	Caddel	,,	,,
Balfour	,,	,,	Thos. Neisse	,,	,,
Brock	,,	,,	Robt. Herrisson	,,	,,

Pay on Holland

Colonels

Edmondt	£400	0	0

Wardens

Thos Neys, major of the Scots	80	0	0
qr. master of the Scots	36	0	0

Officers of Justice

The Provost Marshal of the Scots	50	0	0

Ministers

Andreas Hunterus, of the Scots	30	0	0

[1] Thomas Erskine. See note 1, p. 67.

[2] Henry Bruce, see note, pp. 57 and 58. Killed Captain Hamilton in a duel, 1604. In 1607 requested settlement of his arrears, and was told that he had been better treated than any other Scottish captain. Submitted certain inventions to the States in 1608, and received grants in recognition (see p. 211). Recommended to the Margrave of Anspach 1609. See report by Sir Dudley Carleton as to his service under the Emperor (p. 224). A Colonel Henry Bruce commanded a regiment in the Cadiz Expedition of 1625, advocated a descent on Gibraltar, and was the only commanding officer who spoke well of his soldiers (Dalton's *Cecil*). Writing in 1638, Baillie states, 'Sir Harie Bruce has offered his service to the king long ago. He asked Sir John Seaton if he would serve the king. He answered he would, but not against his own countrie, where he had his life.'

Pensions the same as 1599 except that Murray, Dallachy, Prop and Egger do not appear.

Zeeland, Foot, undivided			*Utrecht, Foot, undivided*		
Bruce	113 men	£1572	Hamelton	113 men	£1502
			Kar	Ditto	Ditto

1604

Exhibitum, Aug. 9th.

Companies as yet not brought under division.

The Reg[t] of Bachlouch [1] has been paid until Aug. 12th, 1604 inclusive, the month which remains still to be paid commences therefore with Aug. 13th, 1604, and orders have been received, in addition to the reduction to be made for arms and the 8th man, conform Res. of the gentlemen states general, to reduce the last (pay) order as has been noted here for each (individually).

		men		Monthly to be deducted for arms.
£2100	Col. Bachlouch [2]	200	£2489	£300
1750	Cap[n] Schot [3]	200	2489	399

[1] On August 12th, 1603 Sir R. Cecil wrote to Winwood, the English ambassador at the Hague: 'His Majesty hath been pleased to consent to the leavying of the new Regiment in Scotland, for which purpose there is order already gone to the Lord of Bucklugh who is to command them.' The first service of the new regiment was at Ostend, and seven companies were there when the place capitulated (see p. 33). In April 1604 it had been inspected by Robert Henderson, who was transferred to it as lieutenant-colonel with his company, his brother Francis being one of the new captains. On December 20th, 1603, the two Hendersons, Ralph Selby, David Balfour, and David Cathcart, all new Scottish captains, took their oaths on the commissions newly issued to them in Buccleuch's regiment. They were followed on the 31st by William Hamilton, on January 28th, 1604, by Alexander Erskine, and on April 17th by Sir Andrew Balfour of Monthone (Mountquhanny), and James Chinne (Chene, *i.e.* Cheyne) of Steelberg. The other two original captains were evidently John Murray and William Hamilton. On 17th July 1604, Laurence Sinclair was recommended to succeed Captain More of his company in Buccleuch's regiment. Of More there is no other mention, but probably the regiment lost several officers at Ostend. On 24th November, commissions were granted to supply the places of Lamond, Murray, and Hamilton, then deceased.

On 25th March 1603, Patrick Murray, Ensign of Captain R. Henderson's company, had been authorised by the Scots Privy Council to levy sixty men.

[2] Sir Walter Scott of Buccleuch was Lord Warden of the Marches between England and Scotland in the last days of the separate monarchies, and was the hero of the rescue of 'Kinmont Willie' from Carlisle Castle. He was created Lord Buccleuch in 1606, and died in 1611. See pp. 188, 256 *et seq.* in reference to his services and claims, and those of his son, the first Earl of Buccleuch. See also Sir William Fraser's *Scotts of Buccleuch*, vol. i. p. 235.

[3] Robert Scott took oath as captain on 28th November 1604.

£1961	Schyne[1]	200 men	£2489	£491
	152 men at Ostend conform List of June 13th, 1604.			
1700	Andro Balfour[2]	200	2489	390
1860	David Balfour[3]	200	2489	432
1800	Spence[4]	200	2489	410
1560	Carcardt[5]	150	1925	158
1401	Franc. Henderson[6]	150	1925	321
1348	Raeff Selby[7]	150	1925	383
	99 men at Ostend conform List of July 13th.			

As to question in divorce suit at the instance of his wife, Isobella Mowbray, 15th February 1618, see *infra*. Described in 1619 as 'the oldest of the Scottish captains.' Dead before January 25th, 1627, when succeeded by James Elphinstone.

Robert, third son of Robert Scott of Burnhead in Roxburghshire, who died in 1609, settled in Holland.—*Douglas's Baronage.*

Douglas states that his eldest brother, William Scott of Burnhead, was 'an officer in Holland, and served under the brave Walter Scott, Lord Buccleuch, against the Spaniards in the year 1604, when that cohort of Scots performed many glorious actions against their enemies.' William of Burnhead died about 1640.

[1] James (or John) Cheyne (Chene) of 'Steelberg,' also described as 'Baron de Chinne,' succeeded by Arthur Forbes on January 14th, 1605. The arrival of his company at Ostend is noted by Fleming.

[2] Sir Andrew Balfour of Mountquhanny, succeeded by William Douglas on January 16th, 1606. Sir Michael Balfour of Mountquhanny, served heir to his grandfather, Andrew Balfour (father of Sir James of Pittendreich), in 1592, married M. Adamson, and had two sons, the eldest of whom was Sir Andrew Balfour of Strathor and Mountquhanny, who married Mary Melville, and died *s.p.* He is represented by Balfour of Balfour and Trenaby, Balfour Castle, Kirkwall.

[3] Sir David Balfour. Appointed sergeant-major, September 4th, 1622, lieut.-colonel, December 23rd, 1628. Succeeded Sir John Halkett as colonel of the regiment in 1629, his appointment before Bois-le-Duc being confirmed on September 7th. Was dead by December 6th, 1638. On February 5th, 1639, Colonel Morgan in recommending Captain Wight said, 'The good lady, his wife, has recently lost her father, Colonel Balfour, who served this country so long and so faithfully.' Probably brother of first Lord Balfour of Burleigh (see p. 44, note).

[4] John Spens. See grant to his ensign, John Boyd, p. 195.

[5] David Cathcart. (Oath-book.)

[6] Sir Francis Henderson, fourth son of James Henderson of Fordell; served as sergeant-major of Buccleuch's regiment from June 1604. Succeeded his brother as colonel on September 17th, 1622. Dead by December 27th, 1628, when he was succeeded by Sir John Halket. Recommended by King James, 1624.

Concerned in an 'unfortunate *malheur*,' for which his pardon was obtained by Sir Dudley Carleton (*infra*).

[7] Ralph Selby, succeeded in July 1605 by his lieutenant, George (Joris) Home.

£1727	132 men	Lamond[1]	150 men	£1925	£307
1304	95	John Murray[2] now with Jean Halket	150	1925	310
1617	122	Wm. Hamilton[3]	150	1925	365
1447	108	Alex. Aresken[4]	150	1925	310

Holland

The Compy of Bachlouch of 200 men . . . £1891 13 11 ob.
10 Compies of the same Regt: Franchois Henderson, Schot, Andro Balfour, David Balfour, Spens, Carcardt, Lamonde, Alex. Areskyn, John Murray and Wm Hamilton,—each of 150 men . . £13940 19 6

Zeelandt

2 companies of Scots, namely :—
Schyn and Raeff Selby,—each of 150 men . . £2738 3 11

List of all the Compies of Foot in the service of the State[5]

Col. Edmondt	200	175	Brogh	113	64
Mackingny	113	61	Michel Etmetson[6]	113	73
Allane Coutes	113	141	James Kaddel	113	41
Henry Balfour	113	98	Robert Henrison	113	128

---

[1] Lamond. Dead before November 24th, 1604, when he was succeeded by William Hudson.

[2] John Murray. Also dead before 24th November 1604, and succeeded by John Halkett.

[3] William Hamilton, also dead before 24th November 1604, and succeeded by William Hay.

On 29th January 1605 Lord Buccleuch complained of the delay in dealing with Captain Bruce, who had killed his lieutenant, Captain Hamilton, in a duel, and a court-martial was recommended. On 13th November 1621 a petition was presented to the Scots Privy Council by Captain Harry Bruce, 'servitor to the Prince his Hieness,' to stop proceedings against him 'for the slaughter of Captn John (*sic*) Hamilton in single combat in the Low Country of Flanders some seventeen years ago,' his conduct having been justified by the Council of War established by the Estates, and the king's remission having been granted to him in 1605.

[4] Alexander Erskine was dead before January 19th, 1606, when he was succeeded by George Bothwell.

[5] *N.B.*—The document does not give the meaning of these figures. Probably the number of *men* of the *full company* and of the actual number at the *last muster*.

[6] Michael Otmarson succeeded Captain Sinclair (dead) on October 8th, 1604.

	Hollandt. 1st Amplification				
Thos. Areskyn[1]	113	86	Henry Bruce[2]	113	87
	Hollandt. 2nd Amplification				
Col. Buchlouch	200	170	Corchard	150	77
Francois Henderson	150	114	Wm. Hutson[3]	150	61
Schot	150	128	Alex. Arskyn	150	62
Andro Balfour	150	134	John Hacquet[4]	150	53
Spens	150	98	Wm. Hey	150	63

[1] Captain Thomas Erskine and Captain Henry Bruce were authorised by the Scots Privy Council on 25th March 1603 to levy 200 men each, their cautioner being Sir Michael Balfour of Burleigh. On 8th April 1617, Thomas Erskine, having left his company, was succeeded by James Erskine. Both Thomas Erskine and Henry Bruce were in state of 1599 as commanding cavalry of Holland, and both (as well as Walter Bruce) appear to have taken an oath in August 1601.

[2] Henry Bruce killed Captain William (or John?) Hamilton in a duel in 1604, (see pp. 57 and 66.).

[3] William Hudson succeeded Captain Lamond in November 1604. Was dead before February 10th, 1625, when he was succeeded by David Colyear.

[4] John Halkett, though apparently not the first of his name in the Dutch army, is the first of whom a detailed record exists of a family that were to render remarkable services to the Dutch Republic, and to the British Crown. He was the second son of George Halkett of Pitfirrane (No. IX. in the family genealogy). The genealogy of the Halkett family records that he 'had the honour of knighthood conferred upon him by King James VI., and being born a younger brother he betook himself to a military life, went into the service of Holland, where by his bravery and merit he rose to the rank of colonel-general, had the command of a Scots regiment in the Dutch service, and was President of the Grand Court-Marishal of Holland. He was killed at the siege of Bois-le-Duc, *anno* 1628.

'He married Maria van Loon, a lady of Amsterdam, and had two sons: (1) John (Alexander), ancestor of the late Lieutenant-General Alexander Halkett, of whom there are no male descendants. Lieutenant-General Alexander Halkett was Governor of Breda, where he died and was buried, 1742. (2) Maurice, who carried on the line of this family.'

The genealogy also contains the following 'Translation of an Extract from the Register of the Finances of Holland':—

'List of the Generals, Colonels, etc. of the family of Halkett of Pitfirran, who have served the House, United Netherlands, and the Kingdom of Holland, from the year 1582 to the year 1782.

'Rodd George Halkett, Colonel-General, 1582.

'John Halkett, Colonel-General, 1598.

'Both were at the battle of Nieuport, near Ostend, in Flanders, 1600, and by them were taken the colours that hang in the palace, and on which stood the Virgin and a monk. These were the first trophies of the then formed Republic.

'Maurice Halkett, General, 1655.

'Robert Halkett, Major-General, 1680. Killed at the battle of Ramillies, 1706.

'Edward Halkett, General: killed 11th September 1709 at the battle of Malplacquet.

Zeeland. Foot

Walter Bruce	113	85

Zeelandt. 2d Amplification

Schyn	150	95	Raaff Selby	150	54

Footsoldiers paid by Groningen and Ommelanden

Norman Bruce[1]	113	89

Utrecht. Foot

Jan Hamelton	113	102

Buyren and Culenburg

Andro Donalsonne	113	95

'Arent (Brent) Halkett, Major-General, 1738.

'Alexander Halkett, Colonel of a Scots regiment, 17th July 1716; Lieutenant-General and Governor of Breda, 13th May 1740. He died and was buried, at Breda, 1743.

'Charles Halkett, Major, 14th November 1727; Lieutenant-Colonel, 10th March 1730; Colonel and General of a regiment of Scots, 17th November 1736; Lieutenant-General, 13th January 1748, and on the 1st of February of that year sworn in as Chief President of the High Council of War of the United Netherlands. Died 24th October 1758, and buried in the Kloster Church at the Hague.

'Peter Halkett, Colonel, murdered with his two sons in the colony of Berbice, 1761.

'Charles Halkett, Acting Major, 30th May 1748; effective Major, 5th November 1758; Commandant of the town of Namur, 8th January 1761; Colonel, 18th March 1766; Colonel Commandant, 2nd October 1772. Died April 1774.

'Frederick Halkett; ensign when still a baby in 1736; was made a prisoner of war on 18th June 1745, at the surrender of the town Meenen, in Flanders, by capitulation to the French; Lieutenant, 1752; Captain 5th January, 1762; Major, 11th April 1774, in the 1st Battalion of the Regiment Gordon, and sworn in on the 18th April of that year; Lieutenant-Colonel, 5th November 1777. Asked for his demission 6th July 1782, and obtained it with the rank of Colonel and the honourable mention of his services and those of his forefathers to the United Netherlands.'

See also resolution as to the widow of Colonel Sir John Halkett, by the States General in 1640, *infra*.

[1] Captain Norman Bruce succeeded Captain Archibald Johnston in May 1603 (see p. 95, note). Sir Robert Bruce of Clackmannan, knighted 1593, had a second son, Colonel Norman Bruce, who married, and had daughters but no male issue (*Douglas's Baronage*). His company was in Groningen in December 1604 (p. 197). He was dead before July 8th, 1615, when he was succeeded by George Coutts.

1607

Guelderland. Bueren and Culenborgh. Foot.

These 2 counties to pay for the comp^{y} of Cap^{n} Andro Donaldson.

Holland Foot

Col. Brogh	200 men	£2612
Caddel	150	1925
Mackigny	,,	,,
Allaune Coutis	,,	,,
Henry Balfour	,,	,,
Thos. Areskyn	,,	,,
H. Levingston[1]	,,	,,
Archibald Areskyn	,,	,,
Col. Bachlouch	200	2612
Robert Henderson	150 spears and muskets	2014
Francois Henderson	,,	,,
R. Schot	,,	,,
Wm. Douglas[2]	,,	,,
Wm. Balfour[3]	,,	,,

[1] Henry Livingston succeeded Captain Bruce on January 12th, 1607. A young man Livingston, who had previously served, was recommended by King James in July 1603. Sir Henry Livingston died before November 24th, 1626, when he was succeeded by P. Murray. On August 28th, 1617, Secretary Lake wrote to Sir Dudley Carleton:—'In the matter of Sir Henry Levingston and Capt. Hamilton, his Majesty saith that you have so much mistaken him as he was fain to call for the letters he wrote for Hamilton for his own satisfaction, and findeth they contain no other matter than what his intention was, that if by the course of the discipline there it be due to Hamilton his Majesty would not prejudice him, if to Levingston not him, if it be at liberty for either, then to Levingston, because the others years have made him unserviceable.' In 1627 Johanna Turck, his widow, requested appointments for her three sons, John, James, and Alexander, and a commission was granted to John, the eldest.

[2] William Douglas succeeded Sir Andrew Balfour on January 16th, 1606, and was succeeded by James Lindsay on March 31st, 1615.

[3] Sir William Balfour, of Pitcullo, eldest son of Colonel Henry Balfour, killed in 1580, made frequent representations to the Dutch authorities, and received recommendations from King James, the Princess of the Palatinate, and the Dutch Ambassador in London, in reference to his father's and his uncle, Captain D. Cant's arrears and his own claims. See representation by him as 'fils ainé' in November 1605 (p. 200), when he had been for eight months a captain in Buccleuch's regiment. Consideration of his claims was postponed in 1608 (p. 215). In 1613 he is described as the eldest and only son (p. 252). In 1615, when he was settled with and received a pension of £600 settled on his son's life, he was negotiating with Captain Wishart for his company of cavalry. He then asked that 'the salary of his uncle of 1000 guilders per annum should be settled on him for life,' which confirms the MS., which states that Colonel Barthold Balfour was a brother of Colonel Henry. In November 1618 Captain

Geo. Botwel[1]	. .	150 spears and muskets .	£2014
Wm. Hutson	. .	,, . . .	,,
Jean Halcket	. .	,, . . .	,,
Monge Hamilton[2]	.	,, . . .	,,
Davidt Balfour	. .	,, . . .	,,

Orrock received a commission in succession to William Balfour, who had become a captain of horse. In 1610 he served as sergeant-major of the Scots regiment in the expedition to Juliers. In April 1621 he was stationed at Nymeguen. In 1622 he was taken prisoner by the Spaniards in a camisade at Emmerich. In 1625 King Charles I. requested the loan of his company of carabineers, and in 1627 the king made repeated requests for his services. In 1628 he was allowed to leave the Dutch service, in order to raise a large force of cavalry for the king. The death of Buckingham interfering with the war preparations in England, he applied to be restored to his company. He had then been twenty-five years in service, and in recognition of 'his father's, his uncle's, and his own services' was granted a gold chain, valued at 1000 guilders. In 1634 his pension was transferred and made payable on the lives of two young ladies. He was Lieutenant of the Tower when Earl Strafford was imprisoned, and sat with his distinguished prisoner in the impressive trial in Westminster Hall. 'The putting of Sir William Balfour from the Tower of London' is mentioned by Baillie in 1643, and in 1644 he commanded the Parliamentary Horse in the fighting near Winchester between Waller and Forth and Hopton. In September 'he broke through the enemy with all his horse with no loss considerable.' He had a command at Edgehill. According to the Sinclair MSS. there were two Sir William Balfours, father and son, and the younger has been thought to be the Lieutenant of the Tower. But Charles Balfour, son of Sir William, Lieutenant of the Tower, presented a petition to King William III., in which he stated that 'his father, Sir Wm. Balfour and Coll. Henry Balfour, his grandfather, served his present Maie ancestors in very considerable military employments in the Low Countreys, his said grandfather being killed before Antwerp, and that he has also lost two near kinsmen, who were Colls. in his May's army, killed in His May's service, ye one at ye Battle of Killiecrankie in Scotland, and the other at the Battle of ffluroy in fflanders.' This Charles Balfour had two elder brothers, Alexander and William (died before 1659), who are both said to have served in Holland. Baillie, when recording certain marriages in 1658, says: 'The Earl of Murray did little better, for at London, without any advice, he ran and married Sir Wm. Balfour's second daughter.'

Sir William Balfour is represented by Balfour of Townley Hall, Co. Louth, Ireland.

[1] George Bothwell succeeded Alexander Erskine, January 19th, 1606, and was succeeded by James Henderson on November 14th, 1618. Letter of Scottish Council in reference to in 1615.

[2] Mongo Hamilton, commissioned between June and October 1606, was appointed sergeant-major of Sir David Balfour's regiment before Bois-le-Duc in 1629. He had died before February 24th, 1633, when he was succeeded by James Balfour. In 1627 he asked leave to enter the Danish service without losing his commission, which was refused. His wife's name was Hester Sideniski. A gallant cavalry officer of Polish extraction, called Seldnitski or 'Sedenesco,' served at Nieuport, and was killed at Juliers in 1610. Requests by widow in 1638.

Pay on Holland

Col. Brogh	£400
Lt Col. of the Scots	100

Pensions and Endowments

The children of Cap. John Nysbeth, deceased, yearly 200 per month	£16 13 4
Widow John Balfour, „ 100 „	4 3 4

Wardens and Quarter Masters

Thos. Ewyn, St major Regt Brog	80 0 0
Robert Maesterton, qr mr of the Scots, above 14£ when in the field	50 0 0

Officers of Justice

Wm. Carcadin, Provost marshal Regt Brogh	50 0 0

Ministers

Andreas Hunterus, minister of the Scots	30 0 0

Extraordinary Pay when with the Army

N.B. The following items are only to be charged during the operations in the field, offensive or defensive:

Robert Maesterton, qr mr of the Regt of Col. Brogh, in addition to his ordinary pay 14£ per month for six months	£84 0 0

Zeeland Foot

Walter Bruce	150 men	£2014
Arthur Forbes[1]	150	1925
Geo. Homes[2]	150	1925

Utrecht Foot

Jan Hamelton	150 men	£1925

Utrecht, undivided

Gordon[3]	£1394 1 11½

[1] Arthur Forbes succeeded James Cheyne on January 14th, 1605. Made a representation as to his debts from Breda in 1609. Sergeant-major of Brog's regiment, 1610; company at Tiel in 1611. An Arthur Forbes, a younger son of William Forbes of Corse, followed the profession of arms, and was ancestor of the Earls of Granard in Ireland.

[2] George Home succeeded Ralph Selby on July 23rd, 1605. Was dead by May 2nd, 1623, when he was succeeded by James Murray.

[3] John Gordon was commissioned as captain of a new company on 15th April 1605 (see note on Captain Gordon of Stuart's regiment, 1585, p. 49). In 1609 his company was reported on, and its dismissal recommended. In 1614 he requested a lieutenant-colonelcy or sergeant-majorship, and in 1618 the advice of the Council of State was requested in reference to his dismissed company. In 1618 Sergeant-Major Gordon of Brog's regiment was absent.

Brounfelt[1]		£1394 1 11½
Setton[2]		,,

Groningen Foot

Norman Bruce	150 men	£2014

Pay on Groningen and Ommelanden

Col. Bachlouch in his high offices	£1580

Pension pay^e at the Office of the Receiver-General

Guilliam Murray	£400
The widow of Cap^n Blair	400
Ditto	100
Niclaes and Margretha Egger	125
The widow of Cap^n Arthur Stuart	75
,, ,, Nysbeth	400
,, ,, Jan Kirckpatrick	50
,, ,, Strachan	200

1608

Guelderland, Bueren and Culemburch Foot

Andro Donalson[3]	91 men	£1290

Holland Foot

Col. Brogh	168 men	£2244	0 0
Oliver Wodney[4]	91	1290	0 0
Caddel	89	1271	0 0
Mackinge	140	1828	10 0
Allane Coutis	107	1410	10 0
Henry Balfour	96	1324	0 0
Thos. Arskyn	129	1692	0 0
H. Levingston	113	1572	0 0
Archibald Arskyn	92	1299	10 0
Col. Bucklouch	200	2612	0 0
Robert Henderson	124	1702	0 0
Francois Henderson	136	1853	0 0
Robert Schot	121	1599	0 0
Wm. Douglas	146	1887	0 0

[1] Steven Brownfield, commissioned 11th March 1606 (new company).

[2] J. Seton, commissioned 17th May 1606. Protest by in 1618. Succeeded by Andrew Caddell, June 13th, 1623.

[3] Andrew Donaldson took oath on October 9th, 1604. Recommended by Colonel Brog for sergeant-majorship 1618; dead by March 17th, 1627, when succeeded by James Balfour. Request by widow, Mary Davidson, June 16th, 1627.

[4] Oliver Udny took oath on 16th May 1607 as captain of the company previously commanded by Colonel Brog. Succeeded by Ramsay October 23rd, 1610. Probably a member of the ancient family of Udny of Udny in Aberdeenshire.

Wm. Balfour	113 men	£1473	0 0
Wm. Hutson	74	1098	0 0
George Botwell	97	1348	0 0
J. Hacket	73	1081	0 0
Mongo Hamilton	93	1305	0 0
Davidt Balfour	149	1915	0 0

Pay

Col. Brogh £400

Pensions and Endowments on Holland.

	£	s.	d.
The children of Cap[n] Johan nysbeth, 200£ yearly per current m.,	16	8	4
The widow of Cap[n] Johan Balfour, deceased, 50£ ,, ,,	4	3	4
ditto ditto Jacob Michiels, deceased, 40£ ,, ,,	3	6	8
Pieter Michiels, yearly 50£ ,, ,,	4	3	4

Wardens and Quartermasters

Thos. Ewing, st major of the Reg[t] of Col. Brogh,		80	0 0
Rob[t] maesterton, q[r] m[r] of the Scots, 40 when in the field,		50	0 0

Officers of Justice

William Carcadie, Provost Marshal of Reg[t] col. Brogh,		50	0 0

Ministers

Andreas Hunterus, minister of the Scots,		30	0 0

Utrecht Foot, Undivided

J. Hamilton } remain unpaid	96 men	£1338	
John Gordon }	84	1208	
Brounfeilt	101	1372	
Sitton	91	1290	

Zeeland Foot, Undivided

Walter Bruce	96	1377	
Arthur Forbes	140	1828	10
Geo. Homes	126	1645	
Moubry[1]	85	1229	10

Overyssel Pay

Col. Backlouch in his high offices		780	has not been paid.

Groningen Foot

Norman Bruce	115	1525	

[1] Philip Mowbray took oath on January 2nd, 1607. Dead by February 23rd, 1626, when succeeded by William Brogh.

1609

Footsoldiers paid by Holland

Col. Bucklouch . .	200 men	. . £2612			
Col. Brogh . . .	150	. . 2014			
Robbert Henderson	100 men	£1417	R. Schot . .	70 men	£1059
Francois Henderson	70	1059	Wm. Douglas .	,,	,,
Caddel . .	,,	,,	Wm. Balfour .	,,	,,
Oliver Wodney .	,,	,,	Wm. Hutson .	,,	,,
Mackinge . .	,,	,,	George Bodwell .	,,	,,
Allane Coutes .	,,	,,	Jan Halket . .	,,	,,
Henry Balfour .	,,	,,	Mongo Hamilton .	,,	,,
Thos. Arskyn .	,,	,,	David Balfour .	,,	,,
H. Levingston .	,,	,,			

Pay

Col. Brog, for his prison	£400	0	0
Thos. Ewing, S^{t} major of the Reg^{t} of Brogh . .	80	0	0
Robert Mesterton, q^{r} m^{r} Col. Brogh . . .	50	0	0
William Cacader, Provost M. of Brogh . . .	50	0	0

Ministers

Andreas Hunterus, minister of the Scots, . .	33	6	8

Pensions

The children of Cap^{n} Jan Nysbeth, 200£ yearly .	16	8	4
Widow ,, Jan Balfour, 50£ ,, . .	4	3	4

Pensions for settlement of accounts and previous services

The children of Cap^{n} Waddel—Archibald, Jan, and Willem, each 200£	£600	0	0
Lady Margaret Stuard, widow of Ag^{t} Damman . .	450	0	0
Maria Rig, widow of Cap^{n} Melvil, on the life of Jacq. David, Janneken, Tanneken and Hester, each 80£	400	0	0
Guillame Murry of Pickerles, on the life of Jan, Rigmet, Elisabeth and Margarieta, his children, each for one fourth	400	0	0
Elisabeth Creichton, widow of Cap^{n} Dallachy, the half on her, the other half on Jan and Catharina Dallachy, each the half of 100£ . . .	400	0	0
Elisabeth Forbes, widow of Cap^{n} Willem van Nysbeth, the one half, and the other half on W^{m} Arthur and Margareta Nysbeth, each one 4th . . .	400	0	0
Mistress Anna van Duivenvoorde, widow of Col. Cuningam, on the lives of Mistresses Margriet van Duivenvoorde and Elisabeth van Cunigam, each one half	300	0	0
The children of Cap^{n} Prop, Jan and Janneken Prop, each one half	200	0	0
Mistress Anna Kirpatrick, widow of Cap. Strachan .	200	0	0

The children of Cap^{n} James Egger, named Niclaes and Margarieta, each one half	£125	0	0
Guilliame Suderman, cap^{n}	100	0	0
The widow of the former L^{t} Penbrouck	100	0	0
Mistress Suana Splitkoff, widow of Cap^{n} Kilpatrick, the one half on her life and the other half on the lifes of her children—Jan, Maria, and Helena Kilpatrick	50	0	0
Joost Blaire	50	0	0
Pay on Zeelandt			
Col. Backlouch, 500£; Robert Henderson, L^{t} Col., 100£; Forbes S^{t} major, 80£; Blaire, q^{r} m^{r}, 36£; Michiel Henderson, Provost Marshal, 50£—together	766	0	0
Col. Balfour yearly, 1000£	83	6	3

INVESTIGATION as to the difference between the state of war 1609 and the state of war 1610, consisting in a balancing of accounts which have been deducted from each province or altogether left out with posts that have been increased or newly added, all per current month.

	£	*s.*	*d.*
Guelderland has been raised on Pay, monthly, for Mistress Anna van Leeuwen, widow of Cap^{n} Arthur Stuart	6	5	0
Pensions			
Laurens Dallachy has been left out, with a monthly profit of	18	0	0
Pensions for settlement of accounts and previous services			
On Holland, Bartels Balfour	1000	0	0
On Utrecht, the widow of James Blair	400	0	0
Andries Penton	150	0	0
„ Guelderland, the widow of Cap^{n} Arthur Stuart	75	0	0
And on the other hand Zeelandt has been raised on Pay, for			
Col. Backlough in his high offices, monthly	756	0	0
Col. Balfour	83	6	8

Guelderland Foot			
Donaldson	70 men	1059	0 0
Zeeland Foot			
Arthur Forbes	90	1297	0 0
Walter Bruce	70	1059	0 0
Geo. Homes	„	„	
Moubrey	„	„	
Utrecht Foot			
J. Hamilton	70 men	1059	0 0
Brounfield	„	„	
Sitton	„	„	
Groningen Foot			
Norman Bruce	70 men	1059	0 0

III

COMMISSIONS GRANTED BY THE COUNCIL AT THE EAST SIDE OF THE MEUSE, THE GOVERNOR-GENERAL THE EARL OF LEICESTER, AND THE COUNCIL OF STATE.

Commissions granted by the Magistracy and Land-council at the east side of the Meuse [1]

Commission of William Nisbet [2] as Captain.

The Magistracy and Provincial Council on this side of the Maas make known to all and sundry who shall see or have read to them these presents. Since by the decease of John Nisbet, late captain of a company of soldiers in the regiment of Colonel Diedrich Sonoy, the captaincy of said company has fallen vacant. And it being considered necessary to supply said company, in order that it may not lapse, with another captain, therefore, owing to the good report made to us regarding the person of William Nisbet, lieutenant of the same company, and being informed of the many good services performed by him in the course of several years in the common cause, and trusting in his loyalty and experience, we have commissioned and appointed, and do hereby commission and appoint him to be captain over the said company, thereover as captain to order and command, to maintain good order and discipline of war. And on all expeditions and watches, at all times and places, to hold himself in readiness with his company at the orders of his colonel or his lieutenant. And farther to be guided in everything by the

[1] Extracted from the 'Commissie boek van de Overheid en den Landraad aan de Oostzyde der Maas, beginnende met den 5 Aug^{t} 1581 tot 8 Sept^{r} 1584.'

[2] See State of War, 1586.

regulations made or to be made for the conduct of the war, and that he may acquit himself therein well and loyally he shall hold himself bound to take the proper oath before us or those commissioned by us, it being understood that this is to be registered in the Record Office. Therefore we summon and request, and that officially, all commanders, colonels, captains, commissioned officers, soldiers, and all whom it may concern, to respect and acknowledge the said William Nisbet as captain; also we command the soldiers of said company to obey and submit to the said captain. And in all marches and watches at all times and places, whether against the enemy or otherwise, to allow themselves to be employed as he may order, that therein the Land may be served and our earnest purposes carried out.

Given in Leeuwaarden under our seal the xvii October 1581.

On the xviii October 1581 William Nisbet took the oath mentioned in the foregoing Commission before the Council.

Commission of John Cunningham[1] *as Assistant to Count William.*

The Magistracy and Provincial Council on this side the Maas hereby make known that the noble Count William Lewis of Nassau, because at the battle of Noorthoeren his colonels, lieutenant, and captains were shot and some taken prisoners, is in urgent need of some one of rank and experienced in affairs of war who shall be commissioned to assist the said count in counsel and action in all that touches the preservation of the town of Dokkum and our resistance to the enemy. Therefore we, being well informed regarding the person of John Cunningham, Captain of Artillery; and trusting to the ability and experience which the said Cunningham has recently had in the affairs of the war, have authorized and commissioned, and do hereby authorize and commission him, to assist with counsel and in act the noble count aforesaid, in the oversight, superintendence, and guardianship of the said city of Dockum, also in the absence of the said count to take

[1] See pension list appended to State of War, 1595.

command of the garrison, and to take oversight in like manner for the conservation of the said city. And further to hold and conduct himself as a good counsellor, assistant, and, in the absence of the said count, as a good superintendent and head of the foresaid garrison, in such manner as hereinbefore he is held bound and ought to do and such as also the conservation and warding of the said town and the service of the land shall require, requesting, and officially ordaining, the magistracy of the said town of Dockum, the captains, officers, cavalry and soldiers at present lying there in garrison, or those who shall yet be placed there, to acknowledge, obey, and submit to the said Cunningham, as attached by us in the quality of good counsellor and assistant to the said Count William Lewis of Nassau, etc., and in the absence of the said count, as superintendent and head of the garrison; and in case of need render him all assistance, that therein the service of the Land and our earnest purposes may be carried out.

Given within the City of Leeuwaarden under our Seal, the 7 October 1581.

Commission of John Cunningham for the relief of Naijesijl.

This Magistracy, etc. Since we, in order to provide those devout captains, soldiers, at present beset and besieged by the enemy in the village of Naijesijl, with all such necessaries against the violence of the enemy, and for the preservation of the said post, as may be found of assistance, have thought good to commission an expert conversant with military affairs and with all that might be required in such a case and in similar ones. Therefore, being well informed respecting the person of John Cunningham, Captain of Artillery, and trusting to his ability and experience—with advice of General the Lord [den Heere] Norris, and of the Lieutenant Stadholder of Friesland, have authorized and commissioned, as we do hereby authorize and commission him, to communicate with those acquainted with the situation of the said redoubt and the country round it, as to succour or relief; and to bring all such means to bear as may suggest themselves for effecting said

relief, and that in the surest possible manner. For which purpose the said Cunningham is empowered to employ some officers and soldiers of the ensigns of the said Lord Lieutenant Stadholder at present lying in Dockum, if necessary other troops also, together with all such light vessels, ships, and other necessaries he may require for the purpose, and can obtain at Dockum or elsewhere. And should the said Cunningham make any promise to the extent of one hundred Gulden or two, three, or four hundred, according as occasion may require, in the employment of persons to this end, his said promises shall be made good and the said Cunningham shall be indemnified and held free from liability. We do summon and also officially command the soldiers of the said two ensigns, also all such other soldiers that the said Cunningham may require for this exploit and everything connected with it, to allow themselves to be employed at the command and order of the said Cunningham, in the matter already stated for the service of the Land: ordaining also that the Magistrates of Dockum, and all others whom these projects in any way concern, give all possible help and assistance to the aforesaid Cunningham towards the accomplishment of this service, thereby contributing signally to the service of the Land and to the carrying out of our earnest wishes.

Given within the City of Leuwerden under our Seal, the viii. October 1581.

Commissions granted by the Earl of Leicester.[1]

Commission pour le Capitaine Jehan Balford.[2] (*John Balfour.*)

Robert, Conte de Leycester, etc. a tous ceulx etc. Comme avons entendu des bonnes et longues services faictes en cestes provinces tant au feu de tres heureuse mémoire nostre tresscher et bon cousyn le Prince d'Oranges comme aussy aux Estatz gñaulx durans les précédentes guerres par le Cap^{n} Jehan Bal-

[1] Extracted from the 'Commissieboek van den Gouverneur Graaf van Leycester, begin-nende met den 5 March 1586—18 February 1588.'

[2] See State of War 1586, p. 50, note 6.

ford, gentilhomme Escochois, ensemble le désir qu'il a d'estre accepté en ñrē service a telle charge que nous plairait l'emploier, scavoir faisons que pour la bonne congnoissance qu'avons de la personne du dict Balford et de sa vaillantesse et dextérite au faict de la guerre, Nous confians à plain de sa fidélité et expérience, Avons Icelluy constitué, ordonné et commis, constituons, ordonnons et commettons par ceste à la charge de capitaine d'une compaignie de cent chevaulx à schavoir cinquante lanciers et cinquante harquebousiers désia dressés ou encores à dresser là où il trouvera le mieulx convenir en luy donnant pleyn pouvoir, authorite et mandement especial de les lever d'ung lieutenant, cornette et aultres officiers en oultre de commander à icelle compaignie et la conduire et emploier contre les Espaignols, Malcontens, leurs adhériens et aultres nous ennemis, soit en campaigne ou ès villes et places fortes que de par nous luy sera commandé, prennant soigneux regard que par ceulx de sa dicte compaignie ne soit faict aulcun tort ou foulle aux bourgeois et inhabitans. D'icelles, ains qu'entre eulx soit tenu tout bon ordre et discipline militaire. Suivant les ordonnances sur ce faictes ou encores à faire et au surplus faire toutes et singulières offices qu'un bon et fidel capitaine de cavaillerie est tenu de faire aux gages et traictemens à ce ordonnés, sur quoy et de son bien et fidèlement acquité en ceste sa charge et commission ledict capitaine Balford sera tenu prester le serment de fidélité en nous [*sic*] mains. Si donnons un mandement aux Lieutenant officiers et soldatz de la dicte compaignie de tenir et respecter le dict Balford pour leur Capitaine et l'obéir comme pour l'acquit de leur devoir il convient. Requirons en oultre a tous chefz Colonnelz, Magistratz et aultres qu'il appartiendra de faire au dict Capitaine Balford a l'exécution de ceste commission toute faveur, adresse et assistance requises et sur ee sera tenu le dict Capitaine de monstrer ceste au [*sic*] chambre de la Trésorie pour en estre registré et vérifié. Car ainsy pour le service du pays l'avons trouvé convenir. Donné à la Haye le 27 de Mars 1586, et estoit soubzsigné R. Leycester et chacheté en chire rouge du cachet de son Ex^ce^ sur le dos estoit ce jour d'huy le xxix^e^ de Mars 1586 à Jehan Balfort faict le serment de fidélité es mains de messr^rs^ du Conseil d'estat de soy bien et deuement acquiter

comme Cap^ne^ d'une Compaignie de chevaulx, suyvant le contenu de ceste commission. Actum ut supra à Utrecht, signé T. Langhe et sur le dos estoit aussy Les Députez hors du Conseil d'Estat pour la chambre de la trésorie le d^t^ son Ex^ce^ consentant autant qu'en eulx est que le contenu au blancq de ceste soit faict et accompli en la forme que sa dicte Ex^ce^ commande et entend estre faict par Icelle faict ut supra et estoit soubzsigné G. Zuylens.

Mars 1586. *Commission pour le Capitaine Alexandre Witchart. Ecossois d'une compaignie de cent chevaulx harequebouseiers.*

Robert, Conte de Leycester, Baron de Denbigh, etc. Lieutenant de Sa Majeste d'Angleterre, Gouverneur et Capitaine Général des Provinces Unies des Pays-Bas, à tous ceux qui ces présentes verront Saluyt.

Comme le Capitaine Alexandre Witchard, Escossoys aiant cydevant servi quelque bon espace en ces pays tant du temps de feu notre très cher et bien aymé Cousin le Prince d'Orange H. M. Comme depuis avecque charge et jusques ores continue en toute fidélité, soing et debvoir mesmement à la dernière entreprinse sur la dyke de Cawesten et qu'il nous ait remonstré le bon désir qu'il en a de continuer et faire le mesme à l'advenir, Scavoir faisons que pour la bonne cognoissance qu'avons du d. Capitaine Witschardt et de sa vaillantsie et preudhomie au faict de la guerre, Nous confians a plain de la fidélité et expérience, avons Icelluy estabi, ordonné et commis, establissons, ordonnons et commettons par ceste à la charge de Capitaine d'une compaignie de cent chevaulx harequebousiers, désia dressée ou encores à dresser, là où il trouvera le mieulx convenir, en luy donnans plain pouvoir, authorité et mandement espécial, de la pourveoir d'un Lieutenant cornette et aultres officiers, en oultre de Commander a Icelle compaignie et la conduire et emploier contre les Espaignols, malcontents, leurs adhérens et aultres nos ennemis, soit en campaigne ou ès villes et places fortes que de par nous luy sera commandé, prennant soigneux regard que par ceulx de sa dicte Comp^ie^ ne soit faict aulcun tort ou foule aux Bourgeois et habitans d'icelle, ains qu'entre eulx soit tenu tout bon ordre et discipline militaire, suivant les ordonnances sur ce faictes ou encores à faire, et au

surplus faire toutes et singulières les choses qu'un bon et fidèle Cap^ne^ de Cavaillerie est tenu de faire.

Commissions granted by the Council of State.[1]

Commission of William Waddel,[2] as Captain of a Company of Infantry, 130 strong.

The States-General of the United Netherlands, to all who shall see or have read to them these our open letters of commission, greeting! . . . Be it known, that we consider it necessary for the service of the said United Netherlands to keep certain Companies of the Scottish nation in the service of the said Lands. By reason of the good report made to us of the person of William Waddel, and of his affection for the service of these Lands, of his ability, piety, and experience in the business of the war, and trusting completely to his good character, loyalty, and diligence, we have, at a meeting of the Council of State of the said Lands, retained and continued him, William Waddel, and, so far as may be necessary, have anew commissioned, and do, by these presents, retain, continue, and commission him to the charge of a company of Scottish infantry, one hundred and thirty strong, included under the regiment of Colonel Bartho. Balfour, the company to include, besides his person and boy, a lieutenant and ensign, each with his boy, two sergeants, three corporals, two drummers, one quartermaster, one surgeon, 19 musqueteers, 36 pikemen, 9 halberdiers, three bucklermen,[3] and 48 arquebusiers, giving him full power, authority, and special charge, to take command of the said company, to lead and employ them against the Spaniards, malcontents, and their adherents, and all other enemies of the United Netherlands, whether afield or in garrison, for the safeguarding of any towns or fortresses, also, should need be, on board ships of war therein, and when it shall be ordered and commanded by us, and by those having commissions from us in the service of the Lands, or by the said colonel. He as captain keeping his soldiers in good

[1] From the Commission Book, 1588-1591.

[2] See State of War, 1586, p.49, note 3.

[3] Rondasseurs.

order, watch, and discipline of war by day and by night: not suffering them to burden or do any injury to the citizens and inhabitants of the places where they shall be garrisoned; and further to do everything that a devoted and loyal captain is bound to do, in accordance with the ordonnance and regulations made, or to be made, for the conduct of the war; and this on the payment for the whole company, as above stated 130 strong, of the sum of 1500 pounds of 40 Flemish grotten[1] every 32 days. In particular, he is to content himself from this date with payments at the end of every 48 days. With which he the captain, his subordinate officers and soldiers must, like others in the service of the Land, content themselves, serve us and the said Lands loyally without any contention, and allow themselves to be mustered at every journey, or at any time when told to do so.

And that he may in all these respects acquit himself well and loyally, he, William Waddel, captain, holds himself bound to take the proper oath before us, or before the members of said Council of State: and he shall cause this his commission to be register'd, as well by the said Council of State, as by the commissioned Councils of the States of Holland, on whose repartition he shall forthwith be paid. Hereupon, there shall also be granted him thereto an Attache from their Lordships the Governor and the commissioned Council of the States of Holland. Which done; we charge and command the lieutenants, commanding officers, cadets, and common soldiers of the same company, and also all others whom it may concern, to acknowledge him, William Waddel, for our captain, obey and submit to him, also in case of need, to give him all assistance and direction—and all this till further orders. For we have found this essential to the service of the Lands.

Given at the Hague, the 20 June 1588.[2]

---

[1] See note, p. 85.

[2] *Mutatis mutandis*, similar commissions were issued on 26th June 1588 to Wm. Murray and John Dallachy, and on 27th June to John Prop, David Cant, Wm. Hay, and David Trail.

Commission in favour of Barth. Balfour[1] *for his 'compagnie colonelle' of 200 men.*

The States-General of the United Netherlands, unto all who shall see or shall have read to them these open letters of Commission, Greeting.

Be it known that we, considering it needful for the service of the said United Netherlands to keep some companies of the Scottish nation in the service of the said Lands, and being well informed regarding the person of the respected and noble Barth. Balfour, colonel; and of his affection for the service of these Lands, his ability, good character, and experience in the business of the war, and being thoroughly assured of his devotion, trustworthiness, and loyalty, have by a resolution of the Council of State of the said Lands, retained, continued, and in so far as is necessary, appointed anew Barth. Balfour, colonel; and we hereby do by these presents retain, continue, and appoint him to the charge of captain of his compagnie colonelle of two hundred Scottish infantry, which shall include, besides his person and boy, a lieutenant and ensign each with his boy, two sergeants, two drummers, one piper, three corporals, one quartermaster, a surgeon, 27 musketeers, 73 harquebusiers, 63 pikemen, 18 halberdiers, and three buckler men;[2] giving him full power, authority, and general command over said compagnie colonelle, to order, lead, and use them against the Spaniards, the malcontents, and their adherents, and all other enemies of these United Netherlands, whether afield, or in garrison for the protection of any towns or fortresses; also, in case of need, on board ships of war, wheresoever he shall be ordered and commanded to such duties in the service of the country by us, and by those commissioned by us; always keeping his soldiers in good order, guard, and discipline of war, both by day and night, not permitting them to burden or in any way to injure the citizens or inhabitants of the towns and places where they may be garrisoned. And further, to do everything that a

[1] See State of War, 1586, p. 48.

[2] Rondasseurs, from *rondas*=a round shield.

good and faithful captain ought and is in duty bound to do, in pursuance of orders and written regulations already made, or that may be made, as to the conduct of the war. And this at a pay for the whole company of the above strength of 200 men of the sum of 2200 pounds, of 40 groats[1] the pound, every 32 days, with the reservation that henceforward he shall content himself with these payments every 48 days. With this he and his subordinate officers and his soldiers, like others in the country's service, must content themselves. And on this stipulation loyally serve us, and the Lands aforesaid, without complaint, and at each journey allow themselves, when called upon, to pass muster. And in order that he may acquit himself in all these well and faithfully, he, Barth. Balfour, acknowledged as Captain, is bound to take the proper oath at our hands, or those of the Council of State aforesaid, and to cause register this his commission both by the said Council of State and by the commissioned Councils of the States of Holland, upon whose repartition[2] he shall forthwith be paid. In addition also there will be granted to him the attache (or confirmation) of the Lord Governor, and of the commissioned Councils of the States of Holland. Which being done, we charge and command the lieutenant, commanding officers, cadets, and common soldiers of the said company, and all others whom it may concern, to acknowledge him, Barth. Balfour, as our captain, submit to and obey him; also when necessary to render him all help and direction; and all this till our further orders; for we have found this essential in the service of the Land.

Given at the Hague, the 26 June 1588.

(Initialed) J. Valcke V^t.

Docqueted (below):—

By order of my Lords, the States-General of the United Netherlands, relative to the report of the Council of State in respect of this commission. (Signed) Ch^r Huygens.

---

[1] Old Flemish pound equal to 11 shillings sterling: 40 grotten = 1s. 10d., or one guilder: groot = ½d.: pound = 10s.

[2] Repartitie = division into smaller parts.

And sealed with a hanging-out seal in red wax on doubled string. Indorsed (on back):—

This fifth day of July 1588, Bartolt. Balfour took the proper oath before the Council of State as captain of a company according to the commission on the other side of this.

Chr Huygens.

Original Dutch of the preceding.

Commissie voor Bartolt Balfour voor sijne compagnie collonnelle van IIc hoofden.

Die Staten Generael der Vereeniehde Nederlanden allen den ghenen die dese opene brieven van commissie sullen sien oft hooren lesen, Saluyt.

Doen te weeten dat wij noodich achtende tot dienste van de selve Vereeniehde Nederlanden eenighe Compaignien van de Schotze natie in dienste der voorz landen te houden, om de goede kennisse die wij hebben van den persoon des edelen erentfesten Bartolt Balfour collonnel ende van sijne affectie tot deser landen dienst, cloecheyt, vromicheijt ende experiente in 't stuck van der oirloge. Ons gantschelick betrouwende zijnder vromicheyt, getrouwicheyt ende neersticheyt, hebben bij deliberatie van den Rade van State derselver landen hem Bartolt Balfour, collonnel onthouden, gecontinueert ende voor 200 veel des noot zijnde op nijes gecommitteert, onthouden, continueren ende committeren bij desen tot den last van Capiteyn van zijne compaignie collonnelle van twee hondert Schotze voetknechten, daeronder sullen wesen neffens sijnen persoon ende jongen, eenen Lieutenant ende Vendrich, elcx met heurl jongen, twee Sergeanten, twee trommelslagers, een pijper, drie corporalen, een forier, een chirurgijn, sevenentwintich musketters, drie ende tzeventich harquebousurs, drie ende tsestich spiessen, achtien hellebaerden ende drie rondassuers, hem gevende vol comen macht, auctoriteijt ende generael bevel over deselve compaignie collonnelle te gebyeden, die te geleijden ende te gebruye-ken gegens den Spangaerden, malcontenten ende heuren aenhangeren ende allen anderen vianden deser Vereeniehde Nederlanden 't zij te velde ofte in garnisoen tot bewaringe van eenige steden ende stercten, oock op de schepen van oirloge des noot sijnde, daer ende soe hem sulcx bij ons ende bij den ghenen van ons last hebbende tot der landen dienst sal worden geordonneert ende bevolen, houdende sijne soldaten in goede ordre, wacht ende crijchs discipline soe bij daghe als bij nachte, sonder te gedoogen dat sij den burgeren ofte ingesetenen van de steden ende plaetzen, daer zij zullen garnizoen houden, eenigen last ofte schade aen doen. Ende voorts alles te doen dat een goet ende getrouwe Capiteyn schuldich is ende behoort te doen, achtervolgende d'ordonnancien ende artyckelbrief op 't beleyt van der oorloge gemaect, ofte alsnoch te maken. Ende dit op de gagie voor de geheele compaignie als boven, sterck sijnde twee hondert hoofden, te summe van twee ende twintich hundert ponden van veertich grooten 't

pondt alle twee en dertich daghen, behoudelick dat hij hem voortaen sal contenteren mette betalinge van acht en veertich daghen te acht en veertich daghen daermede hij sijne onderhoorige bevelhebberen ende soldaten, hen gelijck anderen in dienst van den lande sijnde, sullen moeten contenteren ende daerop ons ende de voorz-landen getrouwelick dyenen sonder eenich wederseggen ende hem telcken reijse te monsteren laten des vermaent zijnde. Ende omme hem in allen desen wel ende vertrouwelick te quyten, wert hij Bartolt Balfour als Capiteyn gehouden den behoorl. eedt te doen aen handen van ons ofte die van den Rade van State voorz, ende dese sijne Commissie te doen registreren, soe wel bij den voorz. Rade van state als bij de gecommitteerde Raden van de Staten van Hollandt, op wijens repartitie hij voortaen betaelt sal worden, daertoe hem oock attache van den Heere Gouverneur ende gecommitteerde Raden van de Staten van Holland sal worden verleent 't Welck gedaen weesende lasten ende ordonneren wij den Luetenant, Bevelhebberen, Adelborsten ende gemeene soldaten van deselve compaignie ende oock allen anderen dyen 't aengaen mach, hem Bartolt Balfour voor onsen Capiteyn te erkennen, hem te gehoorsamen ende obedieren. Oock des noot sijnde alle hulp ende addres te doen, ende dat alles tot onsen wederseggen, want wij sulex tot dienste van den lande bevonden hebben te behoiren.

Gegeven in 's Gravenhage den xxvi. Junij xv^{c} acht ende tachtentich. Geparapheert J. Valcke v^{t}. Op de plycke stont ges- ter ordonnan van myn Heeren de Staten Generael der Vereeniehde Nederlanden. Ter relatie van den Rade van State der selve. Onderth Chr. Huygens. Ende besegelt met een uythangende Zegel in rooden wassche aen dubbelde strecke. Opten rugge stondt. Op huyden den vijffden July xv^{c}lxxxviii heeft Bartolt Balfour den behoorlicken eedt gedaen aen die van den Rade van State als Cap^{n} van een Compaignie volgende de comissie aen d'andere sijde van dese. CHR. HUYGENS.

Commission of William Brog as Sergeant Major over the Scots.

The States-General of the United Netherlands, etc. Be it known that we, considering it necessary for the service of the Land, and the good direction of the affairs of the war, to appoint a qualified sergeant-major over the Scottish soldiers and regiment under Colonel Balfour, and other Scottish captains in the service of the Lands: We have, on account of the good knowledge we possess, of the person of the doughty William Brog, as also of his ability and experience in the conduct of the war, and trusting to his capacity and diligence, at a meeting of the Council of State of the said United Lands,

retained, placed, and appointed the same, and we do by these presents retain, place, and appoint him to the position and office of sergeant-major, and Watchmaster (Wachtmeester) over the said Scottish regiment and soldiers, giving him complete power, authority, and particular charge, to enter into the service, and serve in all faithfulness, whether in towns, fortresses, or afield; therein to take good heed and to see that marches and watches be well provided, and faithfully carried out, according to circumstances, and to this end he must, at the proper moment, give the word of command, or the watchword to those who ought to have it, and he may ask it to be repeated at his pleasure, also he is to make his rounds with great strictness, or cause them to be made. He is occasionally to test the corps, the guards, the sentinels, in every place, and is to take particular care lest through neglect of these measures any troubles should occur; also to take good oversight of the common soldiers and troops, and take care that every one be provided with such weapons and accoutrements as his place demands; and on the detection of fraud by any one, the captains and other officers whose duty it is to see to it, are to be earnestly exhorted to take proper action in the matter. Also at times and on occasions when musters or reviews shall be held on the part of the Land, he is to render all good assistance to the commissary [or muster master] or commissaries, and to exert himself that such may be carried out in the best order, and as may be best for the service of the Land. And further, in general and particular, he is to do all that pertains to the maintenance of good discipline of war and order among the soldiers, and in other respects to do what a good and loyal sergeant-major, as aforesaid, is in duty bound and ought to do. And since it is likely said regiment of Scottish soldiers will not remain always together with the others in one place, but at times the companies of it will be employed in various quarters or places according as the service of the Land may require, he shall be bound to allow himself willingly to be employed on all other occasions, and when good opportunity offers in the service of the Land, when ordered in his quality as sergeant-major; and in particular to let himself be employed and serve as sergeant-major-general, when that shall be asked of him in the service

of the Land; and that at a salary of 80 pounds, of 40 Flemish groats per pound a month. And in order to acquit himself in this his post and office honestly and devoutly he is held bound to take the proper oath of loyalty, before the Council of State aforesaid, and to allow his commission to be registered, as well by the said Council of State, as by the commissioned Councils of the States of Holland on whose repartition he shall forthwith be paid. Thereto also a proper attache shall be granted him by the Lord Governor, and by the commissioned Council of the States of Holland. The which being done, we invite and command Colonel Balfour, those under him in his regiment, together with all other Scottish captains, officers, and common soldiers being in the service of the Land; and further, all others whom these presents in any way concern, to acknowledge the said William Brog in the quality of sergeant-major, hold him for such and respect him. Also in the fulfilment of his duty and commission, if need be, and he require it to render him unhesitatingly all good help and assistance; for we have found this indispensable in the service of these Lands.

Given at the Hague, the twelfth July 1588, etc.

Commission of Alexander Murray as Captain.

The States-General of the United Netherlands, etc. Since Captain William Murray has informed us that on account of certain private affairs, he finds it needful, with our consent, to leave the service of these Lands to go to Scotland, having also presented and delivered over the company of infantry, led and commanded by him for some time past, and up to this date. We therefore find it necessary to provide the same company again with a qualified captain. Be it known that we, owing to the good knowledge we have of the person of Alexander Murray, and of the good services done by him during a considerable time for these United Lands, in his quality of captain of a company of infantry, and having confidence in his ability, experience, and honesty, have, at a meeting of the Council of State of the said Lands, continued, etc., in place of the foresaid William Murray, the said Alexander

Murray in the post of captain of the said company of infantry, 130 men strong, including, besides his own person and boy, a lieutenant and ensign each with his boy, two sergeants, three corporals, two drummers, one quartermaster, one surgeon, fifteen musketeers, 36 pikemen, nine halberdiers, 4 broad-swordsmen,[1] 48 arquebusiers, giving him full power, etc. The payment of the whole company aforesaid, 130 strong, to be the sum of 1500 pounds, of 40 groats Flemish per pound, every 32 days, etc.

Given at the Hague, the nineteenth September 1588.[2]

Commission of William Edmond[3] *as Captain of a Company of sixty mounted Lancers.*

The States-General, etc. Seeing we have found it advisable and necessary for the prosecution of the present war, and to resist the common enemy, to take some more cavalry into the service of the Land, be it known, that on account of the good report received by us regarding the person of the doughty and honest William Edmond, and relying on his ability and experience in war, we have, at a meeting of the Council of State of the said united Lands, appointed and commissioned and do appoint and commission him, by these presents, as speedily as possible to raise and take command of a company of sixty lancers cavalry, giving him complete power, authority, and a special order to take command thereof as captain, to lead it and employ it against the Spanish, the malcontents, their adherents, and all other enemies of the United Netherlands, whether afield or in garrisons, and for the defence of any towns or fortresses there and wherever he may be ordained

---

[1] Slagzwaard = two-handed sword, probably the meaning.

[2] In 1586, in 'a band' drawn up by 'the haill name of Murray,' the signatures appear together of—

'WILLIAM MURRAY of Pitcairles.
ALEXANDER MURRAY of Drumdeway.

In another similar bond of 1598 there appears the signature of—

'ALEXANDER MURRAY of Drumdeway, Colonel.'

See also *supra*, p. 50, note 1, and *infra*, pp. 153, 166, 170.

[3] See State of War, 1595, p. 54, note 1.

and commanded in the service of the Lands by us, or by those having authority from us; holding his cavalry in good order, watch, and discipline of war as well by day as by night, without suffering them to burden excessively or to injure the citizens or the inhabitants of the towns and country districts; further, to do all that a good and faithful captain ought and is in duty bound to do in accordance with the rules and letters of instructions on the conduct of the war, already made or yet to be made. And this for payments such as other captains and cavalry are in receipt of; provided that he, his under officers, and cavalry shall rest satisfied with receiving one month's pay every 48 days, like others in the service of the Land; that he shall serve us and the said Lands faithfully, without any contention, and always allow his company to be passed in muster if called upon. *And that he shall have no power outside the United Netherlands to arrest or molest any of the said Land's inhabitants in their persons or goods on the account of this or other company for past services; but must comfort himself with the thought that he is being treated in everything like other companies of these Lands in the Land's service.* And that he may acquit himself in all this well and faithfully, the said Captain Edmond binds himself to take the proper oath at our hands, or at those of the Council of State aforesaid, and to cause register his commission, as well by the same Council of State, as by the appointed Councils of the States of Holland, upon whose repartition he shall be paid. Thereto shall also be granted to him the attache of the Lord Governor, and of the appointed Councils of the States of Holland, which being accomplished, we charge and command the lieutenant, officers, and common horsemen to receive him into their company; and all others whom it may concern, to acknowledge the said William Edmond for our appointed captain, submit to and obey him. Also in case of need, to lend him all assistance, help, and direction, and all this till further orders; for we have found this essential to the service of the Land.

Given at the Hague, the tenth June 1589, etc.

Commission of Patrick Bruce as Captain of Horse over a Company of a hundred mounted Lancers.

The States-General of the United Netherlands, etc. Seeing that Captain Patrick Bruce has offered to recruit a company of lancers for our and the service of the said United Lands, his payment to be found in contributions levied in the country parts of Flanders, which he is to bring under the safeguard and control of the State-General: and we having found it desirable to increase the cavalry already serving in defence of the said Lands, in order the better to withstand the common enemy: we have accordingly, at a meeting of the Council of State of the said Lands, accepted the offer of the said Patrick Bruce and retain the same, etc., for captain over a company of good lancers of 100 horses; giving him complete power, authority, and particular charge to raise the said company with all diligence, so that within the course of the next three months it may be ready to be employed in the service of these Lands, said company he is to take command of and lead, and is to suffer himself to be employed against the Spaniards, etc., and particularly for the execution and ingathering of the foresaid contributions; that is to say, when and as often as he shall be requested to do so by the officers appointed over the same, and in doing so to regulate himself according to the measure and order given, or that may be given by us. He is to keep his cavalry in good order, watch, and discipline of war, etc.; his payment to be 3000 pounds per month of 32 days, the officers' salaries and horse fodder included therein: provided he shall take care to procure, according to his agreement, all such payments out of said levies on the country districts of Flanders, the which he is to exact with all diligence and put in train, so that his pay beyond the present incomes can be escheat (or claimed) out of them; and he, the captain, his subordinate officers, and cavalry shall, like others, rest satisfied with receiving a month's pay every 48 days, it being understood that these United Lands do not hold themselves bound in their ordinary payment, nor in the third part of the remainder due for his services: reserving always an action (or law suit) by him against the Lands of Flanders.

Given at the Hague, the 15 April 1593.

Commission of William Balfour[1] *as Captain over Colonel Balfour's Company of* 150 *men.*

The States-General of the United Netherlands, etc. Seeing that Colonel Bartolt Balfour is discharged from the post of captain over a company of infantry for some years led by him; and that we deem it necessary to continue the same company in the service of these Lands, and therefore again to place another suitable person over them as captain: Be it known, that owing to the good report made to us regarding the person of William Balfour, lieutenant of the foresaid company, and his long continued and faithful services performed to these United Lands, together with his experience and honourable comportment, wherein we trust he shall persevere, we have, at a meeting of the Council of State of the foresaid United Lands, unanimously accepted the same William Balfour, etc., for captain of the company above mentioned, in the place of Colonel Balfour, giving him full authority, etc., to command the said company, and reduce it to 150 men, and it shall include, besides his person and boy, a lieutenant and ensign each with a boy, two sergeants, two drummers, a piper, three corporals, a quartermaster or clerk, a surgeon, 30 musketeers, 39 pikemen with corselets, ten halberdiers, three buckler-men being noblemen, etc.

Given at the Hague, 19th February 1594.

Commission of Robert Barclay[2] *as Captain of a company of Scots of* 150 *men.*

The States-General, etc. Having found good, because of the death of Captain Egger, that another fit and trusty person should be appointed to take command as head and captain over the company of Scots infantry, formerly led by the deceased, be it known that owing to the good report we have received regarding the person of Robert Bercley, and relying on this, as also on his ability and military experience, he having served for some time as lieutenant of the company of

[1] See State of War, 1595, p. 54, note 2.

[2] *Ibid.*, 1598, p. 57, note 2.

Colonel Murrey: at a consultation of the Council of State of the same United Lands, have placed and appointed the same Bercley, etc., as captain over the said company of the late Captain Egger to the number of 150 men, etc.

The Hague, the 21 November 1597.

Act of Commission[1] *for Captain Brogh*[2] *as Sergeant-Major over the said auxiliary.*

The States-General of the United Netherlands. To all those, etc., whereas we, for the service of the King of France and of these Lands, have found it good and necessary to appoint a sergeant-major over the two regiments of infantry ordered to go to France to the relief of the town of Camerijck,[3] under the conduct and command of the noble and trusty Jonker, Justinus van Nassau, Admiral of Zeeland, general of the said auxiliary, so for the good carrying out of this we have taken the person of William Brogh, captain of a company of Scots soldiers and sergeant-major of the Scots regiment, and believing his ability, valour, and experience to be certified, vouched, and assured, we have appointed and commissioned, and do hereby appoint and commission the foresaid Captain Brogh to be sergeant-major or Wachtmeester over the foresaid two regiments of infantry, giving him full power and authority to lead said force during its campaign in France, to take service of, and exercise the same, and to take the word of command concerning it from the said general, and to give it to the officers who shall be on duty in said expedition, to take the sharpest heed that among the soldiers good watch, ward, and war discipline shall be maintained, as well by day as by night. To listen to all complaints, and to report them to the authority whose business it is to attend to them that they may be seen to as is fitting; and further, to do all that a good and faithful sergeant-major or Wachtmeester ought, and is in duty bound to do; on a pay of a hundred pounds

[1] From the Commission Book of the States-General. Commissions 1586-1625.

[2] See State of War, 1595, p. 54, note 3.

[3] Cambrai.

of xl. great pieces per month (his ordinary pay of sergeant-major special over the Scotch regiment therein included) to commence the first of October next. It is therefore ordained and commanded to all and sundry whom it may concern that they are to recognise, respect, and obey the foresaid Captain Brogh in his foresaid quality on pain of our displeasure inasmuch as we have found this to be essential to the service of the Land.

So drawn up, etc., the 27th September 1595.

IV

EXTRACTS RELATING TO THE CLAIMS OF COLONEL BARTHOLOMEW BALFOUR AND THE POSITION OF THE SCOTTISH OFFICERS. 1586-1594

Council of State.[1]

1586, *Septr.* 2.—On account of the arrival of 150 soldiers at Amsterdam [from Scotland], and of those which are still expected; orders about their transport; also the authorities of Amsterdam are requested to receive them, and to pay them per head, a captain 1 florin [=1 guilder], a lieutenant 10 patars [=14 pence], an ensign and sergeant 6 p. each, a cadet, corporal, clerk 6 p. each, and every soldier 3 p. daily.

Novr. 15.—Est ordonné que les capitaines Ecossois seront en deux colonnels et sous le commandement de Balfour et Palton, et le traitement party en deux moitiés, à moitiés également, et que commissions soyent faits in forma.

1587, *January* 10*th.*—On General Norris's proposal, it is resolved to retain in service the company of Captain Rally; and with reference to this it was mentioned that before the departure of his Excellency [the Earl of Leicester] it was fixed that thenceforth not more than 2000 Scots would be kept in service.

Dec. 13*th.*—At the request of Colonel Balfour and Captain Patson[2] for a resolution about the interests of his regiment and other Scots regiments, gentlemen are nominated to enter into negotiations with them thereanent.

Dec. 13*th.*—Report: It was fixed that Colonel Balfour shall have in his Regiment the 10 Companies mentioned here, each

---

[1] Generale Index op de Notulen van den Raad van State, 1584-1600, door A. Bogaers. Deel 3. P—Z.

[2] *i.e.* Aristotle Patton. See pp. 26 and 46.

containing 150 men, and the Colonel's company containing 200 men. Regarding his pay, it shall be at the rate of 40 guilders per month paid to him for each company. It was also resolved that Captain Arobel Patson shall be colonel of the four Scots companies here mentioned, and to send him his commission; lastly, to consider as to how many officers shall be henceforth in each company, and what arms officers as well as privates shall bear.

Addendum, Dec. 20th.—The salary of colonel was fixed at 400 guilders, of the sergeant-major at 80, and of the provost at 50.

Acta Consilii Status Provincialium Confoederatorum.

Differences between the States and Colonel Balfour.

1588, *Saturday, May* 28.—Colonel Balfour was asked to come in, and was informed that their Honours understood he and his captains and officers felt themselves aggrieved at being asked to accept pay at the rate of 32 days for a month (nothing else, he must recollect, was undertaken during this war, in particular, too, in respect of the Scots, and so likewise with his comrades and other regiments brought over for the service of the land), and it being well known that he was a lover of their Fatherland, their Honours did not doubt but that he would be willing to put up with that, and give no occasion that through him the generally accepted footing be infringed upon. After various allegations brought forward by the colonel, and among others that he had persuaded his captains so far that they had been altogether willing to be reasonable, but that they had allowed themselves to forget many things, he ultimately undertook to urge his captains to rest contented with the arrangement.

And it having further been intimated to the colonel that great complaints had been made by certain people who had been fetched by his soldiers from Maas and Waall, he answered in effect that it had been done through a misunderstanding, he not being aware that those peasants were under Sauvegarde; but having ascertained this, he had given orders that satisfac-

tion should be made to the peasants; and he would take measures so that such complaints should cease, or would be himself answerable for them.

1588, *Monday*, *June* 13.—Captains Wm. Meurrey, Nysbeth, and Waddel, having compeared, the resolution of the Lords States-General and the Council was communicated to them, with the intimation that they should render their accounts, and would receive a month's pay, and henceforth they would be paid each 48th day by the authorities of Holland. Whereupon they answered that they were willing to go and to serve the country, but that they must have the means to make their soldiers willing and to satisfy them. Being asked what means they desired, they explained that they desired to get some security about the settling of accounts. Whereupon it was explained to them at some length that they had no reason to insist upon that, or to refuse to serve the country on that account, and they were again charged not to fail to have their companies ready to march. So then the said captains left the Council to have a consultation. And thereafter it was resolved that the foresaid Scottish captains shall be provided with new commissions in the name of my Lords the States-General, containing the express stipulation that they must be satisfied with a pay of 48 days for a month, and thereupon take a new oath. And should any objection be made by them to accept this commission, or take the oath, that they should be given their leave and discharge.

1588, *Wednesday*, *June* 15.—The Scottish captains having yesterday undertaken to declare their opinion to-day as to whether they should, under the terms of the commission offered to them yesterday, continue in the service of the country or not, it is resolved to summon them to appear before the gentlemen who were also present yesterday, and ask for their declaration.

June 15.—The Scottish captains being called in, their declarations anent the commissions offered them yesterday were asked for. Whereupon they answered that they could not accept any change in their commissions before the arrival of their Colonel; and it having been represented to them that such pretexts were oo frivolous, and that the distress of the

country could not bear any delay, but that the soldiers must be employed now against the enemy, they were urged therefore to give the matter further consideration. And meanwhile it was resolved that, having heard their declaration, the captains not agreeing to the terms should receive their discharge at once. The captains, having come in again, declared that they were willing to serve the Lands, but as they wished to give some satisfaction to their soldiers, they asked to get with the accounts some written security, particularly on the part of Holland, as otherwise they dare not go back to their soldiers; and if they could not get such security they would prefer to be discharged and leave the country, and for that they made request for ships and provision. On this the meeting was adjourned, and it was resolved to come to a decision in presence of my Lords the States-General in the afternoon.

Afternoon.—As, after many consultations, the Scottish captains would not accommodate themselves to what is offered them in polite and reasonable manner, but have, after repeated discussions, finally declared that they could only remain longer in service on condition of receiving security for their accounts, it was necessary at last to declare that the States would not hinder them, willing or unwilling, from departing, and gave them their discharge. And in case they should insist on departing with their companies, it was intimated that the companies would be disbanded, and every soldier might then do as he liked. Which they would not accept, saying that they had paid the companies' way from Scotland at their own expense, and they desired that a rendezvous should be granted where all the companies might be brought together, to depart also together. The captains having left [the Council chamber], it was resolved that the disbanding shall be proceeded with, that commissioners should be deputed, who would discharge every company in each town in the country, and announce to them at the same time that every one who might still desire to remain in the service of the country would be treated, as hitherto, as an honest soldier. It being not at all advisable to allow them a rendezvous, but it is considered better to embark the discharged companies

one after the other, with [a] reasonable [amount of] provisions. And of this action and the necessary resolutions notification shall be sent to all the provinces and governors, as also to the Count of Hohenlohe and Colonel Balfour, with the explanation that the Council has been forced to do so, and if they would have accepted any reasonable satisfaction the Council would have been willing to retain them in the service. And it is also resolved that those of the Scottish captains shall be written to that are elsewhere, and in this action have probably been in sympathy with the other captains, as for instance, Nysbeth, Dallachy, Cant, Hay, to inform them of what has been decided; but that, as they were not present with, nor included among the others, they were not to be considered as discharged, and could therefore continue in their service, marching or in garrisons, as ordered.

1588, *Friday, June* 17.—Colonel Balfour having come in, begged to be informed of all that had been discussed and transacted between their Lordships and the captains. And after he had been asked whether he had received the letter of the Council, and he declared that he had not, the minute was then read to him, and all that passed with the Scottish captains on the previous day was told to him at length, and eventually he requested their Lordships to allow him to confer with the captains, and promised to give as soon as possible a report of his conference.

1588, *Saturday, June* 18.—There was also read a certain remonstrance of Colonel Balfour and his captains, appearing to indicate that it would not be agreeable to him if the Scottish companies, lately determined to be discharged, were to leave the service of the country for want of the necessary security, but that he would prefer that he should enter into negotiations with them in order that his own and the others' companies should still continue in their service, with reasonable concessions. Which also the Advocate of Holland, Barneveldt, being present before the States-General, reported that he had that day been led to understand by the said Balfour. Thereupon, by the States-General together with the Council, it was, after deliberation, resolved that the decision arrived at three days before shall take effect, but in such a manner that the

despatches already sent for the discharge of the companies shall be executed, and that the captains of the companies in reference to which a despatch was not sent, who, however, were present in the Council when the entreaty and protest of the Scottish captains was made three days ago—namely, Waddell and Traill—may, if they choose, continue in the service as before, and that the despatch and the effect of discharge shall be as respects them cancelled. And in regard to the request for some security for their accounts, this is still to continue in terms of the act of the States-General by which the settlement is promised. Whereupon Colonel Balfour, coming in and being spoken to on the subject, answered that it was a strange way to deal with the captains who had served so long, the more as they are content to continue their service on reasonable conditions; and when it was said to him that it was a matter of certainty that by far the greater portion of the soldiery who were to be discharged would wish very much to stay in the country, he answered that peradventure they might be mistaken, as he indeed was sure that not a single one would remain here. And, besides, he had also been specifically informed that the captains, as to whom the despatches of discharge had been already sent away, were, the two Murrays, John Balfour, Blair, and Prop.

June 18, *afternoon.*—The matter of the Scottish captains and companies was discussed again in the presence of the Advocate of Holland, Oldenbarnevelt, Colonel Balfour being present also, who earnestly insisted that these captains and their companies should be retained in service, representing in his speech that they had for years long done good service, that, though they had made their demand indiscreetly, the Council should be pleased to consider that they were soldiers, and that the Council ought to put into use its wisdom and discretion against their indiscretion, to secure that the service of the country should not be harmed by such a little cause. Finally, they seemed to incline to the view of the said Advocate, that those who were designated before should be discharged; and no despatch of discharge should be sent regarding the others, those, namely, like Trail and Waddel; and regarding the remainder that, in order to preserve authority, they should

cause them to embark, and so make evident some tokens of obedience; but that, thereafter, some resolution may be arrived at regarding their retention in service.

1588, *Thursday, June 23.*—The States-General being met, it was announced that Colonel Balfour, having been present yesterday, had requested information as to what further arrangements had been made in the case of the discharged Scots companies, and that the said colonel had been told that their Honours could make no alteration in the resolution taken by the States-General; thereupon he again requested that further consideration might be given to the matter, and, should they not see fit to retain the discharged soldiers and companies any longer, that at least some satisfaction might be given them; he recounted also the wearing service rendered by Captain Blair to these Lands. Which, being taken into deliberation, it was resolved that in order to maintain authority, the three companies already discharged were to remain discharged, and orders were promptly issued that ships and victuals be got ready for those of them who wished to return to Scotland; and to give them some satisfaction, an agreement was to be made with said captains as to their arrears of pay, the furthest practicable day and terms to be fixed, namely, eight to ten years. And regarding the other companies which also are designated for discharge, this not being as yet carried out, it was for certain considerations resolved that, if by the captains or colonel in their name a request should be made that they be continued in the service, they should be retained, provided that they, captains, by solemn deed, in the first place shall renounce the combination entered into by them mutually, and promise, moreover, that they will always, without any refusal or excuse about their colonel or otherwise, put themselves at the disposal of the service of the country, where such shall be ordered by the States-General or by the Council of State. And that they will content themselves with the pay of a month each forty-eighth day; and that they, also, during the time of their service, will make no pretension to get any security for their account or terms of pay; on condition that, if the state of the country should require the discharge of some of their companies, that these captains will be treated in the same manner as the captains who were discharged.

Afternoon.—The resolution taken this forenoon in the business of the Scots was communicated to Colonel Balfour, he being present, and he insisted and begged much that the officers of the three dismissed companies should be placed under the flags of the others, and some support should be granted them. It was resolved to enrol and distribute under the other flags the lieutenants, ensigns, and sergeants of the three discharged companies, and with a view to this their names are to be given up to the Council, and that every lieutenant is to receive twenty pounds [=guilders], every ensign eighteen, every sergeant eight pounds, in addition to the salary of 10 pounds a month.

1588, *Friday, the 24 June, afternoon.*—Considered and read the Requests of Captains Blair and Murray, resolved that the discharge decreed is to take effect, but Blair is to be retained in the service for a time till some order and arrangement can be made as to his arrears and the payment of them, not the United Provinces alone being held bound in the large sum that he fixes as his amount of arrears. And as to Murray, as he is a nobleman of high rank, and has behaved himself always with great discretion, without meddling much with the protest of the Scottish captains, is resolved that he, therefore, is to be retained on a reasonable monthly pay till opportunity occurs of employing him again either by permitting him later on to form a new company out of the disbanded Scottish companies, or by appointing him to a vacant company.

1588. *Declaration to be subscribed by the Scottish Captains.*

Since, owing to the corruptions that arose among the soldiery and to other troubles occurring, the State of the United Netherlands has been weakened and injured, so that it is necessary to provide against the recurrence of such corruptions and troubles by the best and surest means, therefore, we, the undersigned colonel and captains, together and severally, with special regard to the receipt of our accounts in the service of the said United Netherlands, made up to the last day of April last, and likewise of our new commissions, of our own free will and to show the good Christian zeal we have

to the true Christian religion and the welfare of said lands, generally and particularly, for which the heavy charges of war are borne, and for which we have taken up arms, have promised and do promise in good faith, honourably and devoutly by this declaration, for ourselves and our soldiers under us, that we shall honestly and faithfully serve the States of the said lands after the tenor of our new commissions aforementioned, and shall be content and satisfied with receiving a full month's pay at intervals of 48 days, whether in more than one payment or delivery as may be most convenient to them (but not counting five or six days which sometimes elapse before payment, as often happens when provisions and other necessaries are delivered which cannot quickly be liquidated); and on these terms maintain good military discipline ourselves and among our soldiers under us, in accordance with the rules of war and the oath we took, and that we shall not, because of the third part of our pay (which in future service is to remain for us and our soldiers in arrear) or even because of what the lands owe us for services rendered, refuse any service or permit or suffer any corruption, but oppose such to the uttermost of our power. We having entire confidence that the Sovereign States, according to their Highnesses' resolution, will settle accounts with the whole soldiery for their past services, and take action from this date, and that said reckonings be made in accordance with the wealth of the Government of the country, we, as regards times of security and payment, to be treated and favoured as others who have rendered the like services: and as regards our future arrears, they are to be reckoned and satisfaction given as in the case of others. And to uphold this we have pledged and do pledge each one of us our respective persons and goods, and in witness signed the beginning with the year 1588.

[On 24th June 1588, the following officers signed this declaration:—J. Balfour, John Prop, David Cant, William Waddel, William Hay, William Murray. The Dutch text is as follows:—]

Alsoo den Staet van de Vereenigde Nederlanden duerende d'alteratien ontstaen onder het volck van oorloghe ende andere voorgevallen

swaricheyden geswackt ende gecreuckt; dat nootlick tegens gelycke alteratien ende swaricheyden by de beste ende versekertste middelen dient voorzien.

Soo hebben wy ondegescreven Colonnel ende Capiteynen tsamen ende elcx byzonder int ontfangen van onse affrekeninghen, van den dienste der voorsz, vereenichde Nederlanden tot den laetsten April lestleden toegedaen, mitsgaders van onze nyeuwe commissien wt onse vrye wille, ende omme te thoonen den goeden Christelicken yver die wy hebben totte ware christelicke Religie, ende den welstande der voorsz. Landen. Int generael ende bysonder, daer vooren de beswaerlicke lasten van den oorloghe gedraghen wordden ende voor de welcke wy de wapenen gebruycken, ter goeder trouwen by eere vromicheyt belooft ende beloven by dezen voor ons ende onsen onderhebbenden crychsluyden, dat wy volgende de voorsz, onze nyeuwe commissie den Staten vande voorsz Landen zullen vromelick en getrouwlick dienen ende ons tevreden houden ende genoughen, mits van Achtende veertich tot achten veertich daghen (onbegrepen vyff oft zes daghen dat somwylen de betalinghe zoude moghen verloopen. In regard dat dickwils vivres ende andere behouften gelevert wordden, die zoo haest niet en comen wordden geliquideert) ontfangende een volle maendt solts tzy van eene oft meer betaleugen oft leveringhen naedat hen best zal wesen gelegen, ende daerop mit onse onderhebbende crychsluyden ons in goede dissipline militaire te houden, ende te achtervolghen de ordonnancien van der oorloghe ende onsen gedanen eedt, zonder dat wy ter oorsaecken van het derdeudeel van onze besoldinghe (welcke wy voor ons ende onse onderhebbende Crychsluyden voor de toecomende dienste ten achteren blyven zullen) oft oyck voor tghene de Landen ons van onsen voorgaenden dienste schuldich zyn, eenighe dienst weygeren, oft eenighe alteratie toestaen, oft gedoghen zullen, maer nae onse wterste vermoogen deselve beletten Ons volcomelick betrouwende dat die Heeren Staten volgende Haer E. resolutie mit alle het volck van oorloghe tot affrekeninghe van voorleden dienst voortaen zullen doen procederen ende dat deselve affrekeninghe gedaen synde nae het vermoge ende den staet van den Lande, wy zoo inde termynen van betalinghe als versekeringhe zullen getracteert, ende gefavoriseert wordden, als yemandt anders van gelycke diensten, ende dat ons van tgene wy voor den toecomenden tyde ten achteren zullen blyven, als anderen affrekeninghe en contentement zal wordden gegeven, ende van het onderhoudt van desen hebben wy verbonden en verbinden by desen een yegelick onse respective personen ende goederen, ende ten oorconde dese geteyckent den
beginnende met den jaare 1588.[1]

1588, *Saturday*, *Sep.* 10.—Resolved: to inform Captain Muray, by Secretary Huyghens, that he is offered eight

[1] *Instructie Boek van den Raad van Staaten.*

hundred guilders with permission to depart for Scotland as requested, and to leave his company to Captain Muray, his brother;[1] and if he accepts this, that the States of Holland shall be communicated with and induced to grant him payment of this money.[2]

Sir Bartholomew Balfour and the King's Commission.

Resolutions of the States-General.

1592, *December* 14.—Compeared the Conservator of Scotland and delivered a certain letter of His Majesty, dated St. Croix [Holyrood], the 24th Oct. last, in which His Majesty declares that he makes and appoints Sir Bartholomew Balfour one of his lords-in-waiting as colonel-general and captain-in-chief of all His Majesty's companies of foot and horse.

N.B. Extract from the Conservator's Letter of Instruction.

. . . Qu'aucun général ou colonel ne soit recognu sur noz subiects présentement en service soubz les Estats, excepté seulement Colonel Balfour.

Qu'il rendra paine et négotiera que les dits Estats prennent quelque pied pour le soulagement de la pauvreté de nos subjects, illecq en leur service, affin de faire cesser leurs continuelles doléances.

N.B. Extract from the answer of the States-General to the Conservator.

. . . Les dits Estats remercient le Roy bien humblement de ce qu'il Luy a pleu leur permettre, comme ont fait aussy autres Roys, Princes et Républicques chrestiens, qu'ils se soient serviz à la soulde de ces pays de leurs subiects, avec lesquels les Estats ont accoustumé de traicter sur le faict de leurs commandemens, commissions, instructions et payemens, tant en qualité des Colonnels et capitaines que d'aultres, ainsy qu'ils ont aussy faict avec le Colonel Balfour et feront encore d'icy

[1] See Commission, p. 89, notes p. 50.

[2] On Sept. 20th, 1596, the States of Holland resolved 'henceforth to pay the companies every 42 days in the place of every 48 days.'

en avant de temps à aultre comme sera trouvé convenir pour le plus grand bien et service de ces pays, selon les occasions et occurences.

1592, *December* 18.—Colonel Balfour was asked whether he held any commission from the King of Scotland to assume here in this Land command of the Scottish companies.

He declared that it would not be his first commission of that kind, that he has had other commissions and appointments from His Majesty in Scotland.

Finally, that the Conservator of Scotland had a certain commission for him from His Majesty, which he had seen, but not yet received—the authority of the States-General not being prejudiced.

Whilst here in this Land, he desired no other commission than that of their Highnesses, with which he would be well contented; but that the foresaid commission from the king must be of service to him should he go to Scotland, against those of his nation whom he had commanded, and the friends of those who had died, or been executed by him in justice and otherwise. At the same time, he did not presume to make a practical use of the same in these Lands, otherwise than only with the advice of his lords and masters.

After consultation on this, the said Balfour was informed that their Highnesses the States felt completely assured of the good judgment of the King of Scotland, and his earnest desire for the preservation of the government of these Lands, and the maintenance of the common cause of the same; also of the trustworthiness of the said Balfour in the service of the Lands. And since it behoves the States to see carefully to the maintenance of equity in the Land and order in the same, and considering that in the foresaid commission there were divers points in conflict therewith, which their Highnesses would not conceal from him, that they could not permit him to make use of the same in their Lands, and therefore desired that he should hand over in writing his ultimate opinion on the subject, which, having been declared, further injunctions might be given accordingly.

Dec. 18, *post prandium.*—Compeared Colonel Balfour, and exhibited, according to the desire of the States, a certain

memorial in writing, containing his declaration respecting the Commission sent to him by the King of Scotland.

The foresaid memorial having been read, it was resolved that the said Colonel Balfour be to-morrow told authoritatively that the States are convinced that he cannot serve in this country (the rights of the same remaining conserved) except on the Commission of their Highnesses the States-General; that he must therefore declare whether he will serve on the commission of the same and no other, or not; and that the agent from Scotland be handed a memorial in writing, giving the reasons why it can't be thought of, that the said Colonel should serve in these Lands with such said commission from the king.

Memorandum of the States to Mr. Denistoun, on account of Col. Balfour's commission.

Les Estats généraux des Provinces Unies des Pays Bas, Aians veu et examiné l'originale commission qu'il a pleu au Sérénissime Roy d'Escosse envoier au Colonnel Balfour par les mains du S^r^ Denistoun, Conservateur des privilèges de la nation Escossoise en ces Pays Bas, pour commander aux compagnies Escossoises qui sont en leur service, datée le xxi Novembre Mil cinq cent quatre vingt et onze, déclairent qu'il ne peult subsister avecq le droit et authorité du pays, que aucun colonnel ou capitaine qui s'est mis volontairement au service de ces pays soubz la soulde d'Icelluy, se serviroit aux pays d'aultre commission que des dits Estats généraux, oultre ce que en lad. commission se retrouvent plusieurs pointz contrarians directement au droict, authorité et louables usages des ditz pays, comme:

De faire la soulde des soldats, d'autant qu'il y a un ordre en cela au pays selon lequel tous les Colonnels et capitaines sont tenuz se règler.

Letter of Colonel Balfour to the States-General.

Messeigneurs,—Mess^es^ Les Estats généraulx des Provinces Unies des Pays Bas.

Le Colonnel Balfour désirant donner contentement à vos

Seigneuries sur la proposition que luy a été faicte par Icelles, touchant l'éxécution de la commission qu'il a pleu à sa Ma^te^ d'Escosse, son Prince Souverain, luy envoier.

Déclare ne s'en volloir prévaloir au préiudice de l'authorité de voz Seig^ies^, ny des ordonnances militaires de par decha, mais seulement pour augmenter son authorité et tenir soubz meilleure discipline les troupes commises soubz sa charge.

Et combien que la formalité de la comission soit par quelques circonstances dissemblables au stille des commissions de par decha, si est qu'elle n'est aultre que toutes elles que sa Ma^té^ a de coustume dépescher en tel faict, affin que son authorité soit recognue entre ses subiectz, quelque part qu'ils soient.

Parquoy, suivant la bonne preuve que le dit Colonnel a faict de la fidélité et versance envers vos Seig^ies^ et la cause duquoy, est résolu persister jusques à la fin, vos S^ies^ se peuvant reposer sur sa prudhommie et le serment presté à Icelles.

Et si par quelques circumstances contenues en la dite commission, voz S^ies^.

Item, de lever et casser des capitaines et aultres principaux officiers.

Item, d'ordonner et faire les moustres des compagnies, desquels deux pointz la disposition appartient au pays.

Item, de recevoir et payer la soulde des compagnies d'aultant que l'on n'est accoustumé de payer ès mains du colonnel que la soulde de sa propre compagnie, oultre son tractement de colonnel, et à chacun capitaine la sienne.

Item, de faire et enioindre telle discipline, rêglement et loix qu'il advisera estre requises parceque les loix et ordonnances sur la discipline militaire se font de temps à aultre de la part des d. Estats généraux, suivant lesquelles s'administre droit et justice.

Faict à l'assemblée des dits Sieurs Estats Généraux à la Haye en Hollande ce dix huictiesme jour de Décembre, L'an mil cincq cens vingt et douze, soubzcr. par ordonnance des ditz S^rs^ Estats. (Signé) Aerssen.

Having consulted about the request presented by Colonel Balfour, as well for himself as for the captains of his regiment, it was resolved, that he be told in the assembly, that he has no reasons to complain—in respect that he and the

captains of his regiment receive their pay every 48 days,[1] as they had been informed they should. And if they have not had the best pay in France, on the other hand, in other quarters and garrisons within these Lands, it has been better. However the States desiring to deal with the foresaid regiment in all reasonableness, notwithstanding this, have resolved and granted the foresaid colonel, for his extraordinary expenses incurred in the march to France, six hundred guilders, and to each of his captains three hundred guilders in one payment, and more than that, are willing to make payment in clothing, when the petitioners shall desire it, to the extent of one month's pay for each company, that thereby the soldiers may be brought up to the mark in accoutrements and order, so as to be of service to the Land, always with the understanding that said month's pay shall be deducted from the pay of the 'foresaid Company, during the next six months, a sixth part thereof every month. Wherewith the above-mentioned colonel and captains shall have to content themselves. And touching the remaining points of his request, they will be gone into at a fitting time.

Request of Colonel Balfour.

Collection of Requests sent to the States-General.

Lectum, November 21, 1592.—A Messeigneurs les Estatz généraulx des Provinces Unies des Pays Bas. Remonstre en toute révérence et humilité Colonel *Balfour*, tant en son propre nom qu'au nom des Capitaines de son Régiment.

Que passé un an ou environ se trouvantz surchargés de debtes créés pour l'entretenment de leurs compagniez, comme ne pouvant suffire la paye de 48 par mois, Ils présentèrent requeste à voz Seig[ies], tendant au contentement que leur fut promis au mois d'Apuril 1588 pour le deu de leur service avecq leurs compagniez, depuis leur sortie d'Anvers, iusques au premier May 1588, dont ils ont descompte arrestéz. Sur laquelle req[te] fut donnée responce de dilay, et depuis survenant le voyage de France, les dits remonstrants ont tellement augmenté leurs debtes, si pour l'équipage qu'entretennement extraordinaire de leurs compagnies, durant le dit voyage,

[1] See note p. 106.

avecq la recrute qu'il leur a convenu mander d'Escosse pour le supplement de leur nombre perdu au dit extraordinaire service, qu'il leur est du tout impossible se depettrer des dites debtes, ne jouissant que des payes ordinaires, ce qui les a faict espérer estre fondés en leurs prétentions représentés en leur requeste puis n'aguerres à vos Seig^{ies}, de laquelle req^{te} n'est sorty le fruict espéré, mais au contraire un simple renvoy à Messeig^{s} les Estatz de Hollande pour leur paye de 48 jours par mois. En quoy leurs S^{ies} ont consenti d'entrer en liquidation à la charge que tout ce que l'on trouvera par les ditz remonstrantz avoyr esté reçu tant en argent, vivres, qu'armes, excédant la dite paye de 48 jours, qu'il sera deffalqué de leur paye courante. Lesquelles extrémitez recherchées contre eux, seroyt cause de leur totalle ruyne et dissipation de leurs trouppes. Ce qu'il n'espèrent estre les mercèdes ou récompensse de leurs tant fidelles et loyaux services. Et comme à rayson de la présente nécessité et sérieuses debtes qui les accablent, lesquelles sont procédantes du dit extraordinaire et non obligé service, ne se trouvent aulcunement accomodés de la paye ordinaire de 48 jours, laquelle comme dict est, ne peut suffire pour l'entretennement quotidien de leurs compagnies, sont contraintz de recheff suplier vos S^{ies} entrer en descompte advenant 32 jours par mois, suivant le contenu de leurs derniers contracqs, et en conformité des promesses à eux faictes à la despeche de leurs derniers descomptes, entrer en traicté pour l'asseurance du payement de leur entier deu; desquelles lettres d'asseurances ils se pourront servire pour subvenir à leurs nécessitez, payement de leurs debtes et entretennement de leurs soldats au service du pays.

Continuation of Balfour's business.

Dec. 19.—The Conservator of Scotland compeared, and the foresaid resolution was communicated to his lordship, the clerk being charged to hand it over to him in writing.

Colonel Balfour compeared, and was informed of the resolution arrived at regarding the memorial handed in by him in reference to the commission sent to him by the King of Scot-

land. He declared that he does not wish to make use of it in these Lands, nor to serve in virtue of any other commission, but only on the commission of the States-General, his lords and masters.

Dec. 20.—Colonel Balfour compeared and presented his answer to the offer made by the States to him and the captains of his regiment, which answer is inserted below as follows:—

'Response de Monsieur Balfour, Colonnel et ses Capitaines, sur la proposition à eux faicte par Messeigneurs les Estats Généraux.

'Le dit Colonel et ses Capitaines déclarent ne chercher aultre chose de mesditz Seigneurs, sinon de voir leurs soldatz soulagez par quelque convenable moien de leur présente nécessité. Il a pleu à mesditz Seigneurs de faire un offre d'un mois en drap pour chacune compagnie et estre rabatu en six paiemens; sauve la correction de vos S^ies^, le soldat ne sera en cet endroit soulagé, puis plus tost chargé davantage, quitant la sixiesme partie de sa paye, l'espace de six mois.

'Mais s'il plaisoit à mes d. Seig^s^ de vouloir accorder un mois en drap en tant moins et à bon compte de ce qui est deu par d'escompte faicte, ou sera trouvé deu par d'escompte de leur présent service, alors le dict Colonel et Capitaines obliger de remercier vos S^ies^.

'Ils remerchient aussy voz S^ies^ de l'offre faicte à leurs personnes en récompense des grands frais par eux faictz durant le voiage en France. Ils ne sauront avecq si petite somme donner contentement à leurs créditeurs, car ils désirent plus tost de voir leurs soldats soulagés que leur particulier.

'Touchant d'entrer d'escompte avec voz S^ies^ et quieter un sixiesme, le dit colonnel et capitaines ne sauront céder à ceste poinct sans meure délibération et advis de leurs officiers et soldats, et aultres respectz.

'Quant à la commission expédiée par sa Ma^té^ d'Escosse au Colonnel, cela tend plus pour se guarantir contre aucuns qui vouldroient prendre action contre luy en Escosse, comme il a désia déclairé par escript. Car il est prest de continuer à voz S^ies^ le service, comme il a faict. Pour tant prient bien

affectueusement led. Colonnel et Capt^es^, qu'il plaise à Voz Seig^ies^ considérer la longue et fidèle service par eux faicte par decha, et l'intime affection qu'ilz ont de continuer jusques au dernier de leur vie et leur accorder moitié en drap en tant moins et à bon compte comme dessus. Car voians leurs soldatz soulagez, ils sont prestz en union et bon accord de se soubzmettre à toutes choses qu'il plaira à Messeigneurs leur commander pour le prouffit et service du pays.'

Dec. 24.—The foresaid answer having been considered, it was resolved to declare in regard to it that the States by no means understand that he is at liberty to serve and help himself in any manner in these Netherlands, with any commission, in his position as colonel in command of the Scottish companies, they being in the service of these Lands, other than with the Commission of the States only, in conformity with the foregoing declaration made respecting this.

Then as regards the deduction for the clothing or accoutrements agreed to by the States, that the same shall be carried out according to what shall be found to be just and reasonable.

1593. *Alleged Plot of the Scots Transaction with Balfour.*

Dec. 2.—On the remonstrance being made, that apparently some plot might be entered into by the Scots, which in future times might tend to injure the condition of the Land, it was, during a long consultation suggested and advised in what manner this might be dealt with, so that the Land might be assured of their services; and with that end in view several plans and suitable methods were proposed. Thereafter nothing else was resolved on than that his Excellency [Prince Maurice] should be advised to divide the Scottish companies in the garrisons, and post them in such places, that they may not, and cannot do any ill. Resolution of States-General

Dec. 4.—A consultation was once again held as to how in time to come they could be assured of the service of the Scots. And it was thought good in the first place to try to satisfy Colonel Balfour, concerning the payment requested by him of the arrears of his salary; and for that end to offer 1000 dollars ready money, and further 1000 dollars yearly, till paid in full.

Item. To sound the intention of the said Balfour, in regard to his accounts of his company. Also what is due him for the services afterwards performed by him, with the foresaid company; and to resolve, that it shall be accumulated with the principal, till report shall have been made and heard, of what has occurred concerning this. As to this, it being well understood that the system be still insisted on of keeping the companies apart, and that they ought to be placed in such garrisons that it shall not be in their power to do any ill. Finally, in order that the foresaid Scots be fitly treated, the act shall be renewed, signed by the captains.

Feb. 12.—The Council was requested to go to the Assembly of the States-General, and went accordingly. And there Colonel Balfour, Captains Murray, Dalachy, Brog, Prop, Egger and Waddel were informed that since they will not content themselves with the settlement, of which an offer has been made them severally, nor otherwise with such pay as the other captains are in receipt of, that therefore they are discharged from their service, and loosed from their oath. But should any one among them desire to continue in the States' service, it is devised that he shall come to an agreement with the same.

Dec. 6.—The Lord Advocate of Holland was commissioned and authorised to treat with Colonel Balfour, as to the payment of the outstanding salary of the same, for the sum of 1500 guilders ready money, and 1500 guilders a year till said salary be paid in full.[1]

[1] See States of War *supra*, and also p. 245.

V

PAPERS RELATING TO THE CLAIMS AND EMBASSIES OF COLONEL SIR WILLIAM STEWART OF HOUSTON, SIR WILLIAM MURRAY, AND OTHERS, AND REPORTS OF THE DUTCH EMBASSIES TO ENGLAND AND SCOTLAND IN 1588, 1589, AND 1594.

1588-1595

Transactions with Colonel Stewart.[1]

Council of State.

1588, *August* 20.—There appeared before the assembly a person claiming to be an ambassador of the King of Scotland, and after preliminary greetings and compliments on the part of His Majesty, he briefly intimated that he was charged to

[1] Colonel William Stewart of Houston, by whom this claim was made, was (according to Douglas) the second son of Thomas Stewart, fourth Laird of Galston, in Ayrshire, descended from Alexander, brother of John, first Lord Darnley, and first Earl of Lennox of the Stewart line. But it seems doubtful whether he was legitimate. Sir Walter Scott describes him as a relation of Captain James Stewart, created Earl of Arran in 1573, whom he seems to have succeeded as Captain of the King's Guard. He must be distinguished from Arran's brother, Sir William Stewart, who was dead before Stewart of Houston became Sir William. The Earl of Arran was the second son of Andrew, third Lord Ochiltree, and it is a curious fact that, obnoxious as he was to the party of the Kirk, his sister was the young wife of old John Knox.

The first record of William Stewart's military service is a request in October 1575 to purchase arms in England, having received a captain's commission under the Prince of Orange. After the Pacification of Ghent, he is said to have served the town of Dantzick against Poland with a regiment (or some Scottish companies), which he brought to Flanders on the resumption of hostilities with Don John of Austria, and which was taken into pay by the associated provinces. In June 1577 he is described as 'captain of two companies and Lt-colonel of the Scottish regiment.' In one list of 1579 his regiment is said to consist of eight companies (Balfour's being given as of eight also), and in one of 1580 of

speak in reference to the debt due to Colonel Stuart for his past services rendered to these Lands, and since he could not very well lay that matter before them in a speech, he intimated that he has drawn up a statement in writing, which he had

---

five—Balfour's regiment being stated in the same list as consisting of eighteen (Renom de France). In one document the establishment of his regiment as from 1st March 1579 to April 18th, 1581 is given as ten companies, of which one was latterly commanded by Patton, and in December 1586 the command of the Scottish companies was re-arranged, Barthold Balfour being given ten and Patton four. Stewart's final settlement with the States in 1593 was made for five companies, apparently the strength of the regiment on passing from the employment of the associated provinces to that of the Northern Union in 1579.

Stewart apparently married when serving in Flanders, for in noticing some of the good things that fell into the hands of the foreign adventurers, Lettenhove says, 'Le Colonel Stuart obtient la main de la veuve du Comte de Manderscheidt.' He afterwards married, in Scotland, the widow of Halkett of Pitfirrane.

Mr. James Melville describes Colonel Stewart as 'a pensioner of the Prior of St. Andrews'; and Calderwood says that, having been a colonel in Flanders, he was 'brought home and in credit with the king by the Earl of Gowrie's moyen, of purpose to counterpace the greatness and credit of James Stewart, Earl of Arran.' When the Duke of Lennox approached Edinburgh in November 1582, 'Colonel Stewart, with the men of war lately taken up, watched in the abbey.' He went on an embassy to England in 1583, and subsequently accompanied king James in the sudden move to St. Andrews which emancipated the king from the control of the Gowrie faction. In August 1583 he had been made Commendator of Pittenweem. It was to him that the plain speaking of the Rev. David Ferguson was addressed in one of the interviews of the Presbyterian ministers with the king: 'Assure yourself if yee counsell him to place and displace the nobilitie as yee please they will not bear it at your hands, who is but a meane man.' 'The Colonel,' says the narrator, 'stormed at first, but grew calm incontinent.' The Commendator of Dunfermline is said to have sent him a purse with thirty gold pieces. The colonel informed the king, and gave the pieces to thirty of the guard, who wore them in their hats as they marched from Perth to Falkland, with the purse upon a spear-point. In November 1583 he appeared before the Presbytery of Edinburgh, and 'purged himself of having carried a double message to England,' and in the following month an alteration was made in the coinage, 'to get silver to Colonel Stewart to pay the waged men of war.'

In February 1584 he was 'sent to St. Andrews as a spy to entrap Mr. Andrew,' and alleged to the king that Andrew Melville had 'compared his mother to Nebuchadnezzar, who was chased from the kingdom.' He subsequently appeared as Melville's accuser, 'wha bruikit that name for ignominie many yeares after, "Wilyeam Stewart the Accusar,"' and two months later rode with some horsemen to arrest the Earl of Gowrie at Dundee. Upon the earl resisting he promptly 'bringeth ordinance out of the ships,' and with the assistance of the town of Dundee besieged the house and secured his prisoner. On the demonstration by Gowrie's friends at Stirling, Stewart at once rode there with five hundred men, and the army of the Lords melted away. He was with the king at Dirleton in May

handed, together with an authentic copy of the commission and charge given him by the King. This being in Latin was read, and it was found to conclude with a protestation that, in case of failure to pay, His Majesty would consent to grant letters

---

1585, where 'they passed the time with the play of Robinhood.' On the return of the banished Lords in October, he went against them with a hastily raised company to Jedburgh, but fell back, finding them too strong. At the taking of Stirling he 'made some shew to have resisted,' and 'was followed so hardlie' by Mr. James Haldane, that Haldane, 'as he was laying hands on him was shot by the Colonel's servant.' The king's stipulation for his life on the surrender of the Castle of Stirling was not assented to, and Calderwood gives this account of him: 'Colonel Stuart was, as is constantly reported, first a cloutter of old shoes. He went to the Low Countries, where he served in the wars, first as soldier, then as a captain, at last as a colonel. He returneth home, and was employed by the king to apprehend any subject in any corner of the kingdom that the Court had any quarrel at. He wanted not likewise his reward, for he was gifted with the Priory of Pittenweem, and married the Lady Pitfirrane, not without suspicion of the murder of her former husband.' Both the Earl of Arran and Colonel Stewart were obnoxious to the clerical party, and the statements of the ecclesiastical historians in regard to them must be taken *cum grano salis*. Mr. James Gibson, minister of Pencaitland, had a lively interview with King James for having said 'he thought it had been Capt. James Stewart, Colonel William Stuart, and Ladie Jesabell that had long persecuted the Kirk, but he saw that it was the king himself, because he passed forward in that cursed course that they began.' In 1585 he was suspected by the English of being 'the principal dealer in Scotland' between King James and the Jesuits, and on his dismissal in the end of that year his movements were closely watched. He was preparing shipping; was expected to go and serve the King of Spain; was again in great favour in February, and expected to be ambassador to Denmark (St. Pap. Border). He had previously obtained an Act of Parliament (1584, *c.* 49) deputing a commission to the Estates, urging them to make payment of the arrears due to him, 'having served during the space of ten or twelve years'; and in December 1586 he was with the King of Denmark, who was 'urging the States to make him satisfaction for injuries and restore his wife's provisions.' In April 1587 he was said to be 'in great credit with the Prince of Parma, who had restored him to all his wife's living again.' The movements of his messengers were reported on. He had sent a ship for one Nisbet, and one of his friends had boasted that 'within two months the Colonel would himself be with the king at whose return other news would be known than were yet' (Border Papers). But a little later it was acknowledged 'so as where we thought it was Colonel Stewart that had been the doer of these matters, it is Colonel Sempill that had been the doer with the King of Spain.' Stewart returned by Denmark, and kept himself very quiet, but in the eventful year 1588 was credited with 'very boldly and openly' urging King James to accept the King of Spain's offers, and declaring that he would 'find more dalliance than gain' from England. 'But it is said that the king's answer hath little pleased him' (Border Papers). In 1588 Lord Huntly, then in favour, recommended his restoration as

of marque; he, nevertheless, not having any intention to break any point or clause of the accord and treaty of peace existing between His Majesty and the Lands. Whereto the reply was promptly given that he had addressed himself to the wrong quarter, and that he ought to apply to the States-General, to

---

Captain of the Guard, and he was specially mentioned along with Lord Huntly as one of 'the papists and apostates which shall happen to resort to Court or to the town of Edinburgh,' who were to be proceeded against by order of the Assembly. Restored to favour, he obtained the letters of marque against the Dutch ships, which were to prove far more effectual than the representations of the monarchs of Scotland and Denmark. In 1589 he went to Denmark along with the Earl Marischal, the ambassador, in connection with the royal marriage, and was again sent to sea to search for the Queen's fleet; and in the following year he again took over a ship to bring the King and Queen home. In 1590 he 'took £500 from the Queen of England to the King of Scots,' and went as ambassador to 'the partes of Almany,' and in 1591 had a lawsuit with John Shairp of Houston. In 1592 an act was passed acknowledging 'his great services in foreign parts,' and he was warded in the castle because 'the Queen used him as an instrument to disgrace the chancellor.' He was again, in August 1592, warded in reference to an accusation brought by him against the Laird of Spynie, who 'offered the single combat,' for which a day was assigned. In 1593 he went on an embassy to Holland, and succeeded in getting his claims settled, and on 19th December he was present at one of Mr. Robert Bruce's sermons. In 1596 he received a commission of lieutenancy in the Highlands and Islands, obtained authority in August to levy 1000 men, and in November reported his proceedings in Kintyre. In January 1597 it was reported that 'the king would have him Constable of Dumbarton,' and in 1598 he acted on a commission for erecting towns in the Highlands, went as ambassador to Denmark, and was one of the 'undertakers for the Lewis.'—*P. C. Reg.*, *passim*.

His son, Frederick Stewart, was created Lord Pittenweem in 1609, but died without issue.

The substantial question between Colonel Stewart and the Estates was as to whether the Northern Union was liable for all the arrears, including those for services to the whole United Netherlands, in the campaigns in the time of Don John of Austria. The States contended that the Colonel had had a commission from Holland and Zealand in 1576 as a captain, that after the Pacification of Ghent he had been commissioned by those States 'among others,' and that afterwards he was in the service of the States-General of the other provinces, from whom he received his colonel's commission. They complained also that he demanded payment of Colonel Patton's debt, who had betrayed Gueldres.

The ultimate arrangement was that Stewart was to give up his claims for services beyond the Meuse, reserving his action against the other provinces, to demand nothing for services prior to March 1579, to assign certain claims which he and his officers had for the period from 1st March 1579 to the date when 'they were licensed,' which the States might recover from the reconciled provinces, to surrender the letters of marque, and to deliver the 'record made at Delft in January 1581,' and the States to pay him 56,000 florins.

which his commission was addressed; that it was not in order to produce a protestation of that kind here. Notwithstanding he persisted, saying that his orders included a special instruction that, in case the States-General were not in Session, he was to address himself to the Council of State, and he wished to show this instruction, and desiring that his declarations should at all events be taken down in writing and minuted. Which the Council refused, being unwilling to take any cognisance of it. Whereupon he desired Captain Blayr, and two other persons who had entered with him, to bear witness of how he had done his duty, and of how he had been treated; and on that footing he left. The secretary Zuylen being sent to the States-General to inform them of it, reported that he found nobody there.

Thursday, August 25.—A summary was given of the copy of a mandate brought here to this chamber some days ago by a Herald of the King of Scotland, and of how he received his dismissal, and the matter was taken up at a meeting of the States-General, where it was in place, and also the resolution taken thereanent by the States-General: it was agreed, as to said nobleman, that all the documents that can be got that are in anyway connected with the accounts of Colonel Stuart are to be placed in the hands of the Lord Chancellor, so that a reply to His Majesty thereanent may be drawn up, in which, above all, it is to be proved that the Herald in his procedure has greatly exceeded the powers given him by His Majesty, that also the States of these Provinces are not aware that they owe anything to Stuart, and should it be the case that they owe him anything, he should take legal proceedings to recover it (a refusal of which was never made, though His Majesty's mandate is founded on that), and no potentate or prince could, so long as the war was going on, fully satisfy the soldiers' claims of arrears, nor had any of them up to this time consented to grant open reprisals or letters of marque, that they prayed His Majesty, in this acting according to the true Christian religion, not to grant them, . . . as shall be more fully and minutely fixed and resolved in the Council, nevertheless they agreed to summon the Assistant of the said Herald, and inform him of the irregular procedures

of the said Herald; and that he had as little requested audience of the States-General as caused them to assemble for that business; that he would have been well received both by them and as well by this Council.

Van der Vocht's proposed visit to Scotland.

1588, *Tuesday, September* 27.—Mr. Lenert van der Voecht, Pensionary of Delft, having been summoned and appeared, was informed that, in spite of the written representations of his principals, he cannot be excused, and he was requested and ordered, accordingly, to prepare himself for the journey to Scotland with all diligence, the business being of great import to the Lands; and after consultation it was agreed, on the advice of Advocate Barneveldt, that he is to go by way of England; and the Agent Ortel is to be charged to assist him there, and to travel with him to Scotland, so that together they may bring matters to a favourable issue; and the Recorder Aerssens is ordered to seek for, and extract from the registers of the previous business of the allied States, all such minutes and duplicates as may have some reference, and be of service, to the said business with Scotland, to prevent the issue of the letters of marque; and similar orders shall be given to the Recorder of Holland, de Rechtere; for which purpose, likewise, the Master of Accounts, de Bye, and Advocate van der Necke, might also be heard and examined as to their knowledge of past transactions, as they were at that time Deputies of Holland and Zeeland in the Assembly of the Allied States.

Resumption of the business of Colonel Stuart.

Friday, September 30, *afternoon.*—Minutes were read in reference to the business of Jan de Jonge, Scotsman, agent of Colonel Stuart, and the advice of the Advocate Barneveldt having been communicated by Counsellor Valck, it was resolved to summon said Scotsman to the Cleves chamber next to the Council's, and inquire of him through their notary and witnesses, in presence of Secretary Zuylen, whether he does not possess, in addition to the mere copies handed in by him,

some original, authentic, or other copies of the obligations, accounts, or specifications whereby the said Stewart might authenticate his pretended arrears for services alleged to have been rendered to the Lands, and whether he would be willing to produce the same. Also thereafter again to try and persuade him to take to the King the letters written by the Council containing a full reply to all the requests made by His Majesty's Herald in regard to the said pretended arrears: the said notary was instructed to draw up in writing, from the answers of Jan de Jonge, a statement thereanent, with insertions of all documents that the said agent has already delivered, or may yet hand in.

October 1.—Resolved that Mr. Voocht, who shall travel to the Majesty of Scotland, may take with him three servants, and that there shall be given to him one thousand guilders for travelling money, and an act of security that he shall be freed in case of captivity.

1588-1589. *First Report of Pensionary de Voocht, sent to England in connection with the case of Colonel Stuart.*

Honourable, Noble, Wise, Learned, most prudent Sir:—In accordance with the charge and Commission given me by the my Lords Councillors of State, on the part of your Highness, I, Leonard Voocht, Pensionary of the town of Delft, on October 18th last travelled from the Hague to Zeeland, and after having waited there, in the town of Middelburg, for favourable winds, betook myself on the 29th of the same month to England, where I arrived at the Foreland, on the last day of the month, and having taken the ordinary post to Marigat [Margate?], I entered the city of London on the 2nd November, and after I had addressed myself to Mr. Ortel, and shown him my aforesaid charge and Commission, went next day in pursuance thereof, accompanied by the said Mr. Ortel, to the house of Mr. Douglas, the King of Scotland's ambassador to the Queen of England, and there I handed over to him the letters of Your Hon., and informed him very fully of the situation of the business of Colonel Stuart, together with his pretended [arrears]. I also showed my further orders to repair to Scotland, and on behalf of the States to kiss His Majesty's hands, also personally to inform His Majesty of the said business in such a manner, that the connived-at execution of the letters of marque granted to Colonel Stuart might be averted from the states and that all good friendship and unity between His Majesty and the States might be preserved. Whereupon His Excellency declared

that he, having been informed some time ago by Mr. Ortel of the situation of the said business, had notified His Majesty about it, who in a certain missive of September 14th last (which His Excellency showed us) had charged him to declare to the said Mr. Ortel, that nothing would be more pleasing to His Majesty than to maintain all good friendship with the States; but that His Majesty could not shut his eyes to the manifold complaints, made not only by the said Colonel Stuart, but also by many others, and among them divers widows and unfortunate people who had risked their persons and lives in the service of the States,—that some citation be granted in virtue of which Your Hon. might be summoned to give some satisfaction to the persons aforesaid; charging, however, the said Mr. Douglas to settle the matter by the best measures possible. But when, on the contrary, I had shown that from various reasons, the States, and especially those of Holland and Zeeland, were not involved in the said debts; and that I was not the least in the world authorised to enter into any composition or agreement about them, but only to offer remonstrance to His Majesty in regard to the great wrong done by Stuart, His Excellency declared that if I had no other charge from Your Highness to the King of Scotland, it would be unnecessary at this time of the year to proceed on the journey to Scotland. But that His Majesty, on being rightly informed by letter of the reasons adduced by me, would, doubtless, suspend the execution of the said letters of marque; and to that end His Excellency also in fact offered to write to His Majesty, but, as I explained, I was minded to give effect to Your Highness's commission, and so for that day I took leave of His Excellency.

On the 4th of the same month, accompanied as before, I waited on Lord Borlay [Burleigh], First Lord of the Treasury, and Lord Walsyngam, first secretary of Her Majesty, etc., . . . I very earnestly requested their Lordships graciously to use their best endeavours, that in furtherance of my intended journey to Scotland Her Majesty might grant me suitable letters, both of passport, and especially of petition, to the King of Scotland, so that, by Her Majesty's intercession, the execution of the said letters of marque, wherewith the States were threatened so unjustly, might be averted from them.

This having been promised me by their Lordships, thereafter, on the 6th of the said month, Lord Walsingam requested me to put the principal points and motives, in justification of the States against the pretensions of Stuart, into writing, in order that having been handed to their Lordships they might be communicated to Her Majesty, and that a resolution might be arrived at concerning them such as Her Majesty might find most serviceable to the interests of the country. In accordance with this request, I arranged the said points in writing, and delivered them to His Lordship on the 7th of the same month, and also strongly recommended him to lose no time in the matter.

Having been summoned on the 9th to Court, Lord Walsingam there announced to me the resolution of Her Majesty and of the Counsellors

of Her Majesty, regarding the said points handed in: namely, that Her Majesty having perceived that Colonel Stuart was in the wrong, had resolved to write with her own hand a strong letter to the King, in order that the connived-at execution of the said letters of marque might be cancelled and suspended; that also the members of the Council had earnestly charged His Lordship to write to Mr. Absky [Wm. Asheby], Ordinary Ambassador of Her Majesty to the King in Scotland, with full instructions to remonstrate to His Majesty about the wrong done by the said Stuart; and that I should abandon my proposed journey till the King of Scotland should answer the said letters of Her Majesty and should have declared his intention regarding the remonstrance of the said Ambassador, not doubting that the King would come to such a resolution as to said matter that the States need expect to suffer no loss or prejudice from the said Colonel Stuart.

On the same day I had also access to Her Majesty, and after I had, with all due respect, on behalf of your Highnesses, kissed Her Majesty's hands, I briefly recounted the principal causes of my embassy to Scotland and very sincerely thanked Her Majesty for her good resolution adopted regarding it, announced to me by Lord Walsingam on behalf of Her Majesty, and I declared that I would, nevertheless, fain proceed on the said journey; especially because the King of Scotland had been informed of my coming, and it was plain the postponement thereof might cause some dissatisfaction to the King of Scotland, and be of disadvantage and prejudice to the States. Thereupon it was declared by Her Majesty that the King of Scotland might well forbear to bestow a single execution of letters of marque in favour of one individual as against Her Majesty's friends and allies, and that Her Majesty had expressed all that very strongly in a letter written with her own hand. Nor did I omit to remonstrate with Her Majesty on the condition of the town of Bergen-op-Zoom, etc. . . . As to that, Her Majesty declared that the Council had issued foolish orders in the business referred to. And therewith having taken leave of Her Majesty, the following day we came to Court with the said Mr. Ortel to talk over with Mr. Bodsley and Walsingam the business of the powder. Lord Walsingam handed to us the letters from your Highnesses to the King of Scotland, despatched by Jasper the messenger, and stopped at Barwyck, and conveyed back to Her Majesty at Court. And after we had given orders about the discharge of the said messenger, I waited on the said Mr. Duglas on November 10th, and communicated to His Excellency the resolution of Her Majesty and also the duplicate of the said points, requesting that His Excellency might kindly add to his letters the letters of your Highnesses addressed to the King of Scotland; all the duplicates, both of the said points concerning the case of Stuart, and of a certain memorial concerning the case of the Earl of Orkenan, and to despatch for the purpose a special messenger, in order that he might be sure to hand them to His Majesty, that, from the contents, His Majesty might be fully informed of the circumstances of both the cases mentioned. That also His Excellency might be pleased to write to

certain of the principal gentlemen of the Council of His Majesty, who are well disposed to the States, with assurances that the States would not neglect in a fitting time and way to recognise the said service of His Excellency. His Excellency, in pursuance of this, appointed a certain Nobleman specially for the purpose, and sent him to Scotland on 12th November with all the said letters. Of all which I have not neglected to advise Your Highnesses. In the meantime, having received certain information that full commission and instruction had not been granted either to the Lord General Noreitz [Norris], or to Mr. Bothley to give the Lands proper satisfaction regarding the said points as to which redress was previously sought verbally by me on behalf of your Highnesses both from Her Majesty and from the Lords of the Council; that, likewise, the actions of Your Highnesses are very basely misrepresented to Her Majesty, both in regard to Colonel Schenck, etc. . . . And having heard, on December 6th, that Her Majesty had received letters from the King of Scotland, I requested through Lord Walsingam that I might have access to Her Majesty, both to hear the reply of the King of Scotland to the letters of Her Majesty, and to bring certain matters to the notice of Her Majesty on behalf of Your Highnesses touching the state of the country. Having been admitted on the 8th of the same month, Her Majesty declared to me that it was unnecessary to proceed on the said journey to Scotland, that the King of Scotland had suspended the execution of the letters of marque, that Her Majesty would not allow such ways of procedure against Her Majesty's allies, that the King of Scotland, at least, would certainly abstain from granting them against the States, without Her Majesty's foreknowledge and consent. Whereof, after I had profusely thanked Her Majesty on behalf of Your Highnesses I delivered to Her Majesty, etc.

Having been summoned on December 11th to Mr. Douglas, His Excellency informed me that he had heard from the King by letter, that His Majesty was expecting me, that my coming would be very agreeable to His Majesty, and that His Majesty would give the States all proper satisfaction; but that His Majesty could not comprehend how that could be brought about by the intercession of Her Majesty of England, or of any one else, telling me, moreover, the King of Scotland had been highly offended at the messenger being stopped at Berwick, who was sent by Your Highnesses to His Majesty, also at the letters addressed to His Majesty being taken out of the hands of the said messenger and sent back to the Court here, and that His Excellency had been ordered to remonstrate about the injustice thereof to Her Majesty, or to Her Majesty's Councillors. Accordingly, I made all possible and formal preparations to proceed on the said journey, and by letter informed Lord Walsingam, who was at the Court at Greenwich, both of the above notification made by Mr. Douglas on behalf of the King of Scotland, and of my intention to proceed on the said journey at the first opportunity, in accordance with the expectation of the said King and the command of Your Highnesses. I very earnestly entreated his Lordship that he would

graciously intercede with Her Majesty, that, for prosecuting the said journey, proper letters of passport and recommendation might be granted me, in order that all further inconveniences might be prevented, which by longer delay and postponement of the said journey might be caused to the detriment of the States.

Having come to Court on the 16th, to ask for the resolution of Her Majesty regarding the aforesaid missive, I was informed by Lord Walsingam, that his Lordship had communicated the said missive to Her Majesty and the members of the council, but that as yet Her Majesty had taken no resolution regarding it, that he would not neglect to hasten it on, and to inform me immediately thereof by some of his servants. Next on the 18th December, Mr. Barford, first clerk of his Lordship, came to me, and informed me that Her Majesty, for certain reasons which influenced Her Majesty, could not see why the said journey should be undertaken. That Her Majesty would again write in strong terms to the King of Scotland; that the States need not look for any difficulty; also that she would write to Your Highnesses for my discharge and the withdrawal of my commission. And as on the same day I had been very earnestly requested, and Mr. Ortel likewise, by the Earl of Essex to come and visit his Lordship the following day at Court. Accordingly, being then at Court, and Mr. Ortel being present, I asked Lord Walsingam himself about the said resolution of Her Majesty, and he declared that Her Majesty's resolution was exactly that communicated to us on the previous day by his clerk, and showed us a certain missive, minuted by his Lordship in English, which was to be sent to the King of Scotland, the contents of which, Mr. Ortel declared were written very much to the point, but I could not obtain a copy of it. And after his Lordship had made certain statements to me, especially regarding the excessively great expenses borne by Her Majesty since the Treaty, where through Her Majesty had exposed her state to great risk, and after, in reply, I brought forward other arguments, thereupon I took leave of his Lordship. And on the following day I waited on Mr. Douglas, and earnestly requested His Excellency to be so good as oblige the States and Your Highnesses, by making excuse to His Majesty for our delay in the letters of His Excellency. In order that Your Highnesses, being advised thereof, might issue such orders as the circumstances of the case, and the rendering of satisfaction to His Majesty might be found to require. Accordingly we drew up a certain letter, and despatched it along with the letters of His Excellency to Scotland on the 24th, by a certain Nobleman appointed for the purpose by Mr. Douglas. His Majesty's reply thereto is still expected.

And so to Mr. Ortel on the 28th were delivered, etc. . . .

On January 9th Mr. Douglas informed me that His Excellency had received letters from Scotland from the first clerk of His Majesty, to whom His Excellency had recommended the affairs of Your Highnesses. That the King had resolved to give Your Highnesses every reasonable satisfaction; and that the letters for that purpose would have been despatched, but that, on account of some obstacle placed in the way by

Colonel Stuart, they, as well as the nobleman of Mr. Douglas, are yet detained. He did not doubt, however, but that His Majesty would persist in the resolution he had taken, and, at least, defer the precognitions on both sides in the affair till a suitable opportunity. He also deemed it was unnecessary for me to wait for the said despatches, especially as, in any case, the journey to Scotland could not be promoted from any quarters, but that the said despatches would be addressed to your Highnesses ; or in case they should be sent to His Excellency, that His Excellency would not fail to hand them over to Mr. Ortel to be despatched immediately by express messenger to Your Highnesses ; according to which advice I have thought it right to regulate my conduct, and hasten on my return to these quarters ; the more because My Lords the Councillors of State had recalled me *by their letters of November 28th* last. And because Lord Walsingam, having sent me on January 11th the reply of Her Majesty to the aforesaid points delivered by me on December 8th last to Her Majesty, likewise my passports and other despatches addressed on the part of Her Majesty to Your Highnesses, earnestly entreated me to set out on my journey to our parts and procure from Your Highnesses that the promised assistance agreed to by your Highnesses the 20th January, *stilo anglice*, to further the projected voyage to Portugal, might be kept in readiness, lest by longer delay any detriment to the said voyage might occur. To this Messrs. Noreitz [Norris] and Draech [Drake] respectively exhorted me daily very earnestly, so leaving London on the 15th inst., I arrived in Zeeland on the 18th. And after I had there with the states of Zeeland discussed certain points, recommended to me by the Council of Her Majesty, I arrived here on the 25th.

All which, Right Honourable, Noble, Wise, Learned and Most Prudent Sir, is what was transacted by me in England with Her Majesty, both regarding the case of Colonel Stuart and in respect of the points delivered to me as instruction at headquarters.

Dated at Delft, January 25th, 1589.[1]

(s.) Leonard Voocht.

Annexa

A

Articles exhibés à Messrs le Grand Thésaurier et De Walsyngem le 9 *de Novembre* 1588 ; *le double desquels sont envoyés vers le Roy d'Ecosse le* 12 *du dict moys.*

Que le Colonnel Guillaume Stouart est venu environ l'an XV^c^ LXXIV ès provinces d'Hollande et Zélande sans service ou charge, et que par les S^eurs^ Estats des dits Pais, à la requeste du S^r^ Ortell, par recommandation, du feu S^r^ Eduard Chester, luy a esté accordé et payé pour son entretiennement traictement de XXV florins par mois.

[1] On Dec. 30th, 1588, Roger Aston wrote from Edinburgh, that 'the king was much offended at the stay of the ambassador from the Low Countries.'—*Cal. of St. Pap. Scotland.*

Que puis le d^t^ Stouart estant pourveu par les dits S^rs^ Estats d'Hollande et Zélande de commission de Cap^ne^ d'une compaignie de gens de pied, en l'an XV^c^ LXXVI, après la pacification à Gent, par les dits S^rs^ Estats a esté licentié entre aultres, et du tout satisfaict de ses services passées.

Depuis cela le dit Stouart s'est donné en service des Estats généraulx des aultres Provincēs et a receu d'iceulx commission de Colonnel sur quelques compaignies Ecossoises, desquelles services pour le présent sont praetenduz par le dit Stouart et ses complices les dits arriérages.

Que ceulx d'Hollande et Zélande au mesme temps ont faict subside aulz d^s^ Estats des aultres Provinces de XXV compaignies d'Infanterye et V^c^ chevaulx à leurs despens, sans qu'en regard de la généraulté ils ont esté tenuz ou obligez en aulcunes oulterieures charges de guerre.

Si que le dit Stouart debvroit légitimement demander et pourchasser le payement de ses arriérages prétendus et non par voyes extraordinaires de repressailles ou de constringer les dits pays par aultres voyes indécentes à satisfaction.

Qu'oncques au dit Stouart par les dits S^rs^ Estats du pays a esté refusé droict ny Justice. Rien estre vray que le dit Stouart a aultre fois par requeste et puis aprez le Roy d'Escosse par importunité d'Iceluy faict interpeller par le Conservateur de la nation Ecossoise, demeurant à Quandfeu [Campvere] en Zélande, les dits Seigneurs Estats du pays à cause du dit payement ; mais qu'estant sur cela par les dits S^rs^ Estats rescribé en pensoit au même temps avoir donné deu contentement à sa Maj^té^. De sorte que la dite requisition et interpellation respective a esté seulement *extra indiciatis*, laquelle n'a peu constituer les d^s^ S^rs^ Estats en ung cas de si grande importance in *mora*.

Signament d'aultant que la voye de justice a touiours esté ouverte au d^t^ Stouart laquelle les d^ts^ S^rs^ Estats mesmes obéissent Joinct que les debtes praetendues illiquides et qu'au d^t^ Colonnel Stouart ne compète que *rata emeriti stipendii* et aulx aultres Cap^nes^ et souldats leur portion à l'advenant.

Que la plus part des d^ts^ Souldats et aulcuns des d^ts^ Cap^nes^ sont morts, enfuys ou encores présentement en actuel service du pays et que solemnelement ils ont promis de ne refuser aux d^ts^ pays aulcun service à causes des dites arriérages.

Et quand bien les debtes pouroyent estre entièrement liquides (ce qu'on soutient que non) que toutefois on debvroit faire surchéance du payement jusques à la fin de la guerre.

D'aultant que les plus puissants Roys, Princes et Républicques sont *reliquatores* et continuent journelement de beaucoup de millions à cause des guerres menées ou par eulx mesmes ou leurs praedecesseurs (si, qu'encores aujourdhuy le payement de pareilles arriérages par iceulx est différé.

Et encores qu'on le vouldroit prendre à toutes extrémitez si estre que ceulx d'Hollande et Zelande seroient de leur costé reduables au payement des d^s^ debtes non plus que leur contigent ne porte. Il est à presupposer

que le payement des d^es praetenses ensemble l'exécution des d^es représailles, en ces conjunctures est procuré à l'instigation du Prince de Parma et aultres semblables tant secrets que publicqs ennemis de la cause commune, Afin de contraindre les d^s pays de se défendre extraordinairement à l'encontre des procédures extraordinaires et si irraisonnables, et employer leurs vassaulx de guerres tant à l'encontre la puissance des ennemis que particulièrement contre iceulx qui vouldroyent empescher la négociation par mer.

Par où non seulement seroyent empeschés le service de Sa Ma^té et retardé touts aultres bonnes actions, mais aussy les moyens des pays (lesquels par le regard des charges ordinaires des guerres présentes n'en ont que trop à porter) dissipez, au grand praejudice des bons inhabitants du dict pays et oulterieure ruyne de leur présent estat.

Que les d^s procédures se facent à l'instigation, ou pour le moins par praeadvertance des ennemis communs, cela ce peult appercevoir ou conjecturer par diverses circumstances. Veu que le dit Stouart laisse entièrement immolesté les autres Provinces, comme Brabant, Flandres, Artoys, Haynault, Malines etc., des dictes praetenses; nonobstant que les d^es Provinces ayent principalement contracté avec luy et que luy mesme par diverses fois depens n'aguerres s'y est trouvé.

Et sans aulcung respect et honneur, avance à demander entre aultres la debte du Cap^ne Paton, lequel (contre le serment presté au d^t pays) a meschamment trahy et rendu ès mains de l'ennemy la bonne ville de Geldre.

Pareillement sera à considerer que la citation n'aguerres faicte de la part du Roy d'Escosse à l'instance du dict Stuart par certain hérault n'a este exploicté si debuement comme il appartient.

A cause qu'icelle debvroit estre faicte aulx Estats généraulx, avecq lesquels le S^r Stouart principalement avoit traicté, lesquels estats au temps de la d^te citation n'estoyent assemblez.

Que le dict hérault au moins eut deu attendre l'assemblee des d^s S^rs Estats et à eulx mesmes debuement faire l'exploicté de la d^e exécution.

San procéder par affichement de d^te citation à la chambre du Conseil, ou d'user aultres voyes extraordinaires, soubs praetexte du nom et Couverture du Roy, pour causer esmotion emmy le peuple.

Qu'aussy le d^t hérault desalors debvroit exhiber le contrait ou obligation praetendue par le d^t Stouart ou pour le moins copie authentique d'icelle, afin que les S^rs Estats les ayant veus y eussent peu prendre telle résolution qu'ilz trouveroynt convenir selon l'exigence du faict.

Spécialement d'aultant que ceulx du pays déclarent qu'ilz ne scavent parler d'aulcun contract ny obligation générale ny particulière, ou bien qu'avecq le d^t Stouart on aye faicte contract ou passé obligation à son proufit, et encores qu'il n'en pourroit avoir, que les memoires et papier sont demeurez au pays de Brabant.

Si que sur les raisons sus dictes et signament qu'il n'est en la puissance du d^t pays de payer tels praetenses extroyues, sans ruiner totalement le praesent Estat d'iceulx, il plaira a voz S^ies d'y prendre tel regard, que par

intercession et authorité de sa Ma^te^ les d^s^ repressailles comminatoires décernées sur la requisition subiective du d^t^ Stouart soyent du tout divertiz, si bien des Estats Généraulx, que espécialement de ceulx d'Hollande, Zélande et leurs inhabitans en particulier.

B

Copie de la lettre de sa Maiesté, envoyé au S. Roy d'Ecosse le 10 *de Nouembre, stylo Angl.*

My deere care for yō honō and good estate (my deere brother) permittes me not to overslip anie cause wherein I suppose anie deminution to fall to either and driven by a good grounde it will not dislike yō (I make me suer) if I write to yō my mynde in such a case. And this it is the States of the Lowe Countries, whom you are not ignorant I have and do aide to keepe them in breathe from the extreame ruyīn that is ment them, finde themselves sorly agreeved that at this tyme of theire greate neede to releive their owne danger theire countries losse and theire continuwall well nighe importable charges, yō that professe the free religion and proteste such inwarde affection to advance that cause cannot finde in your harte so greate neglecte of them and their wantes as at this season so out of season for them to make claime of debts owinge to yō subiectes which when I hearde I could do no lesse then make it knowen into yō (my deere brother) how sory I was to heare of such a preposition togeither with the menace of lr̄es of marc if not spedeler it were not answered. Consider I beseeche you of yō dealinges in this sorte how yō shall wound yō frendes glad yō foes and wronge your self; who will believe that yō passe of religion that suffer the professō to perrisse; who will suppose that your amitie is founde to me when yō afflirte my parte; nay I praie God the enemy who careth for neither of us, maketh not skorne of our frendship as thinckinge it full faint and feeble. I meane not herby that it is not reason for a Kinge to righte his subiectes wronge and to procuer in time conveniant suche seemelike remedies as maie fitt his place and helpe his vassails losse. But the moste of this consists in the time and for the persons. Ffor as yō shall perceive a great some of this greate valewe is not theire debte, but of other countries and captaines whom theie rule not, according as at length my seruant hathe in charge to tell you with my moste affectuous desier and earnest request that you more regarde the cause and time then anie private sub^t^ sute. And that it maie please you alle theise thinges well waighed to surceaste anie preparation that might make shewe to annōye. Albeit I doubt not but theie mighte defende themselves againste a farre greater force. Yett lett no man say that by yō hande theie be afflicted that have miserie enough. And this I ende with my moste affectionate petition, that theise lynes maie be considered accordinge to the harte that writes them, who never ceaseth to praie for your beste, as God is witness. By yō moste affec̄onate sister and cosen. ELIZABETH REGINA.

C

Copie de la lettre envoyé au Ser. Roy de Ecosse, le 14 *Déc. S. A.* 1588

Sire,—Nous ne faisons doubte que V. Ma^té^ soit plus que suffisamment informé tant par les lrès des S^rs^ du Conseil d'Estat des Provinces unies du pais bas, que par les mémoires quelques jours passez par nous envoyez, par le moyen du S^r^ Ambassadeur de Votre Ma^té^ Mr. Duglas, avecq quel tort le Colonnel Stuart, si bien en son nom privé comme aultres (praetendants arriérages des services faictes aulx S^rs^ Estats gnralx des dits provinces) avoit obtenu de vre Ma^té^ lrēs de représailles pour non seulement par icelles executer leurs injustes praetenses, mais aussij particulièrement susciter des malentenduz entre votre Royalle Ma^te^ et ceulx du d^t^ pays, qu'oncques n'ont désiré aultre chose, qu'en temps et lieu convenable faire paraistre à vre Ma^té^ l'envie qu'ilz ont de faire à icelle et son Estat tous humbles et fidèles services.

Et combien qu'avions (suyvant la charge a eu nous donnée) expressément délibéré voire appresté et aller trouver et baiser les mains de vrē Royale Ma^té^, si bien au nom de noz dits supérieurs qu'en nrè particulier ensemble plus spécificquement l'informer si bien de l'Estat des dits affaires comme aussi de faire oulterieur ouverture de nrè charge.

Si estre toutefois que nrè dicte venue et singulier désir a esté différé iusques a ceste heure contraire toute expectation pour des causes que nous ne scaurions répéter, mais vrè Ma^té^ pourra entendre si bien par lres de la Reyne d'Angleterre, comme particulièrement par le d^et^ S^r^ Ambassadeur.

Tout nonobstant n'avons obmis d'aduerter les d^ts^ S^rs^ Estats en toute diligence du succès de noz affaires, comme aussy particulièrement de la retenue le leur messagier et lrēs à Berwyck, si que pour le présent ne pourions que suppleer vre Ma^té^ trēs humblement (qu'ayant esgard à l'acquité de la cause principale et présent estat des d^s^ pays, ensemble à la singulière affection qu'ils ont tousjours porté et portent envers son service, comme aussy à notre d^s^ retardement; Il luy plaise de sa grace effectuelement et absolument faire descharger et annuchiller les d^s^ représailles avecq l'exécution d'icelles, pour le moins pour tel terme de six ou huict mois que les d^s^ S^rs^ Estat y pouvans mestre ordre convenable d'ung costé et vrē Ma^té^ estre plus suffisamment informée de la vérité de l'aultre, tous malentenduz puissent estre assarejuz et d'icy en avant estre vre Ma^té^ et le dict pays toute bonne et inviolable union, correspondance et amitié, tant plus aussy que les d^s^ S^ies^ par ceste faveur puissent tant mieulx estre encouragez en temps et lieu (et quand quelque bonne occasion se pourroit présenter) de faire à vrē Ma^te^ en son particulier et à son Estat en genāl des bons et signalz services, nullement à comparer à iceulx de personnes particulières.

Au reste, ayants entendu par le dict S^r^ Ambassadeur le bon plaisir de vrè Ma^té^ touchant le batteau de guerre du comte d' Orcnay ne fauldrons incontinent procurer des d^s^ S^rs^ Estats la réstitution d'iceluy, ensemble

le renvoy des prisonniers, soubs ferme confiance que vrè Ma^{té} mesme disposera d'iceulx comme icelle par les circumstances du faict et de la teneur de leur confession en acquité et justice trouvera convenir, moyennant que par le d^{t} S^{r} Comte soit premièrement donné acte de descharge qu'à cause de la prinse du d^{t} batteau il ne fera ny consentira estre faicte aulx d^{ts} pays où à leurs inhabitans aulcune oulterieure recherche moins d'aulcunes petites meubles si quelques ungs à la prinse du d^{t} batteau pourroyent défaillir Estans baisans très humblement les mains de vrē Royale Ma^{te} et attendans etc.

D

Letter of Queen Elizabeth to the General States on account of Scottish affairs.

Messieurs nos bons Amys, L'estat présent de nos affaires qui ne vous sont point incongneuz, nous a faict appeller le S^{r} Ortel pour luy communiquer quelques occasions importantes pour faire remettre le voyage de luy et du S^{re} de Vooch votre Commissaire pour Escosse à un aultre temps plus propice. Ce que toutefois nous n'avons faict ung soing qu' avons du bien des affaires tant du Roy notre bon frère que des vôtres, avecq lesquelz nous estimons les nôtres conioinctz. Car nous avons désia donné charge expresse à notre Ambassadeur restant en Escosse de moyenner la surséance de la procédure qu'avoit encommencée contre les sujectz d'iceulx pays bas, le S^{r} Guillaume Stewart, et en abolissant aussy des lettres de représaille que led. Stewart avoit sollicité avec toute instance. Sur quoy poura que led. Roy ne nous a parfaict entier refusé, ains en usant de quelques petites remises differer sa plaine resolution sur la venue de votre Commissaire en Escosse. Nous l'avons de rechef prié de vouloir remettre le voyage en Escosse au printemps, à celle fin que nous puissions ce temps pendant tant mieulx accommoder nos affaires communes. Ce que ne faisons doubte que led. Roy notre bon frère ne nous accorde, comme requeste très raisonnable, et que vous pourriez peult-être avoir occasion cependant de vous servir des bons offices et debvoirs du S^{r} de Vooch, nous l'avons bien voulu licencier pour se retourner vers vous requerant vouloir trouver bonne la procédure qu' avons tenu en la charge que vous luy avez baillée, et luy impartira de vos faveurs selon que ses bons debvoirs en votre service méritent. Qui fera l'endroict que nous nous recommanderons bien affectionement à voz bonnes graces. Priant le Créateur vous tienne tousiours en la sienne. Escript à notre Chateau de Greenwich, le XIII Jour de Décembre, 1588.

Votre bonne Amye,

ELIZABETH R.

1589, *Wednesday, February* 15.—The recorder Aerssen was further informed that the Council judges it necessary that the States-General should resolve to send an embassy to Scot- Council of State.

land and write about the matter to Her Majesty of England. The said Recorder hereupon replied to Secretary Huyghens that the Lords States-General had resolved with reference to it, that Ortell [the Dutch ambassador at the Court of London], should remain in England, and that de Voocht and van de Warck should travel to Scotland.

[On 4th March 1589-90 a commission was granted to Sir Robert Melville and others to 'sight' the 'instructions commission and answers returned from the Estates of the Low Countries of Flanders, to certain letters direct to them in favour of William, Commendator of Pittenweem, and others who served in the wars under his regiment in the said Low Countries, as also the instructions, etc., which are to be directed with Mr. John Skene, advocate, to the said Estates.'—*Pr. Co. Reg.*]

Report of Leonard Voocht and Jan de Warck, about their embassy to the King of Scotland. Anno 1589. *Presented to the Meeting of the States-General of the United Netherlands, on August* 11*th*, 1590. (*According to Resolution*)

REPORT OF PROCEEDINGS during the Embassy to Scotland, and of what was treated of and negotiated with His Majesty the King of Scotland James the Sixth, by the Deputies of the States-General of the United Netherlands, according to the instructions given them on March 20th, 1589, and commissions dated April 24th of the same year, *stilo novo*.

Inasmuch as the Lords Councillors of the Admiralty, invested with the charge of Zeeland had chartered two men-of-war, the one of Captain Legner of Flushing, and the other of Captain de Haen of Hoorn, the said Deputies at the same time, namely, as soon as the ships were ready, and the wind favourable, set sail from Flushing on May 13th, 1589, on a Saturday, in the afternoon about three o'clock, and after a fortunately prosperous voyage arrived at Leith on the 17th of the same month, namely on a Wednesday evening very late between nine and ten.

Having arrived in the hotel there, we were immediately visited by the two ministers of that place, who came to confer with us in regard to the business of our embassy and other matters, and passed the evening in our company. And in accordance with their advice we sent the following day to the Provost of Edinburgh, who is also provost of the said place or harbour of Leith, to inform him of our arrival so that we might be provided with a lodging.

He expressed his pleasure at our arrival, and had us *quant à quant*

provided with lodgings, namely the same where formerly Sir [P ?] Sidney, Ambassador of the Queen of England had been accommodated.

Thereafter we came immediately into Edinburgh, where my lord, the Chancellor, did with all respect inform the King's Majesty of our arrival, with a view to ascertain when we might obtain audience of His Majesty.

Thereafter on the 19th of said month His Majesty gave us to understand through Dr. Joannes Sceineus[1] that our arrival in his kingdom was very welcome to him, that he was glad we had had so prosperous a voyage, and that the following day, being the 20th, he would give us audience, in the afternoon at two o'clock. However His Majesty sent an excuse by the said Sceineus, to the effect that we could have no audience that day at the appointed hour, by reason of other pressing matters which had come up for His Majesty to deal with; but at last, the 21st, being Whitsunday, was granted us, namely at five o'clock in the afternoon, after the sermon.

At that time we were conducted by the said Sceineus, accompanied by some others, and audience was given us in the garden of the Chancellor, in whose house the King lodged at that time; and that in the presence of all the courtiers of His Majesty, and of every one who desired to be present, yet in such a manner that we were heard only by the King and the Lord Chancellor.

After paying due homage and respects, and on the part of the Sovereign States their humble commendations and proffers of all service and friendship possible, and after having delivered our credentials, which were read by His Majesty, we, speaking in French, disclosed to His Majesty the business we were charged with in the best form and manner we possibly could, following our commission and instruction with appended documents, explaining besides the proposition thereanent drawn up in writing by ourselves.

But although in our instruction aforesaid it was mentioned that we were to present to His Majesty four horses, afterwards increased to six, yet we neither did so, nor did we mention that we were expecting them, as the horses, which had been shipped in the district of North Holland, had not arrived, and we were totally uncertain when they might arrive.

His Majesty replied, also in French, to our proposition extremely well and wisely, just as we recorded the said reply afterwards in writing; His Majesty declaring, amongst other things, that he would appoint commissioners who would confer with us regarding the business we were charged with and our commission.

On the following day, the 22nd, we repaired to the Chancellor's, and commended to him the object of our embassy, and prayed that he would be pleased to use such efforts with the King that the commissioners who were to confer with us and enter more minutely into our business should be appointed.

Thereupon the said Chancellor declared that he was keeping our business in good and favourable recommendation, and that His Majesty would very soon appoint commissioners.

[1] Sir John Skene of Curriehill.

But notwithstanding that we daily brought great pressure to bear for that purpose, through the person of Adrianus Damannus, formerly professor at Leyden, who we understood was a favourite with His Majesty, with the said Lord Chancellor, and other principal personages, yet, on account of certain important affairs, which caused great anxiety to His Majesty and the members of his Council, commissioners were not appointed before the 25th of the said month, namely, Messrs. Scarpius,[1] Prestonius[2] and the said Sceinius.

Thereupon we entered into negotiations and conference with the said gentlemen in the Chamber of Session or Parliament of Scotland, on the 26th.

But as Colonel Stuart had entered with the said gentlemen, and sat down next them, we first of all requested that the said Colonel should be obliged to withdraw, and leave the said gentlemen alone with us, as we had nothing to do with him, and had not come to meet him, nor were we authorised to enter into any discussion or controversy with him, but had been sent solely to His Majesty to make overtures to him touching our difficulties in the matter of letters of marque, which was not a private concern but public, affecting the government of the kingdom of Scotland and of the United Netherlands, and we expected in reference to it not any legal decision, but such a kindly answer from the Royal Majesty as was demanded for the preservation of the alliance and good neighbourly relations between the two countries.

That we, therefore, did not understand that these negotiations or conferences had any object further than that His Majesty, through the report of the said Commissioners, and from other and more particular information, might be able more satisfactorily to give our principals and superiors a favourable and fruitful answer.

Thereupon the said Commissioners replied, the said Sceineus being spokesman, that this matter was not so public, that it did not also concern the said Stuart, both as he was interested in it, and because we desired to accuse and bring charges against him. That he, therefore, ought in justice to be heard against these, and be present, in order to reply to what we should bring forward, and adduce his contrary reasons.

In reply to this we again said that we had no orders to enter into any discussion whatever with Stuart, much less to accuse him; and although many public affairs naturally involved private persons, that, nevertheless, they were public and concerned the government of the country; that we, therefore, refused to disclose the business of our commission to any one except to those appointed by the King for the purpose.

The result was that after some more arguments had been brought forward, now by one side, now by the other, the said commissioners ordered the said Colonel Stuart to withdraw, and this without his having said a word on the subject, or having even understood the discussion regarding him, for we and the said commissioners carried on our discussion in Latin.

[1] Mr. John Shairp, advocate (mentioned in *P. C. Reg.*)

[2] Probably John Preston of Fentonbarns, appointed a judge in 1595.

After his departure we declared that we had not insisted upon it, because we did not wish him to hear our reasons, on the contrary we should have been glad to let all the world be present at the conference, but in order that the business might be carried on more freely, and also, chiefly, because it should not seem as if the said Stuart having been present we had entered into a judicial controversy or discussion with him, and we still declared and protested that we were not authorised to do so, and that we were only justified in making our overtures to the gentlemen present there as Commissioners of His Majesty, that they might report concerning them to His Majesty.

And in the same declaration we recounted to the said gentlemen all the reasons contained in the proposition made to His Majesty.

And as we understood that the said Stuart was in good favour with His Majesty, and, in fact, one of his Lords-in-waiting, and that in the previous year he had been Ambassador in Denmark, we had in our proposition to the King and at our first interview avoided arguments which might in any way have been understood as aggrieving the said Stuart; as, for instance:

That the said Colonel Stuart with the captains under him had taken part in several dangerous mutinies to the great and irreparable harm of the country.

That also some of his captains had surrendered to the common foe the places of which they were in charge.

That the said Stuart had himself been for a long time with the common foe—the Prince of Parma—so that one could not but suppose that he had there rendered all sorts of bad offices against the United Netherlands.

That this was sufficiently vouched by the fact that he had never asked for letters of marque, until after he had returned from the Prince of Parma.

That he had asked for the said letters of marque only against these Lands, where he had received so much honour and profit, and which he well knows were forced to take up arms to preserve their ancient privileges and rights, and in order to maintain the reformed true Christian religion.

At the same time, leaving free and unmolested the provinces which are subject to the Prince of Parma, which he has served, and which would chiefly be the debtors of his pretended arrears.

That he also wished to have the said letters of marque executed at the time when the Armada of Spain was on the way to attack England and these lands, in order by those means to do the greater injury to the United Netherlands.

And when we had requested that the said gentlemen would be pleased to recount to His Majesty the said reasons and others which we had before placed before His Majesty, and which we had set forth at length to the said Commissioners, and to do as much as would lead to us receiving soon a favourable answer from His Majesty. The said Commissioners replied:

That they had listened with interest to the reasons stated by us on

behalf of our principals, and that they had noticed, amongst other things, what was said about the contracts, which had been made between the Kings of Scotland and the House of Burgundy; and desired to know if we had brought them with us.

Thereupon we declared that we did not doubt that the said treaties were in the possession of the King among other original documents of the Kingdom; that, nevertheless, we had brought a copy of it with us, and had it with us, and we offered to have it read.

But as some of the gentlemen declared that they had seen it, they further desired that we should commit to writing the reasons against the letters of marque, in order that they might the better present their report.

We consented to do so, but on the express understanding that we made no claims for ourselves, nor might we submit to any judicature whatever, but that, for the rest, we would await His Majesty's gracious reply.

Thereafter we immediately, that is, on the following morning, delivered our reasons in writing to the said Commissioners.

On the same day we were at the Chancellor's, and declared to him what had been transacted between us and the Commissioners, and that we, according to their desire, had presented to them in writing our arguments regarding the principal matter, that of the letters of mark; and we requested that the said Commissioners might be ordered to make their report so that His Majesty might thereafter give us such a favourable reply and dismissal as was justly due to us, as well as to the consequence and importance of our charge and commission.

The said Lord Chancellor replied very favourably, declaring that he would recommend the expediting of our business.

On the same day also we visited the Ambassador of England who resided there at Edinburgh, and gave him a summary account of what had that day been done in the matter, and requested that he would kindly recommend our business and commission to His Majesty, as well as the early despatch thereof; since we did not doubt that Her Majesty of England had ordered him to do so, and had written previously about it at length to the King.

To this the Ambassador replied very favourably, that he had orders from Her Majesty, his mistress, and that she would also willingly employ him otherwise in our interests should he find our business founded on right and equity; adding that he was so certain of the graciousness and justice of the King, and of his great zeal for the reformed religion, that it was certain he could give us no other but a favourable and fruitful answer.

The same evening we were visited by the afore-mentioned gentleman, Joannes Sceineus, who declared to us that he, with his fellow-Commissioners, had seen good to place our written statement in the hands of Colonel Stuart, seeing that he wished to be heard against it, and that apparently he intended to hand in a document to the contrary effect, so

as to prolong the business to a great length, and detain us with our ships of war. We answered that we had before declared and still declare that we had no authority to enter into any lawsuit or discussion with Stuart, or to reply to any of his writings. Yet we would not prevent His Majesty and those of his Council from obtaining information regarding our proposition and reasons from Colonel Stuart or in any other fashion they pleased. That we, therefore, intended taking all the responsibility of it on ourselves, to solicit and prosecute a reply from His Majesty.

On the last day of the said month of May the said gentleman, Sceineus, came again, telling us that Colonel Stuart had drawn up a certain writing, first in Scotch, which was afterwards translated into Latin; but that he, having looked it over with the other Commissioners, had found it irrelevant and otherwise unseemly, so much so that they had corrected and altered it; and it would have to be properly rewritten; which would be done within a day or two, and desiring that we should speak to my lord the Chancellor about it, and pray him that the Commissioners might have their audience. This we afterwards did, and continue to do, through the afore-mentioned Adrianus Damannus.

Then, understanding in the meantime that the said Colonel Stuart was talking loudly and boasting that we had been too late in stating our reasons against the letters of marque he pretended to, inasmuch as they had already been granted in all due form, and that the King would not now recall what he had done with the consent of the Estates, we went to the Chancellor and again refreshed his Lordship's memory regarding the reasons which we had laid before His Majesty on that subject; and in order that he might have something to show in writing, we gave the said Lord Chancellor a document in French thereanent, in order that he might be pleased, when the Report of the Commissioners should be considered, also to make reference to it; praying also for a final dismissal.

In the meantime there came to us the Deputies of the towns, who were assembled at Edinburgh with the clergy and nobles to welcome us, and to assure us of their affection; and that they wished nothing more than to maintain good relations with the United Netherlands, in order to preserve the freedom of the trade, which they intended not to have obstructed; and so far as they had intelligence as to our commission or might by us be further informed, they would be glad that we should make use of their services.

We, in return, thanked them, making similar protestation; and, further, declared that the object of our embassy was known to every one, as tending to come to a settlement about certain pretended letters of marque sought by Colonel Stuart, in order to obstruct free trade by means of them, that we were commissioned to address ourselves to the King on the subject; that we had done so, and set forth at length our reasons. That we had not had an opportunity of addressing these, save to the Commissioners, whom His Majesty had appointed to meet us.

Praying none the less, that the said Deputies would be pleased to do all in their power, not only to further the quick despatch of our business, but also that a good and favourable answer might be obtained, all which they did choose to perform.

The Deputies of the city of Edinburgh did in particular greet us; and on the next Sunday evening invited and very sumptuously entertained us, as also previously the Ambassador of England had done, and after him M. le Baron de Wynes [Wemyss?], who had been in the service of the King of Navarre, and who, to judge from appearances, was well disposed to the States and, especially, His Excellency of Nassau.

Thereafter we learned that the Lord Chancellor had propounded our business in the presence of the King and the Estates of the Kingdom at the time assembled; and that the said Estates had commissioned three out of the clergy, three out of the gentlemen and nobles, and the deputies of three towns, viz., Edinburgh, Tondien [Dundee?], and Glasco. And while we regretted that this second appointment of other commissioners had been made, we nevertheless thought good to request audience of the said gentlemen, especially as we understood they had received full powers from the King and the Estates. But seeing that they were also commissioned to give a decision in regard to the deed of the gentlemen who had taken up arms, as well as of the marriage of the king, a long time elapsed before the said gentlemen could arrange to hear the Commissioners who had negotiated with us. At last they heard them, and communicated everything to the Session or Parliament of Scotland, who made no further resolution than that the writing drawn up by the said Colonel should be delivered to us, and that in regard to it we should say whatever we deemed best. In especial, the treaties made between the Kings of Scotland and the Princes of the Netherlands having been read by the said gentlemen, they had found that these also spoke *de militibus aut stipendariis*, and that as regards these letters of marque might also be granted. While neither the King's Majesty, nor the said Commissioners of the Estates, nor the members of the said Session, nor even the first Commissioners made any objections to the said treaties, nor hinted that they concerned only the Princes and not the States [Netherlands]; but, on the contrary, they plainly acknowledged that the said treaties were to the advantage of the Provinces. His Majesty and the said gentlemen likewise took the same attitude, and acknowledged the provinces as allies and confederates.

And in so far as in the last contract made at Bins mention is made of the soldiers, it is irrelevant, as the said treaty lays down, that in case the paid soldiers of one side or the other be injured, in that case letters of mark should be granted against the offending parties. But this has no relevancy here; for although Colonel Stuart and his regiment had been wronged, which is not the case, that could not have befallen them as soldiers in the service of the King of Scotland, as the said Stuart and his Regiment were soldiers of this country.

And as we did not think it advisable to reply to the writing drawn up

by the said Stuart, we were at last told that we would once again have audience of the first Commissioners, except that in place of Sceineus, who was engaged in the business of Denmark, would be substituted Lintseus,[1] a member of the Session or Parliament.

This was the reason that on the 13th of June we were again at the Lord Chancellor's, complaining of the delays which were made in our case; and of being detained with the ships of war, which ought to be serving the States in other affairs against the enemy. That we could not comprehend how there was any need to hear us further, as we had roundly and sincerely disclosed our commission, with the reasons for it. That they were sufficient to show at once that the letters of marque had been obtained by evil and underhand means; and that the said Stuart ought to have pursued, and still ought to pursue, his claims in the Netherlands; that we, nevertheless, would not refuse to receive such reply or other writing, and the other documents which the said Stuart had promised to hand over so as thereanent to report to our principals and superiors; especially since therein were contained many allegations, and many documents were given, of which we had received no information, nor could receive, seeing that Your Lordship had not seen them before. That we, therefore, and for many other reasons, which we mentioned, prayed that His Majesty would be pleased to give us final dismission, and that the said Lord would be pleased to do his best to obtain it. To which the said Chancellor replied that, as we declared that we had no further instructions, he also thought that any further audience or conference was unnecessary; and that, accordingly, he would report everything to the King, and obtain for us our final dismission as soon as the King, who was gone for one or two days' hunting, should return.

In the interval there was delivered to us the writing of Stuart, as well as various documents which he thinks serve his purpose; of which, on the one hand, he gave us a memorandum in his own handwriting, and, on the other hand, we made a certain inventory.

And as some of the said documents are original, we acknowledged faithfully that they had emanated from the States-General; but declared that they were irrelevant, for reasons stated by us at length.

The said Colonel Stuart founded greatly on certain contracts of the 22nd and 23rd, made in Delft in the year 1580; and said that in virtue of them he had been drawn from a very good garrison of the State of Brussels, through remaining in which he would certainly have received his payment, and that he was quartered in a vile place, viz., at Vilvoorden.

That in these United Netherlands were many rich and powerful merchants, and that this was a greater reason that each of them should give something to pay his valid arrears rather than that he and his regiment, and many widows and orphans, should any longer be dis-

[1] John Lindsay, parson of Menmuir, a Senator of the College of Justice, father of first Lord Lindsay of Balcarras.

appointed. That he would not like to take up arms against those whom he had so long helped to protect; and that he hoped that no cause would be given him to do so; with other reasons of the same kind.

The King having returned did through Mr. Melville recommend to us the widow and orphans of Henry Balfour; and the present husband of the said widow and a brother of the said Balfour,[1] with his two children, came to us, and delivered to us a copy of the record of their claims. We replied to them that we had no instructions with regard to those and other similar matters, but that, nevertheless, in order to please His Majesty, and in consideration of the faithful services rendered by the said late Henry Balfour to the country, we would be very willing to make a favourable report.

Thereafter, namely on the 17th of the said month, after several solicitations, and after the Ambassador of the Queen of England had spoken to the King in reference to our business and recommended to him a speedy settlement thereof, the King sent for us, to give us our reply and final dismission. On that occasion we appeared before the King in the Presence-Chamber, in the afternoon at two o'clock; and after due homage and reverence, we summarily recounted what had up to the present been done by us, and said that we were expecting nothing else from His Majesty than a gracious reply, in accordance with the proposition made by us and what was just and reasonable, and as was expected by us from our firm confidence in His Majesty's wisdom and prudence. We also added the recommendation of the State of this country, and the offer of every possible and humble service.

To which His Majesty gave us a reply and dismission in the form recorded in writing. But as we found a grievance in the period of two months, we explained to His Majesty that we hoped, notwithstanding, that it was not His Majesty's intention to bind our principals to it strictly. His Majesty furthered declared that he would not make a point of that, and he desired to be advised of further resolutions as soon as possible after the expiry of said time, wind and weather serving.

The said Stuart having been informed of this answer, complained that His Majesty had granted two months, after we should have given in our report and been discharged from our commission. And this, when His Majesty, to please the said Stuart, as we also took care to do in the missive written to their Highnesses the Estates, and which we take back with us, altered many things, as is plain from the tenour of the said missive and from said verbal answers and dismission.

On the following day we took leave of the Chancellor, commanding to him the affairs of these lands.

And seeing that, during all the time that we were in Scotland, we had received no tidings of the six horses which we had been ordered to present to His Majesty, and that, nevertheless, everywhere at Edinburgh

[1] Duncan Balfour, formerly an archer of the Scots Guard in France, and younger brother of Colonel Henry Balfour, was in 1582 tutor to his sons William and Henry. He is described in 1592 as 'bailie in St. Andrews, brother to Colonel Bartilmo Balfour.'

as well as Leith, there was a report that we were commissioned to present His Majesty with some horses, and that the King and all the Court had information about it, we saw fit to explain the circumstances briefly to the Lord Chancellor, namely that the horses had been shipped in another quarter, and that the orders about them had been given to Captain Balfour, in order that the said Lord Chancellor might kindly excuse us to the King, as we did not doubt that the horses would (save for possible accident at sea or otherwise) arrive very soon. The Lord Chancellor replied that he would always hold the affairs of these lands in favourable recommendation, and that the King, his lord and master, would also be pleased to do the same in all conceivable circumstances, not only on account of the common trade and religion, as well as their relations as neighbours, but also on account of the treaty which the Queen of England had made with our Lands, taken in connection with the claim which he had to the succession to the Crown of England. The Lord Chancellor made no remark about what we had said regarding the horses; and we then took our leave.

Thereafter, we went to Leith on the following day, to embark with the first favourable wind.

There the Deputies of the city of Edinburgh came to see us, and explained that they had been charged to bid us farewell in Edinburgh; but as we had left, they had followed us up chiefly to assure us that the city of Edinburgh had no other wish than, along with the other towns of the kingdom, to maintain good relations with the United Netherlands; and to preserve free navigation and traffic. Further, that some grievances had been laid before them by their citizens, whose goods had been seized at sea, as related in the declaration which they handed to us, and they besought that, at the earliest convenience of the country, the matter might be attended to, in such a way as to lead to the reparation of the damage suffered by their citizens. We replied that they might be assured that on the part of the United Provinces the most cordial relations would always be maintained, and that, further, we would not be unwilling to report about the said grievances; but that we were not authorised to receive any complaints or grievances, as we had only been sent to point out the great wrong which Colonel Stuart was seeking to do to the Confederated Provinces, in virtue of certain pretended letters of marque of his, not only to the prejudice of the said lands but also of the citizens of the said kingdom, as the free mutual intercourse and traffic would thereby be entirely hindered and ruined; desiring, as had been promised us before by the said city of Edinburgh and other towns, that they would always do their utmost to prevent it, and that the inconveniences, which would thence arise, might be averted.

And, as the wind became favourable, we embarked on the same day about ten o'clock, and, with favourable wind and weather, arrived on the 26th, early in the morning, at nine o'clock, in the harbour of Flushing.

(s.) Jan van de Warck.
Leonard Vooght.

Visit of William Stewart, as Ambassador from the King of Scotland, to the States-General.

Resolutions of the Council of State.

1593, *April* 19.—Mr. Stuart having come as Ambassador with credentials from the King of Scotland, both to the States-General and to the Council of State, and having delivered them, and communicated orally the substance of his charge, it was thereon replied to him, that they were sorry to hear of difficulties in the affairs of Scotland and of the King, but were glad to know that things are now better; that they begged to thank him for the trouble he took to communicate this to them; that they will commit his proposal to writing, in order the better to attend to what he says should be done in reference to his principal instruction; then they requested from him a copy of it alone.

Council of State.

1593, *June* 17.—Having deliberated on what was done yesterday, in the business of Ambassador Stuart, it was resolved, that the said Stuart be induced to come to the Council, in order that his more extended knowledge may be at their service. Whereupon, having come to the Council, he declared, that in so far as the foresaid troubles in Scotland are concerned, that the same will appear clearer, from the deposition of a nobleman in Scotland, lately executed; which deposition translated, he handed over some time ago, to the Advocate of Holland, Barneveldt. And as to the affairs of Germany, he declares, that the King of Scotland being in Denmark, had proposed there, that peace might be made between the King of Spain and other Kings and Potentates and Republics, having an interest in the religion. But should such not be achieved, that as a counterpoise to the King of Spain's ambition for monarchy, a counter-league made with the Princes of Germany was needed, to whom he, Stuart, says that he has been sent. He says that he found the said Princes very favourably disposed, and that being sent chiefly to the Elector of Saxony, he also showed himself very favourable, but persisted in the opinion that the Elected Princes were by their

oath prohibited from entering into any league without the Emperor; but that he, as well as the other Princes, would give every assistance to the league existing between the King of Scotland and Denmark, and also at need stand by the King of France, and help in action. Further, offering to hand over the deposition of the executed nobleman to the Council, if they could not get that of the Advocate of Holland. Afterwards he gave in writing the names of the Princes of Germany, to whom he had been sent—the King of Denmark, the Elector of Saxony, of Brandenburg, the Pfaltz, Count of Brunswick, of Würtemberg, of Pommeren, of Hesse, of Mecklenburg d'Anhalt, of Luneburgh, the Administrator of Magdenburg, the Duke Jan Casimir.

Resolutions of the States-General

1593, *July* 3.—Stuart delivered his credentials, in which much was written about the intrigues of the Jesuits in Scotland, with a proposal for forming a Protestant counter-league against Spain and the Pope.

[The 'Instruction pour le loial et bien aymé Conseiller Guillaume [Stuart] Commandeur de Pettywane, dirigé à M^rs^ les Estats Généraux et Conseillers d'Estats des Provinces Unies,' and the Answer of the States to the King, dated 7th July 1593, contain nothing directly relating to the Scots troops, except the following references to Colonel Stuart's claims.]

Extract from the Instructions.

'Quant à son particulier nous esperons que tant pour le regard de noz requestes que a cause de ses merites vous y donnerez si bon ordre que tout en sortira a son contentement: que nous sera tant agreable que daultant plus vous accroisterez nostre affection a ladvanchement de voz affaires dont vous avez particulierement preuve en la permission de faire levee et transport de noz subiectz soubz la charge et conduite de nostre conseillier pour vous en servir par dela selon vostre requeste, que ne octroierions point si amplement voluntiers a daultres sans son advis.'

Extract from the Reply of the States

'Pour aultant que touche le particulier dudict Sieur Ambassadeur, lesditz Estats ne veuillent pas doubter, ou sa Ma^te^ considerant meurement les raisons continues en leur responce, et lettres escriptes a sa Ma^te^ le douziesme de Novembre qualtre vingtz et dix, s'en contentera et acceptera lune ou lautre presentation.'

19 *July.*—On the request of the States-General to have advice touching the private claims of the M^r^ Ambassador Stuart; the Council has declared as their advice that their Highnesses should account the business and request of the said Stuart of very great importance, and of peculiar consequence; and therefore the Council find it difficult to come to a resolution thereanent. But since a beginning of negotiations with the said Steuart has already been made, the Council would advise that it might not be inexpedient, if they could make an agreement with him, for fifty or sixty thousand pounds (to be assigned to him on the income of Brabant at long terms, said contribution, however, would, on account of its being garrisoned by the enemy, be likely to come in even very sparely. Provided it take place as secretly as could possibly be managed, as, for instance, through a third person; and that he, Mr. Stuart, should promise on oath to keep the same secret, and not reveal it, should also deliver up the letters of marque, and bind himself and promise not to annoy or oppress the inhabitants of the Province, in any way, because of this.

July 21.—The Messieurs van Oldenbarnevelt, Vooght, and van de Warck report, that according to the resolution of the States, they have again been in conference and communication with Colonel Stuart, Ambassador of the King of Scotland. And, finally, after many troubles and difficulties, have come to an agreement with the same, to pay him the sum of 56,000 guilders in all—14,000 of it in ready money, and thenceforth from year to year—likewise 14,000 guilders; the conditions to be drawn up later in writing, and afterwards inserted; and, further, the said Lords Deputes have told him, that his hotel

expenses are to be defrayed at the Lands' expense, to the extent of £2400; and over and above he is to be complimented with a gold chain.

1593, *July* 21.—Read and fixed the act of transaction made between the Lords General States and the Colonel Stuart, Ambassador of the King of Scotland.

'Comme il ait pleu au Roy d'Escosse, d'envoier par decha vers Messieurs les Estats Généraux des Provinces Unies des Pays-bas, le S^r^ Guillaume Stouart, son Conseiller et Commandataire de Pettewie pour son Ambassadeur, afin de leur faire ouverture de sa part de certaine pointz concernants l'estat publicq qu'il luy avoit donné en charge. Aiant sa d^e^ Maj^té^ aussy recommandé aux d^ts^ Sieurs Estats les prétensions particulières du dit S^r^ Ambassadeur, au regard desquelles les députez des dits Estats avoient par plusieurs fois estez en communication et conférence avecq luy et sont finalement, après plusieurs difficultez représentées de part et d'aultre, tombez d'accord en la manière que s'ensuit. Scavoir, que le dit S^r^ Guillaume Stouart promettra, comme il promet par cestes, pour le regard que les dites provinces unies, scavoir Gueldres, Hollande, Zélande, Utrecht, Frise et Overyssel, ont tousjours soustenu qu'elles ne sont aucunement obligées pour les services faictz par dela la Meuse, qu'il ne demandera rien aux provinces unies pour soy, ses capitaines, officiers et soldats du service par eux faict ès pays bas avant le premier de Mars xv^c^ soixante dix noeuff, mais en réservera son action contre les aultres provinces qui se sont séparées et tiennent présentement encores le partie de l'ennemy, tenant les dites provinces deschargées pour aultant que besoing soit de tout ce que pour luy ses haultz Officiers et aultres de sa Compagnie Colonelle pourroit estre prétendu du dit service et des obligations qui en ont esté pour ce donner et oultre ce le dit S^r^ Stuart a faict transport irrévocable aux S^rs^ Estats et à leur prouffict propre, comme il le faict encores par cestes, les sommes cy dessoubz expressées, afin qu'ilz les pourroient recouvrer des dites aultres Provinces séparées par telles voies qu'ilz trouveront convenir assavoir les arriérages de son traictement de colonel et de ces haultz officiers montantes quarante-ung mille six cens septante deux florins:

'Item de sa Compagnie Colonnelle soixante six mille cent et seize florins.

'De celle du Cap^n Jacques Stuart mille huit cent quarante huict florins: et

'd'Andrieu Stuart mille huict cents cinquante neuf florins.

'Du Cap^n Tamson dix noeuff mille noeuff cens trente neuff florins.

'et du Cap^n Anstruches quinze mille cinq cens soixante deux florins.

'Revenant ensemble à la somme de Cent soixante trois mille florins respectivement pour tout le temps de leur service depuis le premier de Mars 1579 jusques au jour qu'ilz ont été licentiés. Aiant à ceste fin Iceluy S^r Stuart promis comme il promet par cestes de faire tenir aux S^rs Estats et de laisser en leurs mains les originelles lettres de représaille contenants la somme de six cens et quatre vingtz mile florins qu'il a obtenus sur son nom et les Capitaines de son Régiment de Sa Ma^té d'Escosse avecq tous les aultres enseignemens aux dites lettres servantes, dedans le terme de six mois prochainement venants, les tenant dès à présent pour cassées et annullées, sans que en vertu d'Icelles ou aultres semblables on pourra prétendre aucune chose desdits s^rs Estats ou les manans et inhabitans des dites provinces unies en aucune manière. Comme de faict aussy le S^r Stuart est tenu de délivrer aux Estats l'accord faict à Delff au mois de Janvier l'an quatre vingtz et ung avec tous les escomptes qu'il a des debtes et services y dessus spécificiées. Promestant par cestes ultérieurement de tenir la main vers le Roy d'Escosse que nulles lettres de représaille soient doresnavant accordeés au prouffit de qui que ce soit et qu'il aura tousiours les affaires des dites provinces en bonne récommendation. Et movemant ce que dessus ont les ditz S^rs Estats pour le respect qu'ilz portent à sa dite Ma^té d'Escosse et le désir qu'ilz ont à luy faire service, ensemble de complaire à la nation Escossoise et de traicter avecz le dit S^r Guill^e Stuart raisonablement, estez contens de promettre comme ilz promettent par cestes de furnir et faire compter à iceluy S^r Guillaume Stuart ou à ses aians cause sans aucune défalcation et francq de tous arrestz pour le regard des personnes qui demeurent et se trouvent présentement hors desdites provinces unies et aultres

de la nation Escossaise qui ont fait service soubz sa charge, la somme de cinq six mille florins de quarante gros pièces, les quastorze mille contant et d'an en an encores quartorze mille florins jusques à la parpaie de la somme de 56,000 florins, laquelle ils ont assignée et assignent par ces présentes sur leur Receveur général Philippe Doublet et tel aultre qui pourroit succéder en sa place afin de faire le d^t^ paiement aux termes que dessus, selon les quatre ordonnances qui en seront dépeschés et délivrés au S^r^ Stuart. Obligeans les ditz S^rs^ Estats pour l'accomplissement et furnissement de ce que dessus tous et chacuns les biens et revenus des dites provinces unies, et le S^r^ Guillaume Stuart sa personne et tous ses biens présens et advenir. Remercians respectivement à toutes exceptions et subterfuges au contraire, et généralement à l'exeption partante que générale exeption n'a poinct de lieu si la spéciale ne précède. En tesmoing de ce ont les dits S^rs^ Estats ceste faict signer par leur Greffier et cacheter de leur cachet ordinaire et à luy S^r^ Guillaume Stuart signé et cacheté la présente de son nom et armes. La vingtièsme de Juillet l'an mil cincz cens quatre vingt et treize. Soubzcript par ordonnance des ditz S^rs^ Estats, signé C. Aerssens, et cachetté de leur cachet. Etoit aussy signé William Stuart et cacheté de son cachet.'

July 28.—It is found expedient that there be sent to the Agent Caron, the copy of the proposal made by Colonel Stuart, Ambassador of the King of Scotland; also of the replies made to the said Stuart. Also as to the transaction, which was entered into with his Ex^cy^, regarding his private pretensions. And he be told by letter, that he must hear how the said replies shall taste there and be taken up and endured. And it being understood that the said Stuart desires to journey through England to Scotland, his Ex^cy^ shall (on being requested) direct further and assist, so far as lies in his power, the business on which his Ex^cy^ was sent hither by the king; and shall further assist himself with the arguments inserted in the foresaid transaction, and so far as he may understand that in England this transaction is likely to be used as a precedent in respect to others who likewise may have served these Lands.

July 29.—Mr. Ambassador Stuart came to take leave of the Council, thanking them for the good resolution which the

Council had come to by the States-General, as well as in reference to what he proposed, on the part of the King of Scotland, as to his own private affairs; promising to give a good report of all, and to commend the affairs of these Lands very strongly to His Majesty. And as to his person, he proffered all good affection and service. He was thanked for the trouble he took, and the affairs of these Lands were commended to him, and he was also requested to make good report on everything to His Majesty; with the offer to be good neighbours with His Majesty, and hold his Person in good commendation.

From the 'Second and Secret Instructions for Adrian Damman.'

Book of Instructions given by States-General.

[In January 1594 Adrian Damman[1] was appointed Agent for the States at the Scottish Court. In his Secret Instructions occurs the following passage, illustrating the value of the Scottish troops, and the conditions of their earlier service:]

'It having been the case for some time that proposals have to be made in regard to the service of the soldiers of the Scottish nation in these lands, you are to endeavour to give good information on their employment here, being every way profitable to His Majesty and the kingdom of Scotland, and that they have voluntarily entered the service of these Lands, and that no proposal shall be directly or indirectly entertained by which they shall in any way be led into anything against their will, or anywise be hindered in their service, which would be to the great disadvantage of the common Christian interests, and to the lessening of the honour of the Scottish nation, as well as of the favour in which it is held in these Lands. You are to assure them that not only the foreign nations, who are in the service of these lands, but even the inhabitants of this land are not better treated here than the Scotch have been treated during recent years, but that it is impossible during the troublesome and difficult wars to satisfy everybody according to his desire.

[1] Damman made himself most agreeable to King James, and not only to him, for, the usual order of things in the incidental alliances which accompanied the national co-operation being reversed, there occurs among the list of pensions in 1609, 'Lady Margaret Stuard, widow of Agent Damman.'

'You are further to endeavour to make them clearly understand over there the difference that exists between the States-General of the United Provinces who are at present carrying on war with the common enemy, and the States-General of the Netherlands who on the Pacification of Ghent carried on war for some years with the common enemy, in order that it may be clearly understood that the United Provinces are not implicated in the debts of the States-General of the Netherlands for services rendered in Brabant, Flanders, Artois, and Henegouwe. That the confederated or United Provinces after the Union effected at Utrecht divided their government on the east side of the Maas, and have kept it separate from the Government of Brabant, Flanders, etc. That all documents and verifications of what has passed in the government of Brabant and Flanders have remained there, and that this government has no knowledge of it.

'You are on every occasion to inform us of all occurrences that concern the state of this country, and communicate all secret business in cipher or in some other secret and secure way. Dated, January 4th, 1594.'

[In June 1594, Sir William Keith, gentleman of the King's Chamber, and Captain William Murray, Provost of St. Andrews, arrived at the Hague on a special embassy from King James. On 6th June they presented a letter to the States-General, which contained the following passage relating to the services of the Scottish troops:]

Resolutions of the States-General.

'Finalement il souvient à Mess. que par la permission et congé obtenu de Sa Ma^te^ un grand nombre de ses subiectz ont été transportez par deça pour leur service, auquel beaucoup ayans finy leurs jours, ceux qui restent soubz la charge de Mess. estans employez comme Messieurs trouvent expédient à l'hazard de leurs vies journellement et aultres demeurans en Escosse comme vieulx, orphelins et ceux qui sont faict inhabiles par la guerre se plaignant à la Ma^té^ de leur mauvais traictement et dilay du payement, Sa Ma^té^ se voyant journellement fasché par leurs grievs complaints et estant touché d'une pitié naturelle envers ses subiectz a trouvé bon de recommander iceux à voz Seign. et qu'il plairoit à Mess. après avoir compté

avec les capitaines et commandeurs, les donner tel contentement de leur , come leur fidel service a mérité, et la requeste de sa Ma^té^ faict par nous en son nom peuvent procurer. Recommandant en particulier les affaires de Cap^ne^ Witschart, et ceux quy nous avons en charge pour recommander par bouche. Signé W. Keith, W. Murray.'

[The letter addressed to King James by the States-General on 28th June 1594, conveying their congratulations on the birth of the Prince of Scotland, contains no reference to the Scots troops in their service.

The representations made by the Ambassadors were, however, referred to in the answer of the States-General to the King dated 1st July 1594, as follows :]

'Quant au pretendu payement des services faictz a ces pays par quelques ungs de la nation Escossoises, Lesditz Estatz asseurent sa dicte M^te^ que telz ses subiectz ont este traictez si favorablement par deca pour le regard dudict payement que aulcuns aultres de quelle nation ilz ayent estez, mesmes beaucoup mieux que aucun de ces pays et que pour ladvenir tandiz quilz seront en leurs service ilz continueront a leur donner contentement selon que sera convenu avec iceux, et la disposition de leurs affaires le pourra aucunement permettre. Ainsy que nommement a aussy este faict au Cap^ne^ Witssart pour le regard de ce que luy pourroit competer de la Generalite estant en quil pretend ulterieurement de la ville du Bommel une chose particulière quy ne touche aux Estats recommanderont neantmoins tres voluntiers son faict au Magistrat dicelle ville affin quilz luy donnent tel contentement comme en raison et equité ilz trouveront convenir. . . .'

July 5.—On the request of Margaret Penicuik, widow of Andrew Murisson, Scotsman, brought over and recommended by the Lords Ambassadors of Scotland, it is appointed :

Combien que les Etats Généraux des Provinces Unies des Pays Bas ne sont en aucune manière tenus au payement du prétendu de la suppliante, si ont ilz toutefois par pure commisération faict présenter à Icelle, comme Ilz présentent encore, la somme de cent florins une fois, saulf qu'elle promecte de ne les plus molester.

On the request of William Hunter de Menhal about pre-

venting him holding transfer from the widow of David Treyl [Trail] over the service arrears of the same, likewise brought over and recommended by the foresaid ambassadors it is appointed:

Les Etats Généraux des Provinces Unies des Pays Bas, aians examimé le contenu de ceste requeste, declarent que après le décès de feu le capitaine David Treyl, aiant sa veufe faicte poursuite pour le payement des arriérages des services du d. son mary, Icelle a esté grandement favorisée, tellement que pour ceste considération et que lad. veufe est natifve de ces pays, elle ne debuoit ny peult faire aucun transport valide de semblable action a quelqu'un estranger au préiudice de l'estat ains patienter, comme aultres et la garder plustost pour une assurance du douaire promis a Icelle par led. feu Capitaine David Treyl.

On the request of Alexander Wishart, brought over as aforesaid, it is appointed:

Les Etats Generaux etc. aians examiné cette deuxieme requeste du suppliant, déclarent qu'ilz luy ont présenté, comme ilz le font encores, de recommander ses affaires au Magistrat de la ville de Bommel, affin de luy donner tout raison de contentement, comme estant un faict particulier qui aultrement ne leur touche. Si néanmoins il ne se contente avec ceste déclaration, ains ayme mieux poursuivre sa prétension contre le Magistrat ou quelques autres particuliers par voie de justice, sont aussy contens de recommander à la cour ou Magistrat, ou il conviendrat, que brièvе et bonne justice luy soit administrée, selon que en droict et équité sera trouvé convenir au prétendant quelque action particuliére contre les Estats de Hollande, de Zélande, s'il la dèsire poursuivre les ditz Estats généraux luy feront toute l'addresse a eux possible, là et ainsy qu'il sera besoing.

July 5.—Received a letter from the King of Scotland, dated at Edinburgh the last day of April, in favour of the widow of Walter Cant, heir of the late Captain David Cant, in order that the same should receive arrears of payment for services of said captain.

Item. Another letter from the foresaid king, dated at St.

Croix [Holyrood] the 8th May, in favour of the son of the late Captain William Renton who formerly served the Lands in Brabant, regarding arrears of payment for the services of the same.

The Lords Ambassadors of Scotland handed over a certain written statement, of which the tenor, hereafter inserted, follows:

'A Messieurs les Estats généraux des Provinces Unies des Pays Bas.

'Les Ambassadeurs de Sa Majesté d'Escosse, estant en charge, tant par leur commission que par crédence, de recommander au nom de Sa Majé à vos Seigneuries le contentement et satisfaction de ses subiectz, aiant faict service en ces Pays bas, et considéré plusieurs difficultez qui se peuvent mouvoir en la liquidation d'icelles debtes, à raison qu'elles sont de diverses natures, prient de pouvoir entendre par escript l'intention de voz Sies sur les pointz suyvans.

'Scavoir, comment ilz entendent de traicter ceux qui sont en arrière pour le service faict par delà la Meuse, avant la rendition d'Anvers, si comme les heritiers de feu Henry Balfour, colonel, et de feu capitaine Renton, avecq leurs semblables, tant vefues que aultrement.

'Es comme ilz entendent avec ceux qui ont faict service par delà la Meuse depuis la rendition d'Anvers, si comme les héritiers de feu Capitaine David Treyl et leurs semblables, à ce qu'ilz puissent donner contentement à Sa Majé sur ce faict.'

Answer of the States-General

Which writing being read, it is thereafter resolved as follows:

1594, *July* 5.—Les Estates Généraux des Provinces Unies des Pays Bas, pour satisfaire à la requisition de Messieurs les Ambassadeurs du sérénissime Roy d'Escosse, déclarent sur les deux points de cest escript, qu'ilz ont tousiours soustenuz et par plusieurs lettres et escripts remonstré aud. Sme Roy, mesme par l'envoy de leurs députez en Escosse, que les dites Provinces Unies n'estoient aucunement tenues paier aucunes debtes, si peu des services des gens de guerre que aultres faicts et contractez par delà la Meuse, pour les raisons par eux amplement

et largement déduites et allégueés contre les prétensions du S^r^ Guillaume Stuart et aultres, lesquelles Ilz s'asseurent que Sa Ma^te^ aura advoués, tellement que les prétendans dénommez en ce premier point dud. escript, s'en doibvent contenter sans qu'ilz ont matière de prétendre quelque chose contre eux pour les services faictz par delà la Meuze.

Sur le II^e^.—Il a esté convenu et accordé sur quelques conditions et articles avecq les Capitaines Escossais, sur lesquelz ils sont entrez avec leurs compagnies au service du pays par deça la Meuze, lesquels leur ont aussy esté tenuz et satisfaictz, comme ilz le seront encores tandiz qu'ilz seront au service desditz Estats, en tant que la disposition de l'estat le pourra aucunement permectre. Et pour le regard des arriérages en sera usé comme font tous Róys, Princes, Potentatz et aultres Républicques, en réservants les payemens d'icelles jusques à la fin de la guerre, bien entendu advenant qu'il y eult aucun des capitaines qui, ne pouvant attendre ce temps, se présentoit laisser traicter raisonnablement et qu'il y eut quelques considérations particulières pour lesquelles on les pourroit accomoder. Les ditz Estatz monstreront en tel événement aux Escossois, comme ilz ont tousiours faict plus de faveur que à aucune aultre nation.

1594, *July* 5.—On the report made by the Advocate Oldenbarnevelt and the Recorder Aerssen, that they, on the footing of the foregoing proposal and intentions of the States, as to which they had a charge committed to them, fully carried out the transaction about the payment of accounts which was made with Sir William Murray, Ambassador of the King of Scotland in Antwerp, the 10 September '83, he being Captain of a Company of Scots, and to be paid for the services done by him and said Company since the 4 March 1582 till the last of August 1583; said account amounting to the sum of twelve thousand and two pounds, ten shillings, and ten pence, on the same footing as the transaction with Colonel Stuart, viz. for the eight and a half pence, a sum amounting to fourteen hundred and twenty-three pounds, fifteen shillings, and three pence, and over and above, as a complement to the sum of altogether two thousand pounds; a deed of transaction being drawn up was now read and signed by the foresaid

Captain Murray, in so far as it may please the States to approve and agree to the same.

The foregoing transaction having been read, the same was approved and ratified, and it was resolved that the Receiver-General should be commissioned by two injunctions to pay the said two thousand pounds out of the moneys received by him from the contributions of the Provinces. The foresaid £1423, 15 s. 3 p. in discharge of the foresaid account, and the balance of the said £2000 to be employed for certain services to the advantage of the Land, and in such manner that on both sides it is promised that the matter shall be kept secret.

[The States, who had been invited by King James to act as sponsors at the baptism of his son, sent Walraven, Lord of Brederode, and Mr. Jacob Valcke, Treasurer-General of Zealand, to represent them at the ceremony.[1] Their instructions, dated 19th July, contained nothing relative to the Scottish troops, but their Report, given on 7th November, on their return to Holland, contains several allusions to the officers, and is of such general interest that it is given in full.]

Resolutions of Holland.

1594, *November* 7.—In a meeting of the Sovereign States-General a report was made by the Lord of Brederode and the Treasurer Jacob Valck, of how they had fared in their Legation in Scotland, and thereanent they communicated their official statement as follows:—

RELATION of what happened and was experienced by us the undersigned Ambassadors of my Lords the States-General to His Royal Majesty of Scotland, in and during our legation, from day to day, following the new style.

It having pleased my Lords the States-General aforesaid to commission us Walrauen, Lord of Brederode, etc., and Jacob Valcke, Treasurer of Zeeland, to travel to the King of Scotland, James the Sixth of that name, with Credentials and Instructions consisting in three principal points:

---

[1] These ambassadors carried 'magnificent presents to the infant prince, and an annual pension for life, the contract for which was presented in a gold box. . . . On the departure of the ambassadors, 1500 Scots were sent over to Holland to augment the Brigade.'—*Hist. Acct.* For a full account of the ceremony see Calderwood's *Historie*, vol. v. p. 342.

to wit, in order to assist at the baptism of the young Prince of Scotland, to renew the old alliances and friendships between Scotland and these Lands and to negotiate a secret treaty with the other Princes against the usurpations of the Spaniards in such manner as stands more fully related in the prescribed Instruction. So it came about that on the first of August fifteen hundred and ninety-four, after having taken leave of my Lords the States-General, and having received our despatches and necessaries, we left the Hague for Veere, arriving there on the third, and as we did not find the ship named *The Dolphin* there, and also learnt that the captains of the two pinnances were at Zierikzee, we wrote to them respectively, and the following day both the captain of *The Dolphin* with his ship and the other captains there put in an appearance, and thereafter they got everything so prepared that they were ready to sail with the first favourable wind: so indeed we embarked on Monday the eighth of August and under God's protection set sail, encountering a variety of wind, weather, and other occurrences, but making such progress that we arrived on Saturday the thirteenth of August in the roadstead of Leith in Scotland: then it must also be told that in the interval an accident happened to the two pinnances of our voyage, they having run against each other and damaged each other, and that not without great danger. On the thirteenth foresaid, seeing we could not for lack of wind and tide come ashore, there came to us first the Agent Dammen and thereafter these gentlemen, Mr. John Scheneus, Advocate Fiscal of the King and Counsellor to the Queen, Mr. Robert Deneston, Keeper of Veere [Campvere], and Mr. David Lindesay, minister of Leith, with four of the King's trumpeters: and after having congratulated us on our arrival, in a good oration in Latin, embracing considerations concerning the new-born prince, and this having been briefly replied to by us, we stepped into their boat with this company and rowed to land, where on the shore waiting for us and receiving us we found the Lord Baron of Carmicle, chief equerry to His Majesty, and the gentleman James Melvin, knight, steward and counsellor to His Majesty, with nineteen of the King's horses: which gentlemen, after demonstration of our being welcome took horse to Leith and we likewise, and then to the inn, and were conducted to bedchambers since dinner was being prepared on the part of the King, and we were requested still to remain a day there at the King's expense, and while doing so, we advised my Lords the States-General of our arrival.

On the fourteenth of August, being Sunday, we were conducted by the foresaid gentlemen and the magistrates to the preaching, where places were provided for us with spreads and cushions of velvet, and the preaching in Scotch being ended, the minister, after exhortation to the people in reference to us, addressed himself to us in the French language, thanking us in the name of the church for the honour of our presence, and then he briefly repeated the substance of his preaching, and we remained and lodged at Leith that day, as the lodgings at Edemburgh could not yet be got in order: we sent accordingly the steward Batenburgh to Edemburgh to make provision for the kitchen, but he reported

that he had been told by the counsellor of the King that this was not necessary, that provision was made on the part of the King, and that he was commissioned not to allow anything other to be done or come to pass.

On the fifteenth about midday, after dinner, there came to salute us, besides the foresaid gentlemen, the Lord Steuardt Prior of Planterre [Blantyre] and Counsellor of the King, the Provost of the town of Edemburgh, William Hume, with the Baron of Carmicle and others, and they convoyed us with the King's horses and brought us into Edemburgh to our lodgings and bedchambers with manifold and often reiterated proffers of every good thing; and declaring our coming to be so welcome, yea! more welcome than that of any other ambassadors, both to His Majesty, and also to the nobility, the church, and the commons, hoping from it some special virtue and service to the religion and the common cause: and further as to defrayment it has been provided for most excellently, along with all means for compliments and courtesies.

On the sixteenth of August we found good to proffer our greetings to the Lords Ambassadors of England and Denmark respectively, and to declare that we should willingly come and greet their excellencies, but considering that this might be other than welcome before we should have had an audience of His Majesty, beg that the delay be looked upon in the best light by their excellencies, and so also that apology was accepted.

The same day came to greet us the ministers and church council of the town, very heartily testifying their gladness and pleasure in our coming and therethrough hoping and expecting much good, etc.

The same day we received a letter from the King through Captain de Lachy [Dallachy], and which is submitted among the documents belonging to this legation. It is written with his own hand and the contents bear how pleasant our coming was to His Majesty, and excuses himself for not more quickly coming to see us.

On the seventeenth some of the forementioned gentlemen along with the Bailies and others of the magistracy came and fetched us and conducted us to the preaching escorted by twelve hallebardiers, etc.

On the eighteenth as it was announced to us that the Ambassador of England, Sir Boows [Mr. Bowes] by name, along with those of Denmark, respectively desired to greet us, we sent to the said Lords respectively excusing ourselves on the ground that we following our devoir did not come and greet their excellencies before having had an Audience of the King, which their excellencies respectively took in good part, and did thank us with proffers of all good, and expressing great desire to enter into conversation with us. Similarly also it happened with regard to the Ambassador of Mecklenburgh and Brunswick, and he of Mecklenburgh sent his compliments to us desiring that he might go and see the ships of my Lords the States (that we came over in), which could not yet conveniently be done, as said ships were under repair in the harbour of Leith.

On the twentieth the Lord Chancellor of the kingdom, Metallamus [Maitland] (having come in late the evening before from his house to Edemburgh), gave us to understand that he would come and greet us, and

although we had desired ourselves to have done that devoir towards his lordship, he was pleased not to suffer it, and came to us at our lodging, and after reciprocal greetings and welcomes he entered upon discourse about the condition of the United Provinces and their prospects; how highly the friendship of my Lords the States was esteemed by the King his master, and how greatly also by his council, that therefore they had caused us to be invited to stand as witnesses at the baptism of the young Prince, and that he was at one with us in wishing to see, in opposition to the unrighteous pretensions and usurpations of the King of Spain, some good treaty made; about which there was too much delay; that likewise they had laboured in Denmark, Mecklenburgh, Brunswick, and with other Princes, by commission of the King his master, especially with respect of the right to the crown of England, His Majesty standing in the expectation that thereanent he should find intentions differ, indeed most tending to this, that any one of the said King and princes would prefer to see the others go before them, and then they would certainly be willing to follow: that he had found the Council of Denmark cool in the matter because of the minority of the King, and likewise the said other princes, and particularly he of Brunswick, who intimated his house was in alliance with the House of Austria, which alliance he on his part would not willingly be the first to break; he told us also that those of Venice had given hints to His Majesty about a treaty against the King of Spain fearing the overgreat power of the same, concerning which negotiations were still being carried on at the present time by certain on the part of His Majesty, sent thither with answers for that sole purpose, as we otherwise also had come to know. Further, he said, that the Duke of Florence, Mantua, and they, were thereto agreeable: to all which was said by us in general terms, that it was to be wished that the Princes and Republics who were of the religion might in such a manner be united that the King of Spain with his partisans might be worsted in his projects. That also my Lords the States in order to effect this will neglect no means in their power to second His Majesty and other princes, etc. His lordship prolonged his discourse on the same subject to great length, and related to us how some time ago when the Spanish fleet was in their waters that having surprised a common lyre player they had been at him to win him over to the allegiance of the King of Spain, and to corrupt him, saying that the purpose of the said King of Spain was nothing more than to take vengeance on the Queen of England for the ill turns she had done him, that he would not interfere with Scotland whether in religion or otherwise, desiring to give to the King thereof good reliable promises and assurances, and that thereto it was replied by his Lordship that such moderation in the proposals was most unexpected, and that the Kingdom of Scotland too much dreaded having for a neighbour so mighty a prince as the King of Spain, not to mention the diversity of religion, and more reasons besides; and discourses pertinent to the subject, touching sometimes upon the intentions and policy of the Queen of England, etc. Thereafter his lordship, with great demonstrations of affection for my

Lords the States and their affairs, took respectful leave of us, not wishing in any wise to be escorted by us, we caused his lordship to be convoyed by some noblemen to his lodging, and he departed the same day to Strevelingen.

The twenty-first, being Sunday, the magistracy of the city in solemn procession with other gentlemen of his Majesty's council conducted us to the preaching and thence homewards again.

The twenty-second August, the said gentlemen and magistrates conducted us *in solemni formi* to the place of studies, where some students in philosophy orated and disputed. With them was (and among others the young Count of Gowre disputed) my Lord Setton who accompanied us and the other said gentlemen homewards.

The same day very late in the evening some gentlemen of the council, namely the abovenamed Prince of Planterre and Sir Robbert Melvin,[1] Treasurer-Depute, being come from Strevelingen, came to announce and excuse that the day of the baptism was again postponed to Sunday the five and twentieth August old style, as His Majesty had received tidings of the coming of the Ambassador of France; desired that they would take the delay in good part and declared that if said Ambassador should not by that time have arrived they would not put off longer.

The twenty-third of August nothing special happened or was done worth remembering, except that we caused the blanks in the letter of De Reuter to the young prince for a godchild's gift to be filled up with the name of the Queen, in these words, Anna Fille de Denmarcque, in gold letters, which the open space demanded, and so well is it done that there is not the smallest difference between these and the other letters or observable in the combination. We acted as may easily be understood as best might uphold the honour of our country in regard to the nurse and others placed around the young prince.

On the twenty-fourth we were conducted by the Baron of Carmickle, Equerry of His Majesty, with the King's and other horses, outside to the fields, to take a turn, fully about thirty horses, accompanied by the Councillor Melvin, the Conservator, the brother of the Earl of Orkney and the son of the Count of . . . Abbot of . . . In this excursion we saw a beautiful country domain, well cultivated, and so towards evening we came again to our lodging.

The twenty-fifth, the Lord Ambassador of England came to greet us with presentation of all good things and services that were in his power, wishing that we might have had an audience of the King, and that he would be free to have some conference with us, letting us know that he was given to understand that the King would be in the town the next day and that we should then obtain an audience. Next day, the twenty-sixth August, we conveyed our thanks to the said Lord Ambassador, for, in especial, his good affection, and the trouble he had taken which he

---

[1] Afterwards first Lord Melville.

had done (so he had declared to the Agent Dammen) on the said twenty-fourth, when we did ride out for a tour (notwithstanding his previous indisposition and that he is very old), he had sat on horseback having sought to meet us in the field, having even gone as far as the Aby Fountain without meeting us, which we were sorry for, besides that we also desired very much to confer with his excellency, and touching the arrival of the King that it was very agreeable to us to understand the same and to get an audience to shorten our stay, and to allow occasion to confer with his excellency. We also took steps to ascertain what opportunity there might be to return through England if it should be agreeable, time and business permitting. Having learned the same day and ascertained that the rumour of the King's arrival had proved vain, nothing came of it, and vexing ourselves that time was slipping away and nothing being done, we deliberated among ourselves whether, to save time, it would not be well to communicate to the Lord Chancellor, who that evening had arrived in the town, the preliminaries on the point of the confirmation of the aforesaid Treaty, and also to get to know what further intentions might be entertained, and so we had planned to send to his Lordship, when the Lord Conservator of the Scotch nation at Veere (who otherwise was always much with us complimenting and making addresses) came to say that the said Lord Chancellor had begged to come to us, and after usual greetings to say to us that seeing His Majesty was well aware the loss of time would vex us, his lordship had come into the town and desired along with some gentlemen of the Council to come and confer with us, so as to gain time and put through preliminaries while His Majesty was otherwise occupied at Streveling, the which we declared would be very agreeable to us, besides that we in pursuance of our devoir would wait on his lordship. To this it was answered, that this was for important reasons not desired by his lordship, and that he would come to us. We acted upon the hint of his lordship so as not to disturb him in his good consideration and expected him accordingly. At our instance the hour was fixed by his lordship at full afternoon, then on account of other occupations of the Council it was remitted to the following day at ten o'clock forenoon. Here and at intervals there was brought to our notice, as did also formerly happen to us, on the part or indeed in the name of the Earl of Bobwel, that by some nobleman we were besought to intercede with His Majesty in behalf of the proscribed lords, namely the Earl of Huntly, the Earl of Angous, and the Earl of Arol, to the end that they should enter the service and otherwise strictly bind themselves to the United Netherlands, should respect the King and obey as good vassals, and break off all alliances and communication with the King of Spain and his followers, adding that on the part of Her Majesty of England they were cordially invited to that course, but on conditions unacceptable to them, and lastly, desiring to be reconciled to their King, and would prefer to have that brought about by other means, as has been said: that they had already taken some steps to plead with His Majesty, that such a

work would be honourable. Whereto we, after mutual discourse, resolved to do nothing for reasons sufficiently notour and should we be further importuned to excuse ourselves in the same, with good motives.

On the twenty-seventh, about ten o'clock forenoon, the Lord Chancellor with the Councillors Melvin, Treasurer, and Mr. Steuard aforesaid came to us, and after customary greetings and demonstrations of benevolence, the Lord Chancellor commenced by declaring that His Majesty being aware that the time of waiting must be very vexatious to us, had charged his lordship to make his excuses and forthwith to enter into conference concerning the affairs of our Land.

We answered that excuses were uncalled for, that the entertainment, *recueil*, and the honour done us were indeed such that the delay had not caused us annoyance, although we were extremely anxious that our business should be pushed on so that we might return home as soon as possible, but that we also were well able to take into consideration that His Majesty (like other princes) had important affairs in hand and other reasons, wherethrough everything could not take place on the appointed time and day. In this we willingly expressed our contentment, thanking His Majesty, and no less their lordships for their good care in advancing the business and in order to accomplish that which we were authorised to confer anent. And first of all we related that although the Agent Dammen was not included by name in our commission, etc., yet, nevertheless, as, after our departure, the continuation and prosecution of the business would be confided to him (as Agent General) request was made that it might please their lordships that the said Dammen might be present at the conference. Whereupon the Lord Chancellor highly commended the good conduct of the said Agent, and declared that he found it good and necessary that he should be present, and so it was decided. Having accordingly therefore entered into conference (the affair of the baptism of the young prince having been remitted reckoning there was time for that after) the renewal of the old treaties between Scotland and the Netherlands tendered by His Majesty was first spoken of, for which, while we expressed our thanks, we have, following our Instruction brought down the application of the same to the year fifteen hundred and fifty, whereupon the Lord Chancellor pointed out that the foresaid treaty had been mutually kept unbroken, having none the less had a sole existence of a hundred years: that also the questions out of which the foresaid treaty and others originated were not caused by either of the contracting parties, but by others, their respective allies, that being sufficiently acquainted with the contents of this one there should therefore be no difficulty in confirming said treaty; and having in reference to it exhibited the Instrument despatched by my Lords the States including the Insertion, the which were carried to his lordship's house by the Agent Dammen, but it came to pass that it was not then sealed as his lordship departed to Strevelingh. The said Chancellor did in the said conference principally discourse at length on the expediency and necessity of a common league of the

princes, devoted to the religion against the superstitions of the King of Spain and his adherents; of the manifold devoirs by his King through him and others to various Kings and Princes in Germany, favourable thereto without hitherto much fruit: also of the minority of the elect King of Denmark as well as that some other princes said they were in alliance with the House of Austria, and about not wishing to be the first to break off, etc. Whereupon we answered that all the world knows how my Lords the States have continuously during many years carried on war against the Spanish tyranny, that they did not doubt in ought of the good intention and inclination of their lordships to so good a cause, provided that it was carried out along with others, with the goodwill of the Queen of England, with whom for her sake they were ready to come into closer communication under the oversight of the other Kings and princes; that that was their commission, and after that had been promised and confirmed as good and adviseable by the said Lord Chancellor, the conference thereupon took end, and we thereafter went together to dinner and the Chancellor departed in the afternoon to Strevelingh as aforesaid. On the days immediately following nothing specially worthy of note occurred, only that on the twenty-ninth we wrote to my Lords the States, and besides that the day of the baptism was put off because of the diverse and uncertain tidings about the Ambassador of England, and that it was hinted we were to go to Strevelingh on Wednesday the last of August, and that the King begged us not to take it ill that the baptism was put off till the Sunday thereafter. On the said last of August we did greet the Lord Ambassador of England with due compliments, and hinted at our departure for Strevelingh, hoping that after our audience we should see his excellency there and speak with him. In answer, thanking us with reciprocal compliments, he let us know that he likewise would willing confer with us on matters touching the welfare of Christendom. The said journey, after some hindrance, was begun on September first, and we came in the evening to Lisco [Linlithgow], and next day, the second September, we arrived at Strevelingh, where the King was. Our arrival was honoured with three shots of artillery from the castle and the King's trumpeters came to meet us: we were escorted on the road from Edemburgh to Strevelingh by various gentlemen and noblemen thereto appointed by the King, and everywhere besides we met with many civilities and kind attentions, specially from the Baron of Carmicle, who kept us provided with good horses as far as Strevelingh, where we were brought to our lodging, being the house of the Earl of Argeil, where we were well accommodated with everything. The Baron of Hetten, Grand Steward of the King, and my Lord Laitdois [Lindores], son of the Earl of Rothes, were commissioned by the King to come and bid us welcome and they announced that we should next day have an audience of the King at ten o'clock forenoon.

On Saturday, the third September, near about ten o'clock, the gentlemen, my Lord Hetton and my Lord Landois aforesaid came and fetched us and conducted us to the audience with the King, which took

place in the court of the Earl of May, where we found His Majesty, assisted by the Lords, Duke of Lemice, the Earl of Marn, the Earl of Montros and his eldest son, the Earl of Lencarne, my Lord Hui, My Lord Sincler, my Lord de Levingston, my Lord Hethone, my Lord Flammurgh, my Lord Helvistone, my Lord Semple and others. We made our reverence and kissed hands and with suitable compliments, from my Lords the States-General delivered our credentials to His Majesty having made known the reasons of our coming thither in accordance with the contents of our instruction. His Majesty answered thereto in substance, saying that he himself had been moved by two special reasons to call and invite my Lords the States to be witnesses and godfathers in the baptism of his first son the Prince of Scotland, the first, because of the fellowship and unanimity of the religion likewise sought by other Kings and Princes, for in that cause the States of the United Netherlands had suffered much, and in order to witness before all the world his right disposition to the religion, to the confusion of those who had asserted otherwise of him: and the other reason, owing to the friendship and alliance which the ancestors of His Majesty had maintained during a long period with the Netherlands; that our persons were therefore welcome and agreeable to him, especially the Lord of Brederode as being a descendant of the family of the Counts of Holland, to which His Majesty also belonged, or was also descended from, and Valcke as an honour to the ambassage, he in that way getting a compliment: further, he testified very lovingly to the affection borne by His Majesty to my Lords the States, and afterwards falling into familiar talk, the King told how the Queen of England had taken the matter peevishly, and that she was complaining to all Ambassadors that His Majesty had invited my Lords the States to be witnesses and godfathers, thus putting those who, she said, were her subjects, on the same footing as Kings and Princes; and that thereanent His Majesty had told her he was of opinion that this should be more agreeable to Her Majesty than if he had invited the King of Spain for that purpose. Then we said, that Her Majesty had no ground for esteeming so little my Lords the States representatives of the Sovereignty of Dukes, Counts and Lords, much less to name them her subjects; that besides, by the treaty entered into with Her Majesty and by other things the contrary was sufficiently evident. His Majesty said enough about that, and that it was a woman and we must forgive her sex.[1] Then after having spoken a little about the affair of Groningen and the war in the Netherlands, we took our leave with due reverences to His Majesty and other principal princes and lords there present.

In the afternoon we caused it to be made known to the Queen that whenever Her Majesty pleased she might give us audience, which was remitted to the next day, the fourth September, between two and three o'clock after mid-day, in order that, after the audience, we might go to dinner with Her Majesty and the King.

[1] King Jamie thus had his revenge for the Queen's letter of 1588 (p. 129).

The fourth September, after mid-day as aforesaid, the gentlemen, my Lord Simple and Mr. Alexander Hesvistone, came and fetched us and conducted us with the King's horses to the Castle or Palace of the King, where being brought into the presence of Her Majesty, and having offered her fitting reverences and kissed hands, we presented to Her Majesty the compliments and recommendations of my Lords the States in pursuance of our commission, which were very amicably and gratefully received by Her Majesty. Thereafter Her Majesty proceeded to ask after the welfare of his excellence, Count Mauritz of Nassau, as a blood relation of Her Majesty, and how his affairs prospered. To which we answered that we knew nothing but what was good, that we did not doubt but that his excellence would have written to Her Majesty through us had he not been engaged at a distance in warlike affairs and greatly occupied with the siege of Groningen, which now (by God's grace) was taken. Then, after some more informal conversation, we took leave of Her Majesty and were conducted to the quarters of the young prince, whom we saw there and kissed hands, and he appears to be a very fine thriving child as can be seen from the picture of him we brought over with us. Thence again we were conducted to the quarters of the King, whom we found in company with the Lords Ambassadors of Denmark, of Brunswick, and of Meckelenburgh, and after some familiar and general conversation on diverse subjects we went in to dinner. At table were their Majesties, the Ambassadors of Denmark, by name Christian Barincouw and Steijn Bilde, the Ambassador of Brunswick, named Adam Crause, the Ambassador of Meckelenburgh, named Joachim Bassewits, and we two without saying more, there being besides there present many Lords-in-waiting, namely, the Duke of Lennox, the Earl of Mar, my Lord Hum, etc. The dinner passed off with many good and joyous dances of His Majesty and all the Lords and Nobles. When the meal was finished His Majesty, not without great pressing as we were present, set himself to dance, and that being ended, about midnight we were brought back from the Castle on horseback to our lodging.

On Monday the fifth September we sought out and saluted with befitting compliments my Lords the Ambassadors of Denmark who reciprocally on their part met us therein with every civility and compliments. In the interval His Majesty did invite us to accompany him in hunting as those on journey had not come, for reasons before mentioned. About mid-day we went again, accompanied by various gentlemen, to the palace, and after some familiar conversation with His Majesty and the Lords Ambassadors aforesaid, His Majesty called the Ambassadors and us apart, saying that he wished to hold a consultation with us. It was to deliberate, according to custom, with the godfathers about the name to be given to the young prince. Whereupon, after various considerations and discourse, we all in common resolved, after having respect to the kinship and other things besides, on Frederick Hendrick, Frederick in respect of the grandfather on the mother's side the late King of Denmark, and Hendrick in respect of the Duke of Brunswick as of Meckelenburgh, grandfather of

the Queen on the mother's side; item, that the King of France is also named Hendrick, so also is the father of the Queen of England, although her Ambassadors were not yet present. His Majesty said to baptize him with the name of Charles Jacques, but without wishing any heed to be paid to his words, he being of opinion and so many others that the name Jacques was unlucky, and he had for good reasons given up Charles. A festo Bartholemes 1572. Thereafter a dinner was given by their Majesties, and it was held with the same personages and in the same style as the former one: as also that if His Majesty in hunting should kill a stag he wished that we should eat of it next day, following up which the Ambassadors of Denmark with all honours and joyousness at the pleasure of His Majesty invited us against next day at noon.

On Tuesday the sixth September we went as abovewritten to dinner as the guests of the Ambassadors of Denmark, and at table we were invited all together to supper at the Palace in the evening on the part of the Earl of Mar. There in the evening we all compeared and were entertained, and during supper the company was very heartily together and well served. His Majesty came there as prince and bore himself very happily and joyfully, showing, indeed, towards us even more than to the others his good inclination. In course of all this it continued to be the resolution of the King to have the baptism done next day, then one other day it was put off because of the Ambassador of England, the Earl of Sussex, who was only to arrive this day, the seventh, in the evening, at Strevelingh. The seventh September, being Wednesday, we were the guests of the Lords Ambassadors of Brunswick and Meckelenburgh.

The eighth September we went out to hunt in the Park with the King, and returning thence His Majesty gave audience to the Ambassador of England, and thereafter we sent to the Ambassador Ordinary, Mr. Boos, in order (as we had now had an audience) to make our salutations to His Excellency besides to the Lord Ambassador the Duke of Sussex. This we did on Friday the ninth September, and offered and received reciprocally the compliments due and suitable to the occasion, remitting further conference to a better opportunity.

On the ninth, as aforesaid, the baptism of the said young prince was solemnised with all ceremonies and solemnities fitting in the baptism of so high a prince, as preachings, first in Scotch and afterwards by the Bishop of Iverdin [Aberdeen] in Latin, with orations in Latin, first verses and thereafter prose, among other things exhorting the Princes and States whereof the Ambassadors were present, *tanquam actione sponsoria obligatos*, to be mindful of their vows in regard to the said Prince to help to bring him up and instruct and exercise him in the Reformed Christian Religion, and the name was given Fredrick Hendrick, Hendrick Fredrick. Here we may note that the King had caused to be hung over the heads of the Ambassadors respectively the coats of arms of their princes, and above us (without our knowing beforehand) the coats of Holland and Zeeland, and thus wrongly done, we caused the same to be taken down, and had

the coats of arms of the six United Provinces that belong to the honour of the same portrayed *in forma.*

The solemnities being accomplished, and the name of the prince being repeatedly announced to the people by the Herald with flourishes of trumpets, *Largess* was called out; the King dubbed sixteen noblemen knights, whereof the first was William Stewart. After all which the Lords Ambassadors each in order made presentation to Her Majesty of the godchild gifts, we too, in accordance with our commission, and Her Majesty for this heartily thanked my Lords the States. Then after each had gone away a little on account of refreshments, we all went in to the Royal dinner and banquet. At table were His Majesty, the Queen, the old and new Ambassadors of England, and all the others aforesaid, including us, without saying more, and everything passed off to the evening with cheerfulness.

The tenth September we sent the Agent Dammen to the King to say to His Majesty that since now the solemnity of the baptism of the young Prince was past, and we should very much like to return home at the first opportunity, we begged His Majesty, if it should please him, to give us his further commands in anything or to deign to come into conference with us on the subject lately entertained with the Lord Chancellor, or otherwise we held ourselves ready to proceed in accordance with His Majesty's good pleasure, and the said Dammen reported that the King said that the matter of two or three days was of no consequence, and that he had still something to speak to us about and that the Chancellor would need to be present at the interview, and that it should be at Edemburgh, and that he had given the Chancellor orders to arrange for that.

The eleventh, being Sunday, the King let us know that we were to come to supper in the evening with His Majesty and, towards evening, being conducted by certain gentlemen of the Court to His Majesty's the same said to us before supper that His Majesty had been much hindered by leavetakings given to the other Ambassadors who had been there a very long time. Hence we were detained and he would give orders that we should leave next day in the afternoon for Edemburgh, where within five or six days His Majesty would meet us, and meantime he had given orders to the Chancellor to enter into conference with us on the subject of what still remained to be done as regards the proposals of His Majesty to my Lords the States; His Majesty further declaring that he had spoken with the Ambassador of England about the League, and it appeared the Earl of Sussex had no special commission on that point, but the Ambassador Ordinary certainly had, and he had said that he had still something to speak of to His Majesty, he supposing that it would be about that. His Majesty indicated the right to the crown of England that was due to him, and therefore the more desired to strengthen himself against the King of Spain through whose tyranny his kingdom was agitated by the sedition of certain, and that in especial in respect of the religion, which His Majesty protested he

always heartily resolved to maintain, as he (if we waited ten days longer) would cause us to see in his actions, noticing his intended campaign against the prescribed lords living in the north quarter. Further, he said that he had caused representations to be made to the Queen of England about the League; that she did request His Majesty to send the Ambassador to the Archduke Ernestus to the end that he should not raise trouble in His Majesty's lands, but that he had answered he did not approve this course for divers reasons, the said Archduke being no more than the lieutenant of the King of Spain, and that it would be a long time indeed before he would get any despatches on the subject from Spain; thinking, also, that if such request were made or if he sent on that account that the Queen of England would therein find cause to blame him as if he had something else going on under cover of it. Further, he said that he had made representations about the league to the Ambassadors of Denmark, Brunswick, and Meckelenburgh, and that during the winter season they could not expect any answer, but only get their answer as time went on. Thereafter we went to supper, namely, the King and Queen, the Ambassadors of Denmark, Brunswick, Meckelenburgh, and we, not saying more, also the Ambassador of England had been to dinner unexpectedly with His Majesty. The supper passed off with good discourse and services, and since nothing worth noting has happened save that the King came and spoke about the Agent Dammen, testifying extremely well of him.

On Monday the twelfth we made ready for our departure to Lidlsho, and there came to us my Lords the Lord Earl of Mar, the Baron of Tillieverme [Tullibardine], Steward to His Majesty, brother of Alexander Murray, with other gentlemen, Keith, etc., recommending to us very specially and particularly the said Lord Earl, as they had already several times before done, as also along with them the Baron of Hun, the person of the foresaid Alexander Murray their cousin, praying that the same might be continued in the good grace of my Lords the States, and thanking them for the favour already shown to him; and we again repeated the offer of all possible services and favours to His Majesty and in other respects where the same might be for the advantage of these Lands; and the gentlemen aforesaid honoured us with their presence to dinner, the said Lord Earl of Mar strongly recommending to us the case of one Peter Douwglas that justice might be done him with despatch, according to the law of our land.

The day previous the Earl of Orkenay did state to us that some of the herring fishers, above a hundred in number, had been guilty of much damage and insolence in one of his islands, requesting remedy therein, and we desired that the complaint be pertinently in writing given to us in order that my Lords the States might be provided with information on the matter; item, we had also a visit from the Lord Schineus by commission of the King, recommending us (but with great protestation of having unwillingly undertaken to do so) the case of Alexander Wichart, as to which we said nothing but what could be known out of the last

Request (whereof a copy was given us to take with us) with the Appostille of the Sovereign States-General in reference to it, wherewith the said Wichart coming in was no way contented, we remitting everything to the good discretion of my Lords. We sent the same day to the Ambassadors of England, excusing ourselves for not coming to greet or say adieu to them before our departure from Strevelingh to Edenburgh hoping to do so better at Edenburgh, the which, the said Lords received with thanks, etc. And so we left, being honoured with three shots of artillery from the Castle, and so to Lidlsco on horseback, where we arrived in the evening.

The thirteenth we left Ledtsko and arrived in the evening at Edenburgh, where on our arrival we were greeted with three shots of artillery from the Castle, and were in that fashion accompanied by the lords, the Baron of Carmicle, Master of Horse to the King, the conservator as mostly always everywhere the said Melvin, the said Morray, Captain Dellachy.

On the sixteenth nothing happened worth telling about. The Queen arrived in Edenburgh on the fifteenth. *Nihil actum.*

On the sixteenth the King came to Edenburgh, and the Chancellor gave us to understand that on account of various considerations he had not spoken with us until the King should be present, but that now, if we wished it, he would proceed with our business.

On the eighteenth the Chancellor gave us to understand through the conservator that he had begun to review the treaty of the year fifteen hundred and fifty, and had remarked some difficulties which on the following day in conference should be laid before us.

On the nineteenth as we had consented and asked leave to go and compear at any place the Lord Chancellor would be pleased to designate, his excellency was again pleased to come to us at our lodging accompanied with the Lord Melvin, Treasurer, and the said Stewart called the Planteyre. After reverences and greetings done, he narrated *in somma* the good inclination of the King His Majesty to my Lords the States, etc., and that he had looked over the Instrument of the Ratification of the Treaties, and in particular that of the year fifteen hundred and fifty inserted finding the same to be relative to some foregoing and in particular to that of the year fourteen hundred eight and forty and . . . which he declared that it was not and that he did not properly know its contents, desired to have a look at it if we had it by us, and further if we had anything more to lay before him we might do so. That His Majesty and the Lords of the Council were well inclined to please us. We said, as we explained formerly, that our commission consisted in three principal points, the first touching the baptism of the young prince, which now by God's grace was accomplished, the second touching the renewal of the old treaties which were proffered on the part of His Majesty and thankfully accepted by my Lords the States in the form shown to His Highness, that we had no commission to do anything else or any request to make, that as concerning relative matters, we exhibited copies we had in our possession that they might be inspected by His Highness. And the third

touching the Contra-League as to which we as before declared were commissioned to enter into conference with his Majesty or his Council along with the Ambassadors of the Kings of France, England, and Denmark, provided they were thereto commissioned, and that not being the case that we could not enter into the matter singularly, but only as a conference. And that if it pleased their excellencies to make representation concerning certain points in the manner of proposals that generally their Highnesses my Lords the States-General could well confide in their good inclination to promote the common best of Christendom, the which their Highnesses now during so many years continuously had opposed in deadly war against the King of Spain and his adherents. Their excellencies testified that in this they had been well pleased, explaining that the business might be carried through in conjunction with the other kings and princes, especially with the consent of the Queen of England and also of France, whose ambassador, according to the writing which he said His Majesty had thereanent, was expected the 15th October next. Further we discoursed on the necessity for the said League as we did formerly, and before the breaking up of the said conference, after other familiar talk we discoursed of the successful carrying through of their affairs by my Lords the States, namely, concerning the taking of the town Groningen, their equity in dealing with the vanquished, aiming at liberty and exemption from the tyranny of the Spaniards, etc. We prayed the said lords that a final resolution might at the first be come to as we were very anxious to depart, etc., having promised ourselves to do so.

That evening we were invited to supper at the Earl of Orkenays and were very royally received and entertained with demonstration of goodwill towards my Lords the States.

On the twentieth we sent the Agent Dammen to the Chancellor in order that he might by all possible means seek a good and short leave-taking, since now the Ambassadors of Brunswick, Meckelenburgh, and Denmark had gone, having sailed this day in the morning, and the English one was also preparing everything for his departure. That our waiting on was very hindersome to us, and might possibly cause suspicions with the Queen of England, etc. Whereupon the said Dammen reported as his answer from the said Lord Chancellor that His Majesty had promised that we should receive an answer at latest on Thursday the twenty-second of September.

The twenty-first September we entertained us with the said Earl of Orkenay, etc., Captain Jan Balfoer, and took leave of the Ambassadors of England, who this afternoon took formal leave—I mean the Earl of Sussex to Her Majesty—and the next day, the twenty-second September, the Lord Ambassador the Earl of Sussex took his departure.

During this interval we were advised by the Conservator that in regard to the expediting of the confirmation of the old alliances and friendships, certain difficulties had come to the surface, which we, Colonel Stewart being commissioned thereanent to explain, understood to be that the Instrument with the Insertion held that the King through his Ambassador

Sir William Keith, etc., had made the request to the States thereanent, which the Lord Chancellor afterwards likewise himself said was the case, and though it was so (although these were affairs of long ago and charters) regard must be had to the reputation of the King, and thereanent it was found good in expedition of the despatches so to arrange (that the business might not be left undone) that there should from neither side be any request, and on that matter we were obliged to employ our commission and authorisation in order to renew, etc., without insertion and on this followed the agreement (our original commission thereto serving us) in accordance with the copy of it also herewith attached, and it is to be noted in this that the Lord Chancellor had asked us in what name the prescribed agreement had to be drawn up, whether of the whole Netherlands or of the United Provinces only. Whereto we, after deliberation and conference, answered on the part of the United Provinces along with others that in future might be willing to unite with them, which clause we added for good reasons which my Lords the States can consider for themselves. Also the Lord Chancellor would have liked much that in the Instrument given by us on the part of my Lords the States there should have on both sides been inserted mention of the Provinces that might in future unite with them. We excused ourselves from the same as having no special instruction for that, and his excellency expressed himself satisfied with that answer.

During and between the foregoing conferences the King did through the gentlemen Knight Stewart and Knight Keith appoint us an audience on the twenty-third, then owing to other important occupations of His Majesty the same was put off till the next day.

The twenty-fourth September we sent word to the Lord Chancellor that we begged leave to come and say adieu to his excellency, and his excellency let us know that he was coming to our house within a half hour, so we went to him and he accompanied us back to our lodgings and there took leave with very good assurances and demonstrations of his affection to my Lords the States and understanding of their affairs. In the afternoon the gentlemen, Baron of Levinston, Stewart, and Keith came on the part of the King to fetch us and conduct us to the audience with His Majesty in the palace, where after fitting reverence done, His Majesty in the first place apologised for having been obliged to keep us so long detained because of the despatches of the other ambassadors, and also other important businesses and occupations. He earnestly desired my Lords the States to be assured of his good inclination towards them, highly appreciating as he did their Highnesses wise and prudent conduct of affairs, together with their upright intention of furthering, even with the sword, the freedoms of their neighbours without other pretension in regard to the same, he therefore wished them all good prosperity, and so as His Majesty had brought that subject before us he earnestly desired that my Lords the States would keep up a closer intelligence and correspondence with him than had hitherto been the case, he having sometimes in the course of one or two years had no news from the Netherlands, and if

there happened to be anything secret or of importance to advise him of they were to communicate with the said Sir William Keith. Further he said in reference to the Contra-League that his Ambassador was now at the Court of the Queen of England on account of it, to endeavour to dispose her thereto, but that as yet he had been unable to get any answer on the subject. That the Ambassador of France was expected, where from the intention of the King might be understood and that His Majesty at that point could not act in the matter except by making solicitations to the said parties. Thereafter His Majesty said he had good reasons to be opposed to the King of Spain (though he was not like my Lords the States at war with him), that verily troubles were stirred up in his state by his money and intriguers, and indirectly because of the religion, on account of which, and for diverse other reasons His Majesty, said that it was his interest and he was bound to keep good friendship with my Lords the States. And speaking on the subject of the Queen of England His Majesty said it might not be amiss if we (passing through England) should take an opportunity of telling Her Majesty about our negotiations and all that happened to us in Scotland, in order to avoid suspicions being certain that Her Majesty was informed of everything. After this His Majesty desired his greeting to be made to my Lord, Count Maurice of Nassau, in the hope of becoming more closely acquainted with each other, recommended to us the affair of the late Colonel Henry Balfour one of whose sons being there present, and thereafter the person of Adrian Dammen, declaring the contentment of His Majesty with the good offices rendered by him in informing His Majesty and instructing him of occurrences of affairs in the Netherlands in which every one was deficient. Therefore we thanked His Majesty for the audience and confidence, humbly recommending also his person, and after some more familiar talk we took leave, with reverences to His Majesty and kissing hands, and His Majesty having still spoken a little apart and turning to Valcke desired that he on the part of His Majesty should thank the Sovereign States that they had sent such a gentleman as the Lord of Brederode to him. Therewith parting, we were conducted into the apartments of the Queen, and there we humbly sought permission to take leave of Her Majesty and having kissed hands and recommended the affairs of the land, Her Majesty graciously thanked us recommending to us the person of Alexander Morray uncle of one of her ladies-in-waiting there present; item, greetings to his excellence Count Maurice, and then we left and were again conducted home by the foresaid gentlemen.

The twenty-fifth of September we had all our affairs disposed for the journey so as to set out (with the help of God) the next day, item, Valcke paid a visit to the Ambassador Ordinary of England, Boos, and took leave with the due compliments. Afternoon the Lord Keith came with the Secretary David Foulis and brought us the letter of His Majesty to my Lords the States, which we deliver over, along with this, and the despatches aforesaid, and further, His Majesty presented to each a gold chain with the medal of His and Her Majesties, and commended us with all possible courtesies and reverences to my Lords the States.

The twenty-sixth of September, the wind being still easterly, we set out on our journey, leaving Edinburgh on horseback, accompanied by the Earl of Orkney, the Knight Keith, the Conservator Melvin, and specially, the before mentioned Baron of Carmicle, who, with his sons, kept with us as far as Berwick, with a portion of our suite, the greater portion being left to come by sea, in order that they might meet us in London, sailing with the first favourable wind. We having, for diverse important reasons, resolved to travel through England by land, we were honoured, at our departure, with three shots of artillery out of the Castle of Edinburgh, and as the affairs with the Earl of Bodwel looked badly, and as in regard to his plots concerning the same, conjectures were disclosed, His Majesty appointed and ordained for our security, that we should that evening be conducted to, and treated as guests, in the house of my Lord Sethon, who received us most heartily, and further escorted us with his people, likewise, by order of the King, to the house of the Baron of Bas, who, accompanied by noblemen and others, met us on the road, and conducted us to his house, where we arrived next day, the twenty-seventh September, and were, by him, well received and entertained. Next day, the twenty-eighth September, he escorted us with the same convoy, to Barwyck, where the Lieutenant-Governor, Sir Cary, came to meet us with his cavalry, and brought us into the town with honours of artillery, and entertained us that evening.

The twenty-ninth, we left Berwick, and arrived that evening at Aenwych [Alnwick], where our persons were lodged and entertained by the Governor. Leaving Aenwych on the thirtieth, we arrived in the evening at New-Castle, where we were very royally received by the Mayor, with all the Magistrates *in forma*, and the burghers under arms. We were entertained and lodged in the Mayor's house with great demonstration, that our arrival was most agreeable to them, and they escorted us on the first October to Lamberen, and we came that evening to Durham, the second October to Noorthalerton, the third to Yorck, where we spent the fourth resting, then on the fifth to Donckaster, the sixth to Nieuwarck, the seventh to Stanenfort, the eighth to Hontingtone, the ninth to Waert, the tenth to Bednagin, in the neighbourhood of London, to the house of the Lord of Schonewal. On the eleventh we sent word to the Grand Chamberlain, requesting that we might see Her Majesty, and that an appointment for that purpose might be made for us.

The fourteenth to Nonsuch, where we did find Her Majesty, who, after fitting reverences made with explanations of the reasons of our coming thither, and thanks for her favour, declared that she, on her part, thanked us very much for having undertaken so heavy a journey in order to see her, and in the same way it was very agreeable to her to see us, thereafter having entered into the subject of the affection which Her Majesty bore to our Lands, and always would bear, and therefore she was also confident that they would seek no new friendship, so as to forsake the old; that she had, with great joy, heard of the good success of the States' affairs, in especial of the taking of Groningen, and

the honourable articles and conditions granted to them there; that she was half-jealous of the honour and reputation; that the States conducted their affairs wisely, more so, and better than other princes, etc. We replied that we were glad to understand the good contentment and pleasure Her Majesty had in the actions of the States, and their good success, confessing that (after God) the assistance of Her Majesty had helped greatly to bring matters to good issues, and praying that Her Majesty would therein continue, and that from this she might mark the upright intentions of the Sovereign States, and that we considered the jealousy of Her Majesty as a mark of her greater favour and affection that is the best possible. Thereon Her Majesty began to speak about what was said of her by certain, that she wanted to be at peace with Spain, and that she had no thoughts of the kind, nor ever should have, and that she was too great-hearted to pay court to any one, *Illaque virgo virum;* that old though she was, she desired court to be paid to herself, and earnestly wished us so to say, and to assure the States that she would do nothing except with the consideration and to the pleasure of the States, as was fitting, and dwelt forcibly and long on that article: from that going back upon the good conduct of affairs and success of the States, about which she laughingly said that we Royalties might well take occasion to be jealous of such good and wise conduct, that the doings of their Kings were a mere chronicle of follies; that said States were now rich and mighty, and able to second other people; that now they no longer needed assistance from others, sending as they had done to Henry, King of France, three thousand infantry, and five hundred horse: saying that she was not aware he had any enemies now, and in the event of a peace, that people ought not to have suspicions of Her Majesty, speaking for herself, but not wishing to be responsible for others, for whom she would not speak. We said that we did not know what was going on in our country (as Her Majesty said she could well believe that, and that she knew better than we what was passing there), and in any case it was to be hoped that assistance, such as had been referred to, would not be displeasing to Her Majesty, as being rather intended to bring the Walloons, our original enemies, to reason, which might be called assisting the King of France. Upon which Her Majesty said that *à propos* of this, she had made a bargain with the people for no longer than two months, and they wished to keep them so much longer, which was not agreeable to her.

That, as was fitting, she took care of her subjects; that, as to that, the Jesuits preached that she delivered over her subjects to the shambles, and spared them not in other ways: admonishing about Madame, the Princess of Orange being now at Paris, visiting the King, she repeated once or twice, that she would not return thence this winter, that she ought not to leave her own country in that way; that she had left her little son in the Netherlands as a pledge, that he was a fine courageous young gentleman, etc., at school, or studying there; said that she understood the brother of his excellency, Count Mauritz, the

Count van Buren, had arrived out of Spain in the Netherlands: besides this, she spoke magnanimously in honour of his excellency, of his piety, wisdom, and other good qualities, besides also praising at length that my Lords the States, Madame, the Princess of Orange, and in general, the house of Nassau did themselves much credit for virtue, that thereby they were winning for themselves a great reputation, all which, as before said, it would be ingratitude not to appreciate. Her Majesty said ingratitude was the *peccatum in spiritum sanctum*, etc. She referred also to the subject of our journey to Scotland, saying that her Ambassador had been there, and he recollected that a chair had been placed for the absent King of France, that this King had tried to keep her back from sending her Ambassador until his should have arrived; that she would not consent to do so, being of opinion that he would not be willing to send one out of respect to his Holy Father. Touching the King of Scotland, she asked whether we had not been to the hunt with him; that he loved hunting exceedingly, overmuch indeed, that he shunned no labour or peril, that she had sent him many horses, as many as twenty, that she truly wished he would spare himself in that somewhat, vowing that she would send him no more, although he bridled them, fearing that some accident might happen to him. Further, she inquired about the situation of matters in Scotland, and thereafter asked us secretly, whether the Ambassadors of Brunswick and of Meckelenberg had not besought us for assistance in behalf of, or for the King of Scotland. To which we declared they had not, and in order to tell Her Majesty sincerely all that had happened in Scotland, we said that our commission referred solely to three points, the first to assist at the baptism of the young prince, the second to renew the foresaid old treaties of alliance and friendship, relating particularly to commerce, and thirdly, to negotiate about a league against the presumption of the Spaniards, but nothing else, and only provided that the Ambassadors of Her Majesty were specially commissioned thereto, and that concerning these matters likewise, nothing further was treated of, the King also desiring nothing more, but remitting the same to another opportunity. To which Her Majesty answered nothing special, and said that she was then to understand it was nothing more than a general league that had been meant: and from this she passed to admonishing us that some princes of the Empire and others commissioned thereto were already on their way to visit my Lords the States, with the object of furthering a peace: she asked us what we thought the same might be likely to bring about. We said that my Lords the States, by their stedfastness in the war against the Spaniards during so many years, and their resolutions in diverse treaties that were found alone, and notably not long since, in the answer to the letter of the Duke Ernestus, given to Hartiz and Coeman, they had given it to be well understood what was to be expected of the peace, etc. On which Her Majesty began to praise very highly the said answer and the wisdom of my Lords the States, and so ended her talk. We then took leave reverently, and with proffers of service, in doing which

Her Majesty strongly recommended the case of Colonel Morgan, and so we departed to Kingstone for the night's rest, and the next day, the fifteenth of October, returned again to Budnal Grin foresaid, where we continued living, expecting a favourable wind for crossing, until the twenty-fifth October, when it changed to a good quarter, and we set out for Gravesend, and set sail the same evening, and after some wanderings at sea, we arrived at Veere the twenty-eighth October, and thence we went on to Middleburgh, and we set forward again from there, on the second of November, and on the third (with God's help) we arrived here in the Hague again.

During the above written legation in Scotland, we were solicited on account of diverse requests and grievances, and in particular, the King begged that we should recommend to the notice of my Lords the States, the case and pretensions of the widow and sorrowing children of the late Colonel Henry Balfour, to his arrears, which the Bishop of Dunkeld, having married the widow of the foresaid Balfour, is coming in person to prosecute the claim, notwithstanding that we dissuaded him.

His Majesty did similarly, through Mr. Schenan, recommend the case of Captain Alexander Wichart, to the end that justice or contentment might be done him. Item, the case of Captain Mathias Ralingh, whose Request, with apostille of His Majesty, is herewith delivered. His Majesty, by word of mouth, further recommended to us all his subjects in general in our country, being in arrears, such as a Captain Jan Balfour and others.

Herewith are submitted the complaints of Unfred Grey and François Temont, alleging that they have been injured by certain sentences of the Admiralty of Zeeland. Item, the Remonstrance of Mr. Jan Tronand and partners, merchants of Edemburgh, complaining of some quantity of hides taken from them at sea, and seeking restitution. Lastly, the Agent Dammen has strongly recommended two of his requests, herewith submitted, to my Lords the States, the one touching the restitution of the debt incurred by him in his prison at Dunkirk, and the other, the increase of his pay, as to all which my Lords shall be pleased to do what they shall find to be fitting.

Thus reported and exhibited at a meeting of my Lords the States at the Hague, November 1594.

(Signed.) W. de Brederode.
Jacob Valcke.

Diplomatic Correspondence.

[In 1595, Denniston, the resident Scottish representative at the Hague, presented certain articles to the States the last of which was in these terms:]

'Priant trés instamment V. S. de prendre quelque bon ordre avec l'hoir et veuve du feu Capitaine Trayll, touchant les arriérages deus au dict feu Capitaine.'

[On 14th February 1595 Sir William Stewart of Houston, having again arrived at the Hague as Ambassador from the King of Scotland,[1] had an audience of the States-General along with Mr. Denniston the resident envoy. Their instructions and the reply of the States contain no references to the Scottish troops, but the Ambassador seems to have availed himself of the opportunity to make certain arrangements with regard to his own affairs.]

May 8, 1595.—The secretary was ordered to deliver to the Ambassador Stuart the reply of the States to his proposal made on behalf of the King of Scotland with the Act of Approval of the former Treaties made between Scotland and this country, referred to in the foregoing reply, and asked for by His Majesty. In consideration of certain things it was resolved to defray at the expense of the country, at the hotel of the Briel, the charges and expenses there incurred by the two Ambassadors of the King of Scotland, who were lodged there, to the amount of 1500 guilders.

At the request of the said Mr. Stuart, asking the Lords States to be pleased to accept such assignations as he has made to some of his creditors on the grant of the 14,000 guilders, which will fall due on July 20th next, in accordance with the agreement made by him, also to authorise and order the Receiver-General to raise on his (the petitioner's) account, on interest, the last payment in full a like sum of 14,000 guilders, to fall due on July 20th, 1596, in order that therewith he might pay such arms as he had bought in this country for the King of Scotland. And, thirdly, to grant him a passport to permit him to transport from here to Scotland 500 muskets, 300 corselets and fencing-pads, and 500 pikes. It is resolved and granted that the Receiver-General shall be permitted to undertake to pay the creditors of the petitioner to whom he shall grant assignation on the payment of 14,000 guilders, which shall fall due on July 20th next, two months after due.

---

[1] On 24th December 1594, Sir William Stewart of Houston, Commendator of Pittenweem, was sent as Ambassador to Flanders on 'sum wechtie affearis,' and on 10th July 1595, he reported, and was thanked for his 'meritorious proceedings.'—*P. C. Reg.*

And that accordingly, the said petitioner may negotiate on it. Regarding the second prayer, that the request made in it shall be refused and declined in view of the present condition of the government of the Lands. And regarding the required passport for the transport of the arms, that it be granted him.

Note with reference to the Mission of 1594. On 20th May 1619, at a sitting of the Privy Council, the Earl of Melrose produced 'ane blak round buist,' containing the commission of 1594 to the Lord of Brederode and Mr. James Walck, and the confirmation and ratification made by the said commissioners of the ancient friendship treaties and alliance, and especially of the peace and league made in the town of 'Buiche' in Hainault, on 5th December 1550, dated at Edinburgh, 14th September 1594, 'quhilk buist' had been sent from England to be put in sure keeping in His Majesty's Register within the Castle of Edinburgh.—*P. C. Reg.*, vol. xii.

VI

EXTRACTS FROM RESOLUTIONS OF THE STATES-GENERAL, LETTERS OF RECOMMENDATION, AND REQUESTS AND PETITIONS SENT TO THE COUNCIL OF STATE.

1594-1609

1594

Various Appointments.

Council of State.

March 29.—It is found expedient by the States-General, on the recommendation of his excellency, that some one be commissioned and authorised as Commandant or Chief over the Scottish soldiers in the field. His excellency nominated thereto Captain Murray; and that therefore a provisional commission be granted to the said captain, at a salary of £200 a month when afield.

November 21.—To advise the States-General, that it would be expedient that a Provost be secured for the Scottish regiment, which was done under Balfour at 50 guilders a month.

January 17.—On a request of Captain Hamilton, presented from the States-General, advise that the council refuse it. That since the captain has done all in his power to send the people over, but transport was hindered by a contrary wind, that there be given him in addition for every soldier three Caroli guilders, without the same being made a precedent.

1599, *June* 4.—At the request of the captains of the Scottish regiment, the transport of 550 men is agreed to for the twelve Scottish companies, in pursuance of the decree of his excellency. The payment, however, of the same is not to

be reckoned higher than their respective fixed strength, viz. the chief flag or company at 200, and the rest at 150 men each company.

On a letter of recommendation from Holland,[1] a commission was obtained for the cavalry Captain Edward, as colonel over the Scottish regiment, in the place of the late Colonel Murray, at the same salary as the former colonel enjoyed.

Letters of Recommendation of James VI.

Captain Dallachy.

States-General (Letters and Requests.)

Messieurs,—Jacoit que nous sachions la gratuité dont vous usez à l'endroit de ceux, qui vous ont fidellement servi, esperonnant par honnorables recompenses, ceux qui portent les armes pour vous à exposer d'autant plus hazardeusement leurs personnes a tous perils. Si est ce que nous n'avons pour cela laissé d'assister le nubité du capp^ne^ D'allachy, homme qui vous a en tant d'expérience d'années tesmoigné sa valeur, et maintenant reduict en sa vieillesse. Vous priant tant pour les raisons mentionnées, que pour l'amour de moy, luy user quelque favorable recognoissance en luy monstrant par les effects, que ma recommandation ne luy a esté infructueuse, ce que m'esmouvera dautant plus, a regarder de meilleur œil tous les vostres, que par semblables services, ou en vostre contemplation se rendront envers nous recommandables. Priant Dieu sincere, Messieurs et compères, vous donner sa s^te^ garde.

Jaques R.

De S^te^ Croix, le premier d'April 1599.

Colonel Alexander Murray.

Messieurs,—Le Collonnel Alexandre Mourray s'en retournant en vos pays, après avoir entièrement obtenu de nous ce que vous nous demandiez par les vostres n'avons voulu permettre qu'il reprit sa brisée sans estre chargé de quelque importante commission de notre part, comme vous entendrez plus au long de luy mesme, En quoy vous prions le croyre adioitant indubitable croyance et foy à l'affaire que nous luy avons enioinct vous communiquer en nostre nom, comme à personne,

[1] The Prince of Orange had recommended Edmond to the States of Holland, 'he being the ablest of the Scottish captains.'

qui ne cède à aucun vivant, tant pour le regard du naturel debvoir envers son prince qu'en désir de vous servir. Et nous remettant à son recit prions Dieu, Messieurs et compères, vous comble de ses felicitez. JAQUES R.

De S^te^ Croix, le premier d'April 1599.

Captain Brog.

MESSEIURS,—La fidélité, et nubité du Capp^ne^ Guillaume Brog un de noz subiectz nous esment à vous le recommander affectueusement, à fin q'aux occasions, qui s'offriront pour son avancement et honneur, vous assistiez favorablement le zèle, qu'il a monstré de porter a vostre service, le gratiffiant, p occasionnant de suivre a bonnes enseignes les traces de ceux qui ont participé de vos courtoisies si bien veuillances, par une continuation d'ardeur d'exposer sa vie en tout ce qui vous concernera, si m'asseurant, qu'il ne sera deceu de l'espoir qu'il a en vous tant pour les causes susdictes, que pour l'amour de moy je prieray Dieu, Messieurs et compères, vous donne heureuse vie. Vostre bon amy et compère, JAQUES R.

D'Edimbourg, le 20 April 1599.

Colonel Edmond.

MESSIEURS,—Ayant entendu qu'après la mort du feu Sieur Alexandre Murray, Colonel de l'infanterie Escossoise qui est à vostre service, vous ayez faict élection du Capitaine Edmond pour commander au régiment, du quel encore que la valeur et fidel deportement soit assez cogneu par la preuve des services par luy faicts. Néantmoins estant nostre subiect et pour sa fidélité en vostre service d'autant plus aymé de nous, le recommandons qu'il soit d'autant plus respecté et honoré de toutes faveurs, privilèges et honneurs qu'autres Colonnels ont jouy en vostre service par cy devant. A quoy nous attendant prions Dieu, Messieurs et compères, vous maintenir en sa grace. Vostre bon amy et compère, JAQUES R.

De nostre palais de Saincte Croix, le dernier de Septembre 1599.

Sir William Murray.

MESSIEURS,—Ayantz occasion d'employer en quelque nostre

service le Sieur Cap^ne^ Guillaume Murray, qui vous a autrefois servi au faict de la guerre, il nous a semblé expédient de le rappeler. Mais estant avertiz qu'il est embrouillé en quelque procez en ces pais là, touchant les affaires de son frère, n'avons pas voulu omettre de le recommander et vous prier par le porteur (qui est le frère de Deniston, notre ambassadeur ordinaire près de vous) de le favoriser en ses affaires et le dépescher vers nous le plustost qu'il sera possible. Nous les recommandons doncq d'aultant plus affectueusement en regard de sa fidélité envers nous et des bons services faictz à vous, tant par luy-mesme que par feu son frère. Nous avons donné charge au Sieur de Deniston de vous informer plus au long tant en ceste matière comme en des autres auquel il vous plaira adiouter pleine créance en tout ce qu'il vous dira de notre part, qui sommes et demeurerons tousiours, Vostre bien bon amy et confrère, JAQUES R.

De Saincte Croix, le xx. Octobre 1599.

After the Battle of Nieuport.

MESSIEURS ET COMPÈRES,—Ayantz esté advertiz tant par voz lettres que les rapport asseuré du porteur comme Dieu par sa grace vous avoit faict victorieux sur voz ennemis d'une si furieuse et sanglante bataille, avons esté fort resiouyz, comme au bon succès de toutes vos affaires, nous nous estimons tousiours y avoir nostre part à l'advancement desquelles il ne vous manquera rien qui dépend de nostre pouvoir, comme nous avons donné charge au porteur de vous informer plus amplement, au quel il vous plaira adiouster pleine créance en ce qu'il dira sur le désir que nous avons à vous faire paroistre qu'elle est nostre disposition envers vous et vostre estat, et quel bien et honneur nous ésperons tirer de vous quand nous en aurons besoing. Vous priantz tousiours faire estat de nous comme l'un de voz plus affectionnez. Et d'autant qu'en vostre dernière victoire plusieurs de noz gens sont mortz et en reviennent tous les iours de là tant des blesséz et estropiez, ruinez quasi en votre service. Nous désirons qu'ayez esgard au traittement de ce peu de reste, qu'estantz à l'avenir pour l'amour de nous plus respectéz, les plus gallants espritz et plus valencieux puissent estre induictz librement

se rendre en votre service, dont nous avons (Dieu mercy) assez bon nombre,[1] desquelz quand vous aurez affaires, vous en disposerez. Et comme toutes voz bonnes fortunes sont reputées et nostrée (?), nous ne doubtons pas que de pareille affection vous aurez à congratuler quand vous entendrez le vray et simple discours (lequel vous envoyons avecque ces présentes) de la plus cruelle trahison qu'a osé machinée contre nostre personne et de laquelle Dieu par sa grace, non sans miracle, nous a délivré. Quant au porteur,[2] lequel nous avons esté bien resjouy de veoir auprès de nous, ayant par l'espace de vingt et six ans esté esloigné de sa patrie, nous n'estimons pas estre nécessaire de vous le recommander, car quoy que nous le respectons pour estre notre subiect, si est ce que nous tenons plus de compte de sa valence et fidelle affection qu'il a porté à votre service, que de sa naissance et pour l'encourager d'avantage, il n'y a ny bien n'honneur qu'il peut espérer de nouz qui luy manqueront pourveu qu'il continue. Nous ne doubtons que vous ne faciez le pareil et à luy et à tous autres de notre nation qui de pareille volonté s'addresseront à votre service, et seront tres aisés qu'à toutes occasions il soit familiairement par vous employé devers nous en affaires de conséquence. Etc. JAQUES R.

De Falcland, le xx. d'Aoust 1600.

David Barclay (of Towie or Urie).

MESSIEURS ET COMPÈRES,—Ce gentilhomme porteur, nommé David Barclay, sieur de Struy, frère germain du feu Cap^ne^ Robert Barclay, qui ayant ces ans passés seruy fidellement au faite de vos guerres, et ayant perdu la vie en ce dernier conflict. Sur ce a prins résolution d'aller par delà pour prendre ordre de quelquonques biens et moyens appartenants au susdit defunct, son frère, ensemble les décomptes que vous luy serez trouvé

[1] The difficulty of Scotland rested rather in the surplus than the deficiency of these 'gallant spirits' for which King James thanks Providence for having provided him with a 'sufficient number.' The legislation of his parliament and the policy of his privy council in regard to the Highlands and Island, indicate the problem presented by the 'assez bon nombre,' which previous Jameses had taken summary methods of reducing.

[2] Probably Colonel Edmond, who went to Scotland 'to remake his regiment.'

redevable pour son service en vos dites guerres. Vous priant affectueusement que tous les biens qui luy appartenoit, aussi bien devant son decez, que les dites décomptes soit délivrez au dit gentilhomme, avec son nepveu le fils du dit feu Cap^ne^ son frère, à qui tout appartient très justement comme à son propre fils et et héritier, à scavoir aussi que le dit gentilhomme est son vray tuteur de loy. Car la mère du dit garçon ne peut estre nullement ouye s'opposer au contraire du dit tuteur, veu que pieça [?] elle a esté divorsée d'avec son feu mary, comme il est très notoire. Outre plus le dit tuteur est honnorable gentilhomme de biens et d'héritage, et bien respecté pour son honneste comportement en toutes ses actions, estant digne de faire valoir tout ce qu'il recevra au profit du dit pupille son nepveu, jusques à ce qu'il soit venu en parfait age. Et la dessus vous reprions de rechef, que pour l'amour de nous vous expédiez le plustot que pourrez le dit gentilhomme, en luy délivrant son dit nepveu et tout ce qui luy appartient de droit, ce qui incitera davantage tous nos autres subjects hazarder plus volontiers leurs biens et leur vie mesme en votre service. De quoy faisant nous ferez un singulier plaisir ce que nous sommes et demeurerons preste recognoistre mutuellement en ce qu'il vous plaira nous requerir. Priant, etc. V^re^ très affectionné ami, JACQUES R.

De notre palais à Dundie, ce xxvi. de Septembre 1600.

Captain John Ker.

MESSIEURS ET COMPÈRES.—Le Sieur Cap^ne^ Jehan Ker,[1] qui pour une requeste a impétré congé pour quelque espace de venir par deça pour certaine siene affaire. Et estant prest à s'en retourner vers vous, nous a sollicité de vous le recommander, ce que nous faisons de meilleure volonte, pour autant que nous sçavons que au service passé il n'a manqué rien en luy de son devoir et durant qu'il a esté là n'a fait chose indigne de son honneur ny de notre faveur. Il vous plaira donguce le laisser retourner librement en ce païe, afin d'estre icy près les sienes dites affaires. Aussi nous vous prions de prendre en sa place

[1] See pp. 59 and 60 (in note), also p. 31.

de commandement un gentilhomme lequel le d^{t} Cap^{ne} y mettra assez suffisant pour descharger ce rang de preéminence et qui sans aucune doubte vous contentera. Et pour ce que le d^{t} Cap^{ne} n'a point l'intention de retourner ci après en vos quartiers, estant tellement empesché en ses dites affaires nous vous requetons affectueusement que le peu de deniers qu'il luy sont deues, tel ordre y soit donné qu'il puisse recevoir ses décomptes pour s'acquitter de tous ses despenses et charges, pour retourner avec toute diligence, de telle façon qu'il n'aye point occasion de se plaindre de vous. Ce qui nous sera fort agréable, comme nous prions le Créateur, Messieurs et Compères, vous tenir en sa digne garde. Votre bon Amy et Compère, JAQUES R.

De notre palais de S^{te} Croix, ce xxvii. jour de Décembre 1600.

Council of State.

1600, *October* 5.—Huygens, Secretary of the Council of State reported, that having spoken with the States-General about the transport money of Colonel Edmond and 800 Scots, brought over from Scotland, by commission of the States-General; said States had declared, that the payment for each soldier should be payment usually given, 8 guilders, and that the opinion of the States was, and still is, that out of the 800 Scots should be formed the three companies mentioned in the Act of the States-General. Further, that the Scottish Regiment should be held from that date at from 13 to 11 companies, that the colonel's company should number 200, and the others 113, which companies may be filled up from the said number of 800 men.

November 13.—Report made concerning the division and reduction of the new Scottish soldiers, in order to bring up the companies to 135 men.

Resolutions of States-General.

1600, *June* 3.—Inasmuch as Captain Brog desires to undertake the duties of Lieutenant-Colonel of the Scottish regiment, solely for the honour, without other pay, and that neither their excellencies nor Captain Edmond know of any reasons

why the same lieutenantship should not be granted to the above mentioned Brog, it is agreed to.

1600, *December* 29.—Captain Brog was allowed in one payment 600 guilders for his previous services in his quality of Lieutenant-Colonel of the Scottish Regiment, and it was agreed that in future he shall enjoy a salary of 100 guilders per month, commencing from the first of January next, and that a commission to that effect be despatched to him.

Requeste pour le Cap^ne Hamylton.

States-General (Requests).

A Messeigneurs, Messeig^rs [*sic*] du Conseil d'Estat.[1]—Rémonstre en toute humilité et revérence Capitaine Hamilton, en garnison à Nimèghe, coñe il a pleu à V. S. dépescher ordonnance le xxviii de Apureil pour ung moys de gages, sur Mons^r Doublet, Recepveur gñal; et le dit recepveur a doné ung décharge sur Messeig^rs les estats de Zélande. Mais ayant envoyé ung hoñe expres pour son payement, mes d^s Seig^rs du Zeelandt ont refusé le dit payement, au grande préiudice du remonstrant. Car il a este contraint de lever l'argent à Interrest pour l'intretenement de sadit compaignie. Partant il prie qu'il plaise à mes Seig^rs doner ordre pour sondit payement au regarde du temps que est désia passe.

Quoy faissant. Le xi Maye 1601. Jaques Crack.

Resolutions of States-General.

1601, *December* 17.—In reference to the petition of Captain Brog, requesting payment of the balance of his account, made up 13th June '88, for his pay as Sergeant-Major of the Scottish regiment, under Colonel Balfour, from the 1st September 1583 to the 5th March 1585, and again till the last of April '88, amounting to 2224 pounds, eight shillings, it was agreed that search be made in the Rolls here, the Treasury

---

[1] From the packet of requests presented to the States-General and to the Council of State in 1601.

This collection is very defective; from 1600-1620 only 1601, 1611, and 1617 exist.

of the States-General, as well as in the Finance Chamber of Holland, as to how much of said sum the petitioner has received; and that of the balance he shall be paid one-third in ready money, and the other two-thirds within the next two half-years, and that an order to that effect on the Receiver-General be despatched.

1602, *September* 20.—Whereas Robert Stuart, Scotsman, a sailor on board a man-of-war, in the service of the Land, has voluntarily confessed, without being put to the torture, that on the third of August last he had taken on himself to pass in review among the company of Captain Balfour as a soldier of said company, under the name of Thomas Fowler, and that he seduced thereto other six sailors, who also were passed in review as soldiers of the said company; whereby the prisoner aforesaid, contrary to his oath, and the placards on the subject of the mustering, has defrauded and robbed the Land; said decree forbidding such fraud on pain of death. Therefore the States-General and the Council of State of the United Netherlands taking, as is fit, all things into consideration, and doing justice, at the instance and demand of the Advocate Fiscal, brought against the prisoner, condemn the said Robert Stuart to be hung by ropes till he be dead, as an example to others.

Given the xx. September 1602.

Letters of King James i. 1603.

Recommendation of Livingstone.

Messieurs et Comperes,—Ce jeune hom̃e Leviston, ayant quelques années passées faict son apprentissage en la guerre en vostre païs et s'estant résolu d'y poursuyvre la fortune, Nous vous l'avons bien voulu recom̃ender, tant pour le bon et agréable service qu'il nous a faict que pour l'opinion que nous avons qu'il se rendra digne, tant de nostre recom̃endation que de la faveur que vous luy en ferez. Et pour ce vous prions luy vouloir ottroyer une compagnie de cavallerie à la première occasion quy se présentera. Ce quy nous sera fort agréable et nous donnera occasion de vous complaire en semblable ou plus

Diplomatic Correspondence, Portfolio 1603-1608.

grand cas comẽ nous somẽs et serons. Vostre trèsaffectionné amy et comperè. JAQUES R.

De nostre palais royal d'Hampton, le xxiii[e] de Juillet 1603.

Captain Selby.

MESSIEURS ET COMPERES,—Nous ne doubtons point, que vous n'ayez désia entendue la trahison machinée contre nostre personne, femme et enfantz, iusques à vouloir avoir entièrement exterminée nostre race par quelques noz desloyaux subiectz, ausquels tant s'en faulte que nous ayons données cause, de mescontentement, que nous les avions par nostre liberalité obliger de nous estre très-fidelz. Entre lesquelles le baron de Gray a esté des premiers. Et craignantz que la compagnie de cavallerie, qu'il tenoit à vostre service, ne se dissipast à faulte de capitaine, Nous avons résolu de vous envoyer ce gentilhomẽ, le capitaine Selby, du quel la fidélité et valeur nous estantz assez esprouvées, nous asseurent qu'il sera bien receu pour ceste nostre recomẽndation, pour suppléer la place d'un trahistre si déloyal. Nous avons faict choix expres de luy comẽ gentilhomẽ digne d'une telle charge, vous priantz estimer que ce n'est pas la recomẽndation ou credit d'homẽ vivant, mais seulement ses qualitez dignes de comãnder [*sic*] quy nous ont esmeuz de vous l'envoyer. Il vous plaira donque l'accepter gratueusement pour l'amour de nous au lieu de celuy quy n'est plus homẽ de bien et dans peu de jours ne sera plus, et vous confier en ceste nostre élection de laquelle nous espérons que vous n'aurez jamais occasion de vous repentir de son service, ne nous de l'avoir recomẽndé. Ainsi nous asseurantz de vostre bon affection en cest endroict, prions Dieu, Messieurs et compères, vous maintenir en sa Saincte et digne gard. Vostre tres affectionné amy et compère, JAQUES R.

De nostre palais royal d'Hampton, le premier d'Aoust 1603.

Recommendation of the heirs of Colonel H. Balfour.

(1603. Exhib. May x., 1603, by Mr. Deniston.)

Diplomatic Correspondence.

Sa Majesté demandé qu'il plaise à Messeigneurs les Estatz généraulx de doner contentement aulx hérétiers de feu le

Collonnel Henri Balfour, de son service fait en Brabant; suivant les obligations et decomptes signées par leurs Seig^ies et leurs députés. Et en cas qu'ils ne vouldroyent recognostre ne satisfaire à toute la dit debt, pour le moyns. Ils sont obligez de satisfaire pro rata; estanz alors unies avec les aultres estatz de brabant. Ce que sa Ma^té demande tant seulement. Sa Ma^té désire que Monsieur Daman, agent de messeig^s les Estatz, soit continué en sa charge auprès sa Mat^é en Angleterre coñe il estoit en Escosse.

States-General.

1603, *October* 23.—In reference to the reports received from Zeeland, Dordrecht, and Rotterdam, that between five and six companies of Scotsmen had arrived belonging to the new regiment of the Baron of Buccleuch, and that the remaining companies are on the way, or may even already have arrived, it is proposed . . .

November 24.—It is resolved that the newly arrived Scotsmen, belonging to the companies of Captains Scalby, Murray, Spence, and Brochtown,[1] be supported, and that the weapons and travelling expenses of the same be paid, in the same manner as in the case of the earlier arrived companies of the regiment of Baron Buccleuch, who are supported and paid out of the moneys from France, destined for that purpose.

1604, *January* 9.—100 guilders in one payment assigned to Andrew Hunter, minister of the Scottish regiment, for his extra services, and the States-General wish it understood that he is to allow himself to be employed in the service of both Scottish regiments.

January 10.—Peter Stuart,[2] Scottish nobleman, on account of certain considerations, is allowed thirty guilders; with the understanding that he do not apply again, but in future address himself to the regiments of his nation, in order to be advanced among them.

January 21.—At the request of Captain Walter Bruce, it was found good to recommend to the Council of State that

---

[1] Mentioned at siege of Ostend. Does not appear in any list. Probably killed there.

[2] He appears later as officer of artillery. See p. 211.

their excellencies cause the 33 soldiers therein mentioned, of the supplemental [?] company, stationed in Amersfort, to be paid (being at present within the bounds of Ostend), and issue an order that said men, being there, are to stay till the departure of their said company from that place.

1604, *February* 3.—It was resolved that the Commissioner Jan de Mist betake himself to Dordrecht, and there review the Scotsmen recently arrived there, to register the same, and examine whether there be any fraud or criminality among them, approving of none except those qualified for the immediate service of the Land. And the revision being accomplished, to bring them forthwith to the companies to which they belong, and the places where these are in garrison; and thereafter to muster with great care the same companies, with all the other companies stationed in the neighbourhood, with the understanding that the States shall reserve to themselves the number in excess of the strength assigned to the captains, in order to distribute them among the other companies.

March 15.—Peter Stuart is once more granted the sum of 36 guilders—a third to be paid at once, a third in May, and a third in July—to be paid by the Receiver-General.

March 16.—Jan de Mist is commissioned to go to Rotterdam and review the Scottish recruits arrived there, and examine thoroughly whether they are really fresh arrivals, and to discharge incompetent soldiers.

Representation in favour of Lord Buccleuch by the British Ambassador.

(Dated March 2 (12) 1604. Exhib. Jan. xvi. 1604)[1]

Diplomatic Correspondence.

Messieurs,—J'eusse désiré, ce que i'eusse pris pour tresgrand heur, de pouvoir apporter à V. S^ies^ les nouvelles agréables du retour du Généràl Vere. Car ie scay le contentement que est Estat eust receu de retenir tousiours aupres de son service un Seig^r^ de sa qualité et merite. Mais ie ne suis nullement si

[1] This letter initiates a controversy of long standing.

heureux, tant s'en fault que i'aye charge de vous dire que comme personne ne vous a servy plus fidellement que luy, ny avec plus de soin et d'industrie, ainsi personne n'eust plus volontiers que luy achevé le reste de ses iours en service de cest Estat. Mais puis la police de vos affaires ne permette pas de luy octroyer ses demandes et sans cet octroy de vouloir reprendre sa charge, seroit d' abandonner la soin de sa réputation, qui vous recognoissiez qu il a gaignée par tant de travaux et perte de son sang. Il se déportera de vous importuner d'avantage et se contentera du tesmoinage duquel il vous a pleu de couronner son congé, que ce refus ne luy ait esté fait à faute de son mérite, mais par des considérations importantes qui concernent le repos et tranquillité du gouvernement de cest Estat. Et comme ainsi soit que dès son advenement au service du païs, il a servy non moins heureusement, dont il rend graces à Dieu, que avec une trésaffectueuse volonté, il prie Mess^rs^ à croire qu'avec sa charge il ne se despouillera pas de tout soin de vos affaires; ains comme son corps charnaillé et cicatricé au service de cet Estat, luy ramentovira iour et nuict la vie passée, ainsi l'honneur qu'il a receu des Provinces Unies demeurera tousiours engravé en son ame, la souvenance duquel il mènera et quant et luy, vive et fresche, iusques au tombeau, avec ses meilleurs souhaitz pour la prospérité d'icelles.

Je m'assure, il n'y a pas un d'entre vous, Messieurs, qui ne regrette le départ de Monsieur Vere! Mais i'ay de quoy vous consoler:

primo avulso non deficit alter
aureus, et simili frondescit verga metallo.

Voicy arrivé, en ceste ville, le Seig^r^ de Bouclough, mandé de par sa Ma^te^ au service de cest Estat, duquel, parmy mille Seig^s^ Escossois elle a fait choix pour les belles parties requises en un grand Commandeur, pour tesmoigner plus amplement tant son soin pour la conservation de ces Provinces que son désir que la prospérité d'icelles de iour à autre puisse estre augmentée.

Ce seig^r^ cy ne vient pas pour busquer fortune; il a chez luy de quoy manger sans prendre cette peine, et des estatz ausquelz vacquer sans aller à la guerre; et s'il y avait faute, ou de l'un ou

de l'autre, il n'y a nulle faute des bonnes graces du Roy son Maistre; qui ne manqueront iamais de recognoistre les mérites de ses dignes serviteurs. Mais après avoir voyagé et veu le monde, et par tous beaux exercises, tant au fait des armes que des autres estudes, s'est rendu habile pour le service de sa patrie, scachant avec quelle affection sa Ma^té^ embrasse l'accroissem^t^ de vos affaires, il s'est laissé persuader d'entreprendre ce service, pour y emploier son temps et despendre ses moyens, voire son sang et sa vie. C'est pourquoy sa Ma^té^ m'a commandé de le présenter à V. S^ies^ et les prier quand et quand de sa part, qu'il soit receu en qualité de Général de sa Nation, en quelle qualité elle le mande et le recommande entre vos mains. Les troupes auxquelles il aura à commander sont les subiects de sa Ma^té^, ausquelz, affin qu'ilz scachent qu'ils ne sont le plus esloignés de sa grace et souvenance, pour estre employés au service de ses bons amys et alliez, elle envoye ce Commandeur avec charge de les aguerrir en la discipline militaire. Charge grande et pleine d'honneur mais fascheuse et chatilleuse, dont mal aisément on s'acquittera, s'elle soit communiquée avec un autre. En toutes charges, esquelles la vigilance et l'industrie sont requises, quand on vient à cela, "nec mihi, nec tibi, sed dividatur," tout va à l'abandon, on n'y prend point de soin, ou s'il y en a quelque peu, ce n'est que par manière d'acquit, en un mot, tout n'est que nonchaloir et négligence. Ce qu'a induit V. S^ries^ depuis quelques années en ca de faire un Général des troupes anglaises. Maintenant que l'Angle^rre^ et l'Escosse sont consolideés ensembles et que les troupes Escossoises sont accreues au mesme nombre qu'alors se trouvoyent les angloises, s'il vous plaira de faire cest honneur à la Nation Escossoise vous suivrez l'exemple de Sa Ma^té^ laquelle traicte avec pareille affection les deux Royaumes, et monstrerez le contentement que vous prennez de nostre heureuse union. Les demandes de ce Seig^r^ ne sont nullement inciviles, lesquelles n'esbranslent pas les loix fondementales de vostre police, ny s'eniambent sur la soveraineté de Mess^rs^ les Estats, ny dérogent l'authorité du Général en chef. Il ne demande qu'avec le traitement du général tant de pouvoir, pour s'acquitter le mieux de son devoir envers le service de ces Provinces et de Sa Ma^té^. Il vous supplie d'y vouloir penser et résoudre au plus tost, ce que ie fais de la part

de sa Ma^té^ qui m'a commandé de recevoir et luy comuniquer la résolution. RODOLPHE WINWOD.

faict le deuxième de Mars, Stilo veteri.

States-General.

March 23.—The Recorder is charged to intimate to the Council of State, that they find it good that their excellencies shall give commissions to the captains of the regiment of the Lord of Buccleuch, and administer to them the Lands' oath; also that their excellencies shall likewise issue a commission and administer the oath to the foresaid Lord of Buccleuch. And as he will probably object to this, because he pretends to the generalship of the Scots, in the service of the Land, that the States will, in that case, make known and advise how to act.

Also it is found good, that the Council of State shall investigate whether or not there is one of the companies of the regiment of the Lord of Buccleuch which desires to be incorporated in the regiment of Colonel Edmond. Because if that is the case the company of Henderson on the other hand must be put under the foresaid Buccleuch.

March 24.—Messrs. Santen and Hardebrouck, councillors of State, compeared and reported the advice of the Council of State (after previous conference with their excellencies).

On the motion of Councillor Winwoldt, in reference to the Generalship of the Scots in the Lands' service;—that since His Majesty of England recommends Lord Buccleuch; and taking into account the letters of the Count of Embden: after consultation an understanding was come to, his excellency and the Council, having well weighed and considered the motion aforesaid, the States being on this point in agreement with them, and it was resolved that the Councellor Winwoldt aforesaid be instructed and shown here in the Assembly, that the request embodied in the foresaid proposal is prejudicial to the Government of the country; and that therefore it could not be agreed to without the previous notice, advice, and resolution of the Provinces united together. Yet that in any case there is reason to fear that it would lead to nothing because of the precedent it would give to other nationalities

who in like manner would claim to have a general. And that same claim was disputed in the case of the Lord General Vere notwithstanding his true and long continued service to the country, and besides it would be a source of many misunderstandings arising in regard to the person of Colonel Edmond, who has served the country faithfully for so many years. And his excellency has been asked to make no further urgent request for the said generalship, and try to persuade the Lord Buccleuch to content himself with the regiment, like other generals in the service of the country.

April 1.—Compeared Lieutenant-Colonel Henderson and was questioned as to the present constitution of the Scotch regiment under Baron Buccleuch. To which he replied, that said regiment was very brisk, well armed, and in order for active service.

He was then commissioned, so far as he could advance the matter, to bring his own company into the regiment of the foresaid Baron of Buccleuch; and to bring another company of that regiment into the regiment of Edmond. And thereafter with his brother, or some one else, to take measures to promote friendship and ward off jealousy in the nation.

1604, *April* 5.—As regards the generalship over the soldiers of the Scottish nation in the Lands' service, His Majesty recommends thereto the Baron of Buccleuch. Thereupon the States, having consulted with the Council of State, and others with whom it is usual to advise in such like matters of importance, find that the said request of generalship is a novelty, never previously put in practice, and that they could not consent to it without making an opening for all the other nations in the Lands' service to ask in like manner for a general. A step which the deputies of the provinces being convened would consequently not dare to take on their own responsibility, but would have to lay the matter before their principals in order to obtain their opinion and understand their good pleasure, as is customary. To this the same deputies are inclined to agree in so far as the Lord Appearer also approves, and is expressly authorised to insist on the said request. But that their Highnesses may well declare to his Honour, that they see no probability of the introduction of the foresaid novelty,

and therefore his Honour may beg the Baron of Buccleuch to regulate himself so as in future to desist from seeking said generalship, and accept his commission as colonel. The Lord Appearer requested a written copy of the declaration, for the purpose of informing His Majesty, who doubtless in the matter will make a new urgent application, in view of the fact that it touches the honour of the Lord Baron.

April. 16—In the matter of the remonstrance of the Baron of Buccleuch. In reference to the first point of the same, it was agreed that the captains of the remonstrant's regiment are to keep the soldiers raised and brought over by each of said captains, as they were then found and passed in muster, except in case they are supernumeraries, beyond the strength appointed to the captains. Moreover they must be kept in good order, armed, brought to, and used in the service.

But as regards the second point, touching the pay of the superior officers of the regiments aforesaid, the States give it to be understood that they will place on a similar footing the pay of the superior officers of all the nations in the service of these Lands. Therefore desiring that the remonstrant meanwhile will content himself with the knowledge, that the superior officers of his regiment will be paid like the officers of the old Scottish regiment.

July 1.—At the request of Mrs. Elizabeth Crichton, widow of the late Captain Dallachy, it is agreed, that the Receiver-General shall pay her her various pensions, on the understanding that before the end of the current year she shall show proper evidence of her children being in life, otherwise this payment shall be postponed to be included in the pension of the coming year.

Recommendation of Robert Gray.

(Receptum Aug. 2.)

1604, *July* 10 (*O. S.*).—Mes bons amis et très-chers compères.—En vous saluant: sachez que ce gentilhomme le porteur de ceste Robert Gray, Escossois, ayant passé son temps par le monde en nostre service, l'espace de six ou sept ans, pour à ceste fin de se rendre plus prompt et capable, est maintenant désireux de suivre la guerre à ce qu'il ne luy

puise rien manquer propre pour un Gentilhomme de sa qualité, et estant ainsi que nous, ne luy, ne trouvons autres (aux services desquel il pourra mieux employer son temps qu'aux nostres). A ce regard nous avons trouvé bon de l'envoyer devers vous, avec noz lettres de faveur et crédit, touchant ce point: Vous priant bien fort de l'avoir en tel esgard pour l'amour de nous, comme à tel Gentilhomme de son rang appartient, et de luy faire avoir le commandement d'une de noz compagnies de gens de pied. Dont nous espérons qu'il vous fera bien bon service et aggréable, et qu'il ne faudra de mériter par ses vertuz et diligences bien mieux que ne voulons signifier. Et comme ne doubtant que voulez accomplir nostre demande, vous commandant au bon succes de l'importance de noz grandes affaires, Demeurons tousiours Vostre bien bon amy et compère, JAQUES R.

De nostre court de Greinwich, ce 10 Juillet.

Recommendation of Laurence Sinclair.

To the Council of State. (Receptum Aug. 2.)

1604, *July* 17.—MY LORDS,—I had lately occasion to speak with His Majesty, and he desired me to recommend to your lordships the bearer of this, Laurence Sinclair, at one time lieutenant under Captain John More, in the regiment of Colonel Buccleuch. The said captain died lately at Ostend, where also the lieutenant then was, and had been there for thirty weeks. He was wounded several times, and therefore all the more deserves to succeed his captain; in whose place His Majesty desires that he may be appointed, he being in other respects, as I understand, a nobleman of ability, and belonging to a very good house. Moreover his ancestors, in other days, rendered valuable services to the country, therefore I hope your lordships will accept this recommendation in consideration of the fact that His Majesty made it by word of mouth, and that it is the sole object of this letter. Ever praying God to grant that your lordships may continue in long and prosperous government,

NOEL DE CARON.

From St. Lambeth, the 17 July 1604. Old Style.

Resolutions of States General.

August 11.—On the request of the widow and orphans of the late Captain Robert Barclay, Scotsman, it was resolved to place the matter in the hands of the clerks, for the purpose of going over her accounts, and examining whether any mistake has been made.

October 20.—At the request of John Boyd, ensign of the company of Captain John Spence, their High Mightinesses the States have, on account of certain important considerations, and his long continued services (he having been maimed in both arms in the country's service before Zutphen and in Ostend), agreed that at his departure from the country, he shall be granted in all two hundred guilders, in full satisfaction of all his services, on the understanding that the Council of State, in order not to cause any difficulty thereby to the country, is to write to the foresaid Captain Spence to keep the place of ensign open till the middle of March next, or until the matter shall be properly disposed of.

October 21.—To write to their lordships of the states of Utrecht, and make request to the same, that they pay Captain Caddel the sum of nine hundred and ninety-nine guilders two shillings vd., the balance due to him at the liquidation made of his current pay at the time he was on duty on the repartition of the states of Utrecht.

October 29.—To furnish to the seven Scottish companies of Colonel Buccleuch, arrived from Ostend, one month's pay, according to their strength at the last muster since their arrival from Ostend, with deduction of one-sixth part.

November 29.—Received from the deputies of the states of Utrecht a letter, of 23rd October, wherein they excuse themselves as yet from paying the £996 11^{sh}, being the balance due to Captain Caddel for the current service of his company during the time it is alleged he was on duty on the repartition of the states of Utrecht, which they deny.

It is resolved, that notwithstanding said excuse, the deputies of Utrecht be again requested to pay the sum aforesaid, as during that time it appeared that the Council of State placed the company aforesaid at the charge of the States of Utrecht, as against other burdens which their Highnesses laid on the other provinces.

Captain Archibald Erskine's Cavalry Company.

Resolutions of States-General.

December 20.—Captain Archibald Ariskey [Erskine] being present, accompanied by Captain Aresky [Erskine] and Esaias Chastelain, the States represented to the said Captain Archibald, the difficulties he would have to encounter in the formation of a company of cavalry cuirassiers, which he begged to be allowed to form; not only in regard to the great expenses which he would necessarily incur (amounting to about 30,000 guilders), but particularly from the scarcity of well-trained horses, which he would hardly be able to get in this country of such weight and height as they ought to be, according to the Land's order, likewise owing to the scarcity of cavalry soldiers of his nation qualified and well-armed according to the government order. He should therefore reflect on the project lest he be thereby brought to ruin, and come out of it with diminished reputation, which the States would be sorry for.

But since the said captain (notwithstanding all the 'foresaid difficulties brought under his notice, and several other friendly exhortations, to divert him from his purpose, he being at last told, that should he not have said company of cavalry fully equipped, they being qualified horse soldiers of his nation, well armed and provided with trained horses, according to the Land's order, between this and the first of March next, new style, that the company would not be received into the service) persisted in his intention, and requested to be allowed to form the company. The said States (in consideration and out of regard to the name and friendship of the said Ariskey, and not looking to the fact that having undertaken to bring the foresaid Company into the service of the Land, on the tenth of August last, he brought over during the first half of December, between seventy and eighty men, with only one horse fit for service) consented, and granted to the said Captain Archibald Ariskey to proceed with the formation of said company of one hundred cuirassiers, under which there shall be thirty cuirassiers with ponies; provided he be bound to have said company fully equipped precisely between this and the first of March next, of qualified, experienced, and well-armed cavalry of the Scottish nation, provided with well-trained horses, of such height and weight as the order of the Land implies, otherwise

failing this, said company shall not be taken into service; and in the meantime every horseman without a horse shall for his support be supplied with seven stuivers daily, and every one with a qualified horse and properly armed, fourteen stuivers a day.

1604, *December* 23.—Captain Areskey, notwithstanding all the difficulties in his way, has undertaken to form—between this and the first of March next precisely, new style—the company of cavalry, 100 cuirassiers strong, in accordance with the regulations of the Land, and the resolution placed in his hands by the States, except that he insists on ponies such as Cavalry Captain Hamilton had. And after said Areskey having been told that he ought to content himself with the offer made to him, without being opinionative to such a point about the ponies, since the States make no levies of cavalry but on the footing indicated, it was explained to him that, since he will have his way, it will be counted sufficient if, on the muster day of said company, there are more than thirty qualified horse soldiers. As for ponies, no notice will be taken of ten or twenty, but, in view of his exactingness, he must heed this well, that the States also will be exact with him, and, in respect of that, he is to bear in mind that he shall have to form his company, according to the 'foresaid resolution, placed in his hands, between this and the first of March next, consisting of one hundred qualified, well-armed cavalry cuirassiers, with well-trained horses, everything according to the regulations of the Land. Or failing this, said company shall not be accepted—to which the 'foresaid Ariskey has agreed. And in this matter the Recorder is charged to communicate this transaction to his Ex^{y} [Prince Maurice], and request that his Ex^{y} will be pleased to assign a post to the said Ariskey, so as to form the said company, with letters-patent or commission for that purpose.

December 29.—To write to the Province of the city and surrounding country of Groningen, that they are to grant the companies of Captains Norman Bruce and Selby, provisionally placed as a share to their charge by the Council of State, their settlement, and liquidation of their current pay.

January 4.—It was agreed that Esaias Chastelain shall be reimbursed the sum of £1663 16^{s}, advanced by him, with

consent of the States, to the Cavalry Captain Ariskey for the support of his company of cavalry.

January 15.—As to the request of the Cavalry Captain Arch^{d} Areskey, praying for a subsidy for his company of cavalry, still incomplete, he is apprised that the attention of the petitioner was early directed to all the difficulties which would beset him therein, and that more cannot be done for him in that matter than has already been done.

January 19.—On the request of Baron Buccleuch and Captain Ariskin, praying that they may be allowed to increase the companies of his Scottish regiment up to 150 men, their regulation strength, consideration of the matter was postponed, till the Provinces of the State shall have given their consent.

January 24.—At the request of Arch^{d} Ariskin, it was agreed that the Commissioner of the Treasury pay to the petitioner the transport money of one hundred infantry at eight guilders a head—and that on the bases of the resolution—from the time that he arrived at Veere, but deducting what he received at Veere, Dordrecht, here and elsewhere, in money, forage, and victuals.

January 27.—To write to the States of Utrecht, and ask to be informed by them whether they have given any supplies to the cavalry company of Arch^{d} Areskyn, and, if so, to what extent. Item, What horses had he? also, How is the company equipped?

February 5.—It is agreed that 1200 guilders be provided for the time being for the Cavalry Captain Arch^{d} Areskin towards the maintenance of his company of cavalry till the last of this month, according to the order made thereanent; provided he be told to have his company formed against the first of March next, according to the resolution given him in writing. Or in default the States shall report him.

May 7.—Agreed that the Cavalry Captain Arch^{d} Areskin shall, beyond the month's payment which was yesterday accorded to his company, be by anticipation furnished (in order that in the service of the Land he may take his company out of Utrecht, and bring them into the field), with the sum of two thousand guilders, provided that the said sum be deducted from him during the next four months.

January 25.—The Advocate of Holland reported that the Baron of Buccleuch had complained to him that justice was not done him against Captain Bruce, who killed his lieutenant Captain Hamilton in a duel. In respect that the said Bruce is suffered to walk about the streets here in the Hague, notwithstanding that he had been summoned to the Council of War. And praying for justice, to remove all sources of trouble before going a-field.

Item. That he may have leave to increase his company, beyond his present strength (of two hundred), to two hundred and fifty men, at which he is always to hold the same complete. Having consulted as to both the said points, it was resolved respecting the first that the Council of War be earnestly recommended to adjudicate on the death of the said Hamilton, in order that all inconveniences and misunderstandings among the troops of the Scottish nation may soon be removed.

Regarding the second point, the States agreed that if, at the muster of the company of the said Baron of Buccleuch, there be found twenty or thirty qualified soldiers beyond the authorised number on active service in the same company, that these shall be passed in the muster and paid.

Claims of Sir William Balfour.

(April 15, 1605.)

Diplomatic Correspondence, 1603-1608.

Messieurs,—Quand nos subiectz nous prient de choses justes il appartient à notre honneur de tenir la main à leur satisfaction. C'est pourquoy à l'instance de ce gentilhom̃e Sire Guillaume Balfour Chevalier, nr̃e serviteur domestique filz du feu colonnel Balfour, mort en vr̃e service, Nous réiterons la requeste que quelqu'an passé vous avions faicte en sa faveur, a fin que luy faire payer quarante et deux mille florins, desquels vous estez redevables à son dict père, dont le droict et tiltre luy appartient. Mais ces premières lettres apportèrent si peu de fruict que force luy est vous importuner de rechef, et à nous le seconder de nr̃e faveur, tant pour le respect que nous avons au gentilhom̃e, com̃e pour la raison qu'a la chose en soy, ayant esté lesdictes lettres acquises au colounel défunct par ses longs et

signalés services, et en fin par sa mort, laquelle vous avez raison de rémémorer et recognoistre envers son héritier. Ce que nous espérons que vous ferez, voyant qu'avons et l'affaire à cœur et le gentilhome en estime, tant pour nous donner contentement en sa satisfaction cõme pour luy oster l'occasion de penser à d'aultres moyens. Escript à ñre maison de Grenewich, le quinsiesme jour d'Avril, l'an de ñre regne de la grande Bretaigne, France et Irlande le troisiesme.

JAQUES R.

MESSEIGNEURS, MESSEIGNEURS LES ESTATZ GNAULX DES PROVINCES UNIES,—Rémonstre en toute révérence et humilité le Sieur Guillaume de Balfour, Chevalier etc., filz ayné de feu Collounel Henry Balfour, Qu'il désirant ensuivre les traces de son feu Seig^{r} et père, lequel a laissé sa vie en la défence de vr̃e juste cause et guerre, il a passé quelque huict mois accepté une compagnie au régiment du Baron de Backlouch sous espérance de meilleur advancement à la première occasion, Or, comme il lui conviendra quiter des tres belles conditions qu'il a près de sa M^{té} son maistre, pour vacquer au présent service. Supplie très humblement qu'il plaise à voz Seigneuries le récompenser par le paiement de certaines obligations qu'il a pour le deu du service de son Seig^{r} et père comme app^{t} par les copies icy joinctes veu qu'il est héritier et considère le quiter de la debte et lr̃es de faveur de sa S^{te} Ma^{té} escrite à cest effect à voz S^{ies}, Ensemble son bon zelle et affection vers l'advancement de vr̃e cause, et signamment qu'il passe soubs silence des aultres obligations de ceulx de Bruges et pays de Francq, d'aultant qu'elles sont à leur charges en particulier.

COPIE I.

Nous prélatz, nobles et députés des villes, représentants les estats gñaulx des pays bas, présentement assemblés en la ville d'Anvers à tous ceulx qui ces présentes verront, salut. Comme par descompte faict et arresté par le commissaire Charles Longin, avecq le Sieur Christoffer Edmiston, cap^{ne} d'une compaignie de gens de pied soubz le Régiment du Coronel

Balfour, soit trouvé que au cap^ne^ soit défalqué au descompt à ñre prouffict la somme de deux mille livres, de quarante gros monnaye de flandres la livre, à cause d'armes et munitions livrés au Régiment par Guill. Lindsay. Scavoir faisons que pour asseurer le S^r^ Guill. Lindsay de son deu et l'animer à continuer semblables services, Avons promis et asseuré, promectons et asseurons par ceste de payer au d^t^ Guill. Lindsay ou au porteur de cestes lad. somme de deux mille livres, dicte monnoye, endans six mois prochains de trois mois en trois mois par esgalle portion à commencher avoir cours doiz (dès?) le premier de ce p̄nt mois de Mars xv^c^ soixante dix nef et de là enavant, jusques à la parpaie de lad. somme, et ce par les mains de ñre Tresorier des guerres Thierry van der Beken, présent ou aultre advenir. Obligeans à cest effect nous et chacun de nouz, nos personnes et biens quelzconques meubles et immeubles, p̄ns et advenir, les soubmectons à la coerction de tous et quelzconques juges, tant ecclésiastiques que séculiers, avecq rénunciation de touttes exceptions et prévilèges, signamment celle dictant que généralle n'est d'aulcune valeur si l'espécialle ne prècede; le tout sans aulcune fraulde ou malenziez. Moyennant que la présente soit enregistrée et vérifieé en ñre chambre des aides. En tesmoignage de vérité avons faict cacheter cestes du cachet accoustumé et faict signer par un de noz secrétaires.

Par ordonnance expresse desd^t^ S^rs^ Estats.

HOUFFLIN.

Faict à Anvers le xxiii^e^ jour de mars xv^c^ soixante dix neuf.

COPIE II.

Nous Prelats Nobles et Députez etc. . . . Comme par descompte faict et arresté par le commissaire des moustres Charles Longin avec les capitaines du Régiment du Colonnel Balfour soit trouvé que aud. capitaines soit défalcqué aud. descompte à ñre proffict la somme de onze mil trois cent trente quatre livres, de quarante groz monnoye de flandres la livre, à cause d'armes et munitions livres aud. Régiment par led. S^r^ Balfour, Scavoir faisons, que pour asseurer led. S^r^ Colonnel

Balfour de son d. deu et l'animer à continuer sembles services, Avons promis et asseuré, promectons et asseurons par cestes de payer aud. S^r^ Balfour ou au porteur de cestes, lad. somme de onse mil trois cens trente quatre livres dicte monnoye, endeans an et demy prochain, et trois termes par esgalle portion, à commencher avoir cours dois le premier de ce mois de Mars et de là en avant jusques a la parpaye de lad. somme, et ce par les mains de ñre Trésorier de guerres Thierry van der Beken présent ou aultre advenir, etc., etc. HOUFFLIN.

Faict en lad. ville d'Anvers le xxiii^e^ de Mars xv^c^ soixante dix nef, etc.

COPIE III.

Nous Prélatz, nobles et députés etc. Comme par descompte faict et arresté par le commissaire Charles Longin, avec le S^r^ Balfour, coronnel d'ung Regiment de gens de pied Escossois et pour le restant du traictement de sa personne de sa compaignie coronnelle, soit trouvé qu'aultre les prests, rabas et payemens qu'aud. S^r^ Coronnel avons faict depuis lu xviii^e^ de Novembre xv^c^ lxxvii, jour de l'entrée de son service, jusques le dernier du mois de fébvrier dernier passé jour dud. descompte luy serions demeurez redebuables la somme de dix huict mille deux cens x^cl^ £ xv s, de quarante gros monnaye de flandres la livre. Scavoir faisons que pour donner aud. S^r^ Coronnel tout contentement possible endroict le payement de lad. somme et affin de l'animer de tant plus de continuer vertueusement en ñre service, Avons promis et asseuré, promectons et asseurons par cestes, payer aud. S^r^ Coronnel Balfour, ou au porteur de cestes lad. somme de xviii^m^ ii^c^ iiii^xx^xi £xv s dicte monnaye, endeans an et demy prochain venant etc., etc. HOUFFLIN.

November 22.—On information received that in Scotland two regiments of servants[1] are being raised for the enemy, it is resolved that this be made known to the Admiral of the fleet before Dunkirk ; charging him to keep a look out for them and in case he should capture any English or Scots, who are

[1] The word Knechten=*servants* may be short for Lanzknechts=*lancers*, or it may just mean serving-men.

being conveyed to the enemy, to see that they are thrown overboard.

1606, *January* 3.—At the request of Colonel Edmond, it was agreed that a Commissary of musters [or muster master] be sent to Rotterdam to inspect the new Scots arrived there, brought over by Lieutenant William Martin, and make them delay for some days, to see if in the interim the forty Scots whom he still expects arrive; so that, thereafter, having heard the report of the said Commissary, it may after be resolved whether one company shall be made up out of them or not.

1606, *January* 6.—Resolved to write to the Commissioners of the Councils of Holland, that seeing the States have resolved to keep the said Scots in their service, their lordships shall be pleased to arrange with the Magistracy of Rotterdam to accommodate and put them up in their city for a certain short time. That the States have issued an order by which a loan is granted them for fourteen days, and that further orders will immediately be issued that the same be continued; so that on that account they need furnish no more victuals to the said soldiers. It was further resolved that Lieutenant Martin, who brought the said Scots over from Scotland, if he should succeed in forming a company of new Scots, fresh from Scotland, within a month or six weeks, capable and qualified soldiers, to the number of 150 heads, will have a commission over them granted to him; otherwise the foresaid soldiers shall be reduced, that, in the interim, order shall be taken that the same be supported by a loan, that is to say with a dollar each soldier (officers included).

February 27.—It was found desirable to charge the first [muster] commissary to betake himself to Rotterdam, and review the company of Scots arrived there from Calais, raised in Scotland, for the service of the enemy, and see whether the soldiers are suitable for the service of the Land, and provide them with three days' provisions.

April 28.—On the request of John Balfour, brother of Baron Balfour of Burley, praying to be allowed to form a company of Scottish infantry for the service of the Land, it was resolved that, a considerable number of recruits being still expected from Scotland, the request of the petitioner in the meantime lie over.

Captain Erskine's Company.

The Magistracy of Zwolle to the Council of State.
(May 21, 1606.)

Letters and Requests to the Council of State, 1606-1607.

My Lords,—We cannot withhold from you how having, by order of his Excellency, last autumn received the cavalry company of Captain Arskin, we could at first supply them only very badly with lodgings, they being people of a foreign nation, and also in appearance completely impoverished and sickly. Besides that, we were already provided with other companies, both mounted and on foot, hence all hesitated to lodge the said cavalry. However, by persuasion and encouragement, we at length prevailed on our burgesses to receive them. Now it so happened that the said captain left this place shortly after his arrival, and owing to indisposition or other hindrances has not yet returned. On account of which said cavalry, during the time they have been here in garrison, have received very little money, and therefore would have had no means of support for themselves and their horses, had not the burghers with whom they lodged commiserated them and assisted them with victuals, oats, hay, and other necessaries, in the full expectation that from time to time the captain would come with pay or send the money.

While upwards of ten to twelve hundred thalers have in this way now been spent on the cavalry, and the burghers are expecting that these troops may soon receive orders to march to the field, we have had earnest representations and entreaties from said burghers to aid them in obtaining payment for their outlays, otherwise they expressly declare that when the orders arrive, and the troopers proceed to remove their horses from the stalls, they intend to retain them in lieu of payment; therefore we cannot refrain from, in the most friendly manner, making request to your lordships that the money for the pay of said company, to be drawn by the said captain, be withheld for behoof of our burghers. Otherwise it will be impossible to prevent the said burghers from retaining the horses, as security, till they receive payment; because they are, for the most part, people with very limited means, to whom any loss is a serious matter. And though in this matter we trust

entirely to your lordships, we desire, nevertheless, that you may be pleased to send in return to us by the bearer of this, our express messenger, a small rescript.—Herewith, etc., your lordships good friends,

THE BURGOMASTERS, ALDERMEN, AND COUNCIL OF THE TOWN OF ZWOLLE.

Resolutions of States-General, 1606.

September 12.—Received a letter, of date 7 September, from his Excellency, wherein his Excellency requests that the States would be graciously pleased to have Lieutenant-Colonel William Brogge in favourable recommendation, before any other, for the colonelcy of the regiment of the late Edmond. After consultation, the reply was ordered to be sent, that so far as his Excellency considers it proper to grant the regiment to the foresaid Lieutenant-Colonel Brogge, in which the same has served as lieutenant, the States agree thereto, provided no other officers be appointed over the regiment, so long as it is doubtful whether, after the month of September, the burdens of war will be so heavy.

1607. *January* 27.—In regard to his long and faithful services, Colonel Brogh is granted a salary of four hundred guilders a month, as Colonel Edmond likewise formerly had.

February 23.—At the request of Captain Henry Bruce, praying for full payment and recompense for his past services, it was determined and declared that the States-General, considering their situation of affairs, have treated the petitioner as favourably as anybody else, of whatever nation, in the service of the Land, that he will therefore, for a change, have to content himself for the present.

March 19.—Two petitions were read from the widow of Andrew Macrevaels, in life cadet in the company of Captain James Blair, and from the widow of Captain Robert Barkly, also cadet of the said company, praying respectively for payment, the one of one hundred, the other of eighty guilders, for services rendered to the Land by their said late husbands, under the said Captain Blair, but an understanding was come to that, on account of their being likely to form a precedent, these payments cannot be entertained.

April 11.—On a request of the relict and orphans of

Captain Robert Barkly, Scotsman, it was ordered to place the same in the hands of the Clerk of the Treasury, to discover how long petitioner's husband had served, and what balance is due to him. Item. What has been paid to the same, or to the petitioner, by the Receiver-General, or by the Receiver of Holland, and, otherwise, how widows in like circumstances have been treated?

Prince Maurice to the Council of State.

Letters and Requests sent to Council of State.

NOBLE, HONOURABLE, VERY WISE AND DISCREET, OUR SPECIALLY GOOD FRIENDS,—MY LORDS,—Captain Francis Henderson has complained to us, that you object to permit the arrears of his pay, to which he is entitled, to be sent after him, which are due to him as having served as sergeant-major in the regiment of Colonel Buccleuch, during a period referred to in the accompanying remonstrance; as to which he beseeches us to speak a word in his favour to your lordships, in order that he may have it granted him. And because we well know that he has filled the said office from June 1604 till now; though Captain Halket filled the same post about four months during his absence, and there is now Captain Forbes, who replaced him. Therefore in all friendship we request your Honours, by these presents, to issue an order that he be paid for his past services.—Your lordships' obedient friend,

(S^{d}) MAURICE DE NASSAU.

The Hague, the last day of March 1607.

To the Council of State.

MY LORDS,—Thomas Marchbank, ensign in the company of the late Commander Edmonds, and afterwards of Colonel Brough, has informed us, and shown by petition, in the name of George Ramsay, lieutenant of the same company, and in his own name, that although they had served long years in the said company, and had been garrisoned with them on several occasions in our City, and had held their soldiers in such good order, discipline, and quietness, that they had not only been thanked by their late commander and the soldiers themselves, but even by the whole community here. That in spite of all

this, it pleased their present colonel and captain, Brough, to shift them from their respective posts without, be it noted, having any reason for doing so, and in revenge at the soldiers having demanded their arrears from the widow Edmonds, deeming that they were the instigators, though that had not been shown, and the charge had been withdrawn. And since, as they said, we were acquainted with their good conduct while garrisoned in Utrecht; and further with their faithful services, which should be taken into consideration, in the battle of Flanders, the sieges of Ostend, Rynberck, and elsewhere, they therefore besought us most humbly to grant them a declaration or prescript to lay before your lordships, regarding their conduct and behaviour in Utrecht, in order that they may thereby promote their interests with you, in complaining of the matter aforesaid. That we could not refuse them; and we hereby declare, that the said company remained several years consecutively in garrison within our town; that the foresaid officers kept the company in such good discipline, and the soldiers conducted themselves so modestly and politely in their intercourse with the burgers, that we and the general community derived much pleasure from their conduct, which is the reason why we address your lordships. Praying Almighty God to have you in His holy keeping, Your honours' obedient friends,

SHERIFF, BURGOMASTER, AND ALDERMEN
OF THE TOWN OF UTRECHT.

Written at Utrecht, the 25 April 1607.

Annexa

JAMES R.

TRUSTY AND WELBELOVED, WEE GREET YOU WELL. A subiect of owers, called George Ramsey, Lieutenaunt to Collonell Edmonds, is now a suiteur to the States Gen[l] to be releived w[th] some pension or other advancement in regard of his long services and infirmities contracted in their service. And hath had reason to alleage unto them for his suite having spent many yeares in their service; had two brothers slayne there, and lastly weakness happened to himself, wherew[th] though we doubt not but they wil be moved to have consideracon of him,

yet because he is one of whome we have heard well and doe desire to have him releived, we are pleased that you shall use ouer recomendacon of him to them, and move them to it, as a matter much desired by us, and w^ch^ we will take in kind part at their handes, and require you to urge them to it, w^th^ as much earnestnes as reasonably you may.

Given under ouer Signet at our Mannour of Hatfeild, the five and Twentith day of July, in the third yere of ouer raigne of great Brytaine, ffraunce, and Irelande.

[*Addressed*]

To our trusty and welbeloved Raphe Wynwood, esquire, our Agent resydent with the States of the unyted provinces of the Lowe Countries.

Of the xiii^th^ of August.

To the Council of State.

My Lords, — Your missive of the 24 April last was handed to me on the last day of the following month, and from it I am led to understand that your Honours' opinion and intention, in conformity with the note of his Excellency, appended to the request of William Stuart, Ensign, is to the effect, that I should receive him again into my company, and permit him to enjoy the full effect of said note, unless I could allege some strong reasons to the contrary. Will it please your Honours, therefore, to accept these as reasons to be taken into consideration that the deceased, killed by the said remonstrant, is my cousin-german, and a near blood relative; obviously therefore it would be impossible for me to endure to have the remonstrant going about before my eyes, and more difficult still to have him serving in my company without loss of respect, and his being in it would give rise to divers serious inconveniences, which, owing to natural affection for a blood relative, might supply material for more and greater grievance to the other than what has been referred to. Therefore, I hope your lordships, duly weighing what has been said, will be pleased to take such action as may be most advisable for securing quiet, peace, and tranquillity to both

parties. Moreover, may it please you to order the said ensign to keep himself anywhere else out of my sight.

Herewith I pray the Almighty to have your lordships under the shield and protection of His grace, to whom also I very humbly commend myself. Your honours' most obedient servant,

(Signed) DAVID RAMSAY.

From Bergen on the Zoom, the first May a° 1607.

Complaint from the Town of Heusden.

Letters and Requests to the Council of State.

Heusden, 20 *May* 1607.—Your lordships must already be well acquainted, from the correspondence of our Lord Governor, my noble Lord of Hierez, with the miserable condition of this town, occasioned mostly by the six English and Scottish Companies, who have several times been in garrison within the town, and are still here at present, besides two other Netherland companies, and chiefly by the English company of Captain Konnock, wherein the greatest disorder is found. The common soldiers complaining bitterly, because of their miserable rations and bad payment, and that to such a degree, that had not the soldiers at our earnest entreaty been provided with a weekly loan, by treasurer Bruynincx, we should to-day be in fear of a new species of mutiny. Therefore, along with our Lord Governor aforesaid, we pray that your lordships may so arrange matters, that in future all such disorders be provided against and prevented; and that you may be pleased to intercede with his Excellency, in order that some companies of the said foreign nations, and in particular that of Konnock, which has been the longest in garrison here, may be changed, a measure which will not only contribute to the security of this frontier place, but confirm our town and its inhabitants in greater loyalty. Therefore we conclude this with humble respects to your lordships, praying the Amighty to spare the same, etc.

At Heusden, this 30th May 1607. At order of the bailiff, the burgomasters, and rulers of the town of Heusden,

VAN HAERSVELT.

Annexa to the preceding letter.

My Lords,—To-day certain soldiers of the company of Captain Konnock proceeded to plunder several houses of certain bakers and provision merchants of the bread and victuals exposed in their shops, doing this, as I am informed, through want of money; and the citizens, because of this, are in perplexity and highly dissatisfied, and truly not without cause, since it might easily happen, particularly with the foreigners, that, although those in the other companies are not in such a state of destitution, they might be seduced into taking part in a factious rising of the sort, through hope of disorder and pillage. I pray that it may please your lordships to restore matters to due order with all diligence. I have written to his Ex^{y} about changing the garrison. Eight Companies are here, six of which are English and Scottish. I hope his Ex^{y} will send two or three Netherland companies here, and remove again out to the country some of the strangers, particularly the company of Captain Konnock, which from the first has continually been in bad order—more so than proper officers ought to tolerate, as the whole city can testify.

Meantime I shall continue to do my duty in everything, as God knows; to whom I pray that He may maintain your lordships in a long, prosperous, and blessed government.

At Heusden this 30th May 1607, Y. H. M. humble and faithful servant, Maximilian de Hormes.

Resolutions of States-General.

July 21.—Alexander Stuart, cuirassier in the company of cavalry of the late Colonel Edmond, was continued in his payment of fifty guilders a month, being what he had under the said colonel, and the company of the Count of de Broucke.

September 4.—On the request of Colonel Brogh, he having received into his company 37 soldiers from the disbanded company of Captain Cranston, and 18 soldiers of Captain Robbert, also out of said disbanded company, an understanding was come to that the said soldiers shall be accounted as the petitioner's from the date when it shall be proved he received them.

December 13.—On the request of Alexander Stuart, it was agreed that, inasmuch as the petitioner actually went into ser-

vice under Cavalry Captain Areskeyn, the pay of fifty guilders a month of forty-two days, allowed him by the Council of State, shall be paid him.

December 15.—To the surviving son of the late Captain Barkly, who fell in the battle of Flanders, was granted a place in any similar company, such as the said captain's surviving widow, married to Bartholomew de Donder, may choose; and to the said widow, out of commiseration, a grant of fifty guilders in all.

1608, *January* 19.—Jaques Douglas, sometime Ensign in the company of Captain Cathcart, in consideration of certain things, was granted eighteen guilders, provided that he do not pester the States further.

March 18.—The request of Colonel Stuart was read, and it was resolved, and on the said request decided, that since the petitioner by particular favour, on the recommendation of the Earl of Orkney, got a commission to bring from Scotland, for the service of the Land, a company of infantry, of one hundred and forty men, the States-General, in order to show still greater favour to the petitioner, permit the same, and consent by these presents, to the said company being again transported out of these Lands to Sweden, in the king's service and by his request.

June 30.—On the request of Jacques Bruce, Scotsman, late ensign of Captain Sinclair, praying for the post of officer of artillery, in the place of Peter Stuart, also a Scotsman, said request is refused.

July 1.—It was agreed that the Receiver pay the monthly payments due to the late Peter Stuart, Scotsman, officer of artillery, in which Stuart died, in order to cover therewith the expenses of his funeral.[1]

Proposals of Captain Bruce.

July 24.—The Advocate of Holland has forwarded certain information, received by him from Calais, from the agent Digart, touching a certain plan, which one of the Scots captains named Bruce offers to carry out, and which would in the highest degree be of advantage to the Land, on condition

[1] See pp. 187 and 188.

that he be recompensed, namely, either as he may engage, or on a pay of three hundred guilders a month, or that he should be given command of one-half of the Scottish regiment of the Baron of Buccleuch. Otherwise he shall withhold the said information and depart with it to Italy.

After consultation, an understanding was come to that it be ascertained from his Ex^y^ whether he has any particular advice or explanation regarding the above mentioned communication, and if not, no attention is to be paid to it.

July 25.—In a report of the Advocate of Holland, heard of his Exc^y's^ approval of the plan which Captain Herman Bruce offers to carry out, on terms proposed by him, as to certain matters, touching in the highest degree the security of the government of the Land.

It was thought good to write to the Agents Aerssen and Digart to test the foresaid captain, and try to draw out of him what the service really is that he offers to do, and to that end to assure the same that in so far as the matters which he offers to carry out are, as he says, important to the government of the Land, he is to be given to understand that in regard to them the States shall recognise his services according to their usual discretion and the demands of the service which he may therein do to the Land.

*Sept^tr^* 25. — A letter was read from Captain Bruce, of 7 September, enclosing certain advices, regarding which he has given more particular information, for the service of the Land, to the Agent Aerssen, in the full confidence that he will obtain from the States due recognition for this.

After deliberation, it was resolved and agreed to write to the said Agent Aerssen that they have seen the explanation which the said captain has made to him; for which, on their part, he is to thank the same, and assure him that their Highnesses, and his Ex^y^ have been perfectly informed about the said design for more than fifteen years; and with such certainty, that his Ex^y^. has always had it in view, as among other things was apparent when the Admiral of Arragon entered the territory of Cleves, and passed the Rhine with a powerful army, and made an attempt on the fortifications of Gravenweert, and at last, the enemy having besieged the city of Groll, at the time

when his Ex^y^, to prevent the design on Gravenweert and their quarters, allowed a flying column to stay in that locality. Afterwards he led there a large fleet, with pontoons and ships, against the advance of the enemy. Nevertheless the States agree to satisfy the said Captain Bruce with two or three hundred crowns, or at the utmost with a thousand guilders in all, and he, Aerssen, is to furnish him with said sum ; or make him the offer, that should he desire to come here to await his fortune, he shall be recommended as occasion presents itself.

December 1.—The Messrs. van Loenen, Oldenbarneveld, and van der Aa are commissioned to converse more particularly, and hear from Captain Bruce, what more he has to communcate in the service of the Lands than what he has done.

December 10.—The Messrs. v. Loenen, Oldenbarneveld, and van der Aa, gave in a report of their conference with Captain Bruce, arrived from France, as to certain communications of his made in the service of the Land. And having deliberated thereon, it was agreed, that an order for five hundred guilders in all be despatched to the said Captain Bruce for his maintenance; that meanwhile it shall be decided later about his departure, and the recognition of any good services performed by him to the Land, and known to the States.

January 3, 1609.—The request of Henry Bruce was read, but in the meantime a decision was postponed.

June 10.—There was granted to Henry Bruce, formerly captain, for all his claims of services, and beyond the sum accorded him before, five hundred guilders, provided there be deducted from it the sum that the agent Aerssen credited him with in France.

July 17.—To Captain Henry Bruce, on account of certain good considerations, and for all his claims on the Land, beyond the five hundred guilders last accorded him, is still added three hundred guilders. And it is agreed to despatch him an order for both, together amounting to eight hundred guilders, it being understood that the first five hundred guilders granted the petitioner, for some special services, are not included therein.

August 10.—To Captain Henry Bruce were granted letters of recommendation to the Margrave of Ansbach, containing in

substance: Seeing the petitioner has served very long and faithfully in these Lands, and that he is a man who could be of service to His Serene Highness, the States do therefore recommend His Serene Highness that he be pleased, in so far as he may find it prudent to have in his service people of the Scottish nation, to employ the same.

Recommendation by the Burgomasters and Aldermen of the City of Breda.

My Lords,—We humbly recommend ourselves to your good graces. Jacques Lawson, Scotsman, burgher of this town, has begged us, in a written request here enclosed, to grant him letters favourably recommending him to your lordships for the post of cannoneer of this city. Which request we have the more willingly had written on his behalf as we are aware that the said Jacques has served the Land for a long time well and faithfully, and that afterwards, as a burgher of this city, he conducted himself as a reputable and respectable man, and we never heard any other report of him; and in addition, Thomas Wymerbeeck, commander of the cannoneers, has certified, by mark of hand, that Jacques Lawson would be found highly qualified for said post. We therefore pray your lordships that this our recommendation be serviceable to the said Lawson. Wherewith concluding, we shall ever pray, etc. —Your lordships obedient,

Burgomasters and Aldermen of the City Breda.

This 26 July 1608.

The Company of Captain Mackenzie at Aardenburg.

Letters and Requests to the Council State.

My Lords,—We have received your lordships' missive, together with the enclosed request from the clerk Johan Bogaert. From which we learn that the substance of his complaint to you refers to a certain building, on which, he asserts, he has expended something by way of repairs. Let it suffice for an answer, that at the capture of the town the said house was found to be an old building, and Captain Elderen, then major here, put a certain smith into it, and after he left, the said clerk affirms that he made certain repairs

on it. Then the company of Captain Mackingi [?] arrived as a garrison, and difficulty was found in securing accommodation, and the lieutenant of the said company and some of his soldiers were quartered in the building, and still lodge there. He went accordingly on the understanding that the house being abandoned, and no proprietor living in it, it was quite at the service of the Land. Further, we submit these repairs or claims to the discretion of your lordships, etc.—Your mighty Honours' obedient servant,

FRANS HASEMAN.

At Aerdenburch, the 1 September 1608.

Resolutions of States-General.

1608, *September* 19.—There was read the request of Captain William Balfour,[1] recommended by the King of Great Britain, both by His Majesty's letters and orally by the ambassadors who had been in England. And it was agreed that the States-General, being at present so occupied with matters of extreme importance in regard to the Land, their High Mightinesses cannot attend to the request of the petitioner; but that this shall be done at a more convenient opportunity, and be then disposed of as may be found proper.

The Magistracy of Zwolle re *Capt. Erskine's Cavalry Company.*

Letters and Requests to the Council of State.

1608, *Dec*^{r} 3.—MY LORDS,—Since the decease of Captain Arch. Arskin, it has been found that he owed to our burghers here, and to others, a considerable sum of money. Moreover, some members of the said captain's family took upon them to remove by unlawful methods from this place, and retain the horses and other goods left by the captain. We have ordered the same to be apprehended, and did all in our power to cause the horses and other goods to be brought back, and stored beside the rest, to be kept for the benefit of the deceased's heir, or otherwise for the benefit of the creditors, to whom he is deeply indebted. And seeing that the pay of the troopers, due to them from said captain, is almost two months in arrear, and in supporting themselves they have naturally run into debt with our burghers, who have presented a petition, wherein they beg us to use our influence with your lordships,

[1] See p. 69, note 3.

in order that they may obtain payment; also particularly requesting that the money be forwarded to us, in order that payment may be made in presence of some of our number, and that a due liquidation be effected between them and our burghers, according to the wants of each one as occasion serves. Seeing then that your lordships have sent the Commissary Doubblet here, to muster the company in presence of our deputies, and to account with each of the troopers as to his arrears, and make liquidation, we cannot refrain from writing to you, and sending a friendly request, that an arrangement be made by your lordships, by which those who pay this money to the company, may be particularly charged to make such payments in presence of our deputies. And that as regards the captain's pay, and the horses of his own he had in the company, an account be left and delivered into our hands, and kept beside the other goods, in the interest of the heirs or creditors.—Your lordships' good friends,

THE BURGOMASTERS, ALDERMEN, AND COUNCIL OF THE TOWN ZWOLLE.

Dated at Zwolle, the 3rd December 1608.

Annexa to the request sent by the Magistrates of Zwolle. (Presented 28 Nov. 1608.)

TO THE WORSHIPFUL BURGOMASTERS, ALDERMEN AND COUNCIL OF THE CITY OF ZWOLLE.—In all submission, this is presented by the common troopers of the deceased Captain Arch. Arreskyne in garrison here in the city; who on their part were engaged on monthly wage or pay, and now on Thursday next, the first December of this year 1608, they will be two months in arrear, and in addition all previous reckonings are in arrear. Against these arrears, the remonstrants owe large sums of money to the burghers, who can in no way be satisfied, till payment be made to them of their arrears. Accordingly the remonstrants most humbly and submissively entreat and request that it may please you graciously to further the promotion of their request to their Highnesses the States, that payment may be made of their arrears, so that your burghers may afterwards be paid in full

and satisfied, as they ought to be. And this with the further request, that the money to be paid be delivered to none, except to your worships alone, so that it be honestly handled, and nobody, whether burgher or soldier, be defrauded, or have deductions made from his account.

[Here follow forty-two signatures (in many cases difficult to decipher).]

Jck Wil Wrayt.
Jan Willemsen van Zwolle.
Thomas Nicholles.
Saunder van Haltringe.
Archblde Lonide.
Edward Lawraince, Trumelter.
John Greene, Trumpeter.
A. T. Grae.
James Fozzeringam. [?]
James flenne.
Gel Mitsiel.
Jan Nickles.
Thomas Oxanfired.
Thamas Kilpatrick.
Mal. M. R. Kilpatrick.
Andris A. H. Call.
James Cox.
[Illegible name here.]
Andreis Kinnarie.
Bartollemeus von Guetelberg, trumpeter.
Ro^{t} Glen.
Patrick Innes.
Michell Gigel, Krieger.
Tomas Bigge.
Gorge Davidsone.
Crystoffel × Citon merck.
George × Glind merck.
David × Lang merck.
Tomas Patton.
Andrew Rouke.
Tomas Haldan.
Raff Ffensty.
Gabriel Colbraith.
Henri Bonare.
Andrea Stobhil.
David Fflint.
Alexander Pringill.
Patrick Bruce.
Sam × Semmes merck.
All. Bartholomew Cykis Grinda.
Hendrik × Stockdyck merck.
Raeff × Ensleip merck.[1]

Complaint of the Governor of Heusden.

My Lords,—I am much astonished that your lordships charged the Lieutenant-Provost of the State to deliver your missive to the lieutenant of Captain Hamilton here, wherethrough he passed secretly out of the town before the Commissary Van den Broucke left this, and thus said lieutenant

[1] See also p. 275.

disobeyed my orders and broke his parole. For (as I wrote you before from here), I gave him his lodgings for a prison, and said lieutenant promised to regard them as such.--Herewith, etc., your honours' humble servant,

MAXIMILIAN DE HORNES.

In Huesden, the 25th January 1609.

Resolutions of States-General.

1609, *January* 8.—In reference to the request of John Blaire, formerly ensign, and John Stuart, sergeant of the disbanded company of Captain Archibald Arskin, it was decided to place the same in the hands of the Council of State, in order to treat the petitioners according to the general resolution passed in regard to such matters.

DIVISION II

THE TIME OF THE TWELVE YEARS' TRUCE

1609-1621

INTRODUCTORY

DURING the period of the Twelve Years' Truce, the Scottish troops in the service of the Netherlands consisted of the two infantry regiments, commanded respectively by Sir William Brog and by Lord Buccleuch, who was succeeded in 1612 by Sir Robert Henderson, and apparently of two or three companies of cavalry. One was the company commanded by the veteran cavalry captain Alexander Wishart, who seems to have been succeeded by Sir William Balfour, with whom he was in negotiation in 1615, and with whom he had a *fracas* at Leith in 1616. The other was that commanded at one time by Thomas Erskine and at another by Robert Irvine, and was probably the company formerly commanded by Sir William Edmond and subsequently by his son. In 1618 Sir William Brog described his regiment as 'the first and oldest regiment of foreign nationality in these Netherlands,' and it undoubtedly represented the Scottish companies which first came over to the aid of William the Silent. Buccleuch's regiment had arrived in the latter part of 1603.[1] But although the country was not at war, and although the documents present frequent

[1] The appearance of officers' names in the 'States of War' does not always correspond with the date of entry of their commissions, and of their being regarded as having taken the oath. The appointment seems frequently, even when the original appointment is not noted as made by the commander-in-chief to supply death vacancies in the field, to have preceded by some time the formal commission and oath, and in many cases to have been originally made by the provincial authorities. See case of George Coutts, July 19th, 1615, p. 280.

The Resolutions of Holland contain the following, dated November 10th, 1618: 'H. Ex^{y} appearing in the assembly mentions the custom heretofore always adhered to in filling vacancies in the Captaincies of the Comp^{ies} on Reparti-tion Holland; and many Comp^{ies}, as well foreign as native, being now vacant, H. Ex^{y} desires to be told what the intentions are. Res.: H. Ex^{y} shall continue to have the right to fill the vacancies in foreign comp^{ies} and all those occurring in the field, in home comp^{ies} after consulting the col. and commanding officers of the respective Reg^{ts}.'

illustrations that the soldiers of certain companies were living in the 'piping times of peace,' there were some opportunities of special service, and with the active Spinola on their frontiers, and their own suspicions of Spanish faith, the States had to keep their house as a strong man armed. Indeed, when the first rumblings of the Thirty Years' War were felt in close proximity to their eastern fortresses, Prince Maurice took the field in a campaign of guarded reserve, in which Spinola and he mutually passed each other by on the other side, while practically aiding antagonists who were their respective allies.

In 1610, when the succession to the Duchies of Juliers and Cleves was contested between Leopold of Austria on the one side and the Elector of Brandenburgh and the Elector Palatine on the other, an auxiliary force of British troops was sent to the aid of the Protestant claimants. Two English and one Scots regiment were made up from the British troops serving in Holland, and in the case of the Scots, nine companies were taken from the two regiments, Sir Robert Henderson of Buccleuch's regiment acting as Colonel, Caddell of Brog's regiment as Lieut.-Colonel, and Sir William Balfour as Sergeant-Major. The command of the whole was given to Sir Edward Cecil (Lord Wimbledon),[1] and the force distinguished itself in the siege and reduction of Juliers (Gulick). In a narrative of the siege by an eyewitness,[2] the writer states that on the 15th August

'this day ere night the enemy threw fireworks into General Cecil's Main Batteries, which burnt long and did much harm before the same could be quenched: the enemy maintaining the same with cannon and musket the most part of the night: but Sir Robert Henderson, Colonel of the Scots, had the Guard that night, who shewed great judgment both to quench it and to hinder the enemy from attempting it any more, who shot wild fire and granadoes most part of the night.'

Juliers was surrendered on 1st September. The reputation already gained in the service of the States is well illustrated by

[1] See Dalton's *Life and Times of General Sir Edward Cecil, Viscount Wimbledon*, List of Officers, State Papers, Holland, 1610.

[2] Weymouth's account of the Siege of Gulick, Royal MSS. (Dalton's *Cecil.*)

an anecdote with which Lord Wimbledon commenced his little 'Treatise upon Cavalry.' 'Henry IV. of France, whensoever any of the Princes, Nobilitie, or Gentry desired to kiss his hand, would tell them they should have been much more welcome to him if they had seen the face of the Prince of Orange, meaning the wars by it.'

The instructions given in January 1615 to Sir Dudley Carleton, on his being sent as Ambassador to the Hague, contained a special clause relating to the English and Scottish troops in Dutch pay. 'And because we have of our subjects in the service of the States upon the point of 200 companies we cannot but be sensible of their good, and therefore recommend them to your care and protection to assist them with your countenance in all their lawful causes and pursuits, and by your power to defend them from injuries and wrongful oppression.'[1] The English companies which had hitherto formed the garrisons of the cautionary towns were in 1616 erected into an additional regiment, thus making the British infantry in the Dutch service consist of two Scots and four English regiments.

The Ambassador's correspondence contains several references to the Scots in foreign service. At one time he conveys the apprehensions of the States that the Earl of Argyle is going to take service with the Spaniards;[2] at another Sir Robert Henderson cautions him in regard to a deserted soldier of his company, who has become a 'meddler with Jesuits;[3] and again

---

[1] On July 7th, 1617, Carleton mentions having sent a despatch to His Majesty by Colonel Brogue, and on Feb. 4th, 1617-8 acknowledges having received one from Secretary Lake by Sir William Balfour.

[2] 1618. Nov. 3rd.—Carleton states that S. Horace Vere reported that the States am^rs^ came to him 'to acquaint him that the States were advertised from Brussels, that the Earl of Argyle having there settled himself and his lady in their return from Spa this last summer, seeks the command of a regiment of the king's subjects in the service of the Spaniard, which as it would turn much to their prejudice by debauching with the English and Scots soldiers, who are ever ready upon such new occasions to run to the enemy, they beseech his Majesty not to give any to it.' 'Such would prove like that of the Irish, a nursery of disaffected persons.'

[3] 1619, May 15th, Sir Robert Henderson to Sir D. Carleton.—'Concerning William Gordon who had been of his company, but had left it above two years and took away with him 2000 guilders, he married Straghan, a burgomaster's

the ambassador himself sends a cautious report upon Captain Henry Bruce, who has just returned from the service of the Emperor.[1] That the Scottish troops were a powerful support to the House of Orange in the struggle between Prince Maurice and the Calvinists, and John van Olden Barneveld and the Arminian party is also indicated by an experience of Colonel Henderson's reported by Sir Dudley Carleton on June 18th, 1619.

'At Horn Schonoven and some other towns of Holland, the Arminians in considerable numbers have had these last Sundays past their meetings and preachings with public profession so to continue, though it be with hazard of life and goods: and at Alcmaer on Sunday last, an assembly of them being gathered together in a wood adjoining to the town and Colonel Hynderson (who doth there command over the extraordinary troops sent thither expressly to suppress these tumults) going thither to accompany the states deputies who went to forbid the meeting, was assailed by the people with their knives, not without some danger to himself and the deputies, until a troop of soldiers came up, by whom they were beaten away, but without blood.'

---

daughter, and left his wife miserably, so that it was not to be expected he would come into these parts. That he was a debauched Papist and a meddler with Jesuists.'

[1] 1620. April 15th. Carleton to Secretary Naunton.—'Here is arrived some few days since from Vienna a Scottish man of good place and reputation in the Emperor's wars [Capt. Henry Bruce] who hath presented himself unto me, and desired me to make known on his behalf to his Majesty that he hath voluntarily retired himself with good leave of the Emperor, because he would not bear arms against his Majesty's son-in-law. He hath served the Emperor formerly when he was Duke of Gratz, in his wars against the Venetians when they lay before Sardinia, and was now lately governor of Nidarburg in the confines of Austria and Moravia, whereof the town being taken from him by surprise by the Count de la Torre, though he rendered the castle by composition, it is thought his coming away is not altogether voluntary. He was once in service of this State and well esteemed of, but here he will be no more trusted, for he is a hot Papist, and Parsons, the English Jesuit's books are his chief study. From hence he intends to go directly into Scotland as soon as he can receive certain monies at Amsterdam, which he hath exchanged to a good sum from Vienna, as that which he saith he hath profited in the wars. Now, whether he comes as he pretends out of the zeal of a good subject, or (as is suspected among his fellow-soldiers) upon disgrace, or (as may be doubted of one who changeth his religion in his old days) employed by Jesuits, whose convert I hear he is, I humbly refer to His Majesty's judgment. So it is, that I find him a person of that consideration that deserves his Majesty's care what becomes of him.' (He went direct to England.)

The Twelve Years' Truce, which should have expired on the 9th of April 1621, was by the mediation of the British and French Ambassadors prolonged to the 3rd of August, and it was thought that if the Arch-Duke Albert had lived longer, it would have been converted into a permanent peace. He died on July 13th, and Prince Maurice, now by the death of his elder brother the head of the House of Orange, was anxious for fresh triumphs in the field.

I

STATES OF WAR (1610-1618).

1610

Holland.

Horsemen.	compy	monthly pay
Wisschardt, .	70 men	£472
Infantry.		
Col. Backlouch,	200 ,,	2612
Col. Brogh,	150 ,,	2014
Capn Robert Henderson, .	100 ,,	1417
[Here follow a number of English names.		
	men	monthly
Caddel, .	70	£1059
Oliuver Wodney,	,,	,,
Mackinge, .	,,	,,
Wm Coutis,[1] .	,,	,,

	men	monthly pay
Henry Balfour,	70	£1059
Thomas Arskyn,	,,	,,
Leuinston, .	,,	,,
Francois Henderson, .	,,	,,
Schot, . .	,,	,,
Wilm Douglas,	,,	,,
Wm Balfour,	,,	,,
Wm Hutson, .	,,	,,
George Bodwell,	,,	,,
John Halket, .	,,	,,
Mongo Hamilton,	,,	,,
David Balfour,	,,	,,

Thomas Ewingh, sergeant-major of the Regiment of Brogh, . £30
Andrew Hunterus, clergyman of the Scots,[2] . . £33, s.6. 3d.

Pensions.

The Prince *of Scotland*, £5m yearly, . . . £4cxvi s.13 d.4
The children of Capn *John Nysbeth*, yearly, . . . £200
Widow of Cn *John Balfour*, ... 50
The children of *Capn Waddel*, viz. Archibald, John and Wm. each yearly, ... 200
Mrs. Margaret Stuart, widow of the Agent d'Amman, *Wm Murray of Pickerles*, on the life of John, Agnete, Elizabeth, and Margarete, his children, each ¼ part, ... 400
Elisabeth Crighton, widow of the Cn Dallachy, the half for herself and the other half for John and Catherine Dallachy, each £100, ... 400
Elisabeth Forbes, widow of Capn Willem van Nysbeth, the one half at her death [the other half], to Wm. Arthur, and Margareta Nysbet, each ⅛ part, yearly . 400

[1] Probably a mistake for Allan Coutts.
[2] Rev. Andrew Hunter. See representations by, pp. 245 and 294.

The children of Cap^{n} Prop, Jan and Janneken Prop, each the half, ... £200

Mrs. Anna Kirpatricx, widow of Cap^{n} Strachan, . . 200

The children of C^{n} James Egger, named Niclaes and Margareta, each one half, ... 125

Mrs. Suana^{h} Splithoff, widow of Cap^{n} Kilpatricx, the one half till her death and the other half during the lifetime of her children—Jan, Maria, and Helena Kilpatricx, ... 50

Prudentia Laurens, daughter of the Cavalry Captain Louys Laurent, ... 50

Anna van Dyck, widow of C^{n} Blair, ... 50

Joost Blair, ... 50

Zeeland. Infantry

[After several English names come]

	men	monthly pay
Caps Walter Bruce,	70	£1059
,, George Homes,	,,	,,
,, Mombry,	,,	,,

Pensions

Bart. Balfour,	yearly,	£1000
The widow of Col. Morgan,		600

Utrecht. Infantry

	men	monthly pay
C^{n} Hamilton, .	70	£1059
Setton, . .	,,	,,
W^{m}. Martin,[1] .	,,	,,

Pensions

The widow of James Blaire,		yearly £400
Andrew Renton,	,,	150

1613

Rendered in August

Gelderland. Foot

Donaldson . . .	70 men . .	£1059

Hollandt. Foot

Col. Brogh, .	150 men	£2014	Henry Balfour, .	70 men	£1059
R^{t} Henderson,	150 ,,	2014	Thos. Arskyn, .	,,	,,
Caddel, . .	70 ,,	1059	H. Levingston, .	,,	,,
Geo. Ramsey,[2] .	,,	,,	Francois Henderson,	,,	,,
Mackinge, .	,,	,,	Schot [Robert],	,,	,,
Allane Coutis, .	,,	,,	W^{m} Douglas,	,,	,,

[1] See p. 203.

[2] George Ramsay succeeded Captain Udny on 23rd October 1610, having been recommended as lieutenant in 1607 and 1609 (pp. 207 and 240). He was dead before 14th April 1615, when he was succeeded by John Kininmond. His widow and children were recommended by Breda in 1616 (p. 283). See also request by his widow, 24th May 1632.

W^m Balfour,	70 men	£1059	Mongo Hamilton,	70 men	£1059
W^m Hudson,	,,	,,	Davidt Balfour,	,,	,,
Geo. Bodwel,	,,	,,	D. Lindesay,[1]	,,	,,
Jan Halket,	,,	,,			

Pay

Col. Brogh for his person,	£400	0	0

Wardens and Quartermasters

Thos. Ewing, S^t major of Brogh,	80	0	0
Robert Mesterton q^r m^r of Col. Brogh,	50	0	0

Officers of Justice

Willem Carcadie, Provost Marshal of Brogh,	50	0	0

Ministers

Andreas Hunterus, Minister of the Scots,	33	6	8

Pensions

The son of Cap^n Penthon [Renton],				12	10	0
The children of Cap^n Jan Nysbeth,				16	13	4
Widow cap^n Jan Balfour,	£50			4	3	4
,, ,, W^m Hendrick,	120			10	0	0
Pieter Michiel,	50			4	3	4

Gracious Pensions

Widow Kirpatrick to enable her to keep little son at school for 6 years,	£50

Pensions for settlement of accounts and previous services

The children of cap. Waddel, Archibald, Jan, and Willem 200 each,	£600
Maria Rig, Widow Cap^n Melvil, on the lives of Jacques, Davidt, Janneken, Tanneken and Hester, 80 each,	400
Guilliaume Murray of Pickerles on the lifes of Jan, Elisabeth and Margaretha, his children, each one third,	300
Jan and Catharina Dalachy, children of cap^n Dalachy,	200
Elisabeth Forbes, widow cap^n W^m Nysbeth, etc.,	400
Mistress Anna van Duvenvoorde, widow Col. Cuningham, etc.,	300
The children of cap. Prop, Jan and Janneken,	200
Mistrees Anna Kirpatrick, widow cap. Strachan,	200
The children of Cap. James Egger, Niclaes and Margaretha,	175
Guiliam Sudeman cap^n on his life and on that of Maria van Eyck his wife, or on the longest living,	100
widow L^t Penbrouck,	100

Zealand. Foot

Walter Bruce,	70 men	£1059	Brouwnfielt,	70 men	£1059
George Homes,	,,	,,	Jhon Hamilton,	,,	,,
Moubray,	,,	,,			

[1] David Lindsay had succeeded to the company of Lord Buccleuch, having taken the oath on 6th April 1612. He died before 12th February 1620.

Pay

Col. Robert Henderson, . .	£300
Forbes, S[t] Major, . .	80
Blaire, q[r] m[r], . . .	36
Michiel Henderson Pr. M., .	50
	£466

Pensions

Col. Balfour 1000 yearly, ...	£83 6 8

Utrecht. Foot

Setton, . .	70 men	£1059

Vriesland. Foot

Arthur Forbes, . .	90	1297

Groningen. Foot

Norman Bruce, . .	70	1059

1614

The list of officers (under Guelderland and Holland) is similar, and under Guelderland occurs 'Pension—Juff: Anna van Lieven, wid[w] van Cap[n] Arthur Stuart (yearly), £75.'

1617

Holland. Cavalry

		monthly pay
Robert Ixvin,[1] . . .	70	£2457
W[m] Balfour,[2] . . .	,,	2067

Gelderland. Foot

Donaldson, .	70 men . .	£1059
Moubray, . .	,, . .	,,

Holland. Foot

Col. Brogh,	150 men	£2014	Jacques Sandilants,[5]	70 men	£1059
Col. Henderson,	150	2014	[Mackinge], .	.	
Thos. Edmondt,[3]	70	1059	Allane Coutis,	,,	,,
John Kennimondt,[4]	,,	,,			

[1] Robert Irvine. [2] See p. 69.

[3] Son of Colonel Sir William Edmond (p. 54); received commission January 16th, 1617 in succession to Lieutenant-Colonel Caddel. Succeeded by William Drummond on 11th August 1625, on becoming a captain of cavalry. Report as to his company of cavalry, 1628.

[4] John Kininmond succeeded George Ramsay on 5th April 1615, and died before 2nd December 1630, when he was succeeded by John Bellenden.

[5] Sir James Sandilands, commissoned 16th November 1618, in succession to Captain Mackenzie, sergeant-major in same regiment (Colonel Brog's), 26th October 1627. Lieutenant-colonel, 4th May 1631. Colonel in succession to Sir William Brog, 13th March 1636. Dead before 8th March 1639, when succeeded by Colonel James Erskine. Was succeeded in command of his company by his lieutenant, Thomas Livingstone.

Robert Coutis,[1]	70 men	£1059	W[m] Hudson,	70 men	£1059
Thos. Arskyn,	,,	,,	James Henderson,[4]	,,	,,
H. Levingston,	,,	,,	[Geo. Bodnel],		
Francois Henderson,	,,	,,	Jhon Hacket,	70 men	£1059
Robert Schot,	,,	,,	Mongo Hamilton,	,,	,,
James Lindesey,[2]	,,	,,	David Balfour,	,,	,,
W[m] Orrock,[3]	,,	,,	John Murray,[5]	,,	,,
[W[m] Balfour],			[David Lindesay],		

Pay on Holland

Col. Brogh, for his person,	£400	
Allane Coutes, L[t]-Col.,	100	
Col. Henderson,	300	
Francois Henderson, L[t]-Col.,	100	
Hacquet, s[t] major,	80	
Blaire, q[r] m[r],	50	
Michel Henderson,[6] Provost m.,	50	
	——	£580

Wardens and Quartermasters

W[m] Drommond,[7]			
[Thos. Ewing]s[t] major Reg[t] Brogh,	£80	0	0
Robert Mesterton, q[r] m[r],	50	0	0

[1] Robert Coutts succeeded Sir Henry Balfour, 9th August 1615, and was succeeded by William Drummond, 7th December 1621. Referred to as 'the late Captain Coutts' in 1628.

[2] James Lindsay, commissioned 31st March 1615. Married Isabella Mowbray, divorced wife of Captain R. Scott, in 1627. Succeeded by John Henderson, 22nd September 1629.

[3] William Orrock took oath as captain in succession to Sir William Balfour, November 23rd, 1618. Served at Cleve, 1622. Deceased before 24th October 1631, when succeeded by John Kirkpatrick.

[4] James Henderson took oath on 4th November 1618, in succession to Captain Bothwell. Sergeant-major, 13th February 1633. Lieutenant-colonel, 20th July 1634. Was dead before 7th July 1638. Douglas mentions Sir James, a younger son of James Henderson of Fordell, along with his brother, Sir Robert (p. 60) as 'both colonels in Danish, Swedish, and French wars.' On 6th July 1638 the States-General specially commissioned two representatives to attend the funeral of the late Lieutenant-Colonel Henderson, who had lost his life in the active service of the State.

[5] John Murray took oath on 12th February 1620, in succession to D. Lindsay. Captain Murray died before 12th March 1621.

[6] Michael Henderson.

[7] William Drummond, commissioned as captain in succession to Robert Coutts, 7th December 1621. Sergeant-major, 1617. Killed at Groll, and succeeded by Walter Murray, 29th September 1627. He was a son of Alexander Drummond of Meadop, second son of Alexander Drummond of Carnock, and thus a cousin of Colonel Bartholomew Balfour.—Genealogy of the Drummonds.

Officers of Justice

Willem Carcadie, Provost Marshal, Reg^{t} Brogh, . . £50 0 0

Ministers

Andreas Hunterus, minister, ... 33 6 8

Pensions

[The children of Capn Jan Nysbeth], . . . 200 16 8 4
Janneken, the daughter of Cap^{n} Jan. Nysbett, . 100 8 6 3
Widow, Cap^{n} W^{m} Hendricon, ... 120 10 0 0
Pieter Michiels, ... 50 4 3 4

Gracious Pensions

[Widow Kilpatrick to keep her little boy at school for 2 years more, £50; this expired in Feb. 1618].

Pensions for settlement of accounts and previous services

Cap^{n} W^{m} Balfour, *for his life*, ... £600
Maria Righ, widow Cap^{n} Melvil, on the lifes of Jacques, David Janneken, Tanneken and Hester, each 80, . . . 400
Guillaume Murray of Pickerles, on the lifes of Jan, Elisabeth, [Margrieta] his children, one [third] half, . . . 200
Jan and Catharina Dalachy, children of Cap^{n} Dalachy, deceased, [300] each 100, ... [300] 200
The children of Cap^{n} Wm Nysbeth, deceased: [William], Arthur and Margrieta Nysbeth, [200] each one [third] half, . [200] 133, 6 8
Mistress Anna van Duvenvoorde, widow Col. Cuningam, on the lifes of mistress Magriet van Duvenvoorde, the wife of Cap^{n} of Horse Wisschaert, and Elisabeth Cuningham, . . 300
The children of Cap^{n} Prop, *Jan and Janneken Prop*, one half each, 200
Mistress Anna Kilpatrick, widow Cap^{n} Strachan, *on her life*, . 200
The children of James Egger, Niclaes and Margrieta, each half, 175
Guilliaume Suderman 100 on his life [or on that of Maria von Eyck his wife, or the longest living], . . . 100
Widow, Lieutenant Penbrouck, *on the lives of Thos., Jan, Janneken, Willemke, Henry, and Richard Penbrouck, each one 6th*, .
The children of Cap^{n} Kilpatrick, Jan, Maria, and Helena Kilpatrick, ... 25
Joost Blaire, ... 50

Zeeland. Foot

Walter Bruce, . 70 men . . £1059
Geo. Homes, . ,, . . ,,
Brouwnfielt, . ,, . . ,,

Pensions

Col. Balfour, £1000 yearly *on his life*, . . . £83 6 8

Utrecht. Foot

Marioribankes,[1] . 120 men . . £1655
Sitton, . . ,, . . ,,

[1] Thomas Marjoribanks took oath upon a commission in succession to Captain Hamilton on 16th January 1620. Dead by 4th September 1636.

Groningen and Ommelanden. Foot

George Coutis,[1] .	120 men . .	£1655
Philip Balfour,[2] .	,, . .	,,

Vriesland. Foot

Archibald Bethone,[3]	120 men . .	£1655

[Names within brackets erased in original: those in italics are additions].

1618

Holland

Cavalry.	men	monthly pay
Wisschart, .	70	£2457
Infantry.		
Col. Brogh, .	150	2014
,, Henderson,	,,	,,
[Here come 43 English names.]		
John Kennimont,	70	1059
Mackinge, .	,,	,,
Allane Coutis, .	,,	,,
Robert Coutis, .	,,	,,
Thomas Edmond,	,,	,,
Thomas Arskyn,	,,	,,

	men	monthly pay
Leuingston, .	70	£1059
Franchois Henderson, . .	,,	,,
Robert Schot, .	,,	,,
James Lindesay,	,,	,,
William Balfour,	,,	,,
William Hudson,	,,	,,
George Bodwell,	,,	,,
John Hacket, .	,,	,,
Mongo Hamilton,	,,	,,
David Balfour,	,,	,,
David Lindesay,	,,	,,

Tractementen op Holland. Salaries paid only by Holland.[4]

Colonnel Brogh voor sijn persoon, ...	£400
Colonel Henderson, ...	300
Franchois Henderson, L[t] C[l], ...	100
Hacquet, Sergeant Major, ...	80
Blaire, quartiermeester, ...	36
Michiel Henderson, provost, ...	50
t'samen	£566

Officieren van Justitie

William Carcadie, provoost van Col. Brogh, . . .	£50

Ministers

Andreas Hunterus, Predicant van de Schotten, .	£33, s.6 d.3

[1] George Coutts received his commission in succession to Norman Bruce on 8th July 1615 (letter from Groningen, 19th June 1615). Was at Rees in 1622, became sergeant-major, Earl of Buccleuch's regiment, 30th December 1628. Lieutenant-colonel, 17th July 1629. Seems to have died in 1638, when Philip Balfour was promoted to be lieutenant-colonel.

[2] Sir Philip Balfour, eldest son of Colonel Bartholomew Balfour (see p. 48), took oath on 2nd June 1621, became sergeant-major of Earl of Buccleuch's regiment before Bois-le-Duc on 7th July 1629. Lieutenant-colonel, 7th March 1639. Became colonel of same regiment in succession to Lord Almond, 5th November 1640. Retired before 19th May 1646, when he was succeeded by Sir William Drummond. See petitions by, in 1631 and 1639.

[3] Archibald Bethune seems to have succeeded Arthur Forbes in 1614.

[4] This list is given in Dutch.

Pensioenen

De Zoone van Cap^{n} Renton, ... £12, s.10
Kinderen van Cap^{n} John Nysbeth, . . . £16, s.10 d.4
Weduwe Cap^{n} John Balfour, ... £4, s.3. 4d.

Gratieuse pensioenen tot nu toe betaelt ten comptoire van den Ontfanger-generael [pensions given out of grace, hitherto paid out by the Receiver General].

De weduwe van Kilpatricx om haer soontgen ter schoole te houden, noch voor den tyt van 2 jaren. 's jaers [the widow of Kilpatrick, to keep her son at school for 2 years more], ... £50

Pensioenen spruytende uyt saecke van affrekeningen ende voorgaende diensten [pensions originating in matters of accounting and for service rendered].

De Kinderen van Cap^{n} Waddel, als Archibald, Jan, ende Willem Waddel, elck £200, ... 600
Cap^{n} W^{m} Balfour, ... 600
Guillaume Murray van Pickerles, ten lyve van Jan, Elisabeth ende Margrieta zijn Kinderen, elx een derde part [in lifetime of J., E., and M. his children each $\frac{1}{3}$], . 300
Jan ende Catharina Dallachy, kinderen van Cap^{n} Dallachy, elcx £100, ... 200
De kinderen van wijlen [children of the late] C^{n} Willem Nysbeth, als Willem, Arthur ende Margrieta Nysbeth, elcx een vierde part [$\frac{1}{4}$ part], ... 200
Joffe Anna van Duvenvoord, weduwe van den Col. Cuningam, ten lijve van Jouff [in the life of Mrs.] Margriet van Duyvenvoorde, huysvr [wife] van den Ritmeester Wisschart, ende Elisabeth Cuningham, elcx de helft [each $\frac{1}{2}$], ... yearly £300
De kinderen van Cap^{n} Prop, Jan ende Janneken Prop. elcx de helft, ... 200
Joffr. Anna Kilpatricx, weduwe van Cap^{n} Strachan, . 200
John Barckley, ... 150
De kinderen van Cap^{n} James Egger, genaemt Nicolaes ende Margrieta, elcx de helft, ... 125
Joff^{r} Maria de Lion, wed^{e} van Cap^{n} Henry Balfour, . 75
De kinderen van Cap^{n} Kilpatrick, als Jan, Maria, ende Helena Kilpatrick, ... 25

1620.

Holland. Cavalry

	men	monthly
Robbert Wrving [?]	70	£2457
W^{m} Balfour, ...	70	2064

[The rest are the same as the previous year.]

II

EXTRACTS FROM CORRESPONDENCE, RECOMMENDATIONS, RESOLUTIONS, REPORTS, AND REQUESTS, 1609-1611.

Letters of King James.

(Rec. May 30, 1609.)

Diplomatic Correspondence, England, 1609-12.

Messieurs et Compères,—L'estat de voz affaires estant à présent tel que vous n'en avez plus besoin de grande partie des gens de guerre que vous entreteniez auparavant et entretenez encore, tellement qu'il vous sera nécessaire de congédier beaucoup d'iceulx. Et d'aultant qu'il y a plusieurs de noz sujectz de ce mestier là en voz services, qui, n'estantz pas employez en vostre service voudroient volontiers chercher leur fortune ailleurs. Nous prions que par vostre authorité il soit permis à quiconque des nostres qui voudroit faire levée de telles gens en ce païs là, de les enlever et transporter où bon luy semblera, sans vostre empeschement ou destourbier quelconque. Et prions Dieu, Messieurs et Compères vous tenie tousfours en sa sainte et digne garde.—Vostre bien Bon Amy et Compère. Jaques R.

Escript à nostre Palais de Westminstre, le ix. jour de May 1609.

(Datum, April 17. Recep. May 19, 1609.)

Messieurs,—Ayantz entendu de par noz Ambassadeurs que la conclusion s'est faicte de la trefve entre vous le Roy d'Espagne et les Archiducqs nous avons voulu aussy tost vous frē cognoistre combien nous en sommes contentz d'autant que croyons qu'en un tel subiect mieux ne se pouvoit frē et qu'en

l'issue d'icelle comme aussy en la conduite chez le commencement vous avez trouvé par effects de quelle sincérité nous nous sommes portés envers l'asseurance et prospérité de vos affaires. Orez estant par cest accord vrē estat en termes d'estre estably comme vous vous asseurerez que nous ferons tousiours tous les offices d'un voysin amy et conféderé, aussy pour le présent se nous offrent deux considérations lesquelles vous recomandons à bon escient. L'une que puisque vous estez asseurez de repos avec ceux contre qui vous avez eu si longue contestation vous vueillez purveoir à la continuation d'une bonne et parfaicte union entre vous mesmes. Ce qui touche si avant à vrē propre salut et seureté que ne doubtons point que vrē prudence d'heure à autre ne le vous représente. L'autre est telle qu'appartient non moins à nrē sollicitude et prévoyance qu'à vrē réputation. C'est que puisqu'à cause de ceste trefve il est à penser que ne vueilliez charger vrē Estat de si grande nombre de gens de guerre que par cy-devant vous avez entretenu, en la diminution que vous en ferez vous vueilliez principalement avoir esgard à la retention et rémunération de nos subiectz par le long et fidèle service desquelz comme aussy au prix de leur sang, il ne se peult nier que plusieurs de voz victoires n'ayent esté gaignées. Envers lesquelles si vous monstrez maintenant gratitude et recognoissance, il sera à vrē honneur vers tous, et à ceste nation, grande occasion de continuer la bienveillance et affection à vrē Estat. Quant à noz Ambassadeurs ayantz achevé l'oeuvre pour laquelle ilz y ont esté envoyez et en laquelle ils ont travaillé si longuement oultre le séiour qu'a faict le Sieur Winwood par tant d'anneés Nous les avons ordonné de revenir l'un et l'autre et ne doubtons nullement qu'ayant laissé chez vous si bonnes marques de leur prudhomie et affection en ce qui leur appartenoit en ceste coniunction vous vueilliez aussy avoir pour agréable le retour comme nous avons faict celuy de vrē Ministre fidèle le Sieur Carron qui s'en est allé vers vous.—Vrē bien bon amy, JAQUES R.

De nrē palais de Westminstre, le xvii. iour d'Avril 1609.

From the Governor of Breda to the Council of State.
(August 8, 1609.)

Letters and Requests to the Council of State.

My Lords, — Although I have several times admonished and commanded the lieutenants of Captains Forbes[1] and Scott[2] before their departure to satisfy and pay divers burghers of the town of Breda, who were out of pocket both to the said captains and also to their officers and soldiers. For example, Captain Forbes owes the sum of 300gl. 5s. 2d., and Captain Scott the sum of 45gl. 19s. 2d., which you may see from the documents hereto appended. Nevertheless they have removed to Vendicq, in obedience to the order sent by his Excellency, without in any way satisfying said burghers, who have begged me to write in their favour to your lordships, in order that they may be paid their just debts, in which I most humbly join my petition to theirs. Not doubting that your lordships will so arrange that the good burghers shall succeed in getting payment, and they at another time will be the more willing to assist the soldiers in their needs.—Herewith, etc., your W—— M—— Honours' obedient and very loyal servant, Justinus van Nassau.

At Breda, this 8 August 1609.

Re Captain Gordon's Company. (Oct. 6, 1609.)

My Lords,—Since your lordships have been pleased to command that I should always, and from time to time, make you acquainted both with the situation and condition of this garrrison, and also of its captain and officers, stating which of them have been absent, and how long, I shall therefore not neglect as regards them, to communicate to you the following. First, that the soldiers here are kept in good order, the watches looked to, and to sum up in a word everything as carefully attended to as ever was the case before the date of this truce, which in fact you will find.

Further, as concerning the captain and officers of the company, your lordships will be pleased to hear that there are

[1] See p. 71. [2] See p. 64.

no absentees except Captain Gordon, who has not been here during twenty-five or twenty-six weeks; indeed, all the year round, he has not been one month with his company. His lieutenant, too, has been absent over six months, his oldest sergeant over six weeks; and the other sergeant is on the sick list. Thus there is but one officer, viz., the ensign, a foul useless drunkard, in the company, which to all intents and purposes has none. Moreover, the said company is very badly paid and upheld, so that out of extreme poverty many soldiers desert, and as is well known very few of the others are fit for duty. And (with respect I say it) such a state of matters is not what ought to be, and is a condition fraught with evil consequences. I pray therefore that your lordships may see good to order the said captain very sharply to betake himself with his officers to his garrison, to pay and uphold his company, as other captains here do, lest for want of this it sink into utter ruin, for the poverty among them is extreme.

This is what at present I had to write.—And with these presents, etc., JOHAN DE WITT.

Actum at Steenbergen, the 6th October.

To the Council of State. (Oct. 7, 1609.)

MY LORDS,—Your lordships will please to understand, that on the 25th July last the States-General ordered me to furnish information monthly to their High Mightinesses regarding the state of these garrisons, and the condition of the soldiers, stating what officers were present in or absent from their companies, and although I have several times sent them information regarding these matters, and among other points, that Captain Gordon, whose company has been here in garrison over a year, has never been more than one month with the same, indeed during twenty-six successive weeks he has never been with his company, and is still absent. His lieutenant was not there during six months, his oldest sergeant during six weeks. Such was the state of matters that only one officer was found in the company, viz., the ensign—a foul, rank, and careless drunkard, the company being practically without a single officer. More-

over the soldiers of the said company were miserably found and paid, on which account very many of them deserted, and through poverty came to ruin.

But in regard to these points, I have never received any answer, and because the company remaining almost without officers and oversight has gradually become so impoverished that the misery smouldering within it can no longer be endured nor the complaints and sighs, and through this the whole company will evidently be brought to ruin. Also that three times the said soldiers have besought me with increasing vehemence to advise your lordships of their misery and poverty, and some remedy must be adopted, otherwise they must perish in their extremity. For this purpose I have sent off this messenger who can by word of mouth inform you of the existing need and give details about it. Also that many burghers complain, that having out of compassion for the poor soldiers provided them with some necessaries, they have not been paid for it. Therefore I entreat most earnestly, that it may please your lordships to give heed to the calamities of the said soldiers, and everything connected therewith, that ought to be seen to. To order the said Captain Gordon most strictly to betake himself with his officers as soon as possible to his company, to pay and provide for his soldiers as is right, and also, so as to prevent the complete ruin of the company. But in order that I may have something wherewith to satisfy and comfort the poor soldiers, may it please you to write a short reply, and forward it to me by the bearer of this, in order that I may show it to them.—And herewith, etc., Y— H— M— obedient servant, JOHAN DE WITT.

Actum at Steenbergen, 7th October 1609.

To the Council of State of the United Netherlands.

Captain John Gordon, at present in garrison within the town of Steenbergen, showeth with due respect, that it is now full three months since he, the petitioner, received payment from the State, either for himself or his company. He has therefore been compelled to burden himself to the last degree with the interest of borrowed money, in order to satisfy his

company. Yea, so deeply has he engaged himself, that he has no means left and knows of none (having no one to solicit for them) by which he can maintain his soldiers. Therefore he prays most humbly that your lordships shall be pleased to advance to him, the petitioner, provisionally, the sum of five or six hundred pounds of forty groats, in order that he may in some measure satisfy his company until orders be issued some time and way otherwise, as to the payment,

By doing which, etc.

Gordon's disbanded Company.[1]

To the Council of State. (Oct. 14, 1609.)

My Lords,—Since it has pleased your lordships to discharge Captain Gordon with his company; his soldiers, owing to ill payment, are deeply indebted to the burghers here, which the accompanying specification, and the report of the Commissary Badburch, charged by your H. M. to effect the disbandment will well show and explain, said soldiers having due to them a considerable sum of arrears of pay. Yet they do not wish to act otherwise than to pay their debts, and satisfy the burghers, who supported them so loyally with victuals and drink in their extreme poverty, to such a degree indeed, that but for their having done so, the company would have perished long ago—as everybody very well knows. Said support also was proffered mostly by my persuasions out of pity for the poor soldiers. I have thus earnestly entreated your lordships, that you may be pleased so to assist the burghers, and who have little enough, to obtain payment of their just debts. For otherwise many of them will be ruined, for here we are but a scant community, which, as your High Mightiness well knows, can bear no loss. Therefore, again praying you to take into consideration the circumstances of the case, may your High Mightiness be pleased to assist the poor people in this, since in so doing you will truly perform a work of charity.—And with these present, etc., Johan de Witt.

Actum at Steenbergen, 14th October 1609.

---

[1] See also pp. 243, 253 and 292.

Recommendation of George Ramsay.

(Datum. Nov^re. 25. Recep. Dec^r. 16.)

Messieurs.—Ce gentilhomme George Ramsey, lieutenant du Colonel Brog, ayant esté absent au temps de la mort du feu Colonel Edmonds, faillit de la place de Capitayne de sa Compagnie qu'il prétend de droict luy appartenir. Or parce qu'en cela il a esté moins recogneu que de raison luy estoit deu; estant à présent vacant de capitaine la compagnie du Cap. Rondneys,[1] il vous vient supplier de la luy conférer, tant pour le regard de ses mérites passez, ayant perdu en vostre service de son sang et un sien frère, comme pour luy faire réparation du dommage soustenu pour avoir failly de la Compagnie du Col. Edmonds. Ores estant son désir fondé sur tant de raison, nous ne ferons de long propos à le vous recommander, sachant que tant pour le respect de justice que pour l'amour de nous, vous ferez tout ce qu'appartient à vrē honneur de faire.—Vrē bon Amy et allié, Jaques R.

Royston, le xxv iour de Novembre 1609.

Recommendation of John Young

(Dat. Nov^r. 10. Rec. Decem^r. 24).

Messieurs et compères,—Ce porteur Jean Young bourgeois de nostre ville d'Edimbourg, ayant avancé diverses sommes de deniers aux capitaines et autres officiers par vous employés à faire levée des gens de guerre en nostre royaume d'Escosse, et ne trouvant nul moyen d'estre payé (les dictz officiers s'excusantz cōme n'ayantz point en payement de vous) est en fin contrainct de recourir à vous; et partant nous a très humblement supplié de se recōmender cōme celuy qui a tousiours employé sa personne et moyens pour vous faire service. Et d'autant que sa demande ne nous semble point desraisonable. Nous vous avons bien voulu prié de cognoistre sa cause et donner tel ordre pour l'amour de nous qu'il en soit payé tant des deniers susdictz que des decomptes de feu son beaupère, mort en vostre service. Et sur ce, Messieurs et compères, prions l'éternel vous tenir en sa sainte et digne garde.—Vostre bien bon amy et Compère, Jaques R.

Escrypte à nostre palais de Westminstre, le dixiesme de Novembre l'an 1609.

[1] Udny?

Remonstrance des Ambassadeurs et Colonels de la Grande Brittagne

(Exhibit. in the assembly of the States-General, May 22, 1607.)

[Partly destroyed.]

Messieurs, Messieurs les Estats Généraux.—Messieurs, nous supplions bien humblement . . . . . en ce réglement qu'on faict à présent de vos trou . . . qu'il leur plaise avoir soin de l'honneur de nostr . . . Nations suivant les recommendations que sa Ma . . . a faictes par ses lettres et nostre remonstrance . . la dessus ayans esgard tant au mérite de leurs services qu'à la bonne alliance que de long temps a esté entre nos Royaumes et vos Provinces. Diplomatic Correspondence, 1609-1612.

Nostre nation a esté la première qui est venue à vostre service et y est continué sans iutervalle, insques à la dernière heure. Avec quelle résolution, zele et fidelité nos gens se sont tousiours comportés durant vos guerres; vos victoires en parlent et le présent estat de vos affaires remonstre vivement; en bien de recognoissance de leurs services, nous prions de ne nous mectre pas une tasche d'ignominie ce qui nous ingerons estre faict si on nous range à 70 testes, pesle mesle, avec le reste de l'armés. C'est ce que nous demandons [?] et soubz correction non sans raison, et iustice que les compagnies tant angloises qu'escossoises, qui à la derniere monstre ont esté soubs cents testes, puissent demeurer au mesme estat, et celles qui sont au dessus ce nombre, la soient reduictes a cent testes.

Pour faciliter cela, les Collonnels soubsignés se contenteront que leurs compagnies demeurent chasque a deux cens testes, contents que le nombre supernumeraire que hier leur a esté accordé, soit distribué parmy leurs régimens. Nous croyons que vos seigneuries ne scauront pas faire chose qui puisse estre plus agréable a sa Ma^{té}, ny plus advantageuse au bien et honneur de leur service.

Ri. Spencer. Rodolphe Winwood.
H. Vere. Ed. Cecyll.
Th. Ogle.

[The signatures are those of the two Ambassadors and the English colonels. Although the Scots troops are mentioned, neither Colonel Brog's nor Lord Buccleuch's names are appended.]

Requeste des Amb^rs de la grande brettagne, pour le traittement des Ministres auprès des Compagnies de leur nation.

(Exh. 10 June 1609.)

A Messieurs, Messieurs les Estatz Generaux. Messieurs, —Nous présentons cette requeste à V. S^ies au nom des Collonels de nostre nation et de leurs régiments, laquelle ne tendant pas à autre but que à l'honneur de Dieu, au service de vos provinces et au bien des subiects de sa Ma^té de la gran Brettagne, nous confions que V. S^ies l'accorderont sans difficulté.

C'est qu'il leur plaise accorder en chasque compagnie, tant angloise qu'escossoyse, qu'est à présent et doresenavant sera en vostre service, une mortepaye pour le traittement de six ministres de nostre nation, gens scavants et de bonne vie, dont deux feront leur résidence icy à la Haye, le troysiesme à Berghen op Zoome, le 4^e à Breda, le 5^e à l'Escluse, le sixiesme à Nimeghen, pour catéchiser et instruire en la cognoissance de Dieu et de la vraye religion, les compagnies qu'y seront en garnison et aux lieux circonsvoysins, suivant la lyste mise au dessoubs.

Ceste requeste estant tant recommendée par soymesme, nous recommendons bien sérieusement aux Vos bonnes graces.

Ri. Spencer.
Rodolphe Winwood.

Les deux Ministres résidents à la Haye iront prescher à Tergaw,[1] Worden,[2] Dordrech, Leyden, Delff, Rotterdam.

Le 3^e, qui réside à Berghen, prendera à sa charge toute la Zélande.

Le 4^o qui réside à Bréda, aura pour sa charge, Gertruideberghe, Huysden,[3] Gorcum, Worcum,[4] Bummell.[5]

Le 5^e l'Escluse[6] et toute la flandre.

Le 6^o Nimeghen, Arneham, Doesbergh, Zutphen, Deventer, Grave, Voiche.[7]

---

[1] Tergouw, Gouda.
[2] Woerden.
[3] Heusden.
[4] Woudrichem.
[5] Zalt-Bommel.
[6] Sluis.
[7] Vucht (?).

July 25.—On the request of Magdalena Hume, formerly widow of Captain David Stuart, it was decided that since the town of Bruges is particularly kept in view in the claim of the petitioner, she is thereupon to address herself to that town. Nevertheless the States grant her, out of commiseration, the sum of fifty guilders in all. Resolutions of the States-General.

The Sutlers of Gordon's Company.

From the States-General to the Council of State.

(May 11, 1610.)

My Lords,—The sutlers of the disbanded company of the late Captain Gordon were by us again referred to the States of Utrecht, in order that they might sue there for their pay. We therefore recommend you so to assist these poor petitioners once more with your Lordships' intercession, that they may succeed in getting their payment, or at least come to an agreement with the other creditors in Utrecht; inasmuch as an attempt is being made, against all reason and justice, to nullify their right of hypothec.—Herewith, etc., your Lordships good friends,

The States-General of the United Netherlands.
Carol Bentinck, V^t^.
By Order of the same
Aerssen.

From the Hague, the 11th May 1610.

Recommendation of James Erskine.

(Recep. June 8, 1610.)

Haults et puissants Seigneurs, nos bons amys et alliez,— Ayants eu occasion de nous servir par deça du Chevalier Jaques Arskyn, Gentilh. de ñre Chambre privée, capitaine d'une compagnie de cuirassiers à vre solde, l'avons retenu de sa charge plus longuement que de son gré il n'eust voulu. Lequel désirant de s'en retourner vers vous maintenant pour s'acquicter de tout ce qui luy appartient, Nous l'avons voulu accompagner de ceste cy, tant pour vous faire sçavoir la vraye cause de son absence, laquelle nous espérons ne vous sera point désagréable, coñe pour vous prier de luy continuer tousiours vre bonne grace en tout ce qu'il aura occasion de vous en requérir. Et si vos aff^rs^ le peuvent permectre et que la paix continue avec Diplomatic Correspondence, 1609-14.

voz voisins, de sorte que pour le présent vous n'ayez à faire de son service, nous prions de le nous renvoyer, iusques à ce que l'occasion se présente de vous servir de luy. Ce que nous aurons pour fort agréable et demeurons.—Votre trés affectioné amy, JAQUES R.

De ñre Palais de Westminster, le xxiv jour d'Avril 1610.

Resolutions of the States-General.

October 25th.—Thomas Stuart, Englishman, having served these Lands about eighteen years, and having been severely wounded in the head in the trenches before Gulick,[1] was granted, out of commiseration, and in order to effect his cure, twenty-four guilders; but this is not to be used as a precedent.

Letter from the Municipality of Wilmstadt.

(Nov. 10, 1610.)

MY LORDS,—It would appear that William Nory, Scotsman, at present an inhabitant of our town, received at the taking of the Sconce of Crimpen, during the first troubles, a wound in one leg from a shot, which, as time went on (in spite of every remedy applied by him), got much worse and festered; so that now there are no means by which he can be cured. Owing to this, and the great expenses he incurred, he has fallen into such poverty, that he has no means wherewith in his old age to support himself and his wife. Wherefore we write to your Lordships in his favour (also he has conducted himself honestly and burgherlike in this town for a considerable number of years). And we humbly pray, that you be pleased to grant the said William Nory some reasonable aliment, both on account of his former services, and because he is unable to earn his bread, in order that he may thereby support himself in his extreme poverty and old age. By doing this, you will perform a work of mercy before God the Lord, and comfort the recipient in his great misery. We conclude with our humble respects.—My Lords, your Lordships' obedient, etc., THE SHERIFFS, BURGOMASTERS AND ALDERMEN OF THE FORESAID TOWN.

Written in Wilmstadt, this 15th November 1610.

---

[1] Juliers.

Petition of Colonel Barth Balfour. (Exh. Dec. 7, 1610.)

To their High Mightinesses the States-General.

Requests to States-General.

With becoming reverence and respect, James Cracke, on behalf of Colonel Bartolm. Balfour, residing abroad in Scotland, begs leave to intimate, that in the year 1594, your High Mightinesses granted the said colonel a yearly pension of two hundred pounds, of forty grotten each, in payment of his services; which pension has been paid here by Mr. Doublet, the Receiver-General. But when the same pension became due on the 16th day of April 1610, the said colonel empowered a merchant from Scotland to receive the money, but he received none; and in consequence lodged a protest, to the great injury of the said colonel. Therefore the petitioner prays most humbly that it may please your High Mightinesses to order the Receiver-General, Mr. Doublet, or his commissioner, to pay the said pension as previously, amounting to one thousand pounds, without delay or objection, in order to avoid all extraordinary expenses. By doing this—— JACQUES CRACKE.

Petition of Rev. Andrew Hunter.

(Receptum Januar 5.)

Letters and Requests to the Council of State.

ILLUSTRISSIMIS ET CONSULTISSIMIS DOMINIS D.D. ORDINIBUS GN̄ALIB,—Anno superiore per anticipationem accepi cent. florenos in castris, deinde coram Juliaco a Domino Dubeletto triginta octo florenos; hinc ex ducentis illis florenis quos in extraordinarium stipendium quotannis conceditis sexaginta duo floreni supersunt; et plane statueram vos per anticipationem non urgere, sed familiæ sustentandae et creditoribus satisfaciendi circa et necessitas (praeter valetudinariae et decumbentis uxoris meae statum) invitum me huc rapiunt, ut una cum 62 illis florenis centum etiam florenos per anticipationem, expetam. Cavebo in posterum (si fueri possit) ne vobis in huiusmodi negotio molestus sim.

ANDREAS HUNTERUS, Evangelij
Jesu Christi Minister.

Captain Forbes's Company at Tiel. (April 18, 1611.)

The Commander of the Garrison in Tiel to the Council of State.

MY LORDS,—This afternoon the officers here at present,

and most of the soldiers, of the company of Captain Forbes,[1] garrisoned here, came to me with the complaint, that now in the twenty-seventh week, they have as yet received no advance of money, and during all this time had supported themselves very poorly and with difficulty, and that it was impossible for them to endure this state of matters or to support themselves any longer: that also because of hunger and anxiety they must have been forced to desert, had they not been supplied with victuals by the good burghers and inhabitants of this town, particularly by the widow of T. Reyner Gijsberts. But this support the citizens no longer could or would give, as there is now due to them by the company a considerable sum of money. On account of which they (the soldiers) have also pledged themselves to such an extent, that they have lost all credit. Therefore in regard to this humbly praying I make this strong representation in the name of them all, that now after such long patience and miserable support they may be comforted and their arrears paid; a duty which (in order to avoid more confusion) I neither could nor would neglect. And therefore having expressed on their behalf my sentiments regarding these matters, I pray most humbly, and entreat your High Mightinesses to make ample provision, so that the said soldiers be paid their arrears, and that no further delay occur, and also that all serious tumults and misfortunes (evidently to be expected otherwise) may be prevented. Therefore trusting entirely to your High Mightinesses for ample provision against further troubles, and for satisfying the soldiers, I pray the Almighty, etc.—Your High Mightinesses most ready and obedient

(Signed) Diederech Vigh, Lord of Soelen
Sheriff in Nederbetuwe, Commander of
the Garrison in Tiel.

At Tiel, the 18 April 1611, old style.

To the Council of State. (May 6, 1611.)

We, the undersigned Aldermen of the city of Tiel, hereby declare, that yesterday being the 5th day of May 1611, new style, François Doublet, army paymaster, brought the officers

[1] See p. 71.

and common soldiers of the company of Captain Forbes into the church in the foresaid city, having been ordered and commissioned to do so by your Lordships, Councillors of State; and they were asked in our presence how they stood with their captain, with respect to the payment of their services, and what amount of arrears was due to them by their captain. After the said questions were put by the paymaster two distinct times, the people declared unanimously that the said captain on the day previous to the paymaster's arrival, being the 20th May, had paid the arrears of the company (sixteen or eighteen men excepted) wholly and in full up to the 6th of May inclusive, that he (the captain) was not able to pay the remainder of the unpaid soldiers, owing to the shortness of time, but he promised in our presence to do so to-day. At which the whole company, particularly those who had not yet received their money, were satisfied; that the captain had also satisfied the widow of Reynier Gijsberts, who had long supplied the said soldiers with victuals, paying her 800 guilders in cash, and having assigned the balance to be paid her in Friesland.

We have signed this declaration at Tiel, this 6th May 1611.

M. V'd Buchell. Both van der Eem.

The Council of War at Zwolle to the Council of State. (June 27, 1611).

The citation which your Lordships have been pleased to draw up at the request of the quartermaster, David Arskyn, dated the 17th June last, new style, was delivered to us on the 17th of the same month, old style; and from it we have learned that the quartermaster's servant, named Robert Hardy, though innocent, was before this accused and placed under apprehension for stealing certain linen from the Commissary Bloemendaal.

Item.—That the said Robert Hardie, after long imprisonment and accusation, was on the 19th February 1609, when nobody had any thing to say against him, acquitted by us, and ordered to be sent out of prison, he being also condemned to pay the costs of the imprisonments, though we ought properly to have condemned the said Commissary in them.

Item.—That on account of these costs, the said Robert must have remained under apprehension, he having no means to pay them.

Item.—That the influential provost, Herman Westmeyer, brought an action against the quartermaster before us, and pled on Robert's behalf to have the cost of his imprisonment paid by said quartermaster.

Item.—That finally, proceedings went so far, that by mistake, on the 7th of March last, we by our sentence condemned the petitioner to pay the costs of the imprisonment of the foresaid Robert; from which sentence the quartermaster appealed to your Lordships, and thereupon you charged us, in as far as this business concerns us, to appear before you at the Hague, or to send our commissioners. And even if this matter does not concern us, seeing we have administered justice (as we were bound to do); yet we could not neglect, in obedience to your Lordships, to answer the citation, not in any such way as to make ourselves parties in this business, but only that you may acquire a just knowledge of the facts of the case, which are as follows:

The Commissary Bloemendaal did not cause the said Robert to be apprehended and put in prison, also did not accuse him, as the quartermaster too liberally intimated to your lordships. But the procedure in the case was such as is to be gathered from the precognition and the extract from this Council of War protocol, both dated 7th June 1609, of which we here enclose copies.

Further. It is true that the late bailiff of Salandt, who at the time was at the Hague, conferred at length about this imprisonment case, with some of your peers. On that occasion (as the bailiff frequently related) they expressed themselves as very thankful that his Lordship was keeping such good order here, and begged that henceforward he would continue to punish all other inconveniences and petulances that might occur, and that troopers or soldiers here might set agoing. And when the late bailiff informed your lordships that Robert had no way of paying his board, it pleased you to permit the bailiff and provost to allow said board (to wit, six stuivers daily till the 19th January, that is, to the day of Robert's

release) to be included in the justiciary expenses, and the said money was immediately delivered to the provost by the bailiff coming at that time from the Hague. And whereas no apprehension was asked for by Bloemendaal, nor was any accusation made by him (as will appear from the foresaid documents), we had no reasons to condemn him to pay the costs. It is also to be noted particularly, that while all this was going on, the quartermaster, whose imprisoned servant was declared free on the 19th January 1609, ought to have let him go and remain free, and not have commanded him anew to remain under the charge of the provost (as will appear from testimony of witnesses produced, of Philip Edgar, of the prisoner himself, Robert Hardie, and of two servants from Zwolle). But the quartermaster did not trouble himself about this, wherefore he ought to blame himself and nobody else, and in reference to this should not be of opinion that we made a mistake in our judgment given on the 7th March, seeing that what was then done took place after full deliberation and mature consultation, in the presence of fifteen military officers standing there, who had been fully admonished on oath to act rightly in the matter. Also it is to be noted that the quartermaster carried through a suit before the magistrate of Zwolle regarding this matter, against the said Commissary Bloemendaal, but with what result we do not know. Perhaps if it had gone well with him there, he would not have come to trouble your High Mightinesses. And as far as we can make out, the quartermaster is doing it solely to give annoyance to the provost, which, with submission, we could not withhold from your lordships. Herewith we humbly pray the Almighty to preserve you long in health, under the peaceable rule of salvation.

J. G. Tengnaegel, V^{t}.

Dated Zwolle, this twenty-seventh June, Anno sixteen hundred and eleven, old style.

III

EXTRACTS RELATING TO THE SERVICES AND CLAIMS OF SIR WILLIAM BALFOUR AND CAPTAIN HENRY BALFOUR.[1]

1611-1615

To their High Mightinesses the States-General of the United Netherlands.

Records of States-General.

Sir Henry Balfour humbly and with due reverence hereby showeth, that he has now served your Highnesses and the Provinces during twelve years as captain, in which capacity (without boasting) he hopes that he conducted himself as becomes a nobleman, on all occasions which presented themselves in your service. And since the office of lieutenant-colonel in the regiment of Colonel Brock is at present vacant, the petitioner begs to submit that he has favourable recommendations from His Majesty of Great Britain, directed to Lord Wynwout, His Majesty's Ambassador here, claiming your Highnesses' intervention in order that it may please your Highnesses to grant the office of lieutenant-colonel to the petitioner, in consideration of the foregoing, to which he begs to refer as giving your Highnesses information of the request of the petitioner, and of His Majesty's particular desire in his favour for his promotion. Moreover, with the same view, the petitioner has also obtained the written recommendation of Ambassador Carron—here annexed. It is therefore the petitioner's humble and most respectful prayer, that it may please your Highnesses out of regard to His Majesty aforesaid, and for consideration of the petitioner's long and faithful services, to do him the honour and favour of preferring him before others, and graciously to bestow on him, the foresaid command of lieutenant-colonel, etc.

[1] Sir Henry Balfour, see p. 61. Sir William Balfour, see p. 69.

Messieurs,—J'ay charge de la part de sa Mat^té de la grande Brettagne de recommander a Vs S^ries les prétensions du suppliant; ce que ie fais très affectueusement, suppliant Vs S^es sur les raisons alléguées en cette requeste et les recommendations de Sa Mat^té de luy accorder sa demande en récompense de ses bons et fideles services. Rodolphe Winwood.[1]

Letter from the Dutch Ambassador, Noel de Caron.

To their High Mightinesses the States-General.

My Lords,—His Highness the Prince of Great Britain has sent Sir David Murray, first Lord of his bedchamber to me, with the request that on his behalf I would recommend to you Sir William Balfour, the bearer of this, one of His Majesty's Privy Councillors. His request is (and he claims to be one of the oldest captains in the regiment of the late Colonel Sutton,[2] in whose place Colonel Brog is now appointed) that he shall get the post of lieutenant-colonel, as that post has been long vacant, and he hopes that his appointment will be agreeable to the said Colonel Brog, and that in other respects he may thereby be able to render better and more acceptable service to the Land. This is all that I know about this request, and the said Sir William has intimated as much to you confidentially. I therefore wish, should your High Mightinesses resolve to fill said post, that this nobleman be preferred before others, Noel de Caron.

From South Lambeth, the 8th July, 1611 (old style).

1613, *June* 3.—On the request of Captain Henry Balfour, praying to be appointed as lieutenant-colonel in the regiment of Colonel Brogh. Taking into view the strong recommendation of the Electoral Princess Palatine, written from Arnhem in a missive of the 18th ult. to the Advocate of Holland, it was resolved that their High Mightinesses give favourable consideration to said recommendation, so soon as they shall proceed to the disposal of that and other military appointments.

[1] Henry Balfour refers to a letter of recommendation of the Dutch Ambassador wherein William Balfour is recommended. As William and Henry were both in the service of the States, their names were probably confounded, and Caron intended to recommend Henry. See also the Resolutions of the States-General. Winwood wrote the French lines on the request.

[2] This is a mistake. Brog succeeded Edmond.

June 13.—Upon the request of Captain William Balfour, the eldest, and at that date, only son of the late Henry Balfour, formerly colonel of a regiment of Scotsmen, in the service of these lands, praying for payment of his late father's arrears for services.

After deliberation it was agreed and declared, that the petitioner in respect of the good services of his late father, and the recommendation of the King of Great Britain, shall be held as recommended when occasion offers. But as regards the foresaid request of payment for his father's services in Brabant and Flanders, being outside the United Provinces, their Highnesses cannot enter on that matter.

June 18.—Upon the request of Sir William Balfour, as sole heir of the late Captain David Cant, for the payment of the said captain's services, it was resolved that this request be placed in the hands of the Clerk of the Treasury, that their Highnesses may be advised concerning the situation of the matters therein related.

June 26.—The Clerk of Court gave in a statement of arrears due for services rendered to the Lands by the late Captain David Cant with his company, from 1st September 1585 to 17th April 1592, giving the amount according to the two existing settlements of accounts, as 21343 pounds, 11 shillings, whereof Captain William Balfour, as heir of the said deceased Cant, requests payment. Hereupon, after consultation, and having regard to the strong recommendation of Her Highness the Electoral Princess Palatine in favour of the above mentioned Balfour, it was agreed that, without satisfying all his claims (the services of Colonel Balfour in Brabant among them), he is to be gratified with a pension of 400 guilders yearly, to be paid him until he be invested with the lieutenantship [*i.e.* lieutenant-colonelcy] of Colonel Brogh, or otherwise advanced, always providing he shall first prove that he is the heir of the late above mentioned Captain Cant.

September 10.—The request of Captain Henry Balfour was read, praying that in regard to the recommendation of the Electoral Princess Palatine regarding him, their Highnesses should provisionally allow him to increase his company to one hundred and ninety or one hundred and eighty heads. But

on that matter decision was postponed till after the revisal or reading of the minutes of the State of War.

August 26.—Two requests were read—the one from John Gordon,[1] and the other from Henry Balfour—praying to be appointed to the post of sergeant-major in the regiment of Colonel Brog, or that of lieutenant-colonel in the same regiment. But in the meantime decision thereon was postponed.

Resolutions of States-General.

1615, *January* 19.—A letter was received and read from the King of Great Britain, dated October 25th last, from the Court at Royston, and written on behalf of Sir William Balfour, eldest and only surviving son of the late Sir Henry Balfour, formerly colonel of a regiment of Scots in the service of the Lands, and heir along with his two nephews[2] (for whom he holds power of attorney[3]) of the late Captain Cant, deceased; that payment may be granted him of arrears for services rendered to the Lands by the said late Captain Cant.

After consultation, it was resolved to put the above mentioned missive, with the accompanying request of the said Sir William Balfour, and the accounts of the late Cant aforesaid, into the hands of the Clerk of Court for revisal, and to note whether any alterations have occurred in them, or any part of them has been paid; further, to ascertain what still remains due to the said late Captain Cant for his services since the accounts were made up, and of all this fully to inform their Highnesses privately.

January 25.—The report of the Clerk of Court was given in on the claims of Sir William Balfour as heir of the late Captain Cant, in regard to the arrears for service of the said captain, both these of which an account was drawn up, and those for services subsequently rendered. And as the said Sir William Balfour appears to be carrying on negotiations with Witschart, cavalry-captain, with a view to his taking over Witsart's company of horse, and in return paying him said arrears, it was proposed on the part of the States-General to promise to said Witssaert and his wife, as a full settlement of the aforesaid arrears, a pension of 500 or at the most 600

[1] John Gordon's company had been dismissed in 1609. It does not appear whether this was or was not the same man.

[2] Procuration.

[3] The word may equally mean cousins or nephews.

guilders yearly during the lifetime of the said Witssaert and of his wife. And it was agreed that the Advocate of Holland shall arrange matters with the parties, and find what their opinion is.

February 19.—On the petition of Sir William Balfour, asking for payment of account for services rendered to the country by the late Captain Cant, his uncle, up to his death; also of the services rendered by his late father as colonel, amounting to a sum of about £40,000, according to documents and bonds thereanent in possession of the petitioner, it was resolved and agreed, on account of several important considerations, that the Clerk of Court shall interview the petitioner and treat with him for full settlement of all his claims, with respect both to the services of his father aforesaid and of the late Captain Cant, and in lieu of the same shall offer him an annual pension, to continue during the lifetime of said petitioner, of 600 guilders, and a cash sum of 1000 guilders, on condition that in return he shall bind himself to receipt in full, and hand over the said account and the old bonds of his father in his possession, and drawn up in the usual form on the States-General.

March 3.—The Clerk of Court reported that he made to Captain Balfour their Highnesses offer, for the full settlement of all his claims both in respect of the services of his late father, whose bonds he is in possession of, and of Captain Cant, his uncle, to whom he is heir, amounting in all to more than 62,000 guilders, but that the said Captain Balfour would not be satisfied with this offer, but desires to have, in addition to the pension of 600 guilders annually, a further cash sum of £3000, and that the pay of his uncle of 1000 guilders per annum be settled on him for life. Whereupon, after deliberation, it was resolved to adhere to the offer of the pension of 600 guilders annually, but to increase the offer of a cash sum of 1000 guilders to 2000, of which sum 1000 guilders are to be paid at once, and the remaining 1000 guilders within a year, always providing that he shall show that he is sole heir of the said Cant, his uncle; and in case said Captain Balfour does not accept this offer, negotiations with him are to be stopped.

1615, *April* 7.—The Clerk of Court reported that Captain Balfour has accepted the offer, which their Highnesses allowed him to make, in settlement of all his claims as heir of the late Captain Cant, and of his father, the late Colonel Balfour, for services rendered by them both in Brabant and Flanders and in this country, none of these services excepted; and the accounts and bonds for the same he is willing to give up, he receiving a pension of 600 guilders annually and a cash sum of 2000 guilders, of which 1000 to be paid immediately, and the remaining 1000 guilders within the next year, and making the one proviso that the pension be settled on his life and the life of his son. This having been deliberated on, it was agreed to give the said captain the choice either to have the pension settled on his own life or on the life of his son; or else the one half of it on his own life and the other half on the life of his son, on condition that he shall take the responsibility of subsequent recriminations, if any others should come forward and claim to be joint heirs of the said Captains Cant or Balfour, namely those for whom he has declared he holds power of attorney; the said pension to begin from the day when the offer was made to him.

April 23.—In the matter of the petition of Captain Sir William Balfour, it was agreed that the pension of £600 per annum voted to him, half on his life and half on the life of his son, William Balfour, be settled only on the life of his said son, William Balfour.

IV

EXTRACTS RELATING TO THE SERVICES AND CLAIMS OF COLONEL LORD BUCCLEUCH AND HIS SON THE FIRST EARL OF BUCCLEUCH.

1611-1620

Council of State.

1611, *May* 21.—In reference to the statement of arrears of the superior officers of the regiment of Colonel Buccleuch, communicated by the Receiver-General, by desire of the States-General, it was agreed that the Receiver-General pay the officers, viz., Lieutenant [Colonel] Henderson, Quartermaster Blair, Sergeant-Major Forbes, and the Provost of the regiment, their arrears of pay for last year 1609 up to 31st December last inclusive.

Diplomatic Correspondence.

Haultz et puissants Seigneurs, noz bons Amis et Confédérés,—Il n'y a longtemps que nous avons escript en faveur du Sieur Baron de Bucklugh, vous ayant représenté ses occasions et nre désir de se pouvoir absenter pour quelque temps de la charge qu'il tient chez vous pour nous servir de luy aux affaires de nre Royaulme d'Escosse. Lesquelles occasions comme elles s'accroissent de plus en plus, le mesme désir nous pousse aussy pour vous réiterer noz premières instances et vous prie qu'avec vre permission et gré, il y puisse faire plus grand séiour sans encourir préiudice en sa charge et ce qui en dépend. Et cependant sur la moindre occasion qui se présentera et à la première semonce que luy en ferez, nous ne fauldrons de le renvoyer quant et quant, pour se ranger promptement à vre service. A laquelle nre requeste nous avons à adiouster aussy que le vueilliez traicter gracieusement en matière de son traictement pour le temps passé, afin qu'il puisse trouver en effect que nre première intercession qu'avons faict pour luy, ne luy sera esté inutile, comme nous avous comandé nre Ambassadeur auprès de vous, de vous en faire instance plus particulère.

Nous nous confions que pour le regard de nre service ne ferez difficulté de nous attribuer ceste requeste, et serons prestz de le recognoistre quant l'occasion nous sera offerte. Vre tres affectioné Amy

De nre Palais de Westminstre, ce 24e jour d'Avril 1611.

Jacques R.

Resolutions of States-General.

May 25.—Lord Winwood, Ambassador of the King of Great Britain, was present at the meeting, and presented a letter from His Majesty, dated the 24th April last at Westminster, in favour of the Baron Buccleuch, to the end that the king might still for a time be permitted to employ him in Scotland in His Majesty's service without prejudice to his commission here, and all pertaining thereto. Requesting that he be treated graciously as to his pay for the time, His Majesty having empowered the above mentioned lord as his deputy to make a point of this, after which his Excellency made and delivered in writing the following proposals.

Voz Seigies entendent par les lettres du Roy mon Maistre de quelle affection sa Mate désire que l'absence de Monsr le Baron de Bouclough, laquelle toutesfois n'est pas advenue sans vostre licence et permission, puisse estre excusée ; et pour quelque peu de temps davantage, soubs votre bon plaisir encore prorogée, ce que Sa Mate ne demande pas à l'instance dud. Sieur de Boucloughe, ny pour quelque bien qu'il en tirera, ains pour le respect particulier de son service ; scachànt par l'expérience qu'il a eue de sa suffisance que sa présence en Escosse, moyennant que cela puisse estre, sans préiudice à voz affayres, y sera fort nécessayre pour le réglement de la polyce, laquelle pour estre bien establie, requiert l'authorité des Seigrs du païs, qui sont non seulement estimez pour leur qualité, mais reverez encores pour leur prudence et preudhommie. C'est la privauté que sa Mate use envers vous, de se servir de vos serviteurs, laquelle liberté vous pourrez prendre hardiment en son endroict de vous servir des siens pour le bien et advancement de voz affayres. L'instance que sa Mate faict, que tant pour le passé que pour le venyr, durant son absence, le traictement qui luy appartient en quallité de Collonel, ne soyt pas retranché, puisqu'il n'a esté absent que par permission de voz Seigries. C'est

pour monstrer le soing qu'elle a que le Sieur de Bouclough, employé en son service, ne reçoyve point de dommage, non pas qu'elle doubte que voz octroys, en lieu de graces, soyent convertis en mulctes et amendes: Quod in gratiam est concessum, in odium non debet detorqueri. La faveur qu'il vous plairez faire à ce Seig^{r}, sa Ma^{té} prendra en tres bonne part et la recognoistra par tous offices de meilleur Amy et Allié. Je supplie que je puisse avoyr par escript vostre responce et pour ma décharge et que le Baron de Boucloughe tant mieux se puisse régler sans y contrevenyr, à ce que de vostre part sera ordonné. Faict le 25^{e} de May 1611.

Signé Rodolphe Winwood.

A consultation was held on the proposal, made at the meeting in the forenoon, by the Lord Winwood, Ambassador of the King of Great Britain, in favour of the Baron of Buccleuch, in order that he may be permitted to remain for a certain time still in Scotland, in the service of His Majesty. And all things considered, an understanding was come to that it would be difficult to agree to said request because of the disservice and bad precedent of it to the Land. But especially seeing that the said Lord Baron, petitioning as having been more than seven years in the service of the Land, has not been present personally in the same, in all, more than six months. And that therefore the said Lord Winwood be requested to take this excuse in good part and transcribe it.

In case, however, his Excellency should further insist, it was agreed that on the recommendation of His Majesty, consent be given for the said baron to have six months more leave from his regiment without reference to or stoppage of his pay that is due or will be due, and as besides there is no reason for that since the regiment as yet is not accepted on any repartition. But we declare nevertheless, that the matter shall be attended to, as soon as the assembled deputies of the provinces shall have arrived.

1612, *January* 10.—Mr. Magnus presiding, intimated that through his Excellency he had received intelligence of the death of Colonel Buccleuch, and being afraid that the King of Great Britain might again set about recommending in his place as commander of the regiment some one not having the

necessary skill and experience, that therefore his Excellency would ask their Highnesses to take into consideration whether it might not be advisable (in anticipation of such action), that they at once commission a fit colonel; that his Excellency recommends the lieutenant-colonel of the said regiment, Robert Henderson, whom he knows as a good soldier, and who is well fitted for the position, and that a provisional instrument might be granted him to assume the command of the said regiment and keep it in good military order. All which having been considered and weighed, it was agreed on the said recommendation of his Excellency that an instrument be granted to the said Lieutenant-Colonel Henderson, whereby he shall be commissioned to command the foresaid regiment in the same quality as hitherto he has held, and containing further a promise that should their Highnesses decide to appoint or commission a colonel at some future time over the said regiment, he was to be preferred before any one else.

Recommendation of Lord Buccleuch.

(Jan. 4. Rec. Feb. 8, 1612.)

Diplomatic Correspondence, 1609-1614.

Haults et puissants Seigneurs noz bons amis et alliez,— Nous vous avons désia par noz lettres assez instammen recōmandé l'affaire du Baron de Bucklugh, lequel pour vous estre bien et particulièrt cognu, il n'est pas besoing par redites inutiles de vous plus représenter. Seulement vous prions encore par celle-cy d'y vouloir avec telle promptitude qu'il conviendra mettre la dernière main et de cōmuniquer à nre Ambassadeur demeurant auprès de vous (auquel avons n'aguères renouvellé la charge de vous en faire instance de nre part, et de nous advertir au plustot de ce qui s'en sera ensuivy) vre première résolution là dessus. Ce que ne doubtons point que vous ne vueilliez faire très volontiers, non seulement pour exempter la partie intéressée de toute fascheuse attente, ains pour nous faire voir par mesme moyen le soing que vous avez de satisfaire à noz subiects, mesmement à ceux que nous avons en estime, en toutes leurs iustes poursuittes, cō de nre costé nous demeurons.—Vrē bien affectionné amy, Jaques R.

De nre Palais de Westminstre le 4e jour de Janvier 1612.

Resolutions of the States-General

July 16.—The request was read of Johan Cleck, and Johan van Thielburgh, the servant and solicitor of the late Colonel Buccleuch, with an appended letter of the King of Great Britain, dated 12th January last, in favour of the son of the said colonel; written to urge that an order be issued about the payment of arrears for services of the said colonel. And it is decided to have the advice of the Council of State thereanent, with the admonition that they attend well to all the particulars.

September 1.—The advice is read of the Council of State, convened 25th August last, concerning the request of the servant and solicitor of the late Colonel Buccleuch, and first it was agreed that, before disposing of the matter, inquiry be made in what state the affairs of the said Buccleuch are, and what passports he has had.

1613, *February* 8.—Hereafter the said Lord Winwood declared that he was charged by His Majesty to present to their Highnesses a letter of His Majesty, dated the 4th January last, whereby His Majesty again strongly recommends and requests that they will be pleased to show all diligence in the affairs of the Baron of Buccleuch, with such promptitude and willingness as is fitting; and to communicate to His Majesty's Ambassador residing here their resolution, to be taken finally thereon. To which end the said Lord-Depute made urgent request, and asked that said resolution be given to him in writing.

After consultation it was resolved in substance to reply that seeing the pay of the late Baron of Buccleuch has never been accepted by the Provinces on the repartition of which he held his footing, therefore no resolution can be come to about the payment of the said pay until the Provinces shall have given their consent to the quota demanded from each towards payment of the old debt. That being done, proceedings will be taken with all due consideration for the recommendation of His Majesty; and a resolution will be arrived at in the business of the said Baron of Buccleuch as favourable as in the present situation of the government of their Lands shall be found just, reasonable, and right.

Diplomatic Correspondence.

1613, *Feb.* 8.—Sur le contenu de la lettre du roy de la

Grande Bretaigne, datée le quatriesme iour de Janvier dernier, escript par Sa Maj. en faveur du baron de Bucklugh, présentée et recommandée ce jour d'huy en l'assemblée à Messeigneurs les Estats Gñlx des Pays Bas Unis par le S^r^ Winwood, ambassad^r^ de sad. Majesté, déclarent iceulx Seigneurs Estatz aultant que le tractement de feu le baron de Bucklugh n'a jamais esté accepté par la province sur laquelle il avoit esté repartié. C'est pourquoy qu'il ne peult estre résolu sur le payement d'icelluy, avant que les provinces soient d'accord sur le faict des quotes d'icelles (à quoy l'on travaille tous les iours) et que les consentemens requis pour le payement de vielles debtes seront accordez. Cela faict sera alors avec toutes bonnes considérations, avec regard à la recommendation de sad. Maj^é^ et sur l'affaire du dict baron de Bucklugh si favorablement résolu, comme selon la constitution présente de l'estat de ce pays il sera trouvé en justice, raison et équité convenir.

Faict en l'assemblée des d. Seigneurs les Estatz Gñlx le 8^e^ jour de Febvrier l'an xvi^e^ et treize.

August 7.—The request of the son of the late Colonel Buccleuch was read, requesting liquidation, settling of accounts, and satisfaction for the arrears for his father's services. But it was agreed, before coming to a decision, to read the minutes of the advice regarding it drawn up by the Council of State.

October 19.—A request was read, presented on the part of the son of the late Baron of Buccleuch, praying for payment of arrears of his father's services.

And it was agreed to place the same in the hands of the Council of State, to be examined more particularly, and thereon to advise their High Mightinesses.

October 26.—Read the advice of the Council of State, dated the 24th inst., on the request of the son of Colonel Buccleuch, holding, for reasons mentioned therein, that their Honours in this matter do not know how otherwise to advise than they advised a year ago, 1612, August 23rd, on the request of the servant and solicitor of the late Colonel Buccleuch, for settlement and payment. They have to advise the States-General that his regiment landed at the close of 1603, and he himself in the beginning of 1604. And according to a resolu-

tion of their High Mightinesses, his pay as colonel commenced on the 1st of January, and as captain on the 16th January 1604; and so continued serving till the 25th December 1611; that he was absent most of the time in Scotland and England, as he left with passport at the commencement of the siege of Sluys in May 1604, and in 1605, a little before they went afield, and was that summer not with them in the field. Also in 1606, even before the war, he was not afield. So that in the year 1605, or till the beginning of the year 1606, he was little in this Land, except that he returned once or twice, and, nevertheless, he was paid as colonel till 29th of June 1609, and as captain till the 6th July 1609. Nor has he had here any continuous passports of absence except what were sought for in the interval. From all which it is rather to be inferred that his place was kept open for him than that he has a right to enjoy pay. And we should therefore be of opinion, under correction, that the remonstrant ought to be well content with the wages and payments he received.

November 25.—The advice of the Council of State was read again, of date 24th October last, on the request of the son of the late Colonel Buccleuch. And it was agreed to commission the Clerk of Court to sound the petitioner's commissioners as to whether they are empowered to come to an agreement and treat in regard to all the petitioner's claims, and in that case, it is suggested that they might negotiate for a yearly pension during the life of the petitioner, as satisfaction in full of all the petitioner's claims, none excepted.

1615, *January* 20.—Taking into account negotiations previously begun on the part of the heir of the late Baron and Colonel Buccleuch, and what was offered to his commissioners in full payment of his arrears. It was agreed, that to Delia Butler, legitimate daughter of the late Captain Thomas Butler, whom the said Baron, being then only fifteen years of age, seduced and bent to his will and lust, there shall be paid, by way of deduction from the sum that shall be agreed upon, and settled as due to the said heir, one hundred guilders in all. The one half ready money, and the other half within the next six months.

August 15.—On the recommendation of Lord Wotton,

Ambassador Extraordinary of the King of Great Britain, with the view of obtaining for the heir of the late Colonel Buccleuch satisfaction in reference to the foresaid colonel's arrears.

After deliberation, it was understood and agreed that the offer already made shall be renewed to the commissioners of the foresaid heir, and in the transaction they are to remember the little daughter of the foresaid colonel, by Delia Butler, daughter of Captain Butler.

August 26.—Hereafter the foresaid Lord Ambassador recommended two matters, the one about the son of the late Colonel Buccleuch, that the same should be satisfied and paid his father's arrears in money and not by a pension.

September 8.—The Clerk of Court was again commissioned to confer more particularly with the commissioners of the heir of the late Colonel Buccleuch, about the offer of the life pension of twelve hundred guilders a year, during his whole life long, made to him as in full payment of all his claims. Also in reference to the satisfaction he undertakes to give for the support of the mother and bastard child, left by the foresaid colonel, for which urgent request is made to their High Mightinesses.

November 11.—The Clerk of Court reported that he, in pursuance of the charge of their High Mightinesses, has been in communication with the commissioner of the son and heir of the late Colonel Buccleuch, about the offer made to him here on a former occasion, of a pension of twelve hundred guilders a year, in full payment of all the claims of the said heir to the arrears for his late father's services to the Land, and that the said commissioner has declared that he will accept the foresaid offer, provided their High Mightinesses please to grant him a deed to the effect that if at any future time a new regiment were to be raised in Scotland for their service, that they should appoint him master over it, and commission him as colonel. And otherwise that he is content to acquit and discharge on the offer of the said pension of twelve hundred guilders yearly, provided their High Mightinesses be pleased to provide him with the first colonelcy of the Scots presently in service, that shall become vacant by the death of the colonel. Declaring further about the claim of the woman by whom the

late Colonel Buccleuch had a child, still living, that the said woman received from the foresaid colonel one thousand guilders, that she also received from their High Mightinesses at the expense of the arrears of the said colonel, in one sum, one hundred thalers, and in another, sixty guilders. That in addition he is willing to pay her four hundred guilders more, and that in his opinion, the said woman ought therewith to be well contented. But should their High Mightinesses, in spite of all this, consider the offer not enough, he leaves it to be fixed at their discretion.

It was agreed that the said Clerk of Court shall refer the matter as above to the said woman, and learn from her whether she is willing to be satisfied with these terms. If not, what more she claims, and with what she would be contented, and in addition, whether she would be willing to part from her child.

December 3.—Heard the report of the Clerk of Court on his conference with the commissioners of the son of the late Baron Buccleuch, formerly Colonel of a Scottish regiment in the service of these Lands, and with the mother of the bastard child of the said Baron by her. In satisfaction of all said mother's claims for her own support and that of the said child, she asked one thousand guilders ready money, and four hundred guilders yearly, whereupon the foresaid commissioners offered her only six hundred guilders ready money and two hundred guilders yearly, and to relieve her from keeping the said child.

After deliberation their High Mightinesses concluded and resolved, that the said mother, for all her claims, is to receive eight hundred guilders in ready money once, and over and above that two hundred guilders yearly for her support, and besides that, two hundred guilders a year for the support of the said child, until by legal attestation from the city of Edinburgh, it shall be shown to their High Mightinesses that the said child shall have been adopted by the heir of the said Baron of Buccleuch and supported. On which the said two hundred guilders for the child here shall cease.

December 19.—A remonstrance handed in by the commissioners of the heir of the late Baron of Buccleuch was read. And it was agreed that the Clerk of Court shall confer more particularly with the same, in order to understand the remon-

strant's intentions and say to him, that their High Mightinesses do not desire in this matter in any way to use their authority, but that the remonstrant shall have to give his consent to the offers made, as well in regard to the principal, as in respect to the woman or mother of the child, willingly, or refuse to do so.

1616, *January* 31.—On the petition of Delia Botlers, requesting that it may please their High Mightinesses to increase the 200 guilders assigned to her as a provision by way of deduction from the claims of the late Baron of Backlough by such additional sum as may enable her both to satisfy her creditors and to live on in this cold winter: it is resolved that the petitioner must be satisfied in the meantime with the said 200 guilders, on the understanding that her creditors may not seize her goods.

April 30.—On the request of Miss Delia Butler, praying that the child the deceased Colonel Buccleuch had by her be left in her charge, and that for the support of herself and the foresaid child, the resolution made some time ago by their High Mightinesses regarding this matter be allowed to take effect. After deliberation it is understood that they will not permit the child to go to the heir of the foresaid Colonel Buccleuch, but let it remain with the petitioner on the footing of the foresaid resolution.

July 16.—To Delia Butler, by whom the late Colonel Buccleuch had a child, there was granted for her support, and that of the child, fifty guilders ready money, and fifty guilders more within the next six months, by way of deduction from the arrears of the foresaid colonel.

July 22.—On the request of Hans van Thielburch, praying for payment of the three thousand guilders, which the late Baron of Buccleuch is justly indebted to him for moneys advanced and services. But a resolution as to that is postponed till the transaction commenced with the heir of the foresaid Lord Baron shall be concluded.

November 1.—In consideration of the coming cold winter, a further sum of 150 guilders is voted to Delia Botlaers on the same conditions as before; this sum to be deducted from the arrears still due by the country to Baron Bachlough.

1617, *May* 10.—To Miss Butler on the foregoing footing is yet granted 100 guilders once, for the support of her little daughter, which she had by the late Baron of Buccleuch.[1]

Noel de Caron to the States-General.
(Oct. 19, 1617. Rec. Nov. 14.)

Diplomatic Correspondence.

My Lords,—Annexed is an autograph letter of His Majesty, in which he requests me, on his behalf, to direct the attention of your High Mightinesses to the case of the Baron of Buccleuch, in order that he be paid the money, which the State owes to his late father. In effect, the king charged his secretary Lord Winwood to state, that it seems the said Buccleuch would be willing to give an acquittance and full discharge for the debts your High Mightinesses owe to him in consequence of the circumstances referred to, provided he be appointed a colonel in their service; which the king thinks can be done, without further expense to the country, if an agreement could be made with Colonel Brock, whom the king considers will now be pretty well up in years;[2] and that it is time he should retire from war. In addition, he should receive a certain honorary pension, to be provided for Colonel Brock by the said Buccleuch. The king is of opinion that this matter would be speedily settled if you would arrange matters with the said Brock. The king, with the same end in view, will write to his ambassador Carleton, in order that on the king's behalf he may do all he can. I willingly recommend this proposal to the consideration of your High Mightinesses, His Majesty being so much interested in the matter, as the said Lord Winwood informed me. I have also written to his Excellency who, I suppose, will also communicate with your High Mightinesses in order that the matter may be so arranged as to be of the greatest service and profit to the land. Truly, my lords, the said Buccleuch is a young nobleman, brave and well fitted for

[1] It is interesting to note the ultimate fortune of the child who had been the subject of so much application and negotiation. 'Jeane Scot, natural sister of Earl Walter, called by Satchells "Holland's Jean," married Robert Scott of Quhitslaid, who, on 8th November 1633, granted a discharge to Earl Walter for 8000 merks of tocher with her.'—Sir William Fraser's *Scotts of Buccleuch*.

[2] Colonel Brog was nevertheless able to render good service for nineteen years more.

war. I well know that in attending to this matter, your High Mightinesses will perform an act of great friendship to His Majesty. NOEL DE CARON.

MONSIEUR CARON,—Encores que ie vous aye souvent reccomandé l'affaire du Sieur de buccleugh pour interceder aveques messieurs les estats, qu'il puisse avoir quelque satisfaction d'eux, pour les debtes deues à son père; si est ce que ie n'en ay encores receu aucune responce, afin donques que vous puissies scavoir, aveques quelle instance ie demande que iustice luy soit faicte aveques toute faveur et bonne expédition en ce cas, ie vous envoye ce mot escripnt de ma main propre, remectant à secretaire Winwoode de vous informer plus particulierement sur ce subiect et vous recomendant à la protection du tout puissant.—Vostre bon amy, JAQUES R.

November 4.—The Messrs. Goch, Bouchorst, and Vernau report that they have intimated orally to the Lord Ambassador Carleton the conditions on which their High Mightinesses have agreed to grant the requested deed of expectancy to the Earl of Buccleuch, as to which also some argument took place between both parties. It was thought proper, before resolving further thereon, that a concept of the deed or resolution be drawn up in writing, that afterwards it may again be read over here, and checked in such a way as may be found necessary. It is to contain the complete discharge of all his claims on the Land on account of his father's services, and otherwise, the payment of his father's debts here in this Land not excepted. The missive of the King of Great Britain was read over, dated from Belvoir, the 5th August last, in favour of the Lord Earl of Buccleuch, in order that he be satisfied—whether in ready money, or by his being provided with some honourable charge in the service of the Land. And looking closely at all that had been previously done in this matter, it was found that their High Mightinesses have always shown themselves inclined to the completion of the matter aforesaid, and that it was owing to the said Earl of Buccleuch himself that the affair had not terminated sooner, he not having been willing to accept the equitable offers made.

Out of regard to the strong recommendations of His Majesty, and the good qualities of the foresaid earl—about whom their High Mightinesses have certainly had other good reasons to

excuse them—and in order yet to show their inclination to and affection for the good qualities of the said earl, and how much they esteem what His Majesty has been pleased to recommend about the matter through the foresaid missive and His Majesty's ambassador, also through their own commissioners who were last in England, it was resolved that the foresaid Lord Earl of Buccleuch be granted satisfaction in one of the said two ways: either, one way, by granting him a deed to the effect that he shall have the first colonelcy that shall become vacant among the troops of the Scottish nation, and in case, before a vacancy occurs, a new regiment of Scots should be raised, that the same shall be done under him.[1] But it is to be understood that in accepting this he is to renounce the other proposed way of satisfaction,[2] and to resign all his claims on the Land, their High Mightinesses understanding it to be just and in order that the large debts due by his late father, the Baron of Buccleuch, to his solicitor, here in this Land, be paid by the said earl.[3]

The 'Acte Expectatif.'

1620, *July* 14.—The States-General of the United Netherlands, on account of the earnest prescript of His Majesty the King of Great Britain, and the very serious recommendation of Lord Carleton, His Majesty's ambassador, also in consideration of the merits of the late Lord Baron of Buccleuch, and the good qualities of the present Earl of Buccleuch, have, in conformity with their High Mightinesses' resolution of the 4th November last, and the declaration regarding it, drawn up in writing, by the said Earl of Buccleuch, in his missive of the 19th May last, with the said Earl of Buccleuch therein agreed, and we do agree by these presents to this Act of Expectancy ('Acte

[1] *i.e.* that the colonelcy of the new regiment should be given him.

[2] This apparently refers to a money settlement.

[3] It will be seen that when the colonelcy of his father's regiment fell vacant, by Sir Robert Henderson's death at Bergen-op-Zoom, it was given, not to the earl, but to Sir Francis Henderson, the next in command, the reason probably being the critical condition of military affairs, and the necessity for appointing an officer of experience. It was not till 1629, when the States reorganised their Scottish troops in three instead of two regiments, that the earl received a command, being then appointed to the new regiment. As to his services, see Sir William Fraser's *Scotts of Buccleuch*, vol. i. p. 253.

Expectatif'), to wit, that his lordship shall have conferred on him by their High Mightinesses the first colonelcy that shall fall vacant among the troops of the Scottish nation, here in the Land on military duty and service.

Or if, before a vacancy occur, a new Scottish regiment be raised, such levy shall be made by his lordship's person—all without guile.

Drawn up at a meeting of their said High Mightinesses, the States-General, under their seal, signed, and the signature of the Lord Recorder, on the 14th day of the month July, in the year 1620.

The Earl of Buccleuch's letter of thanks. (July 16.)

Haults et puissants Seigneurs,—La favorable résolution de voz Seigneuries, touchant mon affaire sur la recommandation de Sa Ma^té^ m'a donné l'occasion et la hardiesse de vous addresser ceste lettre icy. Le contenu est seulement de vous rendre grâces en toute humilité pour la faveur qu'il a pleu à Voz Seigneuries monstrer en mon endroict et vous résoudre[1] que je suis content d'accepter et embracer la susd^e^ résolution avec les conditions y comprinses. Suppliant cependant tres humblement Voz Seig^ries^ de vouloir donner vr̃e Acte la dessus, par quel moyen voz Seig^ries^ couppants chemin à tous aultres se dépescheront de leur importunité et me encourageront de poursuivre alargiement là dessus de l'envie que j'ay tousjours eu de vous servir. Car ce n'este pas l'avarice qui m'a poussé à cecy, mais seulement (com̃e j'ay tantost dict) l'affection que ie porte au service de voz Seigneuries et le désir que j'ay d'estre employé en quelque chose honorable en la guerre. Ce n'est pas ma faulte que voz Seigneuries n'ayent entendu de moy, il y a longtemps, car je n'ay jamais receu advertissement de vostre résolution, que depuis ces quinze jours; aultrement j'eusse esté narri[2] d'avoir différé sy longtemps de donner à voz Seig^ies^ notice de mon intention. A raison de quoy plaist à voz Seigneuries de m'excuser, ainsy laissant de vous importuner d'avantage pour cest fois icy, mais vous baisant tres humblement les mains, je demeure de vos Seigneuries le très humble et très loyall serviteur (et estoit soubzsigné) Bukileughe.

De ma maison le 29^e^ du May 1620.

[1] Répondre (?)

[2] Marri (?)

V

RESOLUTIONS, REPORTS, REQUESTS, RECOMMENDATIONS, AND OTHER ENTRIES.

Letter of King James I.

Recommendation of Thomas Cumyn, student of theology.

(Dat. March 11, 1612. Rec. Octob. 24, 1613.)

Letters and Requests to the Council of State.

Haults et puissants Seigneurs noz bons amys et alliez,—Ce pauvre Gentilhom̃e Thomas Cumyn, filz du feu Guillaume Cumyn, Lieutenant d'une compagnie de gens de cheval, lequel a esté tué en vostre service, ayant luy aussy en sa première ieunesse suivy les armes, s'est depuis peu adonné aux estudes et princip[t] de la Théologie, en laquelle il a si bien employé le temps qu'il désire sur toutes choses poursuivre si heureux com̃encements en cas qu'il y soit encouragé par suffeditation de moyens à ce convenables. Or d'autant qu'il a esté né soubz vrē obéissance bien que des parens Escossais et com̃encé ses estudes en voz païs, où il désire les continuer, nous avons à sa tres humble requeste trouvé bon le vous recom̃ander et vous prier que le vueillez fournir de quelque appointement qui le puisse encourager à l'achèvement de ses estudes, à ce qu'il se rende capable de servir vrē Estat où il aura esté eslevé, et l'Eglise de Dieu y establie.—Vrē bien bon amy, Jaques R.

Escript à Thetford, le xi[e]. jour de Mars 1612.

Provincial States of Utrecht to the Council of State.

(April 9, 1612.)

My Lords,—In reference to the matter made known to us by Alexander Wishart, Captain of the Cavalry Company here in garrison, regarding which he complained, and made a request to us, your Honours will learn the particulars thereof from the annexed document. And since we consider his request reasonable and to the interest of the Provinces, and

particularly serviceable to this place, we could not refuse to recommend his request to the consideration of your Lordships, since otherwise the authority of the magistracy and of the commanders and officers of the army would be brought into utter contempt, and might cause serious detriment to the Provinces.—Herewith, etc., the Deputies of the States of the Province of Utrecht.

At Utrecht, the 9th April 1612.

To their Lordships the Deputies of the three Provincial States of Utrecht.

Alexander Wishart, Captain of a Cavalry Company, in the service of the States-General of the United Netherlands, begs with all due reverence to offer the following remonstrance. That he, the remonstrant, never gave any one belonging to his company the slightest reason to revolt against his Excellency, or take part in any plot or unlawful gathering. Although a good number of them lately chose to hold a meeting in this city, in a certain yard near the Green Horse Belt. The one summoning the other there, and forming a plot of this nature, that a certain number of them had their opinions and claims set down in a written document which they signed, as will appear from the enclosed copy of their request. And since the same has a taste of sedition and disobedience, and also was entered on without notice to their Lordships, the Governor, the Commisary Lemm, or any of their lawful superiors, and as they did not pursue their claim by way of remonstrance; and such insubordination being not only injurious to this city and garrison, but also to this company, besides being of disadvantage to the Provinces. Therefore he, the remonstrant, would like to discharge some of the ringleaders from his company. But he would prefer to do so, with the cognisance and previous knowledge of their Lordships, the Councillors of State. Therefore he humbly begs your Lordships will be pleased to grant him your favourable recommendation to said Councillors of State, in order that his Excellency may be permitted to dismiss six or seven individuals, and at once receive an equal number in their place, etc.

COPY

To the Governor and Council of War in Utrecht.

We the undersigned, all of us troopers of the Company of Alexander Wishart, humbly pray that your Lordship, the Governor and the Council of War will be pleased to pardon the liberty we have taken in approaching you with our claims, as set forth in the request we have signed. It happened through our ignorance, and we are heartily sorry to have given occasion to my Lord Governor and Council of War to be incensed at our conduct; sorry likewise that we revolted against our captain. In all this we petition you graciously to pardon us. By doing so, etc.

Signed by twenty-two both in marks and names, and presented in the Council of War on the 28th March 1612.

Signed after comparison with his private copy, and presented at the time above mentioned. This copy is found therewith to agree, by me, the Magistrate. (signed) D. VAN LEEUWEN.

Companies of Captains Douglas and Balfour.

To My Lords the Council of State. (April 25, 1612.)

May it please your Lordships to receive the rolls, which I herewith forward to you, of the musters by me carried out, of the company of Captain Douglas (leaving for Grave) and likewise of the company of Captain Balfour—exchanged[1] by the Commissary Corens; both being fine bodies of men, but armed after the manner of their nation, contrary to the resolution passed some time ago by your Lordships, regarding the arming of the soldiers. Moreover, I find daily that with increasing frequency the captains grant leave to the majority of their soldiers to go out and work far and near; yea, many remain absent from their respective garrisons during the night, making provision for their watches (so they say), which, if it happened to a small number, it might, I think, in present circumstances, be tolerated for a time, so that they may—living

[1] Exchanged by Commissary Corens. Perhaps, *by alternation with Commissary Corens, i.e.* taking my alternate turn of mustering it. Literally it is, by Commissary Corens brought in exchange, alternation.—Translator's Note.

being so dear in the district—better support themselves in the service. But since it has gone beyond all bounds, and takes place without any order, particularly during the daytime, whereby posts are left almost deserted, as your Lordships may observe from the enclosed list of the review held by me in the afternoon at Ysendÿck, as a matter of duty, I cannot refrain from acquainting your Lordships with this, that you may give due attention to it. And that your Lordships be the more certain of what has been said I shall detail the circumstances of the said review, or in case any captain should complain of being circumvented or improperly taken by surprise. At the muster in the St. Cataleynen redoubt on the 20th inst., in order to keep the surrounding garrisons at their posts, I at the same time advised the commandant in Ysendÿck of the musters in such a manner that Captain W. Wabbe (then in command in the absence of Mons^{r} d'Hautheÿn) received my letter in good time, as he acknowledges, between 10 and 11 o'clock forenoon, shortly after which I arrived and commenced by reviewing the company of Captain Balfour in the Jouffrouwen redoubt, it being about three in the afternoon when I commenced to review the said company. May I add, my Lords (under correction), that I am of opinion there was ample time in the interval to have got more men together had they not been scattered far and wide, working here and there, some of them I tell you usually working at a distance of two or three miles from their garrison. These I pretended to discharge, not choosing to have information of their exodus from the garrison. But by reasons given I wished first to advise your Lordships of the matter, that you may be pleased to instruct me what course I should take; at the same time praying that it may please your Lordships to write to the governor or the commanders respectively on the subject, and let them keep their men better together, so as to be always properly ready for muster. From which much good advantage will result, and confusion and misunderstanding be prevented. . . . Herewith humbly recommending myself to the good grace of your Lordships, I pray God, etc. —Your Lordships humble faithful servant,

D. van Bombergen.

At Sluys, 25th April 1612.

Annexa (in original Dutch).

Reveue van den Garnisoene binnen Ysendÿck, op den xx Aprilis 1612.

De compa^{ie} van mons^{r} d'Hautheyn.		
Musquetten, . .	14	
Spiessen, . . .	22	
	36	coppen.
De compa^{ie} van den Cap^{n} Yerhorst.		
Musquetten, . .	21	
Spiessen, . . .	15	
	36	coppen.
De compa^{ie} van den Drossaert Straelen.		
Musquetten, . .	22	
Spiessen, . . .	15	
	37	coppen.
De compa^{ie} van den Cap^{n} Livingston.		
Musquetten, . .	25	
Spiessen, . . .	21	
	46	coppen.
De compa^{ie} van den Cap^{n} Wabben.		
Musquetten, . .	22	
Spiessen, . . .	22	
	44	coppen.
De compa^{ie} van wÿlen den Cap^{n} Ram.		
Musquetten, . .	10	
Spiessen, . . .	16	
	26	coppen.

Records of States-General.

1613, *December* 31.—There was read the advice of the Council of State, dated the 19th inst.—on the request of Robert Henderson, and also on the resolution before mentioned, of their High Mightinesses—to the effect that they are of opinion that the petitioner's pay as colonel ought to commence from this date onward. That the States of Zeeland have shown that they are satisfied to accept that he is to

receive his pay upon their repartition, according to what (in accordance with the contents of said resolution, viz. of the 28th April 1612) he himself has declared; on condition that the Lords of Zeeland also further agree to give him said pay. In addition, said pay of colonel is to be kept at three hundred guilders a month, as it is appointed also in the State of War, and he is to be satisfied therewith like other colonels, particularly of our own nation. But a resolution on the matter is postponed until the consent of the Province be examined, and it be understood what the Council of State think of it.

To the Council of State. (Jan. 7, 1614.)

Letters and Requests to the Council of State.

My Lords,—There was handed to me by the bearer of this a certain missive from your Lordships concerning the request of the creditors of Cavalry Captain Arskyn.[1] From which I understand that your Lordships were informed by these creditors, that I out of eighteen whole months' pay received by me since the said captain left have retained under name of my own pay 5400 guilders belonging to the creditors, and that I allowed myself to be induced by the cornet of the said company to let said sum together with further sums the creditors had a claim on out of the arrears of pay be forwarded to the said cornet, in payment of what the captain is said to have promised him for the transport of the company. As to this, I most humbly cannot withhold from your Lordships that as regards the money which I received from the States of Vriesland, the long continued bad payments have obliged me to spend for the support of the company, not only the said sum, but above ten thousand guilders more (which I advanced from my own pocket, and negotiated for on my credit), but for which said company would necessarily have dwindled away and fallen into confusion. Besides, in all cases where a liquidation and full payment of a company's pay is made there has always been an opinion prevalent that the money should go to the creditors, and that they should get a share in some way due to them on the strength of the resolution of their High Mightinesses the States-General and by

[1] See also *supra*, p. 215.

injunctions given to the captain. It never occurred to me that the cornet or anybody else should in the slightest degree be favoured to the injury of the creditors. And since mention is made in your Lordships' letter, that the creditors claimed a right over the sum of three hundred guilders per month, I cannot omit humbly to recall to the recollection of your Lordships that the resolution of the States-General, dated the 3rd November 1610, is to the effect that the captain may pay said debts, with the half of his pay, as paid monthly, retaining the other half for his maintenance; and in such a manner that on no account shall more than two hundred guilders a month of the captain's pay be allowed to the creditors. Besides, in addition to this, the captain had yet assigned out of the other half to Bartholomew Reminger the sum of twelve hundred and seventy-six guilders, payable at the rate of a hundred guilders a month, which sum aforesaid of two hundred guilders a month, altogether amounting to twelve hundred and seventy-six guilders, I shall do all I can to pay as soon as the company receive payment of their arrears. But also out of what was left of the captain's pay I kept his horses and servants and cleared away divers other charges left by him. Also many difficulties occurred daily, because of these long-continued bad payments. I humbly pray herewith that your Lordships will not permit that any further deductions of the captain's pay [be made] beyond the said two hundred guilders a month, together amounting to twelve hundred and seventy-six guilders, since I could not otherwise make ends meet; and then my faithfulness, if I have proved it to the company during the time of these bad payments, would be miserably rewarded.—Herewith, etc., your obedient and always willing servant,

(Signed) Thiman Vriese, *Secy.*

Datum Zwolle, the 7th January 1614.

(Jan. 31, 1614.)

My Lords,—I duly received the missive of your Lordships of 27th November last, with appended copy of the request, presented to you by Captain Wishart. In the missive you charge me to observe at the next inspection how many troopers in that company are badly mounted and personally unfit for the

public service. And to find out how long all such badly mounted and unfit troopers have been in the service, and to advise your Lordships, giving the names of said troopers. And in submitting my answer I cannot conceal from your Lordships that in pursuance of your instructions I did my duty in the matter, and by way of giving superabundant satisfaction to your Lordships, I did after the muster which took place on the 8th of this present month of January interrogate on oath all the officers of the said company, each one apart, whether they maintained daily the ordinary watch, and as to knowledge of fit and unfit among their troopers, whether they knew of any badly mounted men belonging to the company unfit for the public service, other than those presented to me at the place of muster, and that they were bound in the interest of the land to give their names and surnames. Whereupon I could discover nothing except that accidents had happened to one or two of their horses, and that they had bought young ones instead, which, within the year, would be fit enough for the war. Item, two or three of the horses are a little under the size, but suitable and well handled. Moreover, there are also two old troopers, one of whom is maimed in the leg, and the other quite an old man. They are both old soldiers, the elder having honourably served those Lands for more than twenty-eight years in succession; and because of his years is unable to bear arms. I leave his case to the discretion of your Lordships. This advice may be of use, that as the captain has absolute command over his company he must know his troopers better than I do. Your Lordships might be pleased to charge him to reform his company in such a manner as he shall consider he is responsible for in the public service. On these, my arguments above detailed, may it please your Lordships (taking them in good part) to dispose of the matter and command me according to your good pleasure.—Herewith, etc., (Signed) Joerien van Lennip.

Utrecht, the 31st January 1614.

(April 9, 1614.)

My Lords,—In pursuance of the missive of your Lordships, forwarded to me with the enclosed request of Captain Wishart,

In presence of the said Captain Wishart, I paid careful attention during my last muster of the 4th inst. to the qualifications and fitness of the cavalry and horses, and found among those hereinafter described, persons having small but well-trained horses. And although I sharply charged each of them separately to get themselves better mounts against the next muster, my orders have not as yet been carried out, for the reason they offer in excuse that they have not means to purchase proper horses; and they asked three months, which the captain granted them, so as not to ruin them. And by desire of your Lordships the names of the persons with small horses are given as follows: Jan Banckerts, Jacob de Heuvel, Jan Michel, Jone Allen, one among them named Egbert Segerssoon is to be excepted, as to be exact he has a young unfit horse with a spavin on both hind legs and I discharged him till further orders from your Lordships. Besides there is a certain Evert Gevers, who has been absent more than six weeks beyond his leave, contrary to my instructions, of all which I could not but inform your Lordships. Requesting respectfully thereupon your Lordships' advice, according to which I shall be regulated. Praying etc., Your Worshippful Mightinesses obedient servant,

JOERIEN VAN LENNIE.

Utrecht, 19th April 1714, new style.

Resolutions of States-General.

1614, *October* 29.—Read the advice of the Council of State, of date the 25th inst., regarding the request of the widow of Captain Berckley, to the effect that she cannot rest her case in particular on the current pay of his company, inasmuch as said company, during his period of service was all along on the footing of payment by the States of Holland. And after consultation the request of the petitioner was refused.

November 1.—The widow of the late Captain Berckley and present wife of Bartholomew Donder, was granted out of commiseration for her present poor circumstances thirty guilders in all.[1]

Letters and Requests to the Council of State.

To the Council of State. (Feb. 27, 1615.)

MY LORDS,—As to what took place in the garrison here, between Jacques Nering, a soldier in Colonel Brogh's company

[1] See p. 211.

and Jan Davidts belonging to Captain Bredenrode's, your Lordships may ascertain from the request, which, with a similar missive to his Excellency, I have caused to be forwarded to you. In which affair, on the first complaint made by Captain Lieutenant Majoribank, commanding the company of Colonel Brogh, proceedings were carried so far that it came before the Council of War here. But the said Captain Lieutenant, well seeing that the request was not to the advantage of his soldiers, requested that a fuller inquiry be made before proceeding further, and also that meanwhile his wounded soldier be released in order to get himself cured of his several pitiable wounds and bruises; which requests were both granted on condition that the said Captain Lieutenant would stand bail and promise to deliver into custody at any time his soldier aforesaid. Which promise the said Majoribank made, in the presence of a full meeting of the Council of War, and likewise Captain Bredenrode made along with him the same promise, on behalf of his soldiers.

Now whether any evil intention lurked under this I cannot say, except that what followed may well awaken suspicion; if one considers what was afterwards committed on the person of Jan Davidts by the foresaid Jacques Nering as to which the foresaid inquiry will give your Lordships fuller information. And be it noted, the said Jan Nering has on account of that become a fugitive, the said Captain Lieutenant having become answerable for his person. And so (after previous consultation with some of the Lords of States here) I could not but inform you about this—as it is a matter fraught with evil consequences. And I fear, as the said Majoribanks stated to me, that further troubles may arise between the two companies aforesaid. Therefore I request the advice and commands of your Lordships about this, how to guide myself further therein, both in regard to the said Jacques Nering and to Asbal Flack, who appears to have excited himself gambling, and on that account sits in prison, as is indeed noted in the foresaid request. With which I, etc. Your Hon. Mightinesses humble servant, TH. OGLE.

Actum Utrecht, the 27th February 1615.

To the Potent Lords of the Council of State of the United Netherlands.

Robert Baelze, sergeant of the company of Colonel Henderson, begs most humbly to inform you, that he, the petitioner, has necessary matters of business to transact in England, of such a nature, that he has got leave from his —— for the period of the ensuing three months, in order to attend to his affairs; therefore he humbly prays that your Lordships may be pleased to grant him leave of absence to England for the period of three months.

To the Council of State. (June 19, 1615.)

High and Mighty Lords,—Since my lords the states of Stadt en Landen, after the death of Captain Norman Bruce, appointed in his stead as captain the honourable and doughty George Coutts, and as yet have presented him with no formal commission, or even administered to him the oath; we beg therefore, in the most friendly way, that your High Mightinesses will order a regular commission to be drawn up, in favour of the said Captain Coutts, and administer to him the oath in order that this having been done, he may rejoin his company, as soon as possible.—Herewith, etc. Your High Mightinesses good friends, The Deputies of the City of Groningen and surrounding districts.

At Groningen, the 19th June 1615.

Letter from the Scottish Privy Council. (Aug. 2, 1615.)

Diplomatic Correspondence, 1615-1617.

Illustriss. Genero. Ampliss. Digniss. Domini,—Georgius Bothvellus, centurionum unus Legionis Scoticae, apud vos, vestro commeatu, ac licentia, huc ad nos, non ita pridem, instructus redijt: negotiorum, ac rerum causa Illustris ac generosi Domini Joannis Bothvelli, fratris sui, Baronis Sanctae crucis, Senatoris, ac consiliarij Regni hujus nuper defuncti. Quia vero, illa ipsa familia, resque, ac negotia, administratore altero ejusdem fratre, Francisco Bothvello, qui non ita pridem fato functus est, in discrimen ac periculum, ejus obitu, tale deducta sunt, ut non parvum familiae, nomini ac loco, quem ipse inter pares

Regni sustinuit, incommodum minitentur: nisi hoc unico fratre superstite supremo stirpis illius azylo refocillentur. Cujus etiam iudicio, instructione, ac testimonio, reliqui Regni Senatores, tam gravissimarum quaestionum examinandarum, inter vasallos defuncti causa, quam restituendarum difficultatum ac disceptationibus forensibus, quae jam inter ipsos agitantur, non alio, quam illo assertore ac vindice uti decreverunt. Aequum nobis visum est, hisce literis intercessionis, prorogationem commeatus, a vobis concessi, ejus nomine, ab Illustris. Gener. Ampliss. Dignitatibus vestris enixe poscere. Vosque amice rogare, ut hanc Centurioni vestro a militia tantisper emorandi licentiam indulgeatis, ac tempus commeatus, in commodum ac conveniens aliquod rebus tantis peragendis (quae non nisi ipso praesente, ac assertore expediri possunt) spacium prorogetis. Quibus facile, et familiae suae, quae unice rebus vestris semper addicta fuit, et nobis, ac controversijs tam intricatis dirimendis, provideatur. Quia vero Capitaneus ipse sub tessera, ac partitione stipendiaria, Illustrium Ordinum Hollandiae hactenus fuit, pariter obtestamur, ut harum literarum lectionis, ipsi Illustrissimi Hollandiae Ordines participes, nullum praejudicium, ex tam legittimis emorandi ausis, ipsi, aut centuriae suae militibus, fieri patiantur. Rebus suis hic peractis (nisi vestrarum rerum graviora, repentinum quid suggerant, ut vestris monitorijs evocandus sit) cum nostris commendatitijs quasi rerum peracturum indicibus, ad vos, quam citissime fieri possit remeabit. Si qua vero in re parem, aut majorem benevolentiae significationem. Amplitudinibus vestris edere poterimus, id sedulo, et lubentissime praestituros nos, sancte pollicemur. Datum Edenburgi secundo die mensis Augusti Anno Dm̄ 1615.

Vestris Illustr. Gener. ac Ampliss. Dignitatibus addictissimi,

Dunfermeljus Cancell^{r}.
Binning.
Jo. Prestoun.
Ackburn [*sic*].
Alex. Hay.
Oliphant.
Murray.

[Indorsed]: Illustriss. Genero. Ampliss. ac Digniss. Dominis

D. Confoederatarum Belgij Provinciarum Ordinibus Amicis nobis syncere dilectis.

Resolutions of States-General.

1616, *January* 23.—On the petition of Jacob Scott, a nobleman at present in the company of his Excellency Count Henry of Nassau, it is resolved to increase the petitioner's pay extraordinary of six guilders per month (so as to increase it), from this date to twelve guilders per month, in the place of John Atkinson, who died at Alkmaar before Christmas last, and who was sergeant of the company of Captain Cathcart.

To the Council of State. (Feb. 6, 1616.)

Letters and Requests to the Council of State.

. . . Which muster I carried out with such diligence and care as was in any wise possible for me to do, in order to prevent any frauds which might operate against the interests of the country. And I found said companies in such condition and of such strength as your Lordships will learn from the said rolls. And in pursuance of your commission I passed none among the French, English and Scotch soldiers, except those belonging to their own respective nations; at which the captains have bitterly complained, and requested me to state in a note, on the margin of the roll, how many Germans were present; how long they had served; and how much they were paid weekly. (Signed) Van der Mijll.

Recommendation by the King of the wife and the children of the late Colonel Edmond (1616).

Diplomatic Correspondence, England, 1615-1617.

Messieurs et compères,—Encores que ce soit chose superflue que de vous recõmender les hõmes de bien ou de vous ramentevoir leurs bons services, mesmes après tant de preuves de vostre bonne volonté envers toutes sortes des gens de vertu, si est ce que la bonne mémoire du feu Colonel Edmond nous a donnée à cest'heure l'occasion de vous recõmender sa femme et enfantz. Et bien que nous nous asseurons que les mérites de feu son mary et sa propre vertu soyent bastantz de la faire obtenir de vous chose quelleconque qui ne soit pas par trop desraisonnable, néantmoins nous vous avons bien voulu prié de la respecter et luy donner telle récompense pour le soulage-

ment de soy et ses enfantz que vous donnez aux autres de sa reng et qualité. Ce que nous asseurantz que vous ferez et tant plus volontiers pour l'amour de nous, Prions Dieu, Messieurs et compères, vous tenir tousiours en sa saincte garde.

Escripte à nostre palais de Grenewich le xxii [?] de May 161 [?].

[*N.B.* The date is obscure; the year probably 1616.]

To the States-General.

Records of States-General.

My Lords,—Since the widow of Captain Ramsay has requested letters of attestation from us as to the conduct of her late husband, we are bound to declare that the said captain, during the years that he remained here in garrison, conducted himself very well, was honourable and burgherlike in his dealings, and maintained as good order and discipline in his company as any of the captains of this garrison. Indeed his death was very much lamented by all the burghers and soldiers. Wherefore we are moved humbly to pray your High Mightinesses that the said widow and children may find grace and favour in your eyes, and that said children, being three sons and a daughter, may be reared for the service of the country, in order that they may follow the footsteps of such a brave and virtuous father, etc.,

Burgomasters and Aldermen of the City of Breda.

Advice of the Council of State regarding a demand for increase of pay by Colonel Henderson.

High and Powerful Lords,— . . . That Colonel Henderson insists on an increase of pay is doubtless more in order that he may not be paid less than another of the same standing, than that a company, and such good pay as three hundred guilders a month, should be considered too little. Therefore our opinion is (under correction) that it would be better, money being so scarce at present, to reduce the pay of the other colonels to three hundred guilders, rather than to increase the pay of the said Henderson to the level of the others, to, at least, four hundred guilders a month. So we advised your High Mightinesses in this matter on the 6th April 1613, though it pleased your High Mightinesses to do otherwise.

The Hague, the 7th February 1617.

To the Council of State. (Oct. 17, 1617.)

Records of Council of State.

But certain companies are still mixed with many Germans. The French companies again begin to receive some people from France, but they are persons without experience, like those to be found among the recruits which the English and Scottish captains received.

Moyens plus expédients pour le recouvrement de noz soldatz fugitifs.

1618 [without date].

Diplomatic Correspondence, England, 1618-1620.

En premier son Ex^ce^ donnera s'il luy plaist un Acte à chacun Colonel pour en vertu d'iceluy requérir du Commissaire, fourier, ou aultre Officier de chacune ville qui prennent congnoissance des soldatz entretenuz entre les Compaignies de leur garnison, les noms des Anglois qui y auront esté receuz depuis que l'armée des Estatz a esté en Campaigne.

Et qu'Iceluy Acte estant délivré par chacun Collonel à un ou plusieurs officiers de son Régiment pour faire recherche du leurs fugitifs, et iceulx estant trouvez en quelque ville ou lieu que ce soit, d'estre assistez des susdictz officiers et Magistrats de la garnison pour les faire mettre en prison ou lieu de sureté, en attendant la comodité de les faire mener en l'Armée.

Et d'aultant que la briefveté du temps requiert extrême diligence pour le renfort de noz trouppes, il seroit nécessoire (sy son Ex^ce^ l'a pour agréable) de faire délivrer à chacun Collonel plusieurs coppies du dit Acte, signées de sa main, pour employer en mesme temps plusieurs officiers en divers lieux, pour amener au iour nommé, s'il est possible tous les soldatz qui seront trouvez fugitifs.

Representation by Colonel Sir William Brog.

Requests to States-General.

To the High Mightinesses my Lords the States-General of the United Netherlands.—The faithful servant of your High Mightinesses, Sir William Brog, knight and colonel, hereby showeth with due reverence, that, according to military usages worthily observed in these Netherlands, all regiments were and still are provided with high officers, as colonel, lieutenant-colonel, sergeant-major, quartermaster and provost, as also was the case in the petitioner's regiment, some months ago now; that by the death of the late Lieu-

tenant-colonel Caddel his place has become vacant, and by the absence of Captain Gordon the post of sergeant-major is also vacant, and these two places, which are the highest and most important next to his own, ought justly by succession to pass to the two eldest captains in his said regiment, viz., Captain Allane Coutis and Captain Donaldsonne; so that he, the petitioner, hopes that his regiment will not be held in less esteem by your High Mightinesses than the others, and the more for this reason, because it is the first and oldest regiment of foreign nationality in these Netherlands, and has also rendered so many notable and excellent services, as the chronicles show, and as are still fresh in the memory of everybody, and will continue certainly to be so till death. And considering that it is highly necessary for the service of the country that the said places should again be filled by good and able men of quality and experienced persons, who have a just claim to them, and have merited them by their services, in order that they may thereby be encouraged, and that all good discipline may be maintained for the benefit of the country, and that the order in the petitioner's regiment may be improved, therefore the petitioner turns to your High Mightinesses, praying and requesting very humbly that it may please you, in consideration of the reasons before adduced, graciously to command that the said Captain Coets [Coutis] may be promoted to lieutenant-colonel, and Captain Donaldsonne to sergeant-major, in the petitioner's regiment, which they will repay by faithful obedience unto death, and will always try to do their duty to the petitioner respectfully. By doing so, etc., Sir William Brog.

Petition on behalf of Sir William Brog, Knight and Colonel.

As, on account of the large amount of public business, it has pleased your High Mightinesses only to examine and read, without deciding upon, the petition presented to your High Mightinesses by Sir William Brog, colonel, in which he requests that the two gentlemen, Captain Allane Coutis and Captain Donaldsone, may receive commissions for the posts of lieutenant-colonel and sergeant-major, in which they are daily employed, in order that they may discharge their duty with

more respect and authority; and as he, the petitioner, earnestly hopes that his regiment, as being the oldest in the service of the country, will not be held in less esteem than any of the others. So he very humbly prays that it may please your High Mightinesses provisionally to dispose favourably of his request concerning the commissions, till the situation of affairs permit negotiations about their maintenance; and that in the meantime all opportunities for serving the country may be taken advantage of in the best way.

Memorial for Captain Andrew Donaldson.

My Lords,—Whereas on the earnest petition of Colonel Sir William Brog, regarding the disposal of the places of lieutenant-colonel and sergeant-major in his regiment, it pleased your Lordships to look up the State of War, where it was found that only the sergeant-major of the said regiment is known there, which post Captain Andre Donaldsonne, as due to him by succession, has already filled for some years, at very great costs, for the service of the country, without as yet having received authority or commission from you, although he has made applications for it, and the matter has until now been postponed. Therefore he prays again very humbly your Lordships to promote him, the petitioner, to the said post of sergeant-major; hoping to render such services to the country in that position, that they will receive every benefit and satisfaction therefrom.

Petition of Captain James Seyton.

To their High Mightinesses the States-General of the United Netherlands

Captain James Seyton, lying in garrison at Utrecht, in the regiment of Colonel Brog, having served this country well and faithfully for the period of sixteen years, hereby showeth with all humility and respect, that he has learned that it pleased your Honours recently to grant a commission in favour of Captain Donaldson to hold the post and office of sergeant-major of the said regiment, notwithstanding his unfitness, for the said Donaldson had never previously in his life before been a soldier, until at the close of the siege of Sluys he brought over to this country from

England a company of infantry on his own responsibility (without having had any commission or command from your High Mightinesses, his Excellency, or any other); but, on the contrary, had been scraping a livelihood by mechanical traffic, as the sale of hosiery and suchlike wares, at Flushing and elsewhere, where the best markets were. And during all the time that he has held a commission as captain, he has never been face to face with the enemy nor been in action, except lately before the town and at the capture of Gulick; which post aforesaid, and the office of major, should certainly (under correction) be required and demanded to be filled by an abler person, and one more practised or experienced in warfare and military affairs than the said Donaldson, and it was not in any way his due (I say nothing about some pecuniary conditions, which caused him to be recommended for the post by his aforesaid colonel); and because he never allowed the flag of any regiment to be carried in his company, except only since the siege of Gulick. So, on account of this the remonstrant, out of zeal for the service for the Land, has recourse to you, humbly praying and making request that it may please your High Mightinesses favourably to consider what has been stated, and to fill the said place with some able, fit, qualified and experienced soldier and officer. Not that the petitioner is ostentatiously offering himself for the appointment, but your High Mightinesses may be pleased, with the advice of his Excellency, to take such measures that the said regiment and the land may be well and properly served. Inasmuch as there are in said regiment enough brave, efficient and qualified persons available; by doing which, etc., J. Seytonn.

To their High Mightinesses the States-General of the United Netherlands

Captain James Seyton, in the regiment of Colonel Brogh, hereby showeth with all humility and reverence, that he, the petitioner, having lately presented a petition regarding the post and office of sergeant-major in the said regiment, and being still concerned about it, by reason of the notable injury which is happening and may happen to the said regiment through the want of brave and experienced officers;

therefore he, the petitioner, turns to your High Mightinesses, humbly praying and beseeching that it may please you to appoint to the said post (with the consent of his Excellency) a qualified, thoroughly experienced and brave person, to the end that the service of the country generally, and the commands of his Excellency regarding the said regiment, may be properly carried out and executed. By doing this, etc.,

J. Seyton.

To their High Mightinesses, the States-General of the United Netherlands.

Your faithful and humble servant, Sir Robert Hindersoun, colonel of a regiment of Scottish Infantry, showeth with humility and reverence that he, the petitioner, having served in these Netherlands for the time of twenty-four consecutive years in one grade of service after another, was finally by the kind favour of your High Mightinesses promoted in January of the year 1612, with a commission to be colonel, in the place of the late Lord of Backluge, having also served since that time till February 5th of the year 1614, in the said position and also in that of lieutenant-colonel, without receiving any pay except only a compliment considerately presented by your High Mightinesses, with which also he, the petitioner, is satisfied. Thus, though the petitioner's predecessor in said office received monthly till his death the sum of five hundred Carolingian guilders, and though likewise every colonel of the English and Scottish nation in the Land's service earns no less monthly than four hundred Carolingian guilders, yet the petitioner himself from that date till now has received no more than three hundred Carolus guilders monthly. Wherefore, the petitioner also presented several petitions to your High Mightinesses, and humbly requested that it might please you to increase his pay by the said one hundred guilders per month, and thus to treat him with consideration as all the other colonels of his nationality are treated ; and on all these petitions, the last of which was presented more than six months ago, your High Mightinesses have come to no other decision than that the petitioner should have patience for some time still, which hitherto has been the case with him. Therefore he has recourse again to

your High Mightinesses, praying and requesting very humbly that it may please you, in consideration of the reasons given and the continual kind considerateness always shown to all old and faithful servants of the country, to increase the petitioner's pay as colonel by the said one hundred guilders per month, and he will try to repay such a favour with ever faithful service. Which doing, etc. R. Henrysoun.

To their High Mightinesses, the States-General of the United Netherlands.

The faithful servant of your High Mightinesses, Sir Francis Hindersonne, showeth with respect and reverence that he, the petitioner, having petitioned to receive payment of the arrears of his salary as lieutenant-colonel, it pleased you to refer his petition to their Lordships, the Council of State of the United Netherlands, for their advice, which they, in the accompanying closed missive, reserve for your High Mightinesses; and although their Lordships in such cases usually give advice to the greatest advantage and profit of the country generally, they, apparently, according to the aforesaid advice are of opinion that he, the remonstrant, should for all his claims be content with a third part of them, or thereabouts. Therefore he, the petitioner, prays very humbly that it may please your High Mightinesses to consider the multifarious and long-continued solicitations made by him about this matter, and the great and excessive expenses incurred, and in addition that he, in fulfilling the duties of his office has, like others of a similar calling and profession who were in receipt of full pay, given his services diligently and faithfully, and therefore hopes from the considerateness and prudence of your High Mightinesses to receive no less pay than they, and the more so, inasmuch as the money of his, the petitioner's, arrears of salary, as well as the salaries of all the other officers of the said regiment have been handed over and paid in full by the States of Zeeland, into the hands of the Receiver Guil. Doublet. Therefore his humble prayer is that it may please your High Mightinesses kindly to see to it that he, the petitioner, in regard to the above-mentioned unsatisfied claims, may receive satisfaction and be paid, [he] being always willing to repay such a favour by loyal thankfulness.

[In the margin the following resolution is written:]

It was ascertained from the clerk, Volbergen, what payments have been made to the petitioner by the States of Zeeland, and how much is still owing to him for his previous services. Actum March 11th, 1618.

Col. Fr. Henryson.

1618 [without date.][1]

Petitions to the Council of State.

My Lordis,—I have resseived your l. insinuation and perseived thair by that your l. ave bein hardlie informed and hichelie displesed about that infortunat maleur whitche against my intentione and to my great regreat is fallin out in my hand. I dout not bot your l. hes had the ful relation theirof boithe frome my frendis and enemeis thair are sudjet avenche as it is hapned to misconstrew my intentione. I have no thing to my defence and to beir me witnes save my consience whitche is abil to defend me against al malitious and senistreous reports whitche kan or has bein giffin your l. The fact I wil not excuse, seing it is hapned, bot my intentione to have done it as your l. hes resseved informatione I will intrait you not to beleif, for as god sal beir me witnes and as I houp to be saved, I nether menit the father who is hurt nor the sone who is deid any harme tho it be most malleruslie fallin otherwayis. I confes I gave the fellow who is deid twa strokkis, bot far frome my intentiones to have takin his lyf, the on was efter he had confessit to me to have bein commandit by his master to have so natoraslie thrie tymes as he confessit himself have takin my lyf he promisit to go allong to me and justifie the and out the dor he brok almost away out of my hand. Thair upon I gave him with the pommel of my sword, upon what part of the heid I know not, bot if it hes protured his deithe, never man died of one les strok, the other strok whitche is set doune in the informatione hi did hing out his toung at al whitche is and was efter he had cuttit me in the schin with a glas fit him than to weil he was als weil by al appirance as ani man could be, if he be deid of thois strokkis, it is best knowne to god for as I sal answer to him I kan not beleif it, always it was far frome my intentione he

[1] The original is in English, and difficult to decipher.

should have died. I houp your l. may easily forbidden if I had had any intentione to ave takin his lyf, I could have takin it in mane other fassione thein efter this kynd and seing that it is most malleruskie hapned to my extrem greif and kan not be amendit, I wil most ernestly intreat your l. favoribil censur for the offence and oversycht I have comitted to your l. and your justice, and think that it is only by ignorance that I have prosedit efter this fassione and not in contemp. I will most humblie intreat your l. that what ever ordur it pleseis you to take with me that ye wil be pleased to pardone the soldier who hes no wyl at al and who in manie sundrie occasions has done your l. good service sum of them 20, sum of them 30 yearis I wold have tune according to your directione bot I am nether weil nor hellger [?] and hes a greit manie affairis of my brothers children (who is leitly died) that I . . . presently in hand with, so that I wil intreat your l. favorabel permission. Intreatting most humblie your l. favorabil censur of al I kis in humilty your l. handis and sal as I have ever bein remayne, your l. most humbel and obedient servant. (s.) Franc. Henryson.

[In February 1618, Sir Dudley Carleton wrote to Secretary Naunton that Sir Francis Henderson's pardon had been granted by the States, on Carleton's promise in conformity with his Majesty's express letter of October last, for which 'he had so well prepared the matter before, by the means of the Prince of Orange, that it could not well receive a denial, though it was subject to many main difficulties.']

Captain Scott's Representation. (Feb. 15, 1618.)

My Lords,— . . . There was handed to me on this day, 11th of February, a certain copy of a suit, raised against me on the part of Isabella Moubray, soliciting a divorce, in respect of which your Lordships were pleased to order that eight days were to be given me to respond after the issue of the summons. But since, in absence of Captain Mackenzie, the command has been laid upon me, here in Hambach, to restrain the soldiers from all outbreaks and disorders, according to the decrees of your Lordships, and consequently, in his absence, it would be very bad in me to absent myself without commission from their Mightinesses. Therefore, with all due reverence, it is my

humble request that their Lordships will please to pay some little consideration to this, and arrest procedure in the case for a short time, till Captain Mackenzie shall have arrived here; and I shall then immediately appear in person, and defend myself by word of mouth, and make remonstrance to their Lordships about the injustice and abuse which hitherto has been done me; not doubting their benevolence, and the righteous judgment which their Mightinesses shall administer to me.—Herewith kissing their hands with all reverence, I remain meanwhile your Honourable Mightinesses obedient servant, ROBERT SCOTT.[1]

Actum Hambach, 15th February 1618.

Advice of the Council of State in the case of John Gordon.

Records of States-General.

HIGH MIGHTINESSES,—We do not know for what reasons ex-Captain Johan Gordon[2] was discharged with his company, since it happened by order of your High Mightinesses, who undoubtedly had reasons for it.

On the strength of the old services, which he mentions in his petition as having been done in Brabant by his late father,[3] he can make no claims on these united provinces, though it seems he mentions them, not with a view to receive any payment for them here, but in order that your High Mightinesses may be the more inclined to dispose favourably of his request. And for the services rendered to these Lands by the petitioner, he has been fully paid, so that (under correction) it is our opinion, you knowing as well as we do how little the Government can bear to be burdened with new salaries, that the answer to be given to the petitioner's request be: 'Patience.' Nevertheless, submitting ourselves to the wise and prudent discretion of your High Mightinesses.

The Hague, 17th February 1618.

Actum. (May 26, 1618.)

To their High Mightinesses the States-General of the United Netherlands.

Alexander Balcanquall humbly showeth that he, the

[1] See pp. 64, 65, 298; also, 230, note 2.

[2] The company was dismissed in 1609. See pp. 236, 243, and 253.

[3] See p. 47.

petitioner, having come over to this country from Scotland at the earnest request of the late Lord of Balclough, with him and his regiment, served in said regiment as surgeon for the space of over four years; and thereafter, on the death of Mr. Robert Beton, formerly pensioned surgeon of the older Scotch regiment of the late Colonel Edmont, who departed this life about the year 1607, the petitioner has from that time till now acted and been employed as doctor and surgeon-general of both the Scottish regiments. And now, the said Lord of Balclough having recently left for Scotland, the petitioner, by his advice, does not neglect to request of your High Mightinesses ordinary pay, such as the said Mr. Robbert Beton received in his lifetime. Further, the petitioner was advised, in case his request should not be disposed of by your High Mightinesses, to let the matter rest till his said lord and colonel should have returned from Scotland; while he, the petitioner, was, in consequence, biding his time, without pressing further the said request, the said Lord of Balclough in the meantime departed this life in Scotland; whereby the petitioner's well-founded purpose has made no advance and been ineffective.

And as it is known, and some of your High Mightinesses are very well aware, that the petitioner has for almost fifteen years consecutively served the country in the aforesaid capacity with fidelity, and that there has from the very beginning been no expedition or camp where the petitioner was not present provided with the necessary medicines, instruments and servants, and all at his own expense, and without having received for it the smallest payment, either from the Land or from the captains of the said regiment, since the decease of the aforesaid Lord of Balclough; whereby he, the petitioner, finding that he has spent enough, and knowing of no means to make at this time any profit in this country, would like to return to his native country. Therefore he, the petitioner, requests very respectfully that it may please your High Mightinesses, in consideration of what has been stated, to grant the petitioner, for his long and faithful services, such a sum as, after customary deliberation, may seem to your High Mightinesses to be proper.

Request of Andrew Hunter.

Illustrissimis potentiss. et consultissimis D.D. Dominis Ordinibus Generalibus Unitarum Provinciarum,—Numerosa familia, labores mei in sacrosancto ministerio, passim in omnibus vestris provincijs, apud longe dissitas vestras scoticas centurias et non exiguae impensae factae in itineribus satis periculosis a me necessario susceptis versus Juliacenses transisulanos et eos qui in finibus Brabantiae et Cliviae morantur, me adeo urgent ut in extraordinario mihi longum concesso stipendio vestrarum Illust[ium] opem implorare cogar. Peto idcirco obnixe ut decurrentis hujus anni (cuius pars una est elapsa, altera elabitur) stipendium ducentorum florenorum concedere dignemini.

Andreas Honterus,
Euangelij Jes. Christi Minister
in Copijs Vestris Scoticis.

[The Recorder of the States-General noted on the margin] Fiat continuatie van het advertissement van des suppl.'s tractement. gelyck hij dat voor desen genoten heeft. Actum den xxvii July 1618.

To the Council of State. (Nov. 6, 1618.)

Letters and Requests to the Council of State.

My Lords,—I was a short time ago at Alckmaer on particular business, when I learned from trustworthy burghers, that the lieutenant of Colonel Henderson, then in garrison, passed off a great number of 'passevolenten'[1] and inhabitants on half pay in his company; and the same was also told me by a soldier who formerly served under him. And even after he had left the service, the lieutenant requested him to pass as a 'passevolant,' at the last review. In short, it is true, that the majority of the burghers complained about it, and the lieutenant himself was frequently blamed, even in presence of the bailiff, for having held false musters; and I doubt not, that if he were taken unawares, with a muster extraordinary as it were, of which he should have no suspicion, there would certainly be an exposure, for I have

[1] Men hired for the inspection.

learned that it is too gross and extensive, and that he thus passes a considerable number. But I wished to inform your worships.—Herewith etc., your Worships' obedient servant,

FLORES SEROOSKERCKE.

Tholen, 6 November 1618.

To their High Mightinesses, the States-General of the United Netherlands.

Records of States-General.

Bentgen Jansz, sorrowing widow of Captain Wilhem Moncryff,[1] Scotsman, humbly showeth, that as her late husband served this country for many years and lately departed this life in the service of the country, having been wounded at the Couwensteyn Dyke, leaving her at the age of nearly seventy-one years without livelihood, except from the generosity of your High Mightinesses, which she has received annually out of commiseration, and for which she must thank your High Mightinesses, and whereas she never troubles you on other occasions, except in the greatest need and at the most pressing times, being also past the set limit of lifetime, therefore she prays you in her old age, poverty, illness, and distress, in this hard winter, to consider her desolation, to take into favourable consideration her husband's services, and accordingly as you deem best, to give her generous assistance to maintain her this winter that she perish not in her old days on the streets. And by your doing so, she will ever feel bound to pray for the prosperity of the rule of your High Mightinesses and the unity of the good inhabitants.

[In the margin is written :] 'Let the last resolution taken regarding the previous request of the petitioner be first looked into. Actum 17th November 1618.

To the Council of State. (Oct. 31, 1618.)

Letters and Requests to the Council of State.

MY LORDS,—Your lordships' letters of 30th inst., new style, with the annexed request of Lieutenant Livingston, having been handed to us, we summoned before us the following creditors of said lieutenant, and directed their attention to the

[1] See p. 46.

offer made by him in the said request. And on the part of the same begged them to rest satisfied therewith. Whereupon the widow of the late Dirck van Kattenborch, to whom he is indebted forty-eight guilders, also the man Van Oerken Segers of the Heringbuijs, to whom he owes a like sum of forty-eight guilders, and Wilhem van Kattenborch, to whom he is indebted twenty-six guilders, all declared, avowed, and answered, that they would accept the said offer, provided Captain Sir Henry Livingston, brother of the said lieutenant, shall guarantee and be security for payment in full. Item. Floris van Riemsdyck in regard to his arrears, amounting to the sum of two hundred and fifty three guilders ten stuivers declared that he held the promissory notes and bond of the said captain's wife. And Beel the brewer said, that the said captain had made her a promise for the amount due to her of one hundred and three guilders, and had signed for it in her account-book, and both of them wished to abide by that. In regard to the man and the house rent, with a claim according to the foresaid request amounting to fifty-seven guilders, he does not live in the town, but under the jurisdiction of the Maas and Waal, and we spoke to his brother Wilhem van Freycamp about it, who declares that he will invite his brother to come us with his answer. Also Johan van Kattenborch appeared before us, to whom the said lieutenant owes the sum of three guilders four stuivers, and like the first three creditors aforesaid, declared that he was satisfied. All of which we mention to your Hon. Mightinesses also as a more complete reply, respecting the rearrangement of the request aforesaid.

BURGOMASTERS, ALDERMEN AND THE COUNCIL
OF THE TOWN OF TIJEL.

31st October 1618.

To the Council of State. (Nov. 27, 1618.)

My LORDS,—We cannot in the first place omit to mention in regard to your Lordships repeated writings of 21st inst., new style, with the request again presented to you by Lieutenant James Livingston, brother of Captain Sir Henry Livingston, that we have summoned before us and exhorted to our utmost the creditors of the said lieutenant, mentioned in his previous

request presented to your Lordships and forwarded to us, to rest satisfied with the offer of payment made to them. Whereupon Floris van Riemsdyck, mentioned in our last, declared that not only he himself, but also the others refused to accept the offer, for reasons stated in our foregoing rescript, addressed to your Lordships (which the foresaid lieutenant neither conceived nor directed). To-day we have once more summoned before us and exhorted the said Riemsdyck, and besought him to rest satisfied with the offer made by the foresaid lieutenant. And with that end in view, strongly urged him to weigh well the reasons mentioned in your Lordships last writings. On which the said Reimsdyck answered, and expressly declared, that he would have no dealings with the said lieutenant, but on the contrary since said captain's wife had granted him a certain bond for goods received, he would have recourse to the law, and bring said captain before the court of this town. After hearing his answer, sentence was pronounced, an extract of which is annexed. To this he wished to adhere, trusting also to be upheld therein, according to the bounden duty of the judges. And if the said Captain Livingston considered himself oppressed thereby, he could have his appeal according to the laws of this town. Thus we could not induce the said Floris van Riemsdyck to agree to the request of your Lordships. He said also that it did not concern him when and where the said lieutenant came by his sickness and maiming, except to remember well that when he came into garrison here he was whole. And in this we have done nothing further, and we know not what to do, nor can we do anything, etc.

BURGOMASTERS, ALDERMEN, AND COUNCIL
OF THE CITY TIJEL.

COPY.

Extract from the Foreigners' Case.—The Signets of Tijel.

The Court, in view of the representation or complaint of Floris van Riemsdyck, handed over, along with the bond in favour of the pursuer, on the one side, and on the other side

the answer of Henry Livingston, knight and captain, defender. After weighing properly the contents of these documents, as also the power of attorney, given by the said Livingston on the 4th February in favour of his wife, who acknowledges the foresaid bond; do condemn the said defender to lay down and pay to the said pursuer, within the period of three weeks, the two hundred and fifty-three guilders ten stuivers mentioned in the foresaid bond, with the costs of the action, in terms of the verdict, by right of authority.

Actum 31st October 1618.

(Feb. 14, 1619.)

My Lords,—Captain Robert Scott in garrison at Hambach has come to me with the complaint that your Lordships summoned him to the Hague for the disposal of the suit against him. Now since the said captain, as the senior among the Scottish soldiers here, is in command of the garrison, and sometimes certain disorders and disputes arise, so that his presence among the soldiers of his nation is necessary, I hereby submissively entreat your Lordships to be graciously pleased to inquire into the circumstances of his charge, and therein make such good provision that he may be despatched soon and again returned hither to command and maintain due order among the people of the Scottish nation, and to command. . . . (Signed) Frid Pithan.

In the Castle of Gulick, 14th February 1619.

(Feb. $\frac{18}{28}$ 1619.)

My Lords,—It has been reported to me by John Law, soldier, belonging to the company of General Cecyl, by way of complaint, that the lieutenant commanding the company gave the said soldier his leave, and against his desire handed him his passport because of this, that said soldier was struck in the face by God Almighty, and the lieutenant heard that he was declaring so. And since, through the testimony of officers, I have ascertained that the said soldier has long and faithfully served the country—both in Ostend, Flanders, and

elsewhere—and has served latterly seven or eight years in the company of the said Mr. Cecyl, I hereby object to the dismissal of the said soldier, and to hunting him out of the country. I have therefore thought good to inform your Lordships regarding this affair, with the request that you may be pleased to write to me, stating what course I shall take in the matter.

Your Worshipful Mightinesses' obedient servant,

(Signed) Jacob Croessen.

Utrecht, this $\frac{18}{28}$ February 1619.

(March 19, 1619.)

My Lords,—Since the magistrate of the city of Thijel, etc., handed to us a certain missive, with a copy of the request of Thomas Brussen and Jacques Stuart, forwarded to us by your Lordships, wherein they as petitioners made known, and declared what they knew, regarding the murder committed by Sergeant Geddi on the person of Jan Brusson. So we could not do otherwise than inform you that we have used all proper means in order to obtain evidence. Of which evidence we immediately granted a copy to the petitioners. Then we also notice from the request that they have not shown the said copy, and have grievously accused some soldiers, who had been present at the fight, and on whom they desire to have justice and judgment administered, whilst we cannot discover that these soldiers had any hand in the deed. Therefore we feel bound to forward hereby the said evidence to your Worshipful Mightiness in order that your worships may thereby be able to perceive the real state of the case. Which having seen, we expect the advice and commands of your Lordships as to what we shall have to do further in the matter.—Praying, etc.

The Governor and Court-Martial, convened in Tijel.

(March 19, 1619.)

Evidence taken in the case of the murder committed by N. Geddi, sergeant, belonging to the company of Sir Francois Henderson, Kt., etc., on the 3rd February 1619, in the chamber of the redoubt on the person of Jan Bruessen.

Elsken the wife of Antonis Dirck, living in the redoubt,

on being heard, declared on oath that she saw that Sergeant Geddi wishing to go home about eventide, had had some words with Jan Bruessen, soldier, belonging to the company of Sir Henry Livingston, and that the words 'thou liest' were spoken, though she knew not who uttered them. Hereupon the said Jan Bruessen struck the said sergeant in the face. On which the sergeant seized the chamberpot, and threatened to strike with it. Then as she the witness prevented him from doing so, the sergeant felt for his rapier, drew it, and ran at Jan Bruessen. After which she, witness, noticed that the said Jan Bruessen was wounded in the body, from which wound he died during the night, between the 3rd and 4th day of February 1619. But the witness declared that she did not observe in what manner the wound was made. This was signed with the following mark +

Andrew Grant, corporal under Captain Henderson, declared that on the 3rd of February 1619 he sat on the redoubt with Jan Bruessen, above the town of Tijel; and as the company were about to separate, some words passed between Sergeant Geddi and Jan Bruessen the deceased about betting, running, and shooting; and that they had a dispute about the two pounds of the bet that was arranged. After which he the witness saw that Jan Bruessen the deceased, with hot words, struck Sergeant Geddi in the face; and after this happened then Geddi and Jan Bruessen shook hands, but I know not on what terms. And on separating, Sergeant Geddi unsheathed his rapier and stabbed the deceased, but he the witness did not observe how the wound was made. He the witness declared that he knew nothing more about the wound, and he signed his declaration with the following mark A.

John Watson, soldier in the company of Sir Francois Henderson, declared, that he, witness, sat on the redoubt drinking with other soldiers, on the 3rd February 1619, and that in the company there remarks were made about leaping by Sergeant Geddi and Jan Bruessen. And finally there was a bet between them for two tuns of beer, as to who should be first in a foot race to Nimmegen. For which Jan Bruessen pledged his coat, desiring that Geddi likewise should give his mantle in pawn; who immediately ran to Sergeant Fressell and brought

his mantle, saying there is my pledge. Whereupon Jan Bruessen said, that is not your mantle, I wish to have your mantle, you are not worthy to carry such a mantle. Which conversation being ended, remarks were afterwards again made about the same bet and the mantle, which Geddi would have given in pledge, of such a nature that Jan Bruessen, after some passing words, again said, you are not worthy of such a mantle. After which he, witness, saw that Jan Bruessen struck Sergeant Geddi on the left cheek, but he could not make a pertinent declaration as to the reasons. He, witness, also declared that he saw the said Geddi with his rapier under his arm, which he unsheathed, and struck with it towards Jan Bruessen; but he, witness, did not observe in what direction the stab was made, and the above was signed with the following mark—M I.

John Mueleman, Cadet, declared, that he along with other soldiers sat on the redoubt above the town Tijel, on the 3rd February ult., where there were present among others Sergeant Geddi, and Jan Bruessen, soldier, under Sir Henry Livingston, Knight, etc., between which two persons words were exchanged about betting. And finally a bet was made between the two for the sum of two pounds, as to who should gain a foot-race to Nimmegen. For which bet Jan Bruessen pledged his coat, which he undid from his person, asking Sergeant Geddi that he in like manner would pledge his mantle. And as Sergeant Geddi had no mantle by him, he, witness, declared that he had seen the said Geddi go to Sergeant Fressel and request from him his mantle, which Fressel handed to him. And as Geddi offered to pledge it against the coat, Jan Bruessen would not receive it, saying, it is your comrade's mantle, I will have your own mantle. After which he, witness, saw that Jan Bruessen gave the said Geddi a slap on the cheek, and forthwith Bruessen immediately ran to the gun, which lay on the bed in the room. And he, witness, saw that Sergeant Geddi immediately on receiving the slap drew his rapier and passed him the witness, going towards Jan Bruessen with a naked rapier. Thereafter he, witness, heard that Jan Bruessen was wounded, but he, witness, did not see how he came by the wound.

Piere La Rame, soldier in the company of Mr. Brichenau, capt., declared that he, witness, was on the redoubt above

the city Tijel on the 3rd February 1619, when among others sat Sergeant Geddi and Jan Bruessen, that the last named Jan Bruessen slapped the said Geddi, and Sergeant Geddi immediately drew his rapier and stabbed Jan Bruessen, through which he died during the night. He, witness, declared that he knew not out of what the dispute arose.

Thus done and sworn in the Assembly of the Court Martial at Tijel on the 8th February 1619, by me the Auditor,

(Signed) JOHAN DIEREN.

Recommendation by the Council of Scotland of Margaret Hamilton, daughter of the late Captain John Hamilton. (1620.)

Political Correspondence, 1618-1620.

TRÈS-HAUTS ET TRÈS-ILLUSTRES SEIGNEURS,—Le Capitaine Jean Hamilton, qui vous a fidèlement servi plus de quarante ans en vos guerres, estant depuis peu de jours mort, sans laisser aucuns enfans légitimes en vie excepté Damoiselle Marguérite Hamilton, sa fille unique, qui pour recouvrer la succession de son feu père allant aux païs de vostre obéissance, nous a supplié de la recommander à vos Seig^{ries} afin que par vostre juste faveur elle puisse obtenir la possession et paisible jouissance des biens appartenans à son feu père et recouvrer payement de ses debtes et descomptes. Et si la malice des parties intéressées la contraint d'entrer en procès pour ses légitimes affaires et actions, qu'il plaise à vos Seig^{ries} de commander que bonne et brièvе justice luy soit faicte. Encore que soyons asseurez que l'équité de sa requeste soit suffisante pour impétrer de voz Seig^{ries} ce que ne refusez à personne, ayant recours à vostre justice. Néantmoins le respect que nous portons à beaucoup de gens de bien et d'honneur en ce Royaume, ausquels lad. damoiselle appartient, nous a induit à vous supplier bien affectueusement de la protéger et favoriser en toutes ses bonnes affaires et actions, et la recommander aux Magistrats et autres ayans jurisdiction et charge es lieux ou les biens de son père seront trouvez, Afin que par leur faveur équitable, elle puisse obtenir bonne et briefve depesche de ses affaires. Ce que nous obligera de continuer ou plustost augmenter envers les subjects de vos Seigneuries, ayans affaire par deça, la bienveillance que de tout temps nous leur avons monstré à toutes bonnes occasions, selon l'estroite amitié

que vous porte nostre treshonoré Seigneur et Roy, et le devoir et respect des tresassurez et bien humbles amis de vos tres-illustres Seig^{ries} pour vous servir.

Le Chancelier et Conseillers de sa Majesté au Conseil et Estat de son Royaume d'Escosse.

Dunfermlin.	Mar.
Cancell.	Sanctandrew
	Ja. Clasgow.
Wintoun.	Lothiome.
Wigtouns.	Melros.
Arskyne.	

Lislebourg, ce premier jour de Fevrier 1620.

DIVISION III

THE THIRTY YEARS' WAR

1621-1648

INTRODUCTORY

'THE gold and treasure of the Indies,' wrote Sir Thomas Urquhart of Cromarty, 'not being able to purchase all the affections of Scotland to the furtherance of Castilian designs, there have been of late several Scottish colonels under the command of the Prince of Orange in opposition of the Spagniard, viz., Colonel Edmond, who took the valiant Count de Buccoy twice prisoner in the field; Sir Henry Balfour, Sir David Balfour, Colonel Brog, who took a Spanish general in the field upon the head of his army; Sir Francis Henderson, Colonel Scot, Earl of Bucliugh, Sir James Livistoun, now Earl of Callendar, and lately in these our turmoyles at home, lieutenant-general of both horse and foot; besides a great many other worthy colonels, amongst which I will only commemorate one Colonel Dowglas, who to the States of Holland was often serviceable in discharging the office and duty of general engineer.' Of the worthy colonels specified by the Knight of Cromarty, some had closed their service by honourable deaths in the preceding war, and the others were to be equally illustrious in the long struggle which recommenced in 1621.

When hostilities were resumed, the Scottish Infantry consisted of two regiments, the old one under Sir William Brog, and Lord Buccleuch's, to the command of which Sir Robert Henderson had succeeded. The son of Lord Buccleuch, Walter Scott, created Earl of Buccleuch in 1619, had obtained an 'Act Expectative' from the States-General in 1615, promising him the command of the first regiment that should fall vacant, or of any new one that might be formed. When, however, Sir Robert Henderson died in 1622, Prince Maurice insisted upon the command passing to his brother, Sir Francis, the lieutenant-colonel, and when Sir Francis died in 1628, the condition of affairs in the field was such that Prince Frederick

Henry, who regarded the Scottish troops in his own famous phrase as 'the Bulwark of the Republic,' again thought it inadvisable to pass over the experienced lieutenant-colonels, in favour of a nobleman from Britain, who, however brave, had not yet had practical training in Low Country campaigning. The States-General therefore resolved to divide the two regiments into three. Sir John Halkett was promptly appointed to succeed Sir Francis Henderson, with Sir David Balfour as his lieutenant-colonel, and Archibald Bethune as his sergeant-major, while the Earl of Buccleuch was in 1629 given the command of the newly organised third regiment, with Sir William Balfour as lieutenant-colonel, and George Coutts as sergeant-major. In a very short time, however, there was a considerable change in the *personnel* of the field officers. Halkett was killed at Bois-le-Duc, and succeeded by Sir David Balfour. Sir William Balfour left the service of the States, and was succeeded by George Coutts, who received promotion, and the Earl of Buccleuch having died in 1633, the higher officers of the three regiments in 1634 were :

1. Colonel, Sir William Brog ; lieutenant-colonel, Sir James Sandilands (in succession to Allan Coutts); sergeant-major, James Erskine.
2. Colonel, Sir David Balfour; lieutenant-colonel, James Henderson ; sergeant-major, Archibald Douglas.
3. Colonel, Sir James Livingstone, Lord Almond (formerly lieutenant-colonel of Sir David Balfour's regiment); lieutenant-colonel, George Coutts ; sergeant-major, Sir Philip Balfour.

It will be convenient, therefore, to refer to the three regiments for purposes of identification as Sir William Brog's (or Sir Henry Balfour's and Brog's) old regiment, Lord Buccleuch's regiment, and Lord Almond's regiment, it being remembered that the Earl of Buccleuch was the first colonel of the third regiment, and was succeeded by Lord Almond.

In August 1621 the war was resumed, and Spinola promptly laid siege to Juliers, which surrendered in February 1622. The Dutch camp at Emmerick was surprised one night by the Spaniards, and among the prisoners taken was 'Sir William Balfour, a Scoche man whoe is returned upon his ransom.'

The army of the Estates was formed in three brigades, the first under the Prince of Orange, consisting of English and Dutch; the second under Count Henry of Nassau, of Walloons and French, and the third under Count Ernest of Nassau, of Dutch and Scotch. 'They (the Dutch),' remarks an English observer, 'mingle and blend the Scottish among them, which are like Beans and Peas among chaff. These (the Scots) are sure men, hardy and resolute, and their example holds up the Dutch.'[1]

Concealing his intentions by a feint on the borders of Cleves, Spinola sent Velasco to seize Steenbergen, and following with the mass of his army laid strenuous siege to Bergen-op-Zoom. But the fall of Steenbergen having unveiled his intentions, Prince Maurice sent Colonel Sir Robert Henderson with a considerable body of troops to reinforce and command the garrison. A gallant defence was made. 'Colonel Henderson,' says the English eyewitness, 'being a discreet and valiant gentleman, conferred with General Cecil, who was his great friend and his general at Gulick.' In one great sally of three or four thousand men, the English and Scots had the van, the Dutch the battle, and the French the rear, and Colonel Henderson was subsequently killed 'in a terrible fight which lasted a night and a whole morning.'

'I will say nothing,' says the chronicler of the siege, 'in commendation of Colonel Henderson; his own actions commend him in the highest degree, for he stood all the fight in as great danger as any common soldier, still encouraging, directing, and acting with his Pike in his hand. At length he was shot in the thigh: he received his wound at the front, or, as most say, being over earnest he stepped into his enemy's trenches.[2] So he was nothing but spirit and courage. He shewed it chiefly in his devotion, and in his earnest calling upon God in

---

[1] Account of siege and relief of Bergen-op-Zoom, 1622, by an English eyewitness, in Royal MSS.—Dalton's *Cecil.*

In 1624 'Colonel Sir Andrew Gray, and one, Ramsay, were spoken of to command Scots regiments for the Palatinate.'

[2] In the Memoirs of Frederick Henry, Prince of Orange, it is stated that 'entre autres le Coronel Henderson fut blessé dont il mourut peu de temps après combattant valeureusement à la deffence d'un ouvrage qu'il avoit commencé, que l'ennemi ne put emporter, quelque effort qu'il fist.'

his time of sickness, and he was so willing to die that he made but a recreation of it, for after he had received the Sacrament he remembered his friends very cheerfully, and being extremely hot, he asked his physician [for leave] to drink some water; so his Physician, seeing he was but a dead man, let him have his will. He drank five healths; the first was to the King, the second to the Prince, the third to the Queen of Bohemia, the fourth to the Prince of Orange, and the last to the Earl of Marre. When he had done he desired his brother to thrust him down into his bed, and so took his leave of this miserable life.'

On the 2nd October Spinola reluctantly raised the siege, having lost 10,000 men, and the reduction of Fort Papenmuitz on the western frontier was but a small success to set against so great a failure.

In 1624, Spinola laid siege to Breda. The Scots and Dutch are recorded as having held the Antwerp Gate. The defence was gallant, but unsuccessful, and the fall of the place hastened the death of Prince Maurice. His mantle fell upon his brother, Prince Frederick Henry, born a few months before the murder of their father, William the Silent. In 1626, the Dutch took Oldenzeel, after a siege of eight days,[1] and in July 1627, Prince Frederick Henry laid siege to Groll, on the confines of Zutphen. Before the lines of the besiegers were finished, they were furiously attacked by the enemy in an attempt to relieve the place, but after a sharp action 'the Spaniards were at length repulsed by some companies of Scots who were there on guard.'[2] Sergeant-major Drummond of the Scots was killed before the city,[3] which surrendered after a siege of one month.

In 1628 Spinola was recalled, and Prince Frederick Henry began a series of triumphs.[4] On the 30th of April 1629, he

---

[1] The notes of promotion in succession to officers 'deceased' supply some indication, although not in all cases a reliable one, of the losses in the field. In 1623, Captain Home; in 1625, Captain William Hudson, and in 1626, Captains Mowbray and Sir Henry Livingstone had their places filled upon their decease.

[2] 'Historical Account,' Memoirs of Prince Frederick Henry.

[3] The death-roll of 1627 also included Captains Scott, Donaldson, and Sir Walter Bruce.

[4] Colonel Sir Francis Henderson died, or was killed, in 1628.

laid siege to Bois-le-Duc, a famous fortress, and the capital of North Brabant, the three Scots regiments forming part of his army when assembled on the heath of Mook, and their conduct in that famous siege, where Sir John Halkett, one of the colonels, was killed,[1] was such that the Prince of Orange publicly described them as the 'Bulwark of the Republic,' and ever afterwards 'shewed them many marks of his favour and esteem.' In the month of June Count Ernest Casimir, lately reinforced by two thousand Scots, carried on his trenches against the Horn-work before the gate leading to Hintem. A formidable irruption of strong Spanish forces into the Betuwe, to cope with which the Prince had to detach a large part of his force, under Count Ernest, including the new Scottish regiment of Lord Hay of Kinfauns, temporarily taken into service, was, however, checked by the surprise of Wesel, where their magazines and stores were, by the garrison of Emmerick; and the result of this stroke, and the jealousies between the Spanish leaders, and those of the Imperial army under Montecuculi, was that the efforts of an army of fifty thousand men were rendered fruitless, and the city being reduced to a two days' supply of gunpowder surrendered on 14th September on honourable terms. The siege took rank with those of Ostend, Breda, and Rochelle among the military achievements of the age; and Prince Frederick Henry was henceforth regarded as equal in conduct and courage to his father, William the Silent, and his brother, Prince Maurice. A fourth Scottish regiment, that of the Earl of Morton, commanded by Lord Kinfauns, was temporarily employed for five months during this campaign.[2]

The Dutch were also successful on the Lower Rhine; in the following year in the country of Juliers, and in various encounters in 1631.[3] In 1632, an alliance having been concluded between the States and Gustavus Adolphus, then in the

---

[1] There also fell in 1629, Sergeant-Major Archibald Bethune, Lieut.-Colonel James Haddon, and Captain William Douglas, an officer of inventive genius. See pp. 358-368.

[2] See pp. 396-405.

[3] In 1630, Captain Kinninmond, and in 1631, Lieut.-Colonel Allan Coutts, Captain Bellenden, and Captain Brock were succeeded upon their decease.

midst of that career of victory in Germany, which owed so much of its success to the hardy valour of his Scottish brigades, Prince Frederick Henry made another great effort to permanently increase the dominions of the United Provinces. Venlo, Stralen, and Ruremonde successively surrendered, and on the 10th of June he invested Maestricht, the three Scots regiments forming part of his army. In vain did the fiery Pappenheim, at the head of an Imperial army, again and again assault the besiegers' lines, in the attempt to relieve the place, and in vain did the besieged make furious sallies, in repelling which gallant English lives were lost. The city surrendered on 22nd August, and its fall was followed by those of Limburg, and of Orsoy. Rheinberg also fell in the following year, one of the two approaches having been intrusted to the English and Scots, and the other to the French, Germans, Walloons, and Dutch. In the campaign of 1635, in which a French army co-operated with the Dutch, the Scots troops formed the vanguard, and the left next to the cavalry when encamped before Louvain, the Germans being in the centre, and the English on the right or in the rear. The combined forces, however, failed to reduce Louvain. The Fort of Schenck was taken by the Spaniards, and the only successes were the capture of several small towns. The Fort of Schenck was recovered in the following spring. In 1637 the Prince of Orange laid formal siege to Breda, which in spite of frequent sallies was forced to surrender on 6th October, the garrison receiving the same terms as had been granted by Spinola twelve years before.[2]

In 1638 the Scots Brigade experienced the greatest disaster they had suffered since the morning on which so many brave men fell on the Flemish Downs. Groll, Hertogen-Bosch, and Maestricht had in succession fallen before Prince Frederick

---

[1] Captain Elphinstone is noted as dead in 1632, and Sergeant-Major M. Hamilton in 1632.

[2] In 1635 Captain Patrick and Captain William Brog, in 1636 Colonel Sir William Brog, and Captain Marjoribanks, and in 1637 Lieut.-Colonel George Coutts and Captain Williamson were succeeded upon their decease.

The position of the three Scots regiments (Balfour's, Sandilands', and Almond's) at the siege of Breda, under Count William of Nassau, was at La Hage, a village on the Antwerp road.

Henry's victorious arms, and he burned to crown his triumphs by the capture of Antwerp. It was necessary to get possession of the Flanders side of the Scheldt to prevent the enemy succouring the city, and the plan adjudged most practicable, though very difficult, was to pass through the inundations of the island of Doel to the dike of Fort Calloo. The Prince ordered Count William of Nassau, with six thousand men, on this expedition. The troops selected were 'part of the three Scots regiments of Balfour, Sandilands, and Hammond (Lord Almond), of the three German regiments of Count Henry, of Eerenruyter, and his own, a Walloon regiment, and two national Dutch, those of Brederode and North Holland, with six half cannons and twelve field pieces.'[1]

Count William met with greater difficulties than were expected, the water of the inundations being much deeper than had been represented, and the bottom almost a mire. These inundations had to be waded through for six or seven miles before Fort Calloo was reached, 'but the soldiers having overcome all these difficulties by their labour, patience, and valour, the fort was taken.' The Spaniards, however, collected a strong army of twenty thousand men, among whose chiefs was the famous Piccolomini, who attacked the Dutch in their lines in five places at once, on the 20th of June. The Spaniards were repulsed after an engagement of eleven hours, eighteen hundred of their troops and five hundred of the Dutch being killed. Before, however, reinforcements sent by the Prince of Orange could arrive, the Spaniards renewed the fight, and took some forts which covered the Dutch lines. 'Count William, not thinking himself any longer in a condition to maintain his ground, retreated in the night-time, the 22nd of June, in order to rejoin the Prince of Orange on the side of the Schelde, but was charged so furiously by the Spaniards that the Scotch, who marched in the rear, were for the most part cut off, which caused such a consternation in the whole army that they retired in great confusion, and with so much precipitation that many, who could not soon enough get aboard the ships, were drowned in the river.' The Dutch lost

[1] Memoirs of Prince Frederick Henry, 'Hist. Acct.,' Hist. of Holland.

fifteen hundred killed and drowned, and twenty-two hundred taken prisoners,[1] and the Scots captives, consisting of four officers and six hundred soldiers, were sent to the Fort of Lillo.

A sharp but indecisive action subsequently took place near Bergen-op-Zoom, where the Prince of Orange was collecting the remains of Count William's army, and the Prince of Orange was subsequently forced to raise the siege of Gueldres. The campaign of 1639 was also without definite result.[2] In 1640 the Prince of Orange besieged Hulst, and a severe battle was fought with a relieving force, which drove the Dutch into their lines with the loss of many brave officers, and the Prince was ultimately compelled to raise the siege.[3] In 1641 he took Gennep, and his son was married to Princess Mary of England. In 1642 the whole of the States army, nearly one-half of which were British and French, were reviewed by Queen Henrietta Maria, and in 1643 the young Prince William distinguished himself in a hot skirmish near Antwerp.[4]

In 1644 Prince Frederick Henry transported his army to Flanders, his first operation being the passage of the Lys, to which the troops advanced in the following order. 'The

---

[1] On June 25th the Prince, when with 'the army on the Noortgeest,' gave a commission in succession to Lieut.-Colonel Henderson, deceased, whose funeral was attended by representatives of the States-General. On 13th September, by a commission given at Velp, near Grave, Captain James Halkett, deceased, was succeeded. On October 25th Colonel Sir James Sandilands, deceased, and on December 4th Colonel Sir David Balfour, deceased, were succeeded in command of their companies. For King Charles's interposition on behalf of the Scottish prisoners, see p. 449, and for a complete list of their names, pp. 450-455. They included Sergeant-Major Caddell, and Captain Patrick Stewart, of Sandiland's regiment (formerly Colonel Brog's), as well as several subalterns of all three regiments.

[2] Colonel Sir Archibald Douglas died in this year, who had succeeded Sir David Balfour in command of Lord Buccleuch's regiment. He was succeeded by Colonel John Kirkpatrick. Colonel James Erskine had succeeded Sandilands in command of Sir William Brog's old regiment, and Lord Almond being engaged in the Covenanting troubles in Scotland, his regiment was given to his lieut.-colonel, Sir Philip Balfour.

[3] Lieut.-Colonel A. Caddell died in 1640.

[4] This review was in a great plain near Voorne. 'The infantry,' says the 'Historical Account,' 'was drawn up in three lines, at the distance of 100 yards from each other; the cavalry in rear of the third line of infantry. The Queen passed along each line in her coach, the Prince of Orange accompanying her on horseback, and telling her the names of the colonels and officers as they dropped

Prince of Orange's Horse Guards; the three regiments of the Scots Brigade, whose colonels were Erskine, Kirkpatrick, and Balfour;[1] four French regiments, the colonels of which were Hauterive, d'Estrades, Douchant, and Coligny; four English regiments commanded by Craven, Herbert, Goring, and Cromwell. The national Dutch regiment of Count Hoorn and nine regiments of horse in the rear.' During the construction of a bridge of boats over the Lys, 'Colonel Erskine, not having the patience to wait till it should be finished, passed upon the bridge of reeds with his regiment, and seeing some troops of the enemy near a fort named St. Angel, marched up to them: they put on the appearance of waiting an engagement, but upon seeing that instead of halting he still advanced against them, they retired. Erskine pursued them, took the fort, killed some, and made prisoners of the rest, whom he sent to the Prince. The bridge being finished, the Prince led over the whole army, and drew them up in order of battle.'[2] The

---

their pikes and colours to salute her. Near one-half of the infantry being British and French, saw in Her Majesty, these their own Queen, and those, their late heroic monarch's daughter. After passing along the front of the lines, the Queen stood in a tent while the whole army passed in review.' Queen Henrietta Maria had brought with her the most precious jewels of the Crown, which she pledged or sold to obtain military stores for the King, her husband, to whose service several of the officers of the Brigade went. 'Le Prince d'Orange,' records Cerisier, 'engagea plusieurs officiers et soldats à passer en Angleterre pour le secourir.'

The Resolutions of Holland contain the following:

'1643, *January 15th.*—The committee, through the Grand Pensionary, represents the difficulties arising from the Resolution of the States of December 19th, 1642, respecting captains and other officers of war, and also soldiers, who went from here to England, the committee not being able to judge who of them entered foreign service, otherwise than from a list sent into this Assembly by the Envoyé of the English Parliament. Resolution: The committee to obtain a list of absent officers and soldiers from the Council of State, or from His Highnesses' secretaries, or from the English and *Scottish* colonels; the pay-orders for officers found to be absent not to be forwarded until it is known whether they entered foreign service or not, and in the first case the parties to be prosecuted. The pay-orders for those that are not absent, of either nation, to be forwarded as heretofore.'

The Records of the House of Lords [1641] contain a copy of a petition to the King of the Scottish officers taken on by the Marquis of Hamilton for his Majesty's service, in which they, *inter alia*, asked compensation for the loss incurred by quitting their settled employments abroad.—Hist. MS. Com., App. to 4th Rep. 112.

[1] The seniority of the regiments and the colonels then coincided.

[2] Memoirs of Prince Frederick Henry, 'Historical Account.'

Prince took some small forts, and laid siege to Sas-van-Ghent. His fortified lines extended from Asseneeden, where the English were posted, to Selsaten, where the Scots were stationed, and resembling the outworks of a fortified town, were so strong that Don Francisco de Melo, who commanded a powerful Spanish army, after several fruitless attacks, saw the city, in spite of Don Andrea de Parado's vigorous defence, taken in his presence after five weeks' siege.[1]

Owing to the slow movements of the Dutch Government, and the jealousies of the Provinces, it was late in the season of 1645[2] before the Prince could take the field. Marching as they did along with the French troops, the superior discipline of his soldiers was conspicuous. Obliged again to give up his favourite object of taking Antwerp, the Prince laid siege to Hulst. After pushing his approaches to the counterscarp, and erecting three batteries to flank the place he had selected for passing the ditch, 'he gave orders to Colonel Kirkpatrick, who commanded the guard, that an hour before break of day he should throw over a bridge of reeds, and make a hundred men pass upon it to take post at the foot of the rampart, which succeeded so well that, an hour before daylight, the Prince coming to visit the works, found that "by the diligence of the colonel and the valour of the soldiers the bridge was already finished and the troops passed over." A few days after the town, regarded as the key of Flanders and Brabant, surrendered.

The campaign of 1646 was ineffective, Holland and Zeeland being averse to the recovery of Antwerp, the commercial competition of which they feared. Indeed, 'long before the year 1648 Prince Frederick Henry said, "There is already peace between the Republic and Spain."' On 14th March 1647 the Prince of Orange died, having, says Cerisier, 'finished the roof of that edifice of which his father had laid the foundation, and his brother built up the walls.' He left the territories of the United Provinces substantially the same as those of the present

[1] Captain John Riddell and Captain Sir James Henderson were succeeded upon decease in 1644, and Capt. Thomas Livingstone in 1645.

[2] In 1645 the States sent a force of troops under four colonels, of whom Colonel Henderson was one, in their fleet, to assist Sweden in the war with Denmark.

kingdom of the United Netherlands, over which his descendant Queen Emma rules. Prince William succeeded as Stadtholder, but meanwhile negotiations were proceeding at Osnabruck and Munster, and on the 30th January 1648 the Thirty Years' War was concluded by the Treaty of Munster. The colonels of the Scots Brigade when the war ended were James Erskine, John Kirkpatrick, and Sir William Drummond, who had succeeded Sir Philip Balfour on his retirement in 1646.

The Dutch army in 1649 consisted of twelve regiments of cavalry in sixty-eight companies, and the two companies of the Prince of Orange's guard, and of thirty regiments of infantry in four hundred and eleven companies, of which fifteen regiments were 'composés de nationaux, 5 de François, 4 d'Anglais, 3 d'Ecossais, et 3 d'Allemands.'[1]

[1] Cerisier.

I

STATES OF WAR

1621-1648

1621

Holland.	*Cavalry*	
Wm Balfour	100 men	£2800
Infantry		
Col. Brogh .	200 ,,	2612
Col. Henderson	,, ,,	
Cn Jacques Sandelans .	120 ,,	1655
,, Robert Coutis	,,	,,
,, Thomas Arskyn[1]	,,	,,
,, Levingston .	,,	,,
,, Robert Schott	,,	,,
Cn James Lindesay	120 men	£1655
,, Wm Orrock .	,,	,,
,, Wm Hudson .	,,	,,
,, James Henderson	,,	,,
,, John Hacket	,,	,,
,, Mongo Hamelton	,,	,,
,, David Balfour	,,	,,
,, Wm Schot[2] .	,,	,,
,, John Murray[3]	,,	,,
,, Donalson .	,,	,,
,, Marioribankes	,,	,,

[1] This appears to be a mistake for James Erskine, who on 8th April 1617 received a commission in place of Thomas Erskine, who had left his company. A Captain James Erskine, who had previously served as a captain of cuirassiers, had been recommended on 24th April 1610 (p. 243).

Captain James Erskine became sergeant-major of the regiment on 8th May 1631, lieutenant-colonel on 13th March 1636, and colonel on 2nd March 1639. He distinguished himself at the passage of the Lys in 1644. He commanded the old regiment (previously H. Balfour's and Brog's) till 1655, when he died, and the three regiments being formed into two, Walter Scott, formerly lieutenant-colonel of Drummond's regiment, became colonel of the one, John Kirkpatrick retaining the command of the other.

[2] William Scott, succeeded Captain Murray, deceased, on 12th March 1621, and was succeeded by George Lamont on 28th November 1622.

[3] John Murray succeeded David Lindsay 12th February 1620, and seems to have died by 12th March 1621, when Captain Murray was succeeded by William Scott.

[4] Thomas Marjoribanks succeeded Captain Hamilton on 16th January 1620. He died before 4th September 1626, when he was succeeded by James Scot.

[Second State of War from 1621 to 1631]

Cn Alane Coutis	150 men	£2014	Cn James Elpingston[5]	120 men	£1655
,, Archibald Douglas[1] . .	,,	,,	,, James Lindsay .	,,	,,
,, Walter Murray[2]	120	1655	,, Wm Orrock .	,,	,,
,, John Kennodt	,,	,,	,, David Colfert[6]	,,	,,
,, Jacques Sandelans	,,	,,	,, James Henderson	,,	,,
,, John Sempil[3]	,,	,,	,, John Hacquet	,,	,,
,, James Arskyn	,,	,,	,, Mongo Hamilton	,,	,,
,, Patrick Murray[4]	,,	,,	,, David Balfour	,,	,,
			,, George Lamont[7]	,,	,,

[1] Sir Archibald Douglas succeeded Francis Henderson, who took over the 'Compagnie Colonelle' of his brother Robert, on succeeding him as colonel 27th November 1622. Was appointed sergeant-major 31st October 1634, lieutenant-colonel 7th July 1638, and colonel 8th March 1639. He was dead before 6th September 1639, when an appointment was given 'by H.H. on board before St. Annalandt,' to John Kirkpatrick to succeed him. See petitions by his widow, Gertrude Walsdorf, in 1640.

[2] Walter Murray succeeded William Drummond, 30th Sepember 1627.

[3] John Sempill succeeded William Drummond, who then took Thomas Edmond's company, on 1st August 1625.

[4] Patrick Murray succeeded his captain (Sir Henry) Livingston, then deceased, on 24th November 1626. He was dead by 23rd March 1635, when he was succeeded by Thomas Livingstone.

[5] James Elphinstone succeeded his captain (Robert), Scott, deceased, on 25th January 1627. Dead, and succeeded by W. Pentland by 27th February 1632.

[6] David Colyear was the first of a family destined to be honourably connected with the Scots Brigade. A commission was issued on 10th February 1625, for Davidt Collar, chamberlain to his Excellency, in the place of Captain William Hudson deceased. He became sergeant-major of Sir William Drummond's regiment on 9th July 1649, and is described in list of 1636 and the State of War of 1649 as David Robertson *dict* Colyer. He was the father of Colonel Sir Alexander Robertson *alias* Colyear, who on 24th March 1677 was served heir-general to his sister Joanna, daughter of Major David Colyear.—(Inq. Gen. 5987) David Colyear married Jean, daughter of John Bruce of Airth and Margaret Elphinstone, before September 1643. They had three daughters, one married to Thomas Dunbar of Grange, another, Martha, to Sir John Nicholson of Tillicoultry, and Joanna, and one son, Alexander (see Div. IV.). It has been said that these Colyears were cadets of the house of Struan, who changed their name from Robertson to Colyear. It is certain that there was a connection with the Robertsons of Struan, and Sir Alexander, the first baronet (created 1677), called himself Robertson *alias* Colyear. The author of the *History and Martial Achievements of the Robertsons of Struan*, says that he did this 'for reasons,' but the Dutch Records show that in doing so he followed his father's example. Colyear is a Fife name, and families of the name held land near Kirkcaldy, Pitkinny, and Lochgelly. See the *Scottish Antiquary*, vol. xi. pp. 60-63.

[7] George Lamont succeeded William Scott on 27th November 1622.

C[n] John Murray[1]	120 men	£1655	C[n] Marioribankis	120 men	£1655
,, Jacques Balfour[2]	,,	,,			

Wacht-ende-Quartiermeesters.[3]

Willem Drominert, Sergeant Majoor van 't regiment van Brogh £80
Robert Mesterton Quaertier [mr] van Colonel Brogh . . . 50

Officieren van Justitie

Will[m] Conradi provoost van Col. Brogh 50

Ministers

Andres Hunterus, Predicant van de Schotten . . £33, s.7 d.8

Pensioenen

Janneken, dochter van Cap[n] John Nysbeth, tsjaers £100 t'haeren lijve £8, s.6 d.8
De weduwe Cap[n] Jan Balfour . . . £50 : £4, s.3 d.4
Col. Balfour, op zijn lijf 's jaers £1000
De Kinderen van Cap[n] Waddel, als Archibald, Jan ende Willem £200 's jaers £600
Maria Righ, weduwe van C[n] Melvil, ten lijve van Jacques, David, Janneken, Tanneken ende Hester elcx £80 . . 400
Jan ende Catharina d'Alchy Kinderen van Cap[n] d'Alchy, elck £100 200
Jan ende Janneken Prop, Kinderen van Cap[n] Prop, elcx de helft 206
Jouffrouwe Anna Kirpatric, weduwe van Cap[n] Strackan, t'haren lyve 200
De Kinderen van Cap[n] James Egger, genaemt Nicolaes, ende Margrete, elck de helft 125
De Kinderen van Cap[n] Kilpatricx, als Jan, Maria ende Helena Kilpatrick 200

[Another transcriber gives the following additional names]—

Guilliaume Murray of Pickerles on the lives of Jan and Elisabeth his children, each £100 200
Barbara Bruce, widow of L[t] Col. Caluart, on her life, . . 200
The children of Cap[n] W[m] Nysbeth, Arthur and Margarieta Nysbeth, each one half £134, s.6 d.8

---

[1] A James Murray succeeded Captain Home on 2nd May 1623. On 11th March 1654, a George Lauder succeeded James Murray, having then commanded the company for some years.

[2] James Balfour succeeded his captain, Donaldson, on 17th March 1627, became sergeant-major 9th April 1639, was lieut.-colonel 1643, and was succeeded as captain by Sir Alexander Home on 16th November 1643. Lieu.-Colonel James Balfour, son, it is thought, of Colonel Sir David Balfour (see p. 44), married Anne, daughter of Philip Stewart, and had issue. He appears as lieut.-colonel of James Erskine's regiment in the State of 1649, but does not appear in 1655. On 22nd November 1661, Alexander Colyear was appointed captain of 'Col. Balfour's company' [*sic*] in Scott's regiment.

[3] The next entries are given in Dutch as a specimen of the original.

Mistress Anna van Duvenvoorde, widow of Col. Cunigam, on the lives of Mistress Margriet van Duvenvoorde, the wife of Cap[n] of Horse, Wisschardt, and Elisabeth Cunigam, each one half £300
Joost Blair 50

Zeeland. Infantry

	men	monthly pay
C[n] Henry Killegry	120	£1655
,, Connock . .	,,	,,
,, Walter Bruce	,,	,,

monthly pay
C[n] Jacques Hacquet, genaemt Swart gew: wachtm[r] tot Bergen op Zoom £72 ter maent . . . £70
,, Samuel Prop, Ingenieur 25

July 12, 1622

Militaire zaken, Portf. 32.

Besettinge van de Garnisoenen als men te velde sal sijn
[List of garrisons when the army is in the field]

Brabandt
Bergen op Zoom
Walter Bruce
Thomas Ogle

Breda
Gerardt Herbert
Trochmorton
S[r] William Lovelace

Hollandt
Geertruydenberge [then belonging to Holland]
Humme

Rotterdam
Cor. Ogle

Gornichem
S[r] Henry Larrey
John Heydon

Gelderlandt
Zutphen
Roockwood
Lincxbey

Vlaenderen.
Sluys
Louvelace
Hutton
Butler
Hamelton

Ter Hoffstede
Pottey

Landt van't Cleve.
Rees
Marioribankis
Orrock

In de Schantz tot Reez
David Pitcarn, nijeuwe Schotten [1]
George Coutes

Graefschap van Ravensperg
Papenmuitz
Jan Waddel [2]

[1] David Pitcairn received a commission on 22nd September 1621, as captain of a newly arrived Scottish company, enlisted for three months, he paying the cost of transportation and of arming. On 27th May 1628 he remonstrated in reference to a report on his company (p. 353).

[2] John Waddell, probably the son of an earlier Captain Waddell (see p. 54), had a lawsuit with the Countess of Megen in 1628 (p. 357).

July 12, 1622

Lyste van de Compaignien die Sijn Excellentie te velde sal brengen.
[List of the companies to take the field under His Excellency.]

Schotten

't regiment van den Coronnel Brogge
De compie Coronnelle
Capn Donaldson
Seyton
Edmondt
Levingston
Arskin
Sandilandis
Sr Pilipps Balfour
Drommond, Serg. Maj.
L. Cor. Alane Coutes

Regiment van den Cor. Henrysone
De compaignie coronnelle
Lieutenant Coronnel Henryson.
Serg. Maj. Halcket
Sr David Balfour
Capn Bethone
William Schot
Capn Henryson
Lindesay
Hudtson
Robbert Schot

Decr 1622. Lyste van de Cavaillerie

Nymeghen

Sir Robbert Carrey [1]
Sir William Balfour

1636

Compagnien in dienst van den lande zijnde.

Engelschen

Het regimt van Sir Charles Morgan.
„ „ „ den Col. Philips Pakenham
Het regimt van den Col. Sir Henry Herbert
Het regimt van den Heere Col. George Goring

[The companies follow.]

Schotten

Het Regiment van den Col. Sir Wilm Brogge
De compagnie Colonelle
Lt Colonnel Sandilans
St Maj. James Arskyn
Maria ribankes
Andries Caddel [2]
Capn Brogge [3]
Jacq. Balfour
Walter Murray [4]

[1] The Resolutions of Holland, of 13th December 1628, referring to the claims of the Earl of Buccleuch, state there 'also is vacant the company of horse of Capt. Carry, but that the English claim this company again so as to have it granted to an Englishman, and not to a Scotchman, to prevent confusion of the two nations.'

[2] Andrew Caddell succeeded Captain Seton, 13th June 1623; sergeant-major, 13th March 1636; lieut.-colonel, 17th March 1639; was dead by 13th April 1640, when he was succeeded by William Lyle as captain; taken prisoner at Calloo.

[3] Captain Brogh received commission 3rd February 1626, in place of his captain (Mowbray, then deceased). He was dead before 11th April 1635, when he was succeeded by Alexander Bruce.

[4] Walter Murray, previously lieutenant of Lieut.-Colonel Halkett's company, succeeded as captain Sergeant-Major Drummond, killed at Groll, on 29th September 1627; appointed sergeant-major before Rammekens, 15th May 1640; Lieut-colonel of Scott's regiment, 27th March 1655; retired 1657, when he was succeeded by George Lauder.

Schotten.

Joris Keyer [Keir][1]	Stuart[2]
Het regiment van den Col. Sir David Balfour	Wilm Pentlandt[3]
De Compaignie Colonelle	Jacques Hacquet[4]
Lt Colonnel James Henryson	John Henrysone[5]
St Maj. Archibald Douglas	George Hacquet[6]
	John Kirck Patrick[7]

---

[1] George Keir, ensign of Captain Erskine's company, received a commission as captain of Lieut.-colonel Allan Coutts's (deceased) company on 12th May 1631; became sergeant-major of Scott's regiment 2nd April 1655, and was dead by 1st October, when he was succeeded by Lewis Erskine.

[2] A William Stewart received a commission on 26th June 1607, as captain of a company of 120 men, which he brought from Scotland.

[3] William Pentland received commission in succession to Captain Elphinstone, deceased, on 27th February 1632.

[4] James Halkett received commission as captain on 18th September 1629, in succession to Captain George Lamont. He was dead by 22nd September 1638, when he was succeeded by David Balfour.

[5] John Henderson succeeded Captain James Lindsay on 23rd September 1629; sergeant-major of Douglas's regiment, 7th March 1639; lieut.-colonel, 22nd November 1639. In 1660 John Henderson received a commission as colonel of one of the Scottish regiments (Drummond's), which had been vacant for some time, and Thomas Livingstone, formerly sergeant-major of Kirkpatrick's, became sergeant-major. On 7th March 1662 Lewis Erskine became colonel *vice* John Henderson, deceased.

A Sir John Henderson distinguished himself in the service of King Charles in the English Civil War. Baillie notes on 1st January 1644: 'Henderson has gotten his pass from the king and is seeking it also from the Parliament for Holland,' and on 2nd April, 'Commissions were given [at Oxford] to Montrose as generall, Sir John Henderson as lieut. with the rest of that crew, to do mischief in Scotland.' In 1639 Sir John Henderson had been made governor of Dumbarton Castle. Douglas states that Sir John Henderson of Fordell (nephew of Sir Robert, and Sir Francis, and Sir James) served King Charles, and had a son George, who was killed in Holland.

The old ballad, relating to the battle at the Bridge of Dee in 1639, says:

'They ca'd him Colonel Henderson,
That garred the cannons flee.'

[6] George Halkett, son of Colonel Halkett (deceased, killed at Bois-le-Duc), previously ensign of his father's company, succeeded Sir David Balfour as captain, Sir David having taken Colonel Halkett's company on 11th October 1629. Captain Halkett was succeeded (having left his company) by James Henderson on 30th December 1639.

[7] John Kirkpatrick, previously lieutenant of Colonel Balfour, received a commission as captain in place of Captain Orrock, deceased, on 24th October 1631. He became sergeant-major, by appointment given by H.H. in the army on the Noortgeest, on 25th June 1638; lieut.-colonel, 7th March 1639, and colonel

James Balfour[1] | Thomas Levingston[2]

on the 21st of October 1639. He distinguished himself at Hulst in 1645. Was appointed commander-in-chief between Bergen and Steenbergen in 1669; governor of Bois-le-Duc in 1670, and sergeant-major-general of the army in 1672; retaining the command of his regiment from 1639, to his death in 1682.

The Resolutions of Holland contain the following:

'1683. *Jan 21st.*—Report of committee conform their instructions of Aug. 22d last on Petition Johannes Constable, representing the heirs of *Johan Kirckpatrick, ex-Gov. of Bois-le-Duc*, stating, that in 1672, when the French with 3 armies threatened the town unexpectedly, and it therefore being in great peril, calling for incessant work on the fortifications not only by the militia, but by citizens and inhabitants of all ages, the council of war, with consent of the local Government, decided to stop for 4 weeks the inning [*sic*, levying] of excises and imposts, as an inducement and encouragement; that on Nov. 23, 1673, Gov. Kirckpatrick (who had only approved of this measure on account of the serious circumstances) was summoned by the lessees (of said excises and imposts) as a private individual for the am't of their losses, and that by default the council of state condemned him to pay; that the said Gov. K. had appealed to T.H.M., who, on report of the committee of Jan. 23, 1676, and on advice of H.H., had prevented the execution during the life of said Gov. K.; but that now he was dead, the said lessees had promptly attached his property; that on Feb. 18th, 1682, the said council had suspended the said execution, awaiting T.H.M.'s decision, which could not be taken without the co-operation of this Province, requesting therefore its consent to the release of the inheritance from this attachment. Res.: That though Governors or Commanders of towns or places had no authority to dispose of the revenue, with or without the consent of a Council of War, and the said Gov. K. had therefore been justly sentenced . . . in consideration of the great difficulties he had to contend with in 1672, the dangers to which the town was exposed, and that the said Gov. K. acted entirely in accord with the council of war and the local authorities, and that only he personally has been sentenced, to allow, in the Generality, that the am't of the said condemnation shall be courteously refunded to his heirs, without thereby establishing any precedent whatsoever.'

Douglas notes that Alexander Erskine, 4th Earl of Kelly, married: 1. Mary, daughter of Colonel Kilpatrick, governor of the Bush in Holland, by whom he had only one daughter, Lady Anne, married to Sir Alexander Erskine of Cambo, Lord Lyon, and had a numerous issue.

[1] James Balfour, son of Colonel Balfour, succeeded Mungo Hamilton on 24th February 1633. Colonel Bartholomew Balfour had a younger son, James, a captain in Holland.

[2] Thomas Livingston succeeded Patrick Murray (deceased) on 23d March 1635, became sergeant-major 6th September 1639 (Kirkpatrick's regiment); lieut.-colonel 11th June 1660; was dead by 19th July 1673, when he was succeeded by his ensign, Thomas Livingston (his son, afterwards Lord Teviot). Sir Thomas Livingston of Newbigging, created a baronet by Charles I., 'obtained a commission,' says Douglas in his *Peerage*, 'in one of the Scotch regiments in the service of the States of Holland, where he settled, and by his valour and merit rose to the rank of a colonel, and had the command of a regiment of

Het regiment van den Colonnel James Levingston, Baron d'Amont [1]	Davidt Pitcarn
De Compagnie Colonnelle	Davidt Robbertson dit Coller
L[t] Col. George Coutes	Walther Schot [2]
S[t] Major Philips Balfour	John Levingston [3]
	Alexander Murray [4]

foot [*sic*]. He married a daughter of the famous and eminent Colonel Edmund, a Scotchman, and native of the town of Stirling, with whom he got a very considerable estate, and had issue, two sons: 1. Sir Thomas, afterwards Viscount Teviot; 2. Sir Alexander Livingston.' These both served in the Brigade.

[1] Sir James Livingston served as lieutenant in the company of his brother, Sir Henry Livingston, in 1618 (see letter of Magistrates of Tiel in reference to his debt, p. 296).

Sir James Livingston, younger son of Alexander, 1st Earl of Linlithgow, was appointed lieut.-colonel of Sir David Balfour's regiment in November 1629, and on 30th December 1633 appointed colonel in succession to the Earl of Buccleuch, deceased, thus being transferred. He was created Lord Livingston of Almond in 1633, and Earl of Callander in 1641. In 1640 (5th November) Sir Philip Balfour was appointed colonel in his place, his regiment being declared vacant through his absence. He was one of the generals of the army of the Scottish Covenanters; led one division in the advance on Newcastle in 1640; commanded the reserve army sent into England in 1644, and the force which besieged Newcastle, and was lieutenant-general of the Duke of Hamilton's army defeated by Cromwell at Preston in 1648. He died in 1672. He was, however, regarded with some jealousy on account of his connection with Montrose at the time of 'the Cumbernauld Band.' Baillie refers to 'his inflexibility to serve against Montrose,' and at the time of the encampment on Dunse Law writes, 'The place of L[t] Gen. was destinate for Almond, in whose wisdom and valour we had but too much confidence; yet in the time of our most need the grievousness of his gravel, or the pretence of it, made him go to France to be cutted; always when he came there, it was found he needed not incision, so he past to his charge in Holland, where to us he was as dead in all our dangers.'

[2] Walter Scott, previously ensign of the Earl of Buccleuch's company, succeeded Captain William Douglas, deceased, on 29th November 1629; sergeant-major (Sir P. Balfour's), 8th February 1641; lieut.-colonel, 1649; colonel, 27th March 1655; retired before 1st April 1673, when he was succeeded by Henry Graham.

'Colonel Walter Scott of Balweary,' says Douglas in his *Baronage*, 'betook himself to a military life, and rose to the rank of a colonel in the army, but never married. Some little time before his death he sent over from Holland to Sir John Scott of Ancrum, Bart., the seal of the family of Balweary with a letter acknowledging him to be the heir male, which is still preserved.' Colonel Scott was thus the representative of the famous wizard, Michael Scott.

[3] John Livingston was appointed (p. 354) in the company of his father, Sir Henry Livingston, 1628; succeeded John Sempill, who had left his company, on 14th January 1630; became sergeant-major, and lieut.-colonel 4th December 1640 (Sir P. Balfour's regiment). He was dead by 11th May 1649, when he was succeeded by Walter Scott as colonel, and by Sir William Fleming as captain.

[4] Alexander Murray succeeded his captain (John Bellenden, deceased, who had,

George Lauder[1] | Henry Ecklin[2]

on 2nd December 1630, succeeded Captain Kinninmond, deceased) on 8th July 1631. He was succeeded by Everwyn Kirkpatrick on 19th November 1646, having retired.

[1] 'The ingenious Colonel George Lauder,' the soldier-poet, was a younger son of Lauder of Halton in Mid-Lothian, his mother being Annabella Bellenden, his father's second wife.—*The Grange of St. Giles*, by Mrs. J. Stewart Smith. He was laureated at Edinburgh in 1620, and survived to 1670. He was the father of Lieut.-Colonel Lauder, who served in the same regiment in 1672, and of Lieut.-General George Lauder, who succeeded to the command after Killiecrankie, and commanded the regiment in Marlborough's campaigns. His whole family served in the Brigade, and five sons fell in the service of the States. (Petition by General Lauder, see vol. ii.) George Lauder distinguished himself at Calloo and on the island of Funen in the expedition to the Baltic in 1659, and was presented by the King of Denmark with a gold chain and his portrait in diamonds. He received his commission as captain in 1634, and became Lieut.-Colonel of Scott's regiment in 1657. A George Lauder, possibly himself upon a new appointment, or a son, also received a company in 1654.

The motto appended to many of his poetical pieces was, '*Sunt artibus arma decori*,' and his best-known poem is the elegy on the death of his friend and fellow-poet Drummond of Hawthornden, which contains the lines,

> 'Here Damon lies, whose songs did sometimes grace
> The murmuring Esk ; may roses shade the place!'

He was the author of the following:

'A Valedictory Poem on leaving Scotland in 1622.'

'The Soldier's Wishe,' 1628. 'The Scottish Souldier,' 1629. 'Wight,' 1629.

'Tears on the Death of Evander.' Hague, 1630.

'Aretophel, or a Funeral Elegy on the death of . . . Colonel . . . the Earl of Buccleuch,' by G. Lauder, captaine in the same regiment. Middelburgh.

'Tweed's Teares of Joy, to Charles, Great Brittain's king' (on the Pacification of Berwick, 1639). 'Caledonia's Covenant,' 1641.

'His Dog, for a New Year's Gift, to James Erskine, colonel of a Scots regiment.' Breda, 1647.

'Mars Belgicus, or ye Funeral Elegy on Henry, Prince of Orange.' Breda, 1647.

'Damon, a Pastoral Elegy on the death of his honoured friend William Drummond, of Hawthornden.' Printed 1711.

'Poem on the Death of King Charles I.' Delft, 1649.

'Achilles Auriacus, or a Funeral Elegie on the Death of William, Prince of Orange.' Breda, 1650.

'Eubulus, or a Free and Loyal Discourse to His Sacred Majesty, by one of his most faithfull subjects,' 1660.

'Hecatombe Christiana, or Christian Meditations and Disquisitions upon the Life and Death of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, 1661, dedicated to the Right Honourable my very loving brother Richard Lauder, Baron of Haltoun.'

'Breda Exultans, or a Poem on the Happy Peace with England,' 1667.

'Good Wishes to his Highness the Prince [of Orange] on his Birthday.'

'Epitaph on the Death of Mr. Alexander Wedderburne, Preacher of the Gospel in the British Church at the Bosche.'

Mr. Wedderburne returned the compliment by writing an Epitaph for the colonel.

A Christmas Carol was addressed to him as 'the Heroycall L. Colonel Lauder, Patron of Truth,' which contains the lines,

'Nixt Hawthorn-Damon, Halton Lysis love,
My mind doth move.'

Lysis being the name assumed by Lauder in his elegy on the poet.

The following lines from his poems refer to the services of Scots in foreign fields.

From the 'SCOTTISH SOLDIER.'

'Behold two thousand in Jerusalem,
Brave champions of the Faith, true Scotish men,
Led by great Hugo, Philip's brother bold,
Who then the scepter of faire France did hold.
Behold the holy king Saint Lewys then
Proud to lead on three thousand Scots againe
To Palestine, whilst that brave Earl of March,
Their captaine, by his side did statelie march;
Of whose assistance finding so much good,
Our third King Alexander's help he su'd,
And had two thousand more sent to his neede,
Whom Atholl's Earle and Carrict's Counte did lead.'

'This way our grandsires went, this way our sires,
This way must hee to honour who aspires:
By this our brethren in these latter dayes
Have in the schooles of warre been crowned with bayes.
Shall we who follow them degener then,
And not be like our valiant countrymen?
Who when calm peace at home their minds did marre,
Did seek employment into forraine warre,
As *Holland* well can witnesse, who did find
Their friendly help, and first did prove them kind,
Of any neighbour nation, when opprest
With Tyrannie she first her neck did wrest
From Spaine's hard yoke and did her power disdaine,
A stated freedome since to entertaine
By force of armes, though not her owne, God knowes,
For all her conquests to our courtsie owes
A noble share, which she forgetting now,
Her vile ingratitude doth baselie shew;
For had they not at Nuyport fought it out,
When but a handful left, enclosed about,
The fortune of that day had not beene good;
But they would seale it with their dearest blood,
And buye the Victorie at such a rate,
As might deserve more thankes if friendly met.'

From 'ARETOPHEL.'

'That dark oblivion his reward should be,
And that his name should never more be found
In Belgia's annals (where the deeds are drowned
Of worthy Scots) then those Heroes are,
Whose valour first did teach her hands to warre,
And made her see, even in her lowest state,
That Spaynards were but men, and could be beat.'

[2] Henry Ecklin succeeded the Earl of Buccleuch, whose lieutenant he had been, on 12th January 1634.

1643

Voetvolck op Hollandt

[Infantry in Holland]

	men	monthly pay
George Goring[1]	150	£2014
Herbert .	,,	,,
Milord Grave .	,,	,,
Cromwel .	,,	,,
James Erskin[2] .	150	,,
John Kilpatrick[3]	,,	,,
Phl's Balfour,[4] boven sijn Compie op Stadt ende Landen [in addition to his Company on S. en L.]	50	600
William Killegrey	120	1655
Eduart Stuart[5]	,,	,,
Thomas Ogle .	,,	,,
James Balfour .	120	£1655
John Hindersum	,,	,,
[Here follow names which are evidently not Scottish]		
Walter Murrai	100	1417
Alexander Murray	,,	,,
Thom. Levingston[6]	,,	,,
John Levingston	,,	,,
Wm Pentlant	,,	,,
John Riddel[7] .	,,	,,
Henri Echlin .	,,	,,
David Colyer .	,,	,,
Wm Riddel[8] .	,,	,,
Henri Hume[9] .	,,	,,
James Douglas[10]	,,	,,
George Kyer .	,,	,,

[1] The first four names are the colonels of the four English regiments.

[2] See p. 318. [3] See p. 323. [4] See p. 232.

[5] Edward Stuart.

[6] Thomas Livingston (2.) succeeded Colonel Sandilands, whose lieutenant he had been, in command of his company on 25th October 1638. He was dead by 28th November 1644, when he was succeeded by Louis Erskine.

[7] John Riddell succeeded Colonel Archibald Douglas in command of his company on 16th December 1639, and was dead by 19th February 1644, when he was succeeded by John Kirkpatrick.

[8] William Riddell, formerly lieutenant of Colonel Balfour's company, succeeded Lieut.-Colonel Henderson in command of his company on 20th September 1638. Became sergeant-major of Kirkpatrick's regiment on 11th June 1660, and was dead by 11th July 1662, when he was succeeded as major by John Kirkpatrick, junior, and as captain by William Lindsay. Sir William Riddell, second son of Sir John Riddell, first baronet, became governor of Doesburgh in Holland, and married Windelina van Buchan. His brothers, John and Thomas, were also 'captains in the service of Holland' (MS. Adv. Lib.).

[9] Henry Hume, on 19th April 1642, succeeded his brother, George Hume, who became a captain of horse. George Hume had, on 16th November 1637, succeeded James Williamson, the company being that previously commanded by Sir William Brog. He was dead before 16th June 1650, when he was succeeded by John Lamy.

[10] James Douglas, formerly lieutenant of Colonel Sir David Balfour's company, succeeded to the command on his death, 6th December 1638.

	men	monthly pay
James Henderson[1]	100	£1417
David Balfour[2] .	,,	,,
Jacq. Balfour ,,	,,	,,
Herbert Trogmorton ,,		,,

Tractementen op Hollandt

[Salaries paid by Holland]

Colonnel George Goring .	£iii^{c}
William Killegre, L^{t} Colonnel	lxxx
Henry Wynne, Serg. Major	lx
Henri Hecson, Quartiermr .	l
Wolter Bellis, Provoost .	xl
Milord Grave, Colonnel .	iii^{c}
Richard Corbet L^{t} Colonel .	lxxx
Thomas Hamon, Serg. Major	lx
Josias Stephens, Quartiermr	l
Thomas Wod, Provost .	xl
Colonnel Cromwell . .	iii^{c}
Thomas Dolmas, Lieut^{t} Colonnel . . .	lxxx
Thomas Nortes, Sergeant Major	lx
Beyerius Cool, Quartierm^{r} .	l
Gripphys Prise, Provoost .	xl
James Arskyn, Colonnel .	iii^{c}
James Balfour, Lieut.-Col.	lxxx
Andries Caddel, Serg^{t}-Major	lx
John Siortes,[3] Quartiermr .	l
Jacques Duntap, Provoost	£xl
John Kilpatrick, Colonnel .	iii^{c}
John Henderson, Lieut.-Col.	lxxx
Thomas Levingston, Serg^{t} Major, ...	lx
James Hunter, Quartiermr	l
James Creynier, Provoost .	xl
Phls Balfour, Colonnel .	iii^{c}
John Levingston, Lieut.-Col.	lxxx
Walter Scotte, Sergeant-Major	lx
Eduart Yonger, Quartiermr	l
Robert Aubri Cromby, Provoost . . .	lx

Ministers

George Clerck, Predicant van de Schotten [minister of the Scots], £xxxiii, st. vi, d. viii

Zeelant

Voetvolck

		men	monthly pay
4	John Courtney	100	£1417
	Amys .	,,	,,
	Richardt Keiff	,,	,,
	Herri Pomerey	,,	,,
	Eduard Morgan	,,	,,
	Charles Ketelbi	,,	,,
	Walter Schot	,,	,,

[1] James Henderson succeeded Captain Halkett, who had left his company on 30th December 1639. Sir James Henderson, then deceased, was succeeded by John Kirkpatrick on 28th August 1644. It is stated in Douglas's *Baronage* that Sir James Henderson, eldest son of Sir John of Fordell (brother of the three colonels), was a captain in the French (*sic*) service, and died in 1643 without issue.

[2] David Balfour, formerly lieutenant of Colonel Balfour's company, received commission as captain, in place of James Halkett deceased, on 22nd September 1638. He was succeeded on October 8th, 1647, by Mauritz Halkett, previously his lieutenant.

[3] John Schortes succeeded Capt. William Lyle, who had succeeded Lieut.-Colonel Caddell (deceased), on 13th April 1640, and had left his Company before 1st July 1642. Deceased before 26th September 1644, when he was succeeded by Captain Henry Graham.

[4] English names.

Tractementen op Zeelant

Henri Herbert, Colonnel, voor sijn persoon [for himself] . . . . . £iii^{c}

Ferdinand Knichtley, Lieut. Col. lxxx

Utrecht
Voetvolck

	men	monthly pay
James Scot .	100	£1417
Knichtley .	,,	,,
Gregoir .	,,	,,
Corbet, .	,,	,,
John Siortes,[1]	,,	,,

The following officers received commissions subsequent to the State of 1643, and prior to the conclusion of the peace in 1648.

John Kirkpatrick, Feb. 19th, 1644.

In succession to John Riddell, deceased. He was formerly lieutenant of Colonel Kirkpatrick's Life Company.

Robert Halkett, Oct. 25th, 1644.

In succession to John Kirkpatrick who received the company of Sir James Henderson, deceased. Robert Halkett had been lieutenant of Sir James Henderson's Company.

Lewis Erskine, Nov. 28th, 1645.

In succession to Thomas Livingston, deceased. He had been previously Ensign of Colonel Erskine's Company.

Henry Graham, Nov. 28th, 1645.

In succession to John Shiortes. He had been lieutenant of Captain Erskine.

Colonel Sir William Drummond, May 19th, 1646.

In succession to Sir Philip Balfour, retired.

Everwyn Kirkpatrick, Nov. 20th, 1646.

In succession to Alexander Murray, retired.

Mauritz Halkett, Oct. 9th, 1647.

In succession to his captain, David Balfour.

Succession of Officers, 1621-1642

The list which follows gives the succession of the captains of the different companies, and of the field officers. It shows the officer commanding each company in 1621, with the date of his commission and those who succeeded him down to 1642, with the dates of appointment.

Holland. Foot

1606 Col. Brogh . . . . . 200 men £2612

James Williamson,[2] cap^{n} of 118 men, March 14th 1636.
George Hume, Nov. 17th, 1637.
Henry Hume, April 23rd, 1642.

---

[1] The Scots and English names are frequently found together. A few of the English have been given as illustrations, and in particular those of the colonels and staff of the four regiments in service at the time.

[2] Deceased before 16th November 1687.

Dec. 20th, 1603 Col. Robert Hinderson . . 200 men £2612

Francois Henderson, Sep. 17th, 1622.
Col. Earl of Bucklough, received this compy Dec. 8th 1629.
Henry Echlines, Capn of 117 men ; Jan. 12th, 1634, by appointment of His Excy, of Jan. 8th, 1634, Col. Levingston to increase his Compy standing on Friesland, to 198 men, with 81 from this Compy.

1600 Allane Coutis . . . . 150 men £2014

George Kier, May 14th, 1631, of 118 men, the balance to Sandelandis.

Dec. 20th, 1603 François Henderson . . 150 men £2014

Archibald Douglas, Nov. 27th, 1622.
John Riddel, Dec. 29th, 1639.

Jan. 14th, 1617 Thos. Edmondt . . . 120 1655

Wm. Drommont, Aug. 11th, 1625.
Walter Murray, Sep. 30th, 1627.
After Edmondt this Compy was raised to 140 men ; 30 men in 1628 were put under Haquet.

April 5th, 1615 John Kennimondt . . 120 men £1655

John Bellenden,[1] Dec. 2nd, 1630.
Alex. Murray, July 9th, 1631.

Nov. 16th, 1618 Jacques Sandelands . . 120 1655

Thos. Levingston, Jan. 14th, 1639. *October 25th, 1638. January 8th, 1639.*

Aug. 4th, 1615 Robbert Coutis, . . . 120 men £1655

Wm. Drommond, Dec. 8th, 1621.
John Sempel, Aug. 1st, 1625.
John Levingston, Jan. 14th, 1630.

April 8th, 1617 James Arskyn . . . 120 1655

Jan. 12th, 1607 H. Levingston . . . 120 1655

Patrick Murray, Nov. 25th, 1626.
Thos. Levingston, March 24th, 1635.

Nov. 28th, 1604 Robert Schot . . . 120 1655

James Elfingston, Jan. 26th 1627.
Wm. Pentelandt, Feb. 27th, 1632.

March 31st, 1615 James Lindesay . . 120 1655

John Henresone, Sept 22nd, 1629.

Nov. 23rd, 1618 William Orrock . . 120 1655

John Kirckpatrick, Oct. 25th, 1631.

Nov. 24th, 1604 Wm. Hutson . . . 120 1655

David Colliar, Feb. 11th, 1625.

Nov. 14th, 1618 James Henderson . . 120 1655

Wm. Riddel, Sep. 21st, 1638.

Nov. 28th, 1604 John Hacquet . . . 120 1655

David Balfour, Col., Sep. 21st, 1629.
James Douglas, Dec. 6th, 1638.

1606 Mongo Hamilton 120 1655

James Balfour, Feb. 26th, 1633.

---

[1] Dead by July 8th, 1631.

Dec. 20th, 1603 David Balfour . . . 120 men £1655
George Halcquet, Dec. 6th, 1629.
James Henrisonne, Jan. 2nd, 1640.
March 12th, 1621 Willem Schot . . . 120 1655
George Lamont, Nov. 28th, 1622.
Jacques Halcquet, Sep. 18th, 1629.
David Balfour, Sep. 23rd, 1638.
Oct. 9th, 1604 Andreas Donaldson . . 120 1655
Jacques Balfour, March 18th, 1627.

PAY ON HOLLAND.

1606 Col. Brogh, for his person 400
James Sandilandis, March 14th, 1636.
James Arskyn, March 8th, 1639.
Allane Coutis, Lt. Col. 100
James Sandelandis, May 9th, 1631.
James Arskyne, March 17th, 1636.
Andries Caddel, March 8th, 1639.
James Balfour, July 21st, 1640.
April 28th, 1612 Col. Robert Henderson . . . 300
since raised to 400
Francois Henderson, Sep. 17th, 1622.
John Hacquet, Dec. 28th, 1628.
David Balfour, Sep. 7th, 1629.
Archibald Douglas, March 8th, 1639.
John Kirckpatrick, Oct. 21st, 1639.
March 12th, 1618 François Henderson, Lt Col. . . 100
John Halquet, Oct. 31st, 1622.
David Balfour, Dec. 28th, 1628.
Jacques Haddon, Oct. 22nd, 1629.
James Levingstone, Dec. 21st, 1629.
James Henrisone, July 21st, 1634.
Archibald Douglas, July 5th, 1638.
John Kilpatrik, March 8th, 1639.
John Henrisone, Dec. 2nd, 1639.
Hacquet, St Major 80
David Balfour, Sep. 5th, 1622.
Archibald Bethon, Dec. 28th, 1628.
Jacques Haddon, Oct. 22nd, 1629.
Mongo Hamilton, Dec. 3rd, 1629.
James Henrisonne, Feb. 16th, 1633.
Archibald Douglas, Nov. 3rd, 1634.
John Kirckpatrick, June 29th, 1638.
John Henderson, March 8th, 1639.
Thos. Levingstone, Dec. 2nd, 1639.
Blaire qr mr 50

Wm Jeremias Pentland, Nov. 5th, 1622.
Jan Roon, March 16th, 1527.
James Houter, Jan. 12th, 1640.
Michiel Henderson, Provost Marshall . . . £50
James Kryhiers, Sep. 9th, 1628.
together £580

Wardens and Quartermasters

Willem Drommond, St major Regt Brogh . . £80
James Sandilandis, Oct. 27th, 1627.
James Arskin, May 12th, 1631.
Andries Caddel, March 28th, 1636.
James Balfour, April 15th, 1639.
Walter Murray, Oct. 30th, 1640.
Robert Mesterton, qr master of Col. Brogh . . 5
Wm Pentlant, Oct. 22nd, 1630.
John Siordes, March 12th, 1632.
Wm Olphinston, Oct. 17th, 1642.

Officers of Justice

Willem Carcadie, Prost marshal of Brogh . . 50
Wm Car, Oct. 15th, 1627.
Jacques Donlap, June 28th, 1630.

Ministers

Andreas Hunterus, minister of the Scots £33 6 0

Guelderland. Foot

Jan. 2nd, 1607 *Philip* Mouvray . . 120 men £1655
Wm Brogen, Feb. 3rd, 1626 . . 120 men £1655
Alex. Bruce, April 12th, 1635.

Zeeland. Foot

1601-3 Walter Broux [*Bruce*] . . 120 men £1655
Wm Douglas, June 2nd, 1627.
Walter Schott, Dec. 8th, 1629.

Utrecht. Foot

May 17th, 1606 Setton . . . 120 men £1655
Andries Caddel, Jan. 14th, 1623 [*June 13th*].
Wm Lyle, April 14th, 1640.
John Schortes, July 4th, 1642.
Jan. 16th, 1620 Mario Ribanckes . . 120 men £1655
James Schotte, Sep. 9th, 1636 [*Sep. 4th*].

Vriesland. Foot

1614 (?) Archibald Betone . . . 120 men £1655
Jonas Levingston [*probably Col. James L. Lord Almond*].

July 23rd, 1605, Geo. Homes . .	120 men	£1655
⎧Jonas Murray, May 6th, 1623.		
⎩Geo. Lauder, 1634, *March 11th, 1654.*		
March 11th, 1606, Steven Brounfielt .	120 men	£1655
{ Patrick Stuart, *Feb. 1st, 1654.*		

Groningen and Ommelanden. Foot

July 8th, 1615, George Coutis . .	120 men	£1655
{ Alane Coutis,[1] April 30th, 1638 [*1637*]		
Philip Balfour	120 men	£1655
{ June 2nd, 1621. [*Appears in State of War, 1617*].		

[The italics in the above list indicate a *lacuna* in the original source, or an addition and correction made by the compiler from other information.]

---

[1] Allan Coutts, formerly ensign of Captain Scott, on 27th April 1638, in conformity with a recommendation of the States of Groningen and Ommelanden, received a commission as captain of the company of the late Lieut.-Colonel Coutts, his father. (This was Lieut.-Colonel George Coutts.) Became sergeant-major in 1660, and lieut.-colonel of Louis Erskine's regiment in 1662. Appears as lieut.-colonel in 1674, the regiment then being commanded by Jacques de Fariaux, but not in 1675.

II

RESOLUTIONS, REPORTS, REQUESTS, RECOMMENDATIONS, ETC.

1621-1629.

Resolutions of States-General

1621, *January* 26.—The petition was read of Margaret Hamilton, surviving daughter of the late Captain John Hamilton, requesting that, in consideration of the eminent services rendered by her late father to the country, a sum of money may out of grace be voted to her. And it was resolved to place said petition in the hands of the Council of State, to dispose of it.

February 6.—The petition was read of Colonels William Brogh and Robert Henrisonne, asking for permission to increase the strength of their respective companies at once to two hundred men; but this was to be taken into consideration before being decided upon.

April 24.—In the matter of the petition of the daughter of Captain Hamilton, asking for money for her support, the prayer of the petitioner was refused.

To the Council of State. (Feb. 22, 1621.)

Letters and Requests to the Council of State.

My Lords,— . . . Having been informed by your Lordships' missive of 16th inst. of the resolution of their High Mightinesses the States-General, of His Excellency the Prince, and of your Lordships, respecting the further strengthening of the companies of infantry, that is to say, the companies of this nation to be increased, each to the number of one hundred and fifty; and the French, English, and Scots, to the number of one hundred and twenty each. And in pursuance of your command, I shall henceforth not neglect to pay particular attention to such new enlisted soldiers and recruits, and also

to fix the day of muster about the 1st of April next. But the cavalry captains here design—as I understood from their talk some days ago—to be mustered on the 1st of March next, as they intend to have the cavalry completed at the above date. Yet I fear that though they may bring the men together, the muster will prove a failure in the matter of arms.—And herewith drawing to a close, etc., your potent, worshipful, etc.

(Signed) GABRIEL SEVERIJNS.

At Grave, the 22nd February 1621.

To the Council of State. (April 8, 1621.)

MY LORDS,—Sir William Balfour, cavalry captain in this town with his company in garrison, requests from us the payment due for servants' wages during the period of the last eleven months: the particulars you will learn more at large from the document containing his request, which we enclose. And it is well known that he had lodged first at the house of Beeckman, and now in the house of the heir of the Provincial Secretary Kerkman, where he still abides. Moreover, since his household servants' expenses are not on the rolls, and the officers of lodging allowances have orders to pay no house service expenses, except in obedience to the Council's orders; therefore it is our request, in case you agree with us, that you will please to cause this service money to be forwarded to him, because he has had his lodgings, his family, and his horses here, for the period of the eleven months aforesaid, and, with that end in view, to give some document or order, etc.,

BURGOMASTERS, ALDERMEN, AND COUNCIL OF THE CITY NYMEGEN.

8th April 1621.

To the Honourable Council of the City Nymegen.

Captain Sir William Balfour, knight, showeth, with all respect, that the officers of the lodging allowances in your town keep from him and refuse to pay the service expenses due to him, *i.e.* for himself, his servants, and horses, during a period of eleven months, or from the 6th November 1618 to the 22nd September 1619, both included; notwithstanding he

lodged first at the house of Engelbert Beeckman, and now since that always at the house of Provincial Secretary Kerckman; the said officers declaring that his service expenses have not been entered on the rolls. And though he had been absent once or twice from the musters, on necessary business in England, he had always had his family and horses here, and was always responsible for the charges of the lodging. So your petitioner will trust, as he likewise requests, that his service money, amounting to one hundred and fifty guilders, eight stuivers, accumulated during the said period, be paid him by the officers, by order of your Worships, that he may be able to satisfy his landlords in that respect.—By doing so, etc.

1621, *May* 11.—*Inquiry drawn up and taken by me, Jacob Schimmelpenninck van der Oeij, Commissary in Ordinary in the County Zutphen, regarding the three following Troopers.*

Under the Cavalry Captain Beaumont.

Andrew Bell, Scotsman, about sixty-six years of age, declared that he served these Provinces for about forty-five years, both on foot and mounted; that he served first under Captain Trell, Scotsman, then under Cavalry Captain Maxwel, Scotsman, at Bruges, in Vlanders, and under Bruijs, at Ostend; that he was ensign of Captain Grim, after Grim's discharge under Colonel Balfour, and thereafter under Cavalry Captain Edmond. To this day he has served as a trooper in that company, and owing to old age is unable longer to bear arms. He declared that his passports are placed along with his clothes in certain boxes at Nimmeghen.

Under Cavalry Captain Urwingh.

Andrew Anderson, Scotsman, is lying sick at Utrecht. The captain declares that he is sixty years of age, and owing to several wounds is weak and unable to serve longer.

To the Council of State.

My Lords,—We received your Lordships' missive, with the

request of Captain Areskyn, touching his service money [in his lodgings[1]], although he was beyond the sea in Scotland more than four months, and that is the reason why we refused to pay him the said service money, and we did so in conformity with our missive written to us here, of date 7th August 1617: whereby a statutory rule was made that the order issued at the instance of the town as to service should be strictly obeyed in all its parts; which order contains these words, 'that those who are absent for a month shall enjoy no service money.' Nevertheless, as such complainings occur frequently, and come before us, and your Lordships are also thereby importuned, we could wish that you would more definitely explain whether one ought to refuse the service money to those only who have been out of the country, and pay it to those who have remained in the Provinces; and whether one should not pay those also who have been abroad, in respect that they have had wife and children here, besides weapons and baggage, and then you must here keep up a hired house. On which waiting the good pleasure of your Lordships, we recommend, etc.

BURGOMASTERS AND ALDERMEN OF THE CITY BREDA.

To the Council of State. (March 3, 1622.)

NOBLE, HIGH, AND MIGHTY LORDS,—Showeth that Johan Rongardt, auditor of this garrison, claims as due to him from the late Captain Coutts a sum of seventy-nine guilders, nineteen and three-quarter stuivers, made up from his salary and earned payments, and promised and pledged to him at our meeting in general terms that it was to be paid by every captain. Whereof he handed to the said captain's blood relations the account, to which he begs to refer, and wherein it is proved that the said payment[2] has stood year after year unpaid, which was the cause and reason why he, Rongardt, sought *per modum arresti via ordinaria*, and impetrated arrest on certain moveables and clothes in the custody of Ensign Archibald Williams. And as we understand here an action was entered on—*propter preferentiam*—

[1] Not in Dutch.

[2] Or contribution.

between said ensign and the solicitor. And so my humble request is that the said Rongardt be not curtailed in his right that he has, but be maintained in his preference (which as earned wages ought in any case by law to be allotted in his favour), in respect that he obtained, after the death of Coutis, before all other creditors, said arrest, and taken by me (in the hearing of the widow) in *sursantie*[1] up till now. I humbly inform your Lordships, etc., for your more particular judgment and further proceeding in the way of wholesome justice in said preference.—Your Lordships, etc.

(Signed) Antonius Utenhove.

3rd March 1622.

To the Council of State. (March 10, 1622.)

My Lords,—We duly received your Lordships' missive, with the accompanying requests of Captain Thomas Edmond,[2] praying that he may augment his company to the number of one hundred and fifty men. And although we find this a matter of great importance, as being likely to form a precedent, nevertheless, at the recommendation of His Excellency, and out of respect for the good qualities of the said captain, we have decided not to object till further orders, provided that this Province shall be indemnified by the Commonwealth for the thirty men by which the said company is augmented beyond the State of War, wherein may it please your Lordships to inform us as to your intention, and therefore we send you again the said requests.

By Order of the States of Holland and West Vriesland.

At the Hague, 10th March 1622.

To the Council of State.

My Lords,—In absence of the Governor I shall not neglect, in accordance with the letters of your Lordships, to make such arrangements for the departure of the soldiers out of this garrison as will, I am fully persuaded, give the householders laid under contribution no further cause to complain of the

[1] *Sursantie* not found.

[2] See pp. 229 and 352.

remarks or improper notions of the same. I have also paid punctilious attention to your Lordships' missive, in which it is forbidden to respect or obey any passports, except those granted by the States-General, His Excellency the Prince of Orange, or Count Ernest Casimir of Nassau, Governor of Vriesland, and in consequence I have already caused several persons to be detained here, including English and Scots, as well as Netherlanders, who, without being provided with proper passports as formerly, had meant to betake themselves to the town of the enemy, or to the Archduke. As, for example, I have now under arrest here one Adrian Rendu, glass merchant, from Bevuren, in Picardy, who arrived here with two cases of Venetian glass, and having a passport from the Archduke authorising him to import them into Holland, but without having been provided previously for that purpose with a passport from your Lordships. And as said individual has some letters in his possession addressed to the Ambassaders of France and Venice residing in Holland, I thought it prudent to send herewith the said letters, with his passports, and other letters of no importance, all together committed here to his care.

Humbly praying that your Lordships will be pleased to instruct me as to whether I shall permit the said individual with his glass wares to pass into Holland.

(Signed) Walter Bruce.

Bergen-op-den-Zoom, 22 November 1622.

To the Council of State of the United Netherlands.

Captain Thomas Edmond hereby humbly intimates that he, the petitioner, in pursuance of your Lordships' order and command, sent to Scotland to arrange for bringing over recruits to this country, by which the strength of his, the petitioner's, company might be raised from seventy to one hundred and twenty men. Now it has come about that instead of fifty, eighty soldiers have been brought from Scotland, and that at excessively great expense to the petitioner. Therefore the Lords of the State of Holland, with the advice of His Excellency, consented to the request of the petitioner, that he

should embody the said eighty soldiers in his company, and augment its strength to one hundred and fifty men, and that only for last summer, and said company to be employed afield. The situation of affairs is now thus: the commissioned Councillors of the said Province of Holland, on the strength of the said recommendation, and considering that the Province of Holland, in her quota, would not be indemnified for the expenses of the thirty extra soldiers, were pleased to write to your petitioner in February 1622, and command that he must reduce his company from one hundred and fifty to one hundred and twenty men. And as your petitioner, having left the field for the second time, supplied the whole company with new clothes, and in every way prepared them for the time when they would be in the field in active service, and it is the case that he owes to each soldier twenty car guilders, therefore he, your petitioner, humbly prays and entreats that it may please you, in consideration of what has been said, to consent that he may keep his company at the number of one hundred and fifty men.

To their High Mightinesses the States-General of the United Netherlands.

Thomas Edmond, captain in garrison within the city Heusden, hereby humbly maketh known that the petitioner, in pursuance of the resolution of your High Mightinesses, and by command of the Council of State, sent to Scotland last year in order to bring over recruits, to increase his company from seventy to one hundred and twenty men. In arranging for this he spared neither trouble nor expense. And when, at a suitable time, the order was given to him by your High Mightinesses to bring them over, instead of fifty he found eighty able soldiers were brought over, so that thirty more soldiers were brought than he had instructions for, and he, the petitioner, had not on account of that received any transport money for these; therefore he requests His Excellency the Prince, and the States of Holland, as regards the said thirty soldiers, whom he had caused to be brought over at excessively great expense, and whom your High Mightinesses

Records of States-General.

will undoubtedly find useful in the service of the State, that it may please your High Mightinesses to grant and consent that he, the petitioner, may keep his company up to the number of one hundred and fifty instead of one hundred and twenty men. Whereupon their High Mightinesses, with the knowledge and advice of His Excellency the Prince, were pleased to grant to him, the petitioner, and consent, that during the past summer his company would be reckoned as kept up to the number of one hundred and fifty men, and he would receive payment accordingly, and trusting to this he, the petitioner, spent a remarkably large sum of money in buying clothes for the eighty new soldiers brought over, as they were naked and bare, and in getting them into order and providing them with arms, in order that they might serve the country (and, without boasting, he hopes that he has maintained his company in as good order for the Lands' service as any captain could do). This being the case, the Commissioned Council of State of Holland, in accordance with the recommendation of their High Mightinesses, were next pleased to write to your petitioner, in February 1622, and order him to reduce his company from one hundred and fifty to the number of one hundred and twenty men. And the soldiers having been out in the field, owing to their camping out late in the year, and the continued bad weather, their clothes were rotted and worn out, and to such a degree that your petitioner, on coming into garrison, immediately provided them again with new clothes, and thus he is out of pocket for each soldier more than twenty car guilders. Moreover, during the time the said company was encamped afield, he had not been able to deduct one stuiver from their pay. In like manner, during the great cold and continued frost, they had to be paid their wages in full. Therefore your petitioner humbly requests and prays that your High Mightinesses may, in consideration of the above statement, be pleased to consent to his continuing his company at the number of one hundred and fifty men, as it was at the reinforcement, so that he may in a measure be reimbursed for what he has laid out, and what he is in arrears to his soldiers.—By doing which, etc.

Resolutions of States-General.

December 23.—The advice of the Council of State of the 25th of November last was read, regarding the petition of the

widow of the late Colonel Sir Robert Henrissonne, to the effect that, although the council well understand that the request of the petitioner is of the highest importance as being likely to form a precedent, inasmuch as almost all the pensions of such widows have been voted in recompense for their late husbands' services, yet, as the husband of this petitioner behaved so fearlessly and devotedly in the service of the country in support and defence of the town Bergen-op-Zoom, distinguishing himself in opposing the first violent attack of the enemy, in which he was severely wounded and met his death, giving to all others so noble an example, the Council is of opinion that it deserves to be acknowledged by generous treatment of his widow and children, which will be left to the discretion of their High Mightinesses, and by doing this it is evident other captains and colonels will be stimulated to do likewise, and no less than the said colonel, in the service of the country. And as to the petitioner's further request for six months' pay of her husband, it should be agreed to give her three months' pay.

After discussion it was resolved for the present to postpone deciding about the pension asked for by the petitioner, but agreed to gratify her with three months of her husband's pay.

1623, *February* 2.—There was read over the advice of the Council of State, of date the 23rd of December last, regarding the petition of the surviving widow of the late Sir Robert Hinderson, with the resolution passed at the same time by their High Mightinesses. After a vote taken, it was resolved to request the Council of State to inquire if there are any vacancies through death in the State of War, whereby the petitioner might be [1] without burdening the State of War.[2]

To the Council of State. (Jan. 28, 1624.)

Requests to Council of State.

My Lords,—Since Jeims Forme, an Englishman or Scotsman, minister of the Holy Gospel to the regiments of one of the said nations, died here some days ago in this town, leaving behind many and divers debts for victuals, borrowed money, and articles borrowed from good people and burghers of this town and elsewhere; and they not seeing any other prospect of getting paid, were obliged to seek it by putting in a claim on

[1] Word omitted, probably *pensioned.*

[2] See pp. 59, 349, *et seq.*

his arrears of pay, regarding which claim they had been credibly informed, that they would very soon be paid. And we humbly petition your Lordships to intercede for those people, and on their behalf grant an order, and make a favourable provision, which we cannot justly refuse them; and to this end we most humbly pray that your Lordships, in your goodness, may be pleased to make such favourable arrangement with those responsible in the matter, that the good people shall be paid out of the arrears of pay, so as not to awaken in them and others terrors and disgust at the soldiery, along with evil-speaking and disrespect towards the office of the ministry.—Herewith, etc., BURGOMASTERS, ALDERMEN, AND THE COUNCIL, OF THE CITY OF NYMEGEN.

Nymegen, the 28th January 1624.

To the Council of State. (April 13, 1624.)

MY LORDS,—That Aert de Voocht and Andries Spruyt, chandler, burghers of this city, are both making valid claims on Lieutenant-Colonel Allan Coutts, for payment of the sum of six hundred and twenty-seven car guilders nineteen stuivers for supplying bread and other chandler's wares, for behoof and in support of the said lieutenant's company, during the time it was in garrison in this town; said claims corresponding with the respective bonds given for the goods. That the said burghers have as yet obtained no payment, notwithstanding different applications for payment made both to the said lieutenant-colonel and to others of his officers. Therefore, at the request of these our burghers, we could not neglect hereby humbly to petition and intreat your noble Mightinesses, that since we have certain and complete knowledge of the said delivery of goods, and as this was allowed entirely by our orders, with the view of supporting the company, which was in need and unprovided with money, that you may be pleased so to arrange matters, that the said burghers be paid as they ought to be, whether out of the pay of the said lieutenant-colonel or from other sources. And trusting to this, etc., your noble Mightinesses' obedient

BAILIFF, BURGOMASTERS, ALDERMEN AND COUNCIL OF THE TOWN BERGEN-ON-THE-ZOOM.

Bergen-on-the-Zoom, 13th April 1624.

Resolutions of States-General

July 9.—Mr. Joachimi explained some points. . . . In the seventh place, that the King has earnestly recommended the person of Colonel Henderson, as well as the widow of the late Colonel Hinderson. This will be considered in due time.

August 31.—Received a message written from Saint Croix [Holyrood] in Scotland, on behalf of the widow of the late Colonel Hinderson, by George Cancel, Mar. Melrose, which will be considered in due time.

September 17.—On the petition of Anna Kirkpatrick, widow of Colonel Sir Robert Henrisonne, to receive three months' of her husband's pay, assigned to her by their High Mightinesses, and for herself and her children a yearly pension; it was resolved to ask the advice of the Council of State about the pension prayed for, and to despatch the order for three months' pay on the date of the aforesaid resolution.

September 28.—The advice of the Council of State, dated the 20th instant, was read regarding the petition of the widow of Colonel Hinderson, to the effect that in the circumstances of this case they are of opinion that the petition of said widow to have a pension should be allowed and decided in her favour as an example to other captains and colonels. And besides, in case the resolution taken not to vote any pensions without the knowledge and consent of the provinces may cause any difficulty in this matter, that members of Council, and especially the deputies, should take measures to make the said provinces favourably disposed to the pension. After discussion it was resolved that the deputies should write to their principals.

(Aug. 31)

Reports and Requests to Council of State.

Noble Lords,—On the 30th August 1624, in pursuance of your noble Mightinesses' charge, I mustered the troops at Dodeweert, in the quarters of the Lord of Marquette, and administered the oath to the new English Company of Ramesay, referred to in your letter, and now in garrison at Dousburch. I reviewed also in the same place six old companies, the roll of which I herewith forward. Also the company of Colonel the Earl of Oxford and Livingston, to-day accoutred with arms got from England; but the officers of said company have kept the equipments, pikes, and muskets, in

order that they might restore again those arms belonging to the State, and which hitherto they had in use. Accordingly, his Excellency, Prince Henry, has authorised and charged me to take back from them all such arms, and send them to Delft. I considered it proper to inform you regarding this.—Herewith, etc. JACOB CROESEN.

At Dodaweert, the 31st August 1624.

(April 25, 1625).

List of sick and infirm soldiers who on this, the 25th April 1625, are still in Utrecht, accommodated in the hospital, and at the public expense. They are respectively placed opposite their captains, thus:—

Captain Knichley	. .	9 men
Captain Tubbe	. .	25 ,,
Captain Edmond	. .	22 ,,
Captain Cromwell	. .	iv. ,,
Earl of Oxford	. .	16 ,,
Lieutenant-Colonel Levingston		19 ,,

Diplomatic Correspondence, 1625-1626.

1625. *Mémoire du Sieur Dudley Carleton, Amb^r de sa Ma^té de la Grande Bretagne à Mess^rs les Estats Généraulx.*

MESSIEURS,—Le Colonel Grey et le Chevall^r Ramsey, Lieutenant Colonel du Régiment de Mons^r le Vicomte de Doncaster, avec tous leurs capitaines estants licentiez par Mons^r le Comte de Mansfelt, avec charge de lever deux autres Régimens d'Escossais, désirent à cause de la quantité des officiers de marque, qu'ils ont avec eux, d'estre suppédités d'un des navires de guerre de V.V.S.S. en Zélande.

En quoy ie supplie V.V.S.S. de les favorir [*sic*],

DUDLEY CARLETON.

Captaines.	Captaine Willoughbie
Ser^t Maj. Prewde	,, Clapham
Captaine Courtney	Officers
,, Sprye	Lieut. Norwood
,, Clarke	,, Smith
,, Corbett	,, Trefuse
,, Gibson	,, Gilpin
,, Killigrewe	,, Hollett
,, Morton	,, Griffin
,, Yorcke	,, Hackluyt
,, Couldwell	,, Ffarren

Lieut. Ffryer	Lieut. Shuborough
,, Watkins	Ensigne Temple
,, Payton	,, Bradley
,, Betteridge	,, Kennithorpe
,, Richardson	,, Ascough
,, Ogle	,, Bradley
,, Hamen	,, Abram
,, Standish	,, Gonntrey
,, Jackson	,, Powell
,, Betts	,, Raynsford
,, Mathewes	

Points recommandez à Mess^rs les Estats. (Exhib. June 24, 1625.)

Qu'on scache le temps quand la flotte de 20 navires sera preste, afin d'en faire estat en Angleterre, et apprester tout ce qu'y doit estre embarqué icy pour l'advancement du service.

Puisque Mess^rs les Estats ne se contentent pas de la proposition d'avoir certains officiers et quelques soldats hors de chaque Compagnie (ce qui a esté par ceux qui ont faict la proposition jugé très utile pour le service et plus practicable icy sans aucun préjudice considérable), ains persister à fournir Compagnies entiers, au lieu de dix ils sont priez de prester 20 Compagnies et permettre qu'on face tout debvoir de les rendre complettes, prenant sains au lieu de malades et volontaires en place de ceux qui sur juste raison s'excusent.

Qu'en cas que les compagnies nommées ayent défaut d'officiers, qu'il soit permis d'en prendre autres en leurs places.

Qu'on face liquidation avec les Compagnies, qu'on donne protection aux officiers qui seront employez et à leurs femmes et biens durant leur absence; et qu'on donne acte de reprendre les compagnies en service de l'Estat à leur retour. Puisque Mess^rs les Estats sont contents de prester une compagnie de carabins à Sa M. on désire du Cheval^r Balfore Escossois,[1] lequel s'employe volontiers; et afin qu'il se puisse mettre en estat, que congé luy soit donné de se retirer avec sa Compagnie en garnison, et que quelques navires convenables soyent ordonnez à prix raisonnable pour le transport de la d^te Compagnie, Que le Capitaine Omkrys, Ingenieur, soit mandé icy, et que Mess^rs les Estats soyent contents d'employer sur leurs navires matrossess

[1] See also p. 367.

(comme leurs Députez ont promis) pour servir selon les occasions à l'artillerie.

Que prompte résolution soit prise afin de mettre le tout aussy tost en exécution.

[On the demand of the King, a certain number of English and Scots troops in the Netherlands passed for some time into the service of the King.]

June 20.—Sur la nouvelle proposition du S^r^ Dudley Carleton, chevalier Ambassadeur du Roy de la Grande Bretagne, ensemble du Général Cecil et du chevalier S^t^ Leger faite en l'assemblée des S^rs^ Estats Généraux des Provinces Unies, a esté accordé qu'au lieu des dix comp^es^ presentées par lesd^s^ S^rs^ Estats, et du choix des cincq musquettaires de chaque comp^e^ demandez par les d^ts^ S^rs^ Carleton, Cecil et S^t^ Leger, il sera permis aux officiers mis sur la liste icy attachée et signée par leur Greffier, à scavoir aux sept capitaines, dix huit Lieutenants, et six enseignes, de se rendre pour l'espace de trois mois de paie, suivant l'ordre du pays, au service et solde de Sa d^te^ Maj^é^ de la Grande Bretaigne, entendans leurs Seigneuries, que cependant les places des d^s^ officiers leur demeureront, et qu'ils ne prendront aucuns soldats avec eux.

Comme aussi qu'il sera permis à une compagnie carabins de s'emploier au service et solde de sa d^e^ Ma^té^, reservans toutesfois à ulterieure délibération, si ce sera la Comp^ié^ du Capitaine Balfour ou une autre.

Consentans en outre que les d^ts^ officiers s'embarquent dans les vaisseaux de vingt, qui seront les premiers prests pour aller à Pleimouth.

Quant à l'achapt de deux mille Corselets, puisque les Magasins selon l'opinion de leurs Seig^ies^ en sont garnis, elles sont contantes que l'achapt s'en face, Comme aussi que les d^ts^ S^rs^ Carleton, Cecil et S^t^ Léger facent emporter les dix pièces de fonte, appellées dragues par eux achaptées. Mais pour le prest de six autres, puis qu'elles appartiennent à Mons^r^ le Prince d'Orange, leurs Seig^ries^ n'en peuvent disposer.

Ainsi fait en l'assemblée des d^s^ S^rs^ Estats Généraux à la Haye, le xx de Juin 1625.

S. v. Haersolte, ^pr.^

Annexa. (Exhib. June 21, 1625)

Dese lyste is geaccordeert

Capptaines	Officers
Cⁿ Sprye	Lᵗ Norwood
,, Gibson	,, Prefase
,, Killiegrewe	,, Gilpin
,, Morton	,, Orifkin[1]
,, Willoughbie	,, Hakluywe
,, Yorke	,, Warren
,, Clappam	,, Ffryer
——	,, Watkins
Lᵗ Bhuborough	,, Sibsporpe
Ensign Temple	,, Betteridge
,, Carleton	,, Kirgardhome
,, Abram	,, Ogle
,, Countrey	,, Hamen
,, Howell	,, Standish
,, Kaynsford	,, Gackhome
	,, Betts
	,, Mathewes

Resolutions of States-General.

1626, *January* 30.—After discussion on the petition of Mrs. Anna Kirpatrick, widow of the late Colonel Sir Robert Henrisonne, in consideration of the fact that her husband aforesaid stood out devotedly in face of the enemy at Bergen-op-Zoom in the service of the Land, the sum of three hundred guilders annually, during the whole of her life, is voted to the said widow.

May 19.—The resolution of January 30th last, taken on the petition of the widow of Colonel Sir Robert Henrisonne for a pension, having been received, it was resolved that, instead of three hundred guilders voted to her then, a pension of five hundred guilders annually for life, commencing on this date, be assigned to her, as now it is hereby assigned.

May 22.—In regard to the petition of the widow of Colonel Hindersonne, that the pension of five hundred guilders per annum, voted to her on the 19th instant, shall be settled on her children, and shall commence from the date of her husband's death, it was resolved to ask for the advice of the Council of State.

[1] Ariskin or Erskine?

June 5.—The advice of the Council of State, in regard to the widow of Colonel Henderson, of date the 30th of May last, was read, to the effect that the pension of five hundred guilders per annum voted to said widow is purely gratuitous and a favour, and ought thus to continue for her lifetime only, but that its commencement should be allowed to date from the time of her husband's death. After discussion and consideration of the fact that the said widow has already before this drawn twelve hundred guilders, the aforesaid resolution of 19th May last was adhered to, and accordingly it was resolved that said pension shall continue during the lifetime of the said widow only, and commence on the 19th of May last.

Recommendation of Rev. George Clerk.

Sept. 25, 1626.

Requests to Council of State.

My Lords,—Dominus Georgius Clerus, a minister of God's Word, with churches and congregations of the English and Scottish nations at Bergen-op-Zoom, has intimated and declared to us that he intends to address himself to your Lordships to make a request to you, not only for subsidy and augmentation of his yearly stipend; but at the same time to complain about some English captains, here in garrison, to the effect, that they withhold from him, [and] refuse to pay and supply him monthly with such sums as they ought and are bound to pay to him; and that he is not so well used nor paid by them as the ministers in other towns and places, where men of the same nation are in garrison, and also seeing that his predecessors, in whose place he was appointed, had been recompensed differently, and consequently he being (under correction) of no inferior condition ought to be treated the same; and with that end in view he has requested from us writings and letters of recommendation dealing with the matter. And in addition, taking into consideration that during his residence here we have never hitherto had any other rumour or report but that he has conducted and comported himself as an honourable young man, and that he has done nothing out of keeping with his ministerial office, but always conducted himself in a way becoming a minister of God's Word, and as he ought to do. Therefore we most obediently pray and entreat

that it may be your Lordships' good pleasure to dispose favourably of the request and remonstrance of the said Dom. Georgij, that thereby he may obtain contentment and some satisfaction. And also hoping that our recommendation may bear some fruit in his favour.—Herewith, etc.,

Bailiff, Burgomasters, Aldermen, and Council of the City Bergen-on-the-Zoom Aforesaid.

At Bergen-on-Zoom, 25th September 1626.

Feb. 6, 1627.

My Lords,—We have received your Lordship's missive, with the petition of Captain James Lindsay and some annexed documents. Since your Lordships have not thought proper to dispose of the prayer of the petition without previously obtaining our advice, therefore in accordance with your request we have seen and examined the said petition and annexed documents; and having well and ripely weighed the contents thereof, and having found the same to be genuine, it appears to us (subject to the decision of your Lordships), that said request by the said Captain Lindsay, in that respect, and for other reasons and considerations, may well be agreed to (as far as your Lordships are concerned), and he may now consequently be allowed, after previous legal proclamation, to solemnise a legal marriage with Miss Ysabelle Moubray. And returning herewith the said petition and annexed papers to your Lordships, etc.—Your Lordships' good friends,

The President and Councillors of the High Council of Holland, Zealand and Friesland.

At the Hague, 6th February 1627.

Feb. 22, 1627.

Noble Lords,—We informed your Lordships before this that certain captains of the new English companies, who have been here in garrison, decidedly refuse to pay Dominus Georgius Clerus, minister of God's Word to the people of the English and Scottish nations here, his monthly stipend for his services, telling your Lordships this in order that he might be accommodated with his pay. And since nothing as yet has come of it, no payment having been made to him. And

because (as affirmed by the said captains in an abusive manner without ground or reasons) that they have not been rightly served by the said Dominus Georgio Clero. Nevertheless we have ample knowledge, and are fully convinced, that the said Clerus comported himself in his services and conversation as becomes a servant of God's Word, and as he ought to do; and we have never heard a word to the contrary, so that nothing else can be surmised, except that their evil reports arise from hostility to his person, and serve as a pretext for not paying him; although the said officers had been in the habit of paying for two or three months. Therefore we felt ourselves a second time compelled earnestly to beseech your Lordships, for the sake of religion, that the complaint of the said Dominus Clerus be put an end to, and the arrears of his stipend paid in full; whereby great favour and kindness will be shown to the said Clerus. And trusting to this, etc.,

BAILIFF, BURGOMASTERS, ALDERMEN AND THE COUNCIL OF THE CITY OF BERGEN-ON-THE-ZOOM.

Resolutions of States-General.

May 11.—The request of Captain Mongo Hamilton[1] that the pension of one hundred guilders, settled on the life of his wife, Hester Sideniske, may be settled on the life of Elizabeth van Duinen, was refused.

The request of the said Hamilton to enter the service of the King of Denmark, and for that purpose to have leave of absence, was also refused.

May 21.—The request of Captain Mongo Hamilton to enter the service of the King of Denmark, while retaining his post here, was refused, as being contrary to the regulations of the Land.

June 4.—A letter received from the King of Great Britain, written on behalf of Captain Mongo Hamilton, to the effect that he may be permitted to enter the service of the King of Denmark, as sergeant-major of a Scottish regiment, which also Mr. Buchneer earnestly recommended, even though pay should not be given him during his absence. But it was resolved not to consider the matter, in accordance with the fixed and inviolable resolution against this formerly taken regarding absent officers.

[1] See p. 70.

June 16.—The advice of the Council of State is to be asked in regard to the request of Margaret Davidson, widow of Captain Andrew Donalson, to have an appointment for her son.

July 10.—Resolved to ask the advice of the Council of State in regard to Mrs. Johanna Turck, widow of the late Captain Henry Levigston[1] [*sic*], requesting that her three sons may receive appointments, each on monthly pay, in the company of their late father or some other.

July 23.—As the Council of State advised that the request of the widow of Levingston, made on the 10th instant, to have her three sons appointed to a company, would be a matter of importance as a precedent, their honours refused it.

Report from before Groll.

Augt. 2nd, 1627.

Requests to Council of State.

Noble Mighty Lords,— . . . Those within kept up a hot musketry fire both night and day, but did little damage. Yesterday Drummond,[2] sergeant-major of Colonel Brog, was shot in the head, and mortally wounded. . . .—Your Hon. Mightinesses obedient, (S.) R. Huyghens p. de Roovere.

The army before Groll, on this the 2nd of August 1627.

To the Hon. etc. Lords Councillors of the States of these Provinces. (May 27, 1628.)

Requests sent to Council of States.

My Lords,—As I understand from your missive, that you have learned that my company is neither properly armed nor my soldiers well clothed, let it serve for answer, that the complaint is too general, and made without a vestige of truth in it; and that my company is as well provided with weapons and men as any private company in these Provinces, which may be said without boasting, as will appear from ocular demonstration at the review. Then in regard to the clothing of the soldiers, I cannot answer as to that part of the complaint, as they draw their full pay, and have nothing to complain of in my conduct towards them. But it is no wonder that the clothes of my soldiers are not so good as it is desirable

[1] See p. 69.

[2] See p. 230.

they should be, seeing they have dwelt so long in such an inconvenient, difficult, and objectionable locality, the inconvenience and misery of which are sufficiently known, out of which were they once removed, and led to another place more suitable to those of my nation, the said soldiers would be as well provided with clothing as those of any other company. I have thus far done as much as I could for my company.—Herewith, etc.—Your Hon. Mightinesses' obedient servant,

(Signed) PITCAIRN.

At Rees, 7th May 1628.

June $\frac{8}{18}$, 1628.

MY LORDS,—I duly received your missive of the 3rd June, in which your Lordships are pleased to commission me to sell to the highest bidder the horses of the two servants, belonging to the company of the Cavalry Captain Carrie, and also the one discovered by me, in the company of Cavalry Captain Edmond, at the last muster held by me on the 23rd May.

I received later another missive from your Lordships of the 16th inst., from which I learn that Cavalry Captain Edmond had been summoned before you, and excused himself by saying that it is difficult to procure troopers in these times, particularly among the carabineers, and that they must employ all kinds of artifice in order to promote the public service; or, that they must receive men under the pretext that they are taking them into their own private service, in order in that manner to get them into the company. Whereupon your Lordships were pleased to order me to write you my advice as to this. Let me add therefore for your information, with all submission, that in present circumstances it is really difficult to obtain horsemen, both in the case of the cuirassiers and in that of the arquebusiers; nevertheless, not to such an extent that it is needful to resort to such practices (as they know too well) as are alleged by the Cavalry Captain Edmond. However, I believe, yea also find, that such things do happen to some, who are either their relations or servants, who have served them well in private, but are without means to mount themselves. They provide them with horses and weapons, and manage to get paid in the course of time, so that they

have every opportunity for said artifices in the case of such troopers or servants. Edmond's quartermaster likewise declared to me that he intends to act in that way; also Jan van Maurick, corporal under Captain Carrie, intends to proceed in a similar manner, as the servant is his nephew. Indeed, your Lordships, in your great wisdom, may well conclude that much fraud can be committed under this cloak. As to myself, I judged the said servants from their own words, because they declared that the horses belonged not to them but to their masters. Now as to why I did not retain the servant of the quartermaster with the horse, according to your written instruction, referred to in my former letter, I did not, because as soon as I ordered the servant to give up the horse he bolted, and hid himself among the people, and still gives the camp a wide berth. Your Lordships were also pleased to order me to retain the horse on which the quartermaster's servant was mounted if not already sold. Well, I sold both it and the other two horses in one lot a day previously for the sum of thirty pounds Flemish, from which must be deducted the expenses of the horses' livery, and also the liverymaster's wages for the one with a tumour on the neck, for the quartermaster's horse was not thought much of, as it had strangles badly, and he had himself tried to sell it before then.

This is the substance of what I have to inform your Lordships regarding these matters; therefore I humbly pray you to direct me how to employ the money received. I am often requested by certain of the magistracy here, and also by others, to recommend the business of the said cavalry most favourably to your Lordships, in order that favour may be bestowed on them. Also this example has produced panic enough among the cavalry. But as such a recommendation does not come well from me, I at once leave such matters to the wise judgment and good discretion, etc.—Your Hon. Mightinesses servant, (signed) CHRISTIAEN TER SPŸCKEN.

At Nymegen, the $\frac{8}{18}$ June 1628.

June 12.—There was read over the resolution taken last Saturday with reference to the disbanding of the four Scottish

Resolutions of the States-General.

regiments[1] which came from Staden under General Morgan, and it was also mentioned that Secretary Gunter has requested that these regiments shall be still retained for a period of three weeks, he being satisfied that the payment for their maintenance and service during this time would be reckoned as a deduction from the amount of succour promised to His Majesty the King of Denmark. After discussion it was resolved and agreed to to have the said regiments disbanded at the place where they are in garrison by a Commissary of Muster; and considering that the disbanding cannot be properly carried out unless their claims were first satisfied and their maintenance and services since the day when they came into garrison till the day of their being disbanded were paid, the said Commissary shall be given letters patent to Philippo Calandrini at Amsterdam, summoning him to pay for the said maintenance; and in case the said Calandrini should refuse, the said Commissary shall, notwithstanding, in the last resort, betake himself to Harderwÿck, Elburgh, and Hattum, these being the towns where the said Scots are in garrison, and request the magistrates of these towns to advance the money for the said support and services, promising that the Receiver Doubleth shall speedily refund to them the money, or give them bills of security; and for this purpose he is also to be furnished with letters to the several magistrates aforesaid.

October 17.—The petition of Johanna Turck, widow of the knight Sir Henry Leveston,[2] to have her three sons—John, James, and Alexander Leveston—appointed to the company of their late father, now commanded by Patrick Murray. It was, after discussion, resolved to refer to the Council of State for their advice.

November 24.—The advice of the Council of State, adopted on the 31st of October last, in regard to the petition of the widow of the late Captain Henry Leveston, that her three little sons may be appointed to the company of their late

[1] These regiments had apparently been serving in Denmark. Transfers from the service of one power to another were not uncommon, and there are other allusions to troops intended for service on the Baltic or in Germany passing through the Low Countries and even being temporarily in Dutch pay.

[2] See pp. 69 and 353.

father, was read, giving the same advice: that, owing to the danger of its serving as a precedent, the petition cannot be considered. After discussion, however, their Lordships resolved hereby to authorise the Council of State to give John Leveston, the petitioner's eldest son, an appointment in the company of Patrick Murray.

December 6.—The President communicated to their High Mightinesses a letter from Johan de Kesseler, written at Brussels on November 25th last, and addressed to Gerrardt van Berckel, Mayor of Rotterdam, regarding the proceedings instituted and carried on before the Court of Brabant, sitting at The Hague, by John Waddel, a captain in the service of their High Mightinesses, against the Countess of Megen, as possessing his mortgage bonds, and as mother and guardian of her son, Albert de Croy, being a minor, future Count of Megen, residing at Brussels, and summoned by edict. After discussion, it was resolved to place this letter, with the additional documents, in the hands of the Court of Brabant, to examine and give advice about them as soon as possible, as they know that there is *periculum in mora.*

December 9.—Received a missive from the Supreme and other Courts of Brabant, written in The Hague on the 8th instant, containing a reply to the missive of their High Mightinesses of the 6th instant, and advice in regard to a letter of Johan de Kesseler, Lord of Marquette, written to Gerard van Berckel, Mayor of Rotterdam, concerning the proceedings of Captain John Waddel, instituted and continued before them, against the Countess of Megen, as possessing the mortgage bonds of the said Waddel, and as mother and guardian of her son, Albert de Croy, being a minor, Count of Megen, residing at Brussels. After discussion, it was resolved to let justice have and take its course.

III

RESOLUTIONS, RELATING TO CAPTAIN WILLIAM DOUGLAS

1626-1629

1626, *December* 21.—A petition having been presented by a Scottish nobleman named William Douglas,[1] in which he asks for a patent for guns, with which one trooper will be able to shoot as many times as six do now. Also for a pike, which can be used to do the work both of a musketeer and a pikeman; and for some other inventions. It is resolved that Controller van der Mylen shall examine the said inventions; and if they are good and something new, that a patent for them is to be given.

December 28.—Controller van der Mylen having reported that William Douglas has no samples of the articles invented here, but that he requests to have trustworthy persons indicated to

---

[1] Captain William Douglas succeeded Sir Walter Bruce in command of his company on 1st June 1627. He was dead before 29th November 1629, when he was succeeded by Walter Scott.

Sir Thomas Urquhart in his *Eskubalauron* thus refers probably to this Captain Douglas: 'A great many other worthy colonels, amongst which I will only commemorate one, named Colonel Douglas, who to the States of Holland was often times serviceable in discharging the office and duty of general engineer; whereof they are now so sensible, that to have him alive again, and of that vigour and freshness in body and spirit, wherewith he was endowed on the day he was killed on, they would give thrice his weight in gold, and well they might, for some few weeks before the fight in which he was slain, he presented to them twelve articles and heads of such wonderful feats for the use of the wars both by sea and land to be performed by him, flowing from the remotest springs of mathematical search and those of natural philosophy that none of this age saw.'

In the opinion of the Knight of Cromarty, Douglas was only surpassed by Archimedes, and only equalled 'in this age of the Scottish nation' by Napier of Merchiston and the 'Admirable Crichton.'

him, by whom he can have them manufactured at his own cost, the said Van der Mylen was authorised to provide him with some trustworthy workmen.

1627, *January* 30.—With reference to the remonstrance presented by William Douglas, complaining that he cannot obtain workmen to his satisfaction, and requesting that his inventions may be examined; it was resolved that the request be placed in the hands of the Council of State, in order to hear the opinions of officers conversant with such matters, and to dispose of the business.

March 2.—The advice of the Council of State was read, dated the 27th February last, with regard to the petition of William Douglas, a Scottish nobleman, and in accordance with this advice it was resolved that a patent be given him for the period of twenty years, to the effect that no one is to be allowed in this country to imitate, sell, or trade in his newly invented contrivances, fifteen in number, on penalty of forfeiture of such articles, and in addition, a fine of one thousand guilders, to be applied in the way usual in such cases, always provided that said contrivances are new inventions, never before used in these Lands, and that they shall be brought into working order within a year from this date. And, inasmuch as the said inventor is asking a grant, in the first place for the invention of a new kind of gun, with which one soldier, infantry or cavalry, can fire as many shots as six soldiers with ordinary guns, there was allowed a premium of five thousand guilders; and in the second place, the invention of a pike, with which a soldier can do the work not only of a pikeman, but also of a musketeer, a like premium of five thousand guilders. For the third invention—of a foot-carriage [?] by means of which one soldier can take the place or do the work of a hundred musketeers—a premium of twenty thousand guilders. And for the fourth invention—a horse-carriage, by means of which, with the assistance of one person and two horses, the work of two hundred cuirassiers can be performed—a life premium of twenty thousand guilders. And inasmuch also as the said inventor has requested a monthly pay of five hundred guilders till his inventions are completed, and seeing a part of the army is to be armed with the aforesaid new weapons, it

was resolved that he be provided with maintenance, at the said monthly pay. It was after discussion thereanent agreed and resolved, in accordance with the aforesaid advice, that the inventor must manufacture his contrivances at his own cost, and thereafter should they answer to his representations of them, he is to be complimented in the manner he requests; he being allowed three months for making proof of them. And should they be approved of and completed to the satisfaction of their High Mightinesses, his pay shall commence and be paid from that time, it being also understood that he shall not communicate his inventions to any one other than the King of Great Britain, from whom he declares he has already received a patent.

April 8.—William Douglas having offered to produce an invention, by which at any time three shots can be fired with artillery with as much facility as one shot is now, on condition of his receiving for it a premium of five thousand guilders, it was resolved to obtain the advice of the Council of State about it.

April 13.—The Council of State advises, with reference to the petition presented by William Douglas on the 8th inst., that if his intention to fire three shots with a cannon as quickly as one shot is now fired be found practicable and serviceable for the country, the prize of five thousand guilders shall be granted to him. But it was not found advisable to enter into this matter, and it was only agreed to grant him a patent.

April 21.—At the request of William Douglas to have commissioners to examine his work, Messrs. van Noortwÿck and Vosberg were appointed such.

April 24.—Messrs. Van Noortwÿck and Vosberg, having seen yesterday the trial made by William Douglas of the quick-firing of the cannon, namely, three shots against one, reported that he fired five shots in the time in which with other guns only two were fired. Whereupon it was resolved that the said Douglas should make another trial in presence of His Excellency and commissioners from the Council of State; and this done, that then the Council of State should inquire and advise what advantage could be obtained from the said inven-

tion for the country, and what ought to be done with regard to the inventor.

May 17.—The advice of the Council of State was read, of date the 14th inst., with reference to the business of William Douglas, to the effect that he had made another trial of his quick-firing in presence of His Excellency and a member of the Council, and that he be allowed to make yet another trial, at the country's expense, of having two cannons cast, the one joined to the other, according to his plan. That they should also give him leave to make an instrument, as his design is, for using this quick-firing method on ships. And that, these inventions being proved and found good, recompense be given to him according to the promise made. After discussion thereanent, it was resolved to authorise the Council of State to dispose of the matter as they may think advantageous for the country.

1628, *January* 22.—With reference to the request of Captain Douglas to be paid, according to the resolution of March 2nd, 1627, for the new muskets invented by him, it is resolved that the Council of State shall attend to this.

February 16.—Regarding the complaint of Captain Douglas that the contract which the Council of State made with him is not kept, it is agreed to look up former resolutions, and that in the meantime Mr. Walta shall speak to the Council of State about the keeping of the said contract.

March 18.—Messrs. Nobel or Schagen, Walta, and Schaffer were appointed commissioners to confer with His Excellency about the case of Captain Douglas; and the said Douglas shall be permitted to hand in a statement of the sums due to him, to be placed in the hands of the Council of State, to be disposed of by them in a proper manner.

April 8.—The resolution referring to the report on the business of Captain Douglas was inserted in the private or secret register.

Extracts from the Register of the Secret Resolutions of the States-General.

April 8.—Messrs. Nobel, Walta, and Schaffer, commissioned on March 18th last to discuss with His Excellency the case of

Captain Douglas, reported that he is willing to undertake to sink the enemy's ships in 'Het Scheurtge,' and also to set the others on fire, for the premium offered in their High Mightinesses' proclamation issued for the destruction of the several ships, and such compensation as their High Mightinesses and His Excellency, in consideration of his skill and expenses (which he will bear himself) shall consider reasonable; provided that the expenses be first refunded to him which he had to incur in exhibiting his other inventions, in making the models, and otherwise, and that the five hundred guilders per month be also paid him which were promised to him by resolution of the Council of State, and approved of by their High Mightinesses, and this without prejudice to the pay he draws as captain, and also that said pay continue during the time the aforesaid projects are being carried out. After discussion thereanent, the above-mentioned gentlemen are authorised to take action in the matter, with the advice of His Excellency.

April 24.—Messrs. Walta and Schaffer, who were commissioned along with Mr. Nobel to conclude the business with Captain Douglas, reported that, in addition to the conditions contained in the above resolution of April 8th, he requests letters-patent for himself and his two brothers for a period of twenty-three years, to the effect that nobody at sea shall imitate his inventions. And in case their High Mightinesses should desire at any time to use the weapons invented by him, that the premium appointed in that case shall be granted him. To which their High Mightinesses consented; the aforesaid gentlemen being once more requested to see the matter put through, with advice of His Excellency. As he also requests to be allowed to export some of his manufactured weapons to other potentates, it is resolved to take the advice of the Council of State on that point.

April 26.—Messrs. Nobel, Walta, and Schaffer, having reported about the agreement made with Captain Douglas, it was approved, and the Council of State was instructed to despatch an order for twelve thousand guilders, in settlement of his past expenses, according to the said agreement, inserted here, as follows:

Memorandum of the Agreement or Contract made on behalf of their High Mightinesses with Captain William Douglas, April 25th, 1628.

As to the remonstrance presented by Captain William Douglas to their High Mightinesses with reference to the sinking, burning, and destruction of the enemy's vessels in the roads of 'Het Scheurken' and the harbour of Dunkirk, and elsewhere, their High Mightinesses commissioned Messrs. Nobel, Waltha, and Schaffer, with the advice and consent of the Prince of Orange, to make a provisional contract with the said Douglas, and to report about it to their High Mightinesses. After they had taken action accordingly, and presented a report to their High Mightinesses and my lord the Prince of Orange, on April 24th last, the above-mentioned commissioners were again requested by their High Mightinesses and my lord the Prince of Orange, and fully authorised, as principals, to contract, conclude, and settle with Captain Douglas.

Accordingly the said commissioners contracted and agreed with Captain Douglas as follows:

In the first place, the said Captain Douglas hereby undertakes and promises that he, with his two brothers, at their own expense, risk, and trouble, shall sink, destroy, or burn the ships (which carry guns and are in the enemy's service) in 'Het Scheurtgen,' and in the harbour of Dunkirk, and elsewhere (as their High Mightinesses may determine). On the sole condition that the country shall contribute for the purpose a man-of-war, with two or three sloops, to convey the said Douglas to the place or its neighbourhood, so as to put his appliances into action, and, after having done this, to allow him to return in the same man-of-war, and nothing more. For which service aforesaid Captain Douglas, at the express command of their High Mightinesses and my lord the Prince of Orange, is promised by the said commissioners, and they do hereby promise to pay, at the office of the Receiver-General Doublet, for every ship of the kind above described, as follows:

For a ship over 100 tons, . . . 30,000 guilders.
„ „ 70 tons, . . . 20,000 „

For a ship over 50 tons to 70 tons, .	15,000 guilders.
„ „ 30 tons, . . .	10,000 „
„ „ 20 tons, . . .	8,000 „
For a yacht below 20 tons, and provided with at least four small guns, . .	4,000 „
For a frigate which can be propelled by twelve oars on each side, . . .	8,000 „
For a ship's boat or long boat with eight thwarts or sixteen oars, . . .	2,000 „
For a ship's boat or long boat with six thwarts, ...	1,200 „
For a ship's boat or long boat with four thwarts, ...	600 „

And, besides, the said Captain Douglas shall have as his own, and retain as his undisputed property, all ships, yachts, sloops, cannon, anchors, cables, merchandise, and all other things, without exception, which he can save from the enemy's ships (which he, in the manner aforesaid, may sink, destroy, or burn). It is also agreed that the said Captain Douglas, in addition to the aforesaid premium, shall now immediately be indemnified and paid in ready money for the expenses incurred by him and the trouble expended by him on his former inventions, on the cannon made, the pikes, muskets, and other things, of which the models are and will remain in the possession of the country, in full satisfaction of the statement handed in by him, the total sum being twelve thousand guilders.

And when he has effected all the above on the enemy's ships, the aforesaid Receiver-General shall, in addition to the said sum of twelve thousand guilders, settle with and pay him the sum of eight thousand guilders, which were promised him for his former invention of cannon and muskets, according to the Act of the Council of State, and the resolution of their High Mightinesses of March 2nd, 1627. And as the said Captain Douglas will put into action and carry out against the enemy's ships all the things above mentioned at his own expense and risk, except for a man-of-war with two or three (ship's) boats, as was said before, while, on the other hand, all and sundry, by proclamations of their High Mightinesses, were granted

leave to win the aforesaid premiums with the country's ships, arms, and men, at the country's expense, therefore it had to be taken into consideration what extra premium he ought to have and enjoy as a recompense. And this is to be so much as my lord the Prince of Orange shall adjudge and award, in whose hands the whole matter has been placed and now remains. And if this contract be completely and effectually carried out, the said Captain Douglas shall, in addition to what has been specified before, receive from the Receiver-General, for life irrevocably, a pension of five hundred guilders per month, payable monthly. Lastly, the said Captain Douglas has further been promised, in case his former invention (which as yet has not been approved of practical value) be afterwards at any time employed or used in this country, that in that case their High Mightinesses shall allow him for it the conditions, premium, and payment in the Act of March 2nd, 1627; and that the said Douglas, with his two brothers, shall be granted for all the aforesaid inventions letters-patent for a period of twenty-three years, *in debita forma.*

April 29.—The Council of State having intimated, with reference to the application of Captain Douglas, that they do not know what weapons and to what potentate he wishes to send them; it was resolved that a designation of the weapons, delivered to-day by him be handed over to the Council of State, that they may take action in the matter.

July 3.—The petition of Douglas was read requesting that their High Mightinesses would provide him, at reasonable wages to be paid by the petitioner, with some trusty workmen to help in the manufacture of his proposed contrivances. After discussion thereanent, it was resolved to send the petitioner's request, along with a letter to Mr. Nobel, at present in Rotterdam, enjoining and desiring him with the co-operation of the magistrate of that town, to provide the petitioner, according to his request, with some trusty workmen.

September 6.—The remonstrance was read of Captain William Douglas, asking for a warship and some ship boats with two hundred pounds of gunpowder to be used in his intended enterprise. Secondly, for a mandate, by which the captains, sailors, and soldiers serving on the men-of-war on the

coast of Flanders shall be ordered to obey him in whatever may be done for the benefit of the country. Thirdly, for payment of the money granted him by the last contract. Fourthly, for an authentic copy of the said contract. After discussion thereanent, it was resolved to remit these points to the Council of State for advice.

September 7.—The petition of Captain William Douglas, presented yesterday to their High Mightinesses, being brought up again for consideration, it was resolved and decided, after discussion, that an order for the sum of twelve thousand guilders on the Receiver-General Doubleth be sent him; the Council of State is also hereby requested to send to the said Douglas meanwhile, in part payment of the aforesaid sum, two hundred pounds of gunpowder from the country's magazine, that letters of introduction be granted him to His Excellency as soon as he shall be ready to carry into action his intended exploit, in order that three ships' boats and as many soldiers and sailors be placed at his disposal as he may require for manning and managing the said vessels, as well as a man-of-war in which he has leave to retire.

And, as regards the required copy of the contract between their High Mightinesses and him, drawn up and concluded on April 25th last, which is set down in their book of secret resolutions, there are found to be difficulties in the way of granting it, till he shall have carried out his exploit.

September 15.—Mr. van Noortwÿck brings to the notice of the meeting that on the 7th inst., at the request of Captain William Douglas, it was resolved that an order should be despatched to him on Receiver-General Doubleth, for the sum of twelve thousand guilders, in terms of the contract made with him on April 25th last, and entered in the secret registers, but that it has since been found that a similar order had been despatched to him before on the same grounds. After discussion thereanent, it was resolved that the second order of twelve thousand guilders, if it has been despatched, shall be recalled, and if it has not yet been issued, that directions be given that it be not despatched.

October 2.—With regard to the petition of William Douglas to receive payment of a certain order for the amount of twelve

thousand guilders granted and allowed him as payment for several new inventions, of which the models are preserved by the country, it was resolved that the Receiver-General be spoken to about it, in order that the petitioner may obtain half of it provisionally.

1629, *January* 24.—The petition was read of William Douglas, intimating that, in accordance with their High Mightinesses' resolution, he has exhibited to His Excellency and the Council of State the weapons and contrivances invented by him, contained in the first contract; and further, that he is prepared to execute what is contained in the second with reference to the contrivances for use at sea for burning and sinking ships; and requesting, accordingly, that some resolution may be taken either to accept the invented weapons and maintain the conditions, or at least that their High Mightinesses by a downright negative should declare that they do not wish to be importuned any longer on the subject, and that, accordingly, he shall be permitted, without prejudicing his contract or the patent contained in it, to communicate his contrivances to all monarchs, states, or free cities, which are not declared enemies of this State. After discussion thereanent, it is resolved to place the petition in the hands of the Council of State, for advice about it.

February 6.—The advice of the Council of State was read, of date the 2nd inst., about the inventions of Captain Douglas, to the effect that they have communicated several times with His Excellency about them, and that they themselves also have seen some experiments, which their honours have found to be of such a nature that they cannot but say that Douglas is an ingenious man, and the inventions very pretty, and some of them may be found useful on some occasion or other, but, notwithstanding their honours do not consider that they are of such importance that because of them there should be any change introduced into the present good arrangements for the use of ordinary weapons in this country, as the soldiers through length of time and practice have now become very skilled in handling them. And accordingly their honours would advise that, if the said Captain Douglas is inclined to show his said inventions to some other princes or republics, that he be per-

mitted to do so; but not to such as are enemies of this State. But as regards his marine inventions to destroy the enemy's ships, that he be encouraged to put them into action, the sooner the better. After discussion thereanent, their High Mightinesses conformed to the advice, and further resolved that the said Douglas should make a trial, as soon as possible, of his inventions for destroying ships, on a ship, which shall be brought to Schevelinge [Scheveningen?] or thereabout, a little out at sea.

February 16.—At the request of William Douglas, after foregoing discussion, Messrs. Bar and Eysinga are requested and commissioned to hear the particulars about the communication of his inventions to other princes and states; also about making a trial of his marine inventions on a ship at sea near Schevelinge.

IV

FURTHER EXTRACTS RELATING TO THE SERVICES AND CLAIMS OF SIR WILLIAM BALFOUR.[1]

1627-1634.

LETTERS FROM THE KING TO THE STATES.

Levy of Cavalry. Furlough for Balfour.

Diplomatic Correspondence.

HAUTS ET PUISSANS SEIGNEURS NOZ BONS AMIS ET ALLIEZ,— Nous trouvans poussé par les occurences de noz affaires à faire quelques levées de cavallerie et provisions d'armes. Nous avons fait choix de la Personne du Chevalier Balfore, pour l'envoyer de par delà à cet effet, et Vous avons bien voulu prier de le favoriser et donner toute assistance, à ce qu'il puisse d'aultant plus librement et promptem^t^ faire les dites levées et provisions et les transporter avec plus de seureté. L'asseurance que Nous avons en vostre bonne affection envers Nous, Nous fait espérer que Vous Nous en rendrez cette nouvelle preuve, et qu'en suitte il vous plaira, comme Nous Vous en prions tres affectueusem^t^, de continuer le dit Sieur Balfore, un des premiers gentilshomes de nostre chambre privée, en la charge et solde qu'il a soubs vous, et de vouloir estimer que son absence et le service qu'il Nous rendra, moyennant la grace de Dieu, sera comme si c'estoit pour le service de vostre Estat.

En cette confiance Nous demeurons, Hauts et puissans Seigneurs, Vostre tres affectionné Amy, CHARLES R.

De nostre palais de Westmestre, le 2^me^ de febvrier 1627.

1627, *March* 27.—A letter received from Mr. Joachimi, dated the 6th instant, to the effect that the king requests permission for Captain Balfour to raise a company of har-

[1] See *supra*, pp. 69, 199, 215, and 250.

quebusiers, formed of people not in any service, and to bring them to England. This will be communicated to His Excellency.

March 30.—It having been reported that His Excellency approved of a reply being sent to the letter of Mr. Joachimi, received on the 27th inst., to the effect that the company of cavalry of Captain Monioye would be placed at the disposal of the King of Great Britain; but as the officers have received orders to be with their companies on April 1st, that therefore the permission requested for Captain Balfour to raise a company of harquebusiers and go with it to England must be refused. Their High Mightinesses agreed to this, and decided to reply to Mr. Joachimi in these terms, with instructions to announce their consent as regards Captain Monioye, and their refusal as regards Captain Balfour; and to direct Monioye to hasten his departure, as his month commenced on the 20th inst., and at its expiry their High Mightinesses will not pay him any longer, being of opinion that the current month ought also to be charged to the king, as Monioye is preparing himself during it for His Majesty's services. He must also provide the ships required for his transport, as the expenses of it will not be borne by their High Mightinesses.

The King asks furlough for William Balfour.

Hauts et puissans Seigneurs, noz bons amis et alliez.—Nous ne faisons point difficulté de vous communiquer le besoin que nous avons de quelqu'un de noz subiets qui sont à vostre solde, lors que les occasions de noz affaires le requièrent, et ayant pour le présent suiet d'employer nostre feal et bien amé Guillaume Balfore en un service qui nous importe et auquel son expérience, capacité et debuoir envers Nous, rend le choix que Nous faisons de sa personne fort considérable. Nous vous avons voulu instamment prier de luy donner licence de se rendre auprès de Nous, pour Nous en servir pour quelque temps en cet employ. Espérant aussi qu'il Vous plaira, comme Nous Vous en prions affectueusement de luy continuer son entretènement auprès de Vous, sans que son absence Luy puisse préjudicier, ou qu'il luy en soit rien rabbattu, Vous asseurans

que Nous le recognoistrons en toutes les occasions qui s'en présenteront.

Sur ce Nous demeurons, Hauts et puissans Seigneurs, Vostre bien bon Amy, CHARLES R.

De nostre Cour à Bagshott, ce 20me d'Aoust 1627.

October 6.—The Ambassador also presented a missive written by the king on the 20th of last August, in which His Majesty asks for leave of absence for Captain Balfour, in order that he may employ him while he retains his post and salary in this country. No resolution was come to thereanent as yet. Resolutions of States-General.

October 14.—After discussion regarding the letter of the King of Great Britain, presented on the 6th instant by Ambassador Carleton, Baron d'Imbercourt, and the recommendation added to it by the said Ambassador, that Captain Balfour may be permitted to take service under His Majesty while retaining his command and pay in this country, it was agreed that, though their High Mightinesses are desirous of pleasing the king as much as possible, yet they are debarred from entering into this question, as they cannot infringe the resolution, which had to be taken for very great and pregnant reasons, concerning the defence of the country.

1628, *March* 2.—A letter received from the King of Great Britain, written at Westminster on the 2nd of last month of February, and presented by Captain Balfour, in which His Majesty requests their High Mightinesses to lend their support to the said captain in raising some troopers and providing them with arms, which the said captain has orders to do in this country, and that he at the same time may retain his commission and pay during the time he shall be absent in the service of His Majesty. After discussion on this matter, it was decided that, as this country can expect nothing else than that the King of Spain with his armies, assisted by the entire force of the Papal League, will seek to attack this country, as already a large portion of the said league has descended upon the frontiers of Friesland, Overyssel, and Stad en Landen and arrived in East Friesland, in these circumstances their High Mightinesses are themselves forced to make a new levy of a large body of soldiers for their defence; that the constitution

of the country does not allow of consent being given for any foreign levies in the country, so as not to rob it of soldiers most necessary to it; further, that by such levies the cavalry of this country would be demoralised and spoiled, as experience has taught, far too repeatedly, at other times. And as regards the continuation of the said captain in the service of this country during the time of his absence, it is found that the affairs of the country having required them to take a formal and stringent resolution regarding absent officers, the same cannot be changed. But should His Majesty desire to employ Captain Balfour in his service, their High Mightinesses will not prevent him, but his place will have to be filled by another capable officer, as is done in other cases of absent officers, in order that his company may be commanded in a proper way.

March 8.—It having been announced that Captain Balfour and N. Dolbier had left to make their levy of cavalry for the King of England in foreign countries, and were to make their headquarters at Emden, it was resolved to inform the provinces of Friesland and Stad en Landen, also to call the attention of the Stadtholder, Duke Ernest Cassimir of Nassau, to this, that they may give orders that no troopers are to pass through their provinces to Emden, and to summon the said Captain Balfour to come here and declare if he wishes to continue in the service of this country or not, in order that in case of his departure, suitable arrangements may be made about his company.

March 10.—Captain Balfour being present was informed that he would have to declare if he wished to remain with his company or not, asked for a delay till next Monday, and this was granted him.

March 13.—Captain Balfour being present declared that it is not his intention to retire from their High Mightinesses' service, but only requests leave for three or four months to go to the King [of England] and find out His Majesty's intention, whether he wishes to keep him or permit him to remain here. This matter will also be considered to-morrow.

Request of W^m Balfour to the States. (Exhibit. March 14, 1628.)

Diplomatic Correspondence.

Mes Signeurs,—Touchant vostre iuste résolution e le question si ie veus quiter ma compagnie en vostre service, ie vous supplie de prandre en bonne part ceste remonstrance. Primirement ie vous assure, que ceste une de me plus grande desires de servire c'este estate toute ma vie et suis bien marri d'entendre q'la charge qu'il a plu a sa Maiestié de la grande Britagne me doner vous desplet, mes Signors ie vous prie de croer que ie n'ay pas recerche ceste employment, mais puis que le Roy m'a commandé pour son service pour une temps ie m'assure qu'il trovera estrange que ma compagnie me serot osté, a cose qu'il m'a doné ordre de contibruer à son service pour une peu de temps. e a cose que ie ne desire en fason quelconque, que mon particulir sera cose d'aucune malentendue entre l' Roy e ceste estate, come estant subiect d'l'une e serviture d'l'autre, ie vous supplie tres humblement de me vouloir conceder congé pour trois ou quatre mois selon vostre resolution, tente pour doner quelque satisfaction à sa Ma^é que de ne perdre point si abruptement une fidele serviture à l'Estat, en lequele temps ie pouray savoir la résolution de sa Ma^é pour me retinnier aupres de lui ou de me lesser returnir icy a ma charge en vostre service, en la quelle i'ay continué, y 'espere sens reproche, ces vint e cinque annes passes le flure e'melior partie de mon age, ce que ie represente en toute humilité a vos considerations, comme ausi le bone service de mon peere, de mon uncle, et de plusiurs de mes amis et de mon nome, qui ont esté prodigues de leur sange et leurs vies en vostre service. J'espere ausi qu'il pleyra a vos Sing . . . d'admitter en vostre considération les grandes pretensions et decompts qu' i'avoy quité sur le reception de ma compagnie de cavallerie passe dix annes, les quelles considerations (ie suis confident) seront bastentes pour emouyer vos Sig. a consentier et favoriser mes iustes demendes.

[On the margin is written]:—Ha. Ho. Mo. slaende aff het versoeck in desen gedaen, geven den Suppl. noch den tijt tot morgen omme ronde verclaringe te doen off hij in dienst van den lande wil continueren off niet, 'twelck men liever soude sien.—Act. den 14 Martij 1628.

Resolutions of States-General.

March 17.—A memorial was read, presented by Captain Balfour, in which he declares that as he must obey his king in the matter of the levy of cavalry, he places himself and his company in the hands of their High Mightinesses, hoping that they will take into consideration his services, rendered both in and out of this country, and the services of his predecessors, and the large claims which he abandoned to the advantage of this country, and that all these will induce their High Mightinesses not to deprive him of his company without recompence. After discussion on this matter, it was resolved to inform the said captain that their High Mightinesses would prefer that he should continue in the service of this country, but that they do not wish now to prevent him from entering the service of His Majesty, thanking him for his services rendered to this country, and promising him that if he should have occasion hereafter to return, his good qualities and the services rendered by him would be taken into very earnest and favourable consideration. It was also decided that his Excellency be consulted as to whether the said company might be given to the of Earl Backlough, so as thereby to have the pay of two thousand guilders discontinued.

Request of W^m^ Balfour. (Exhib. March 27.)

Aux hautes et puissentes Signeurs Mes sig^s^ les estats generaulx de provinces unies de paysbas.

Diplomatic Correspondence.

Mes sig^s^,—Puisque v. ss. ne trouve pas bon de me donner congé pour trois moi, au fin de procurer liberté de mon Roy de returner ici a ma charge, après m'avoir aquité de ces commandements, il me faut obtemperer en cela, et en toute autre chose, a vostre bonne plesir et deliberation. Et puis que le necessité d'obeyer mon Roy me contreint de proceder en cette levé, lequelle pouroit contribuer quelque iour au service de ceste estat, il faut que ie submet, et moy et ma compagnie a vos sages considerations, le quelles y'espeer que vos Sig^s^ auront en mon endroict, tant pour le longes annes de mon service, en le queles ie ay tousiours contribué pour le bien et hoñeur d' ceste estate tant ici au pays que de hors, autant que persone de ma qualité comme pourrient temoinger vos Ambassadors,

de temps en temps envoyés en Angletere, comme ausi ie feray encore paroitre en toutes ocasions pour vostre service, ausi i'espere que vos considerations seront favorables en mon endroit, au regard de bonnes servicis de mes prediseseurs, et me grandes pretentions renonces en faveur de l'estate arguments pour emouoyer vos Sig^{s} de ne me traiter si rudement que de m'oster ma Compagnie sans aucune compensation, ayant tousiours été comme ie seray a jamais.—Mes Sig^{s}, de vos Sig^{s} les plus humble servitur W. Balfour.

Resolutions of States-General.

March 27.—As Captain Balfour has resigned [the command of] his company it was resolved to inform the Lords of [the Provinces of] Holland about it, in order that they may proceed to the nomination of another suitable person in his room.

July 12.—A communication was made to their High Mightinesses of a missive written by Mr. Balfour to his Excellency on June 6th last, informing him that owing to the report circulated about the calamity said to have befallen the Duke of Buckingham in England, the merchants had refused to pay the bills of exchange for the support of the twelve thousand troopers levied for service under the King of England, and that the States of Groningen had made said troopers remove from their province, and requesting his Excellency to propose some plans for the maintenance of said troops, or else that he, along with all or a portion of them, be taken into the service of their High Mightinesses. After discussion, it was resolved that the President and Mr. Schaffer should confer with his Excellency on the subject.

July 23.—Mr. Schaffer having announced to their High Mightinesses that the States of Stad en Landen intend to cause the one thousand troopers raised by Colonel Balfour for service under the King of Great Britain to remove from their province, fearing they may not be properly paid, and noticing that their High Mightinesses do not wish to take said troopers into their service, it was resolved, after discussion, to communicate with his Excellency about this matter, and Messrs. Noortwÿck and Schaffer were requested and commissioned to do so.

July 24.—A proposal was made by the President on the

part of the Agent Carleton, respecting the retention of the cavalry of His Majesty, the King of Great Britain, raised by Balfour. It was requested by Mr. Schaffer that their High Mightinesses should consent to the quartering of said cavalry of the King of Great Britain, and that steps be taken and orders issued, as was done when the infantry, which came from Staden to Overÿssel, were brought down and put into quarters; so as to treat the various provinces on an equal footing. After discussion, it was resolved hereby to request and commission Messrs. Feyt and Schaffer to summon the Agent Carleton before them and to ascertain from him if he could give their High Mightinesses any guarantee for the maintenance and payment of the above-mentioned troopers, in order that this point being cleared up, further action may be taken in the matter.

October 3.—The President announced to their High Mightinesses that Captain Balfour has begged his Excellency very earnestly that their High Mightinesses be induced to take into their service a section of the cavalry raised by him, which His Majesty of Great Britain intends to disband, or that at least his company be accepted. After discussion it was resolved and decided that this matter cannot be entered into.

October 13.—Ex-Captain Balfour appeared before the meeting, and at first verbally and thereafter in writing requested, that in consideration of the good and faithful services of his father, his uncle, and himself, rendered in succession from time to time to the country, he shall receive the pay of a captain till such time as their High Mightinesses may decide to employ him in their service. After discussion, it was resolved to place his written petition in the hands of the Council of State for advice.

October 25.—The advice of the Council of State, of date the 17th inst., was read, with regard to the relation given by Sir William Balfour on the 13th instant, at first verbally and thereafter in writing, about the old good services which his father, his uncles, he himself, and others of his family have rendered to the country, together with some old documents produced by him, putting it to the judgment of their High Mightinesses whether these do not warrant the continuation to him of his captain's pay; their advice being that he be

honoured with a gold chain, worth one thousand guilders, more or less, and that his Excellency promise to keep him in mind when occasion serves. After discussion, it was resolved and decided that this matter be entrusted to the above-mentioned Council of State to be disposed of.

1634, *April* 28.—After discussion, it was resolved unanimously by all the provinces present, that the life-pension hitherto paid to Sir William Balfour, amounting in all to six hundred guilders, according to the pension-letter dated April 16th, 1615, be transferred, as hereby it is transferred, one half, amounting to three hundred guilders annually, on the life of Cornelia van Weede, aged about eighteen years, and the other half, on the life of Wilhelmina van Weede, aged about sixteen years; and on the death of either of the aforesaid daughters, the three hundred guilders settled solely on the life of the deceased will cease to be paid and will revert to the country.[1]

---

[1] This pension had in 1615 been settled on the life of Sir William Balfour's son, William Balfour (p. 255). Sir William's surviving son was named Charles, but two others, Alexander and William, were dead before 1659 and are both said to have served in Holland (see p. 70).

Sir William Balfour married:

(1) Helen, daughter of Archibald, Lord Napier.

(2) Isabella, —— *d.* 1661, by whom he left:

i. Alex. Balfour, col. (?) in Dutch Army, *m.* El. Buenel.

ii. Wm. Balfour, served in Low Countries, *d.* before 1659.

iii. Chas. Balfour, *m.* 1665 Cicely, dau. of Sir R. Byron, att. 1689, who left one son, Wm. Chas. Balfour, also att. by Irish Parliament 1689, and *d.* unmarried in 1739, leaving estate, name, and arms to his nephew Harry Townley, son of Lucy Balfour and Blayney Townley.

iv. Emilia Balfour, *m.* Alex. 4th Earl of Moray.

v. Isabella Balfour, *m.* 1649 John, 3rd Lord Balfour of Burleigh.

vi. Susanna Balfour, *m.* Hugh Hamilton, Lord Glenawley.

(Note communicated by Mr. B. T. Balfour of Townley Hall.)

V

EXTRACTS RELATING TO THE CLAIMS AND SERVICES OF THE EARL OF BUCCLEUCH. 1623-1635.[1]

Resolutions of States-General.

1623, *Januar* 28.—Ayant esté rapporté en l'assemblée de Messeig^s^ les Estats gñlx des Provinces Unies du pays bas, par le S^r^ Président la sérieuse recommandation que de la part du Roy de la Grande Bretagne le S^r^ Carleton son Ambassadeur, luy a ce matin faict, affin que par Iceulx Seig^rs^ Estats finalement seroit résolu sur l'effectuation de ce qu'est traicté avec le Seigneur Conte de Bachlouch, par escript. Et sur le tout meurem^t^ délibéré, que les d^s^ Seig^rs^ Estats, requiz le d^t^ S^r^ Président de vouloir réferer et déclarer pour responce au d^t^ S^r^ Ambas^r^ de leur part, Qu'ilz sont très-inclins pour faire avoir aud. S^r^ Conte contentement de ce qu'a esté contracté avec luy et qu'ilz n'oublieront nulle occasion qui à cest effect se pourroit offrir, et que mesmes ilz tacheront s'il est poissible de entammer quelque traicté avec le Colonnel Brogh à son retour, quant il reviendra d'Angleterre, et qu'ilz y contribueront tout ce que sera poissible.

January 31.—Mr. Broersma reported that he communicated to his Excellency the resolution passed by their High Mightinesses in regard to the recommendation of Mr. Carleton, on

[1] Upon the death of Colonel Sir R. Henderson at Bergen-op-Zoom in 1622, Prince Maurice gave the colonelcy to his brother, Sir Francis, who had served as lieut.-colonel. 'Sir Francis Henderson is a man well deserving the preferment,' wrote Sir D. Carleton to the Duke of Buckingham, 'but much wrong is done to my Lord of Bucklugh, who had a formal Act of the States for the next regiment should fall of the Scottish nation in their service' (August 25, 1622. St. P. Holland.) See papers relating to the claims of Lord Buccleuch and the Earl of Buccleuch, pp. 256-269, and especially the Act Expectative, p. 268. Also, for a recapitulation of the transactions, the Report of the Council of State in 1635, *infra*, pp. 391-395.

the part of the King of Great Britain, with reference to the case of the Earl of Bachlouch, and that his Excellency declared to him respecting it that he had doubts about the said resolution, on account of the return of Colonel Brog. And accordingly it was resolved to keep on offering the most plausible reasons for delay, and to tell Mr. Carleton by word of mouth that since the said Colonel Brog has returned and is advanced in years, that measures are to be taken to deal with him as considerately as possible.

[February 9, March 15, 21, April 21, May 13, petitions of D. Carleton for satisfaction for Buccleuch. The States defer decision, and ask the advice of the Council of State.]

June 2.—There was brought up the advice of the Council of State, drawn up in the presence of his Excellency on the 27th ultimo, regarding the case of the Earl of Bachlouch, to the effect that 'the Council is of the same opinion as his Excellency, namely, that, considering the great want and deficiency at present of ready money, and that it is not usual to allow interest on such accounts, the said earl be granted a pension of twelve hundred guilders, to be drawn yearly, as interest for the sum claimed, until in course of time he shall be provided by their High Mightinesses with a regiment, or other worthy position. Otherwise their High Mightinesses' former resolutions are to remain unmodified and entire'; but no steps were taken to carry out the above.

June 12.— . . . Their High Mightinesses, by advice of the Council of State, confirmed, and do hereby grant a pension of twelve hundred guilders yearly [to the Earl of Buccleuch], till an opportunity shall occur for the said earl to be provided with a colonelcy of the Scots regiments.

June 28.—A despatch was read from Mr. Jan Clercke on behalf of the Earl of Bachlouch, to the effect that he, having seen their High Mightinesses' resolution about the arrears of the said earl, has to say that from a sense of duty, with full knowledge of his general's opinion and resolution, he absolutely refuses to accept said resolution, with everything recorded therein: firstly, because their High Mightinesses estimate his arrears at only eighteen thousand four hundred guilders, which differs greatly from his general's account, much more being

due to him; secondly, because their High Mightinesses offer him twelve hundred guilders per annum as interest on his arrears, till their High Mightinesses' resolution shall take effect. Lastly, that the said earl can in no circumstances accept an 'Expectative [Act].'

July 8.—It was resolved to send to Ambassador Caron a copy of the resolution taken regarding the claims of the Earl of Bachlouch, and to write to the said Caron to do all he can to induce and recommend the said earl to accept and be satisfied with it.

September 12.—It was resolved to write to the Commissioners of their High Mightinesses, and to his Excellency, that 'as the report is current here that Colonel Brog is dead, and that it is true, or likely will be, they must see that no arrangements are made about the disposal of his post, both on account of the transactions with the Earl of Bachlouch, and because measures must be taken to decrease the high pay of the colonels.'

1624, *July* 9.—Mr. Joachimi gave some information on a few points, and requested a resolution of their High Mightinesses concerning them. And first, with reference to the East India Company. . . . Secondly, that the Marquis of Hamilton very earnestly recommends that the Earl of Bachlouch receive satisfaction of his claims. This matter to be taken into due consideration at the first opportunity.

1625, *October* 29.—Mr. Carleton, Ambassador of the King of Great Britain, appeared before the meeting, bringing up four different points for consideration. First, regarding the Earl of Baclough [*sic*], requesting satisfaction for him, and presenting for the same purpose a missive from the king, dated May 12th last, in which the said case is earnestly recommended.

October 30.—There were read the previous resolutions taken in the case of the Earl of Bachlough, in whose favour the King of Great Britain is writing, and Mr. Carleton, His Majesty's Ambassador, is saying all he can. After discussion, it was resolved that the said resolutions, with the proposal of the said Ambassador made yesterday about the same matter, be placed in the hands of the Council of State for advice.

November 29.—It was also reported that the Duke of Buck-

ingham, and other Ambassadors of England, after holding a conference yesterday with their High Mightinesses' Commissioners, recommended to them the case of the Earl of Baclough, also that of Colonel Veer, in order the latter may have promotion granted him, and an increase of pay. It was resolved thereanent to refer to former resolutions.

December 9.—The advice was read of the Council of State, drawn up on November 28th last, in which said Council refers to their former advice of May 28th, 1623, regarding the Earl of Backlough, in which said Council recommended that a pension of twelve hundred guilders yearly be granted for his claims (broadly estimated at the sum of eighteen thousand four hundred guilders), until he shall be provided with a regiment or some other honourable position; to which advice the Council still adheres. After discussion thereanent, their High Mightinesses found it better to finish the matter once for all, and see if they could come to terms. Messrs. van Noortwyck and Beaumont were appointed a committee for the purpose.

December 13.—The Ambassadors of England having urged that a resolution be come to in the cases of the Earl of Backlough and Colonel Veer, it was resolved that both by their High Mightinesses and by his Excellency an Expectative [Act] be given to the said earl of the first regiment, or of the first company of cavalry of the Scotch nation which may fall vacant, and that the State of War be examined to ascertain whether there cannot be found on it so many 'expired salaries' that a pension of two thousand guilders a year, or so much less as their High Mightinesses may determine, may be given him till that time.

December 16.—The Commissioners of their High Mightinesses reported that they, according to the wish of the meeting, informed the Ambassadors of the King of Great Britain yesterday that their High Mightinesses, having again by their recommendation discussed the case of the Earl of Backlough, resolved that by them, and also by his Excellency, an Expectative Act be granted to said earl of the first company of cavalry, or some other important command, which may fall vacant among the Scots, and that, till that time, a pension of two thousand guilders be granted him.

December 23.—The resolution of the 16th instant was communicated to his Excellency about the case of the Earl of Backlough, and he was informed that the solicitor of the earl was not satisfied therewith, and desired no other Act than he received before, and that his Excellency might see good to abide by said resolution. Decision on this matter was postponed.

1627, *March* 27.—Also that the Earl of Backlough demands from their High Mightinesses and from his Excellency a new Act to have the first Scots regiment which shall fall vacant in the field or otherwise, and to receive in the meantime, from the year 1625, the pension of two thousand guilders yearly. Former resolutions about the matter are to be referred to.

LETTER FROM THE KING.

Recommendation for the Earl of Backlough. (Rec. June 3, 1627.)

Diplomatic Correspondence.

HAUTS ET PUISSANTS SEIGNEURS,—Le grand désir et affection que démonstre avoir nostre cher cousin le comte de Buccleuche de suivre l'exemple de feu son Pére en se donnant à vostre service, Nous invite à vous renouveller la recommandation qui vous a cy-devant esté faite de nostre part en sa faveur, par la bouche de nostre trescher cousin le Duc de Buckingham, à ceque, pour luy donner moyen de ce faire, vous le vouliez pourvoir et luy donner brevet ou asseurance de la première charge de colonnel qui viendra à vacquer, ou que vous voudrez adjouster par nouvelle levée à ceux qui vous servent désja de la nation Escossoise. Et en attendant qu'il vous plaise luy donner et faire valoir la pension de deux cens livres sterling, dont vous feites offre pour luy aud. Duc nrē cousin, lors qu'il vous requit de cest affaire. Etce, tant en considération des bons et fidèles services que led. feu Comte de Buccleuche son Père a si longuement rendus à vostre estat qu'en faveur de ceste bonne et pareille affection qui porte le courage de ce jeune seigneur au service de vostre cause; comme aussy de la requisition affectueuse que nous vous en faisons pour l'amour de luy. A quoy nous promettans que vous défererez ce que nous espérons de vous, nous prierons Dieu, Hauts et Puissants Seigneurs, qu'il vous ait tousjours en sa s^{te} garde.—Vostre bien bon Amy, CHARLES R.

A nostre Palais de Westmestre, le 31 de Décembre 1626.

The Duke of Buckingham recommends the Earl of Baclough.
(Exhib. July 3, 1627.)

MESSEIGNEURS,—Les mérites du feu Baron de Buccleugh peuvent assez sans mon entremise pour induire V. S. à départir vostre faveur à son filz le Comte de Buccleugh, n'estant moins affectionné à vostre service que feu son père. Toutes fois l'amitié que je luy porte et l'estime que je fay de ses mérites, me font prendre la hardiesse de ramontevoir à V. S. la promesse qu'il vous pleut me faire en son endroict du premier Régiment de la nation Escossoise qui viendroit à vacquer au service de V. S., ou bien du premier qui se leveroit de nouveau, et en attendant telle occasion de luy donner une pension annuelle de deux cent livres sterlins, dont à mon retour par deça Je rendi compte à sa Ma[é] suivant la charge qu'elle m'avoit donnée en cest endroict. Et maintenant Je supplie V. S. de luy confirmer par vostre acte ou brevet la dicte promesse, par où vous obligerez le d[t] comte d'employer sa vie et fortune au service de V. S. et moy d'estre toute ma vie.—Messeig[rs], de V. S. très humble serviteur, BUCKINGHAM.

De Londres, le 30[e] Janvier 1630.[1]

Resolutions of States-General.

July 3.—A missive was received from the King of Great Britain, and another from the Duke of Buckingham, both written in recommendation of granting the Earl of Backlough an Act Expectative of the first Scots regiment, and meanwhile two thousand guilders yearly. No resolution was taken with reference to the above.

July 12.—A petition was read from Ambassador Carleton, in which he requested that the Act promised to the Earl of Backlouch on December 26th, 1625, may be despatched, and that there be inserted in it the minute of resolution of July 6th, 1620, viz., that no withdrawal or repeal of the said Act may take place. His Excellency's advice is to be asked with reference to this.

July 27.—A despatch of 18th instant was received from the Army Commissioners, giving similar advice, and that his Excellency might well allow an Act Expectative to be granted

[1] *Sic* in MS. But Buckingham was assassinated in 1628, the letter produced in 1627, and the colonelcy granted in 1629.

to the Earl of Backlough, if only it be made to refer to a company of cavalry, or some other important command among the Scots, and be not extended to a regiment. It was resolved thereanent to despatch such an Act and hand it over to Mr. Carleton.

August 5.—It was resolved that the pension of two thousand guilders yearly to the Earl of Backlouch shall commence from July 5th last, this being the date of the Act Expectative granted to the Earl of Backlouch.

August 21.—With reference to the request of Ambassador Carleton that the pension of two thousand guilders yearly to the Earl of Backlouch shall commence on December 16th, 1625, it was resolved to adhere to the resolution of the 5th instant with reference thereto, namely, that as on December 16th, 1625, the offer which was made was not accepted, the said pension shall not begin on any other day than July 20th last.

September 2.— . . . That they (*i.e.* the commissioners of the Army in the field) wish to speak to his Excellency in favour of Backlouch obtaining the company of cavalry of Monjoye, in case his Excellency wishes to dispose of it, so as to relieve the country of the pension of two thousand guilders.

1628, *November* 20.—The petition was read of the Earl of Bachlough, requesting that he, in virtue of the Act Expectative granted him by their High Mightinesses, be provided with the first vacant colonelcy, and consequently be preferred to all others, on condition that in that case the pension shall cease which on July 20th, 1627, was increased from twelve hundred to two thousand guilders. After discussion thereanent, it was resolved and decided that the President communicate this petition to his Excellency, and inform him that their High Mightinesses are willing to grant the petitioner's request, so as to give effect to their public promise, and relieve the country from a yearly pension.

November 21.—The President reported that he represented to his Excellency that their High Mightinesses are willing to allow the Earl of Backlough the benefit of his Act Expectative, in order to relieve the government of their promise, and the country of the payment of the yearly pension, amounting to the sum of two thousand guilders, and that his Excellency considered it very

reasonable, and that it should be attended to as soon as a vacancy occurs in a Scottish company of horse; inasmuch as the aforesaid Act speaks of some such or other honourable post, which may be understood as one of less importance.

After discussion thereanent, and the letter of the Council of State having been taken into account, it was resolved and decided that the first colonelcy of a Scottish regiment which may fall vacant be not presented to any one without previous notice to, and the consent of their High Mightinesses; and that with this end in view, this resolution be announced to His Excellency and the aforesaid Council of State.

November 25.—After reading and examining the proposal of Agent Carleton and the resolutions, acts, and promises of their High Mightinesses presented by him along with it, in order to establish the claim of the Earl of Bachlough to have the colonelcy of the late Sir Francis Henderson conferred upon him, it was resolved, after foregoing discussion, hereby to request and commission Count van Culenborch, W. van Beveren, etc., to present these documents to his Excellency, to get his opinion about them, and bring in a report about the whole.

Proposal to divide the Two Regiments of Scotsmen into Three.

Resolutions of States-General.

December 1.—The case of the Earl of Baclouch being brought up again for discussion, with regard to his claims to the colonelcy of the Scots regiment of the late Sir Francis Henderson, founded on several acts and resolutions of their High Mightinesses, referred to by Agent Carleton in his proposition of the 24th November last, and thereafter handed in. It was resolved, after foregoing discussion, to place the said proposition with the papers referred to in the hands of the Council of State for examination and advice, and to request the said Council to consider if it would not be advisable and advantageous for the country to divide the two Scots regiments in their High Mightinesses' service into three regiments, and to furnish them with two other colonels and other officers required besides Colonel Brogh.

Advice of the Council of State. (Dec. 7, 1628.)

Diplomatic Correspondence, 1627-1628.

High Mightinesses,—We have seen your High Mightinesses' resolution of the 1st instant, and find that two points in it have to be considered: the first, the pretensions of the Earl of Bachlough to the colonelcy of the Scots regiment of the late Sir Francis Henderson; the other, whether it would not be advisable and beneficial for the country to divide the two Scots regiments in your High Mightinesses' service into three regiments, and to furnish them with two other colonels, besides Colonel Brogh and other officers required therefor.

Whereupon, in order to advise your High Mightinesses we have, as far as concerns the first point, read all the accompanying documents which were presented to your High Mightinesses on behalf of the Earl of Backlough. And having taken into consideration the various acts of promise given in connection with it, we cannot see, in view of them, how on this occasion he can again be honourably passed over; seeing, too, that this is the same regiment which aforetime his own father brought over to serve this country, and since before everything else the advantage of the country ought to be considered, which is the more in favour of his case, inasmuch as by his promotion the country will be relieved of the payment of [the sum of] two thousand guilders yearly, which hitherto, owing to want of money, has not been paid, and we cannot see how it is to be paid in future.

Regarding the other point, whether a third regiment can be formed with advantage to the country from the two Scots regiments, as thereby the country must be burdened with new payments and officers, we could give no other opinion (under correction) than that it cannot be done at this time with advantage to the country owing to lack of money. But if your High Mightinesses should find it advisable and convenient to enter into this matter, we think that the pay of the new officers could be found, and less burden laid on the country, if the regiments should be decreased by so many soldiers as the said payments, regulated after the new standard, amount to, which can be done by a decrease of sixty-three soldiers. And as we see daily that the colonels leaving this country remain for years absent from duty, and yet draw the country's pay, to the manifest detriment of the country, we deem it necessary

that your High Mightinesses should be pleased to take into consideration whether it would not be beneficial to make a firm resolution that colonels, as well as lieut.-colonels and captains, are not to remain away beyond a certain fixed time without losing their pay. H. VAN DER CAPELLEN, Pres.

By order of the Council of State of the United Netherlands,

M. HUYGENS.

At the Hague, Dec. 7th, 1628.

Resolutions of States-General

December 12.—There was read the advice of the Council of State, of date the 7th instant, with reference to their High Mightinesses' resolution of the 1st instant, and consisting of two parts: the first as to the claims of the Earl of Backlouch to the colonelcy of the Scots regiment of the late Sir Francis Henderson; and the other, as to whether it would not be advisable and advantageous for the country to divide the two regiments in their High Mightinesses' service into three regiments, and furnish them with two other colonels besides Colonel Brogh, and with other officers required for them. The advice as regards the first point was to the effect, that they have read all the documents presented to their High Mightinesses on behalf of the said earl, and have considered the many various acts of promise made to him regarding it, and would submit as their opinion that in consideration thereof he cannot honourably be passed by again on this occasion, seeing too that this is the same regiment which his own father brought over in former days to serve the country, and that, furthermore, before everything else the advantage the country may reap should be attended to; which makes his case the stronger, inasmuch as by his promotion the country will be relieved of the payment of two thousand guilders yearly, which hitherto has not been paid owing to want of money, and can with difficulty be paid.

As regards the second point, inasmuch as thereby the country will be burdened with new salaries and officers, the said Council are unable to come to any other decision than that it cannot be done at this time with advantage to the country owing to scarcity of money; but if their High Mightinesses should find it advisable to take this step, the

Council's opinion is, that the pay of the new officers could be found with less burden on the country if the regiments were diminished by as many men as said payments regulated by new standard will amount to, which could be done by a decrease of sixty-three soldiers. They would also like it to be considered whether it would not be beneficial to take a decided resolution that colonels, as well as lieutenant-colonels and captains, are not to remain absent beyond a certain fixed time without losing their pay. After discussion thereanent in the presence of his Excellency, the business was adjourned.

December 15.—There was read over the advice of the Council of State of the 7th instant regarding the two Scots regiments in their High Mightinesses' service about dividing them into three regiments. After foregoing discussion, the division was agreed to, and it was resolved that besides Colonel Brogh, two other colonels and other officers required for the two regiments be appointed, on condition that the two colonels be each paid three hundred pounds per month, and that the officers to be newly appointed be placed on the revised State of War; and that the Council of State shall promptly effect the reduction of each company by two men, in order that the increased number of payments to colonels and officers may be found out of the pay of the men dispensed with. Further, it was also resolved that the colonels, lieut.-colonels, and captains must be in this country during the summer, and that during the winter the said colonels may be absent by permission six months, and the lieut.-colonels and captains, likewise by permission, three months, on penalty of forfeiting their respective pay for the time beyond the above during which they remain absent from the country. That notification of this is to be made to all absent colonels, lieut.-colonels, and captains by the said Council of State, after consulting with his Excellency. The deputies of the Province of Holland and of Stadt en Landen declared that they could not agree to the above-mentioned division, as they had no instructions about it from their principals.

(Rec. Aug^{t} 20, 1629.)

Diplomatic Correspondence.

Hauts et puissants Seigneurs,—Depuis que je reçeu vostre résolution le 4 de feurier selon le vieux stile touchant le

régiment qui m'est ordonné par vos Seigneuriers, je m'adressay incontin. de expédier mes affaires en ces quartiers icy, et m'apprester en toute diligence de me rendre par de là pour attendre vostre service, auquel je tacheray de m'employer aussy fidèlement qu'aucun que ce soit, et pour cest effect me trouveray en Holland au mois ensuivant, où je recevray les commandements de vos seigneuries. Et ainsy laissant les particularités à l'enseigne Scot, j'abstiens de vous importuner plus à présent, et vous baisant très humblement les mains, je demeure de vos Seigneureries tres humble et tres affectionné serviteur, BUCCLEUCHE.

D'Edimbourg, le 6 de Mars 1629.

Resolutions of States-General.

1629, *November* 29.—Mr. Beaumont informed the meeting that the Earl of Backlough requests that their High Mightinesses provide him with his commission as colonel of a regiment of Scots, this having been conferred on him by their High Mightinesses' former resolution, and that he be admitted to take his oath of allegiance to the country. Secondly, that the commencement of his pay and wages as colonel date from the death of Colonel Francis Henderson, who died here in the Hague, seeing that to him, Backlough, was specially promised by Act of their High Mightinesses the first Scots regiment which should fall vacant. After discussion thereanent, it was resolved that a commission be despatched to the said earl by their High Mightinesses, and thereupon he is to take the proper oath, and that his pay and wages as colonel shall commence on the date of the Act granted by His Excellency for the said colonelcy.

December 19.—The petition was read of the Earl of Backlough, requesting for the reasons stated therein that his pay as colonel shall commence on the day on which the regiment was formed for him. After discussion thereanent, it was resolved, in accordance with their High Mightinesses' resolution of Nov. 29th last, that the petitioner's pay as colonel is to commence on the date of the Act granted by His Excellency for the said colonelcy.

1632, *May* 25.—There was also received from the King of Great Britain a missive, written at Whitehall on April 10th

last, containing a request that their High Mightinesses would excuse the Earl of Backlough for being unable to discharge his duties as colonel in the next campaign. After discussion thereanent, no decision was taken.

Diplomatic Correspondence.

Hauts et Puissants Seigneurs, Nos bon alliez,—Entendans que vous prenez en mauvaise part la longue absence de nostre Cousin le Comte de Buccleuth, et supposez qu'il y a de sa faute, Nous n'avons pû pour vous en esclaircir et fair voir son inocence, que vous faire entendre qu'à la vérité c'est nous mesmes qui l'avons si long temps retardé et gardé prez de nous pour quelques affaires qui ne pouvoient aucunement souffrir son esloignement. Nous vous prions de ne vouloir permettre (au moins en nostre égard) que son absence luy porte aucun préjudice ni en sa charge ni en son entretenement. Et vous asseurer que nous prendrons ceste obligation pour nous mesmes, et l'expédians au plus tot. Nous luy octroyerons son congé dans six sepmaines; aubout desquelles il ne faudra à revenir vers vous, et en sa charge, vous rendre graces suffisantes par ses meilleurs services. Ce que nous promettants de vostre amitié, nous ne ferons la presente plus longue. Ains demeurerons, Hauts et puissants Seigneurs, nos bons amis et alliez, vostre bien bon Amy, Charles R.

Resolutions of States-General.

1633, *April* 13.—A missive was received from the King of England, written at Westminster, March 17th last, requesting, for reasons given therein, that the Earl of Buccleuth may suffer no loss on account of his long absence, either in respect of his command, or in respect of his appointments. After discussion thereanent, no resolution was taken.

November 19.—The petition was read of the Earl of Bacclouch, colonel of a regiment of Scots infantry in the service of these United Netherlands, requesting, for reasons stated therein, that he may receive his pay as colonel, due from May 29th, 1632 [when his, the petitioner's, leave expired] till his return to this country, in May last. After discussion thereanent, their High Mightinesses declared that they could not enter into the matter.

(Rec. Decr 21, 1634.)

Diplomatic Correspondence.

Hauts et Puissants Seigneurs, nos bons amis, voysins et alliez,—Requeste nous a esté très humblement faicte par nostre Cousin, le Comte de Buccleuth, dont le père et les ayeulx depuis longtemps ont porté des charges militaires soubs vous, de vous vouloir raccomander ses affaires. Esquelles a raison des domages et pertes soustenues en vostre service, il alloit grandement souffrir sans la redresse qu'il attendoit de vos mains par le payement des arrérages tant des pensions, lesquelles pour quelques debtes vous aviez octroyé, que de tout ce qui peut estre encore deu à feu son père, pour tout le temps de son service ; quoy que quelques fois, à cause de nostre employ par deça (ainsy que lors nos lettrrs vous firent entendre) il ait esté forcé de s'en absenter. On bienque nous soyons asseurez et de la satisfaction que vous estes accoustumez de doñer à cause qui fidèlement vous servent et de la bienveillance que vous portez mesmes à la mémoire de ceux qui vous ont servi, tellement que nous jugeons estre chose superflue de vous en importuner. Si est ce néantmoins qu'à la cognoissance que nous avons de sa necessité et à sa très instante requeste, Nous avons bien voulu faire ceste intercession pour luy. Et vous prier très affectueusement de donner ordre que promptement il soit satisfait de tout ce qui se trouvera luy rester deu en vos provinces. Ce ne sera pas seulement un acte de vostre équité et faveur pour acquérir et confermer les dévotions des autres à vous servir, mais aussy un tesmoignage de vos affections en nostre endroit, qui nous invitera à vous en respondre pareillement et à toute occasion nous monstrer que rëelement nous somes. Hauts et puissants Seigneurs, nos bons amis, voysins et alliez, vostre bien bon Amy, Charles R.

A ñre palais de Hampton Court, le 30e de 7bre 1634.

(Feb. 6, 1635.)

Political Correspondence, 1634-36.

High and Mighty Lords,—By note of February 20th, 1630, your High Mightinesses referred to us for settlement the request made at that time by the late Colonel Bachlough for payment of some arrears of pensions which he alleged were still due to him in virtue of former resolutions. This note was not till December last placed in our hands by a certain

person with full power of attorney from the son of the aforesaid deceased colonel, who comes forward to resume this case, supported by letters of recommendation from the king, and assistance from the Resident of England. We cannot, after examination of the aforesaid claims, and after going over what was done before in the case, arrive at any other judgment than that which your High Mightinesses came to, and we adopted, for good and pregnant reasons, well and rightly refusing said petition, since then we have adhered to our decision.

Whereupon he has again addressed himself to your High Mightinesses, who have been pleased to ask our advice about it. We have, at the request and in presence of the Resident of England, had a conference with the aforesaid agent about this matter, in order to ascertain his wishes better and to make him desist from his unfounded claims. These he arranged under four points:

Firstly, to have payment of a pension of twelve hundred guilders yearly, promised to him on December 3rd, 1615. Secondly, interest of twelve hundred guilders yearly, granted to him on June 12th, 1623, in place of the aforesaid pension. Thirdly, a pension of two thousand guilders yearly, voted to him on December 26th, 1625, with expectative of a company of cavalry, or some other important charge. And fourthly, that he receive the pay and wages which fell due during his last absence before Maestricht and since, quoting as precedent the case of Marshal de Chastillon.

Having examined former resolutions on all these points, we have clearly explained to the aforesaid Resident and to said agent the true meaning of the resolutions, namely, as regards the first point, that the late colonel had in fact no reason or right to demand eighteen thousand four hundred guilders from the country for the services rendered to the country by his father, in the like capacity of colonel, inasmuch as he was absent for the most of the time; but that, on the earnest recommendation of the King of England and his ambassador, their High Mightinesses had granted him a pension of twelve hundred guilders yearly during his whole lifetime, with the promise that he would have the preference before others if a new Scottish regiment should be raised; and this pension he refused to

accept, saying that he possessed such means and rank that twelve hundred guilders yearly made no difference to him; so that no orders thereanent were ever passed, except now and then one for one hundred or two hundred, or some such sum, amounting in all to eight hundred guilders, and this was deducted from the said pension for the benefit of Delia Butlers, whom the old Colonel Bachlough had seduced. But from time to time further demands were made to have either payment of the arrears due, or an honourable appointment, and after divers recommendations from the King of England and his ambassador, your High Mightinesses resolved on November 4th, 1619, that satisfaction be given to the said Earl of Backlough by one of the two aforesaid measures, for which he pressed so hard, namely, that he should be presented with the first regiment that should fall vacant or be raised among the Scots, on condition that he should give up the first alternative, resigning the claims which he had on the country and also paying some creditors in this country, whom he had always put off till he should receive satisfaction. This offer he accepted in a letter of thanks, dated May 29th, 1620, with the renunciation and conditions contained therein, and your High Mightinesses granted him on July 14th, 1620, the aforesaid Act Expectative. When after that Colonel Hinderson died, and the vacant regiment was given by his Excellency[1] of glorious memory to Lieutenant-Colonel Francis Henderson, and not to the said Earl of Bachlough, your High Mightinesses, on the complaint made by him about it on June 12th, 1623, resolved that, owing to the great want of ready money, he should be accorded a pension of two thousand guilders yearly as interest for the sum claimed by him, till he could be provided with a colonelcy. As he was not content with this, and refused to accept it, he had the case brought up again in the year 1625 by the Duke of Buckingham, the Earl of Holland, and Mr. Carleton, who had then arrived here as ambassador-extraordinary; and your High Mightinesses having had a conference with them about it, your High Mightinesses informed the said ambassadors, that on their recommendation

[1] D. 'hooger M^{e},' which I believe='hooger memorie' (of higher memory).

an Act Expectative of the first company of cavalry, or some other important charge which should fall vacant among the Scots, would be granted, and till that time a pension of two thousand guilders yearly, the said pension commencing on the date of the said Act, and ceasing with the conferring of the said company or some other important charge. The said ambassadors having left with this resolution, no notice of the acceptance of the offer came thereafter, only on July 3rd, 1627, your High Mightinesses received a letter from the king and the above-mentioned duke, requesting that the said earl might have an expectative[1] of the first regiment, and meanwhile two thousand guilders yearly. Whereupon your High Mightinesses on July 20th following had an Act of Expectative despatched, promising that the said earl would have the first company of cavalry conferred upon him, or some other important charge which should fall vacant among the Scots, or if a new regiment of Scots were raised before then, that it was to be done by him. With this Mr. Carleton was satisfied at the time, and only requested that the promised pension of two thousand guilders yearly might not commence on July 20th, 1627, the date of the Act Expectative, but on December 16th, 1625, on which date your High Mightinesses made the offer to the ambassadors. But your High Mightinesses refused this on August 21st, 1627, as the offer which they made was accepted not on December 16th, 1625, but only on July 20th, 1627. And, accordingly, the said pension of two thousand guilders was paid from the said 20th of July till he should obtain the colonelcy. This was done in such wise that, when Colonel Francis Hinderson died in the year 1628, and his Excellency thought it dangerous to pass over the lieutenant-colonels and other officers who had risked their lives at all times, and to confer such an important post on a nobleman who had never seen any war or been in the service of the country, your High Mightinesses nevertheless resolved, in order to be relieved of the troublesome solicitations, to take a middle course, and for his accommodation to make three regiments out of two, whereby he was satisfied for the first time. But after he had held the colonelcy some time, he

[1] = 'Act Expectative.'

commenced to renew his old claims to the pensions which he had refused to accept before, and for which he had never asked an order.[1] As this was for good reasons refused him, the son now, finding the papers in the deceased's house, and not knowing what has already been done in this matter, has the case taken up again, and goes so much further that he denies that satisfaction was given to his father, as not a whole regiment, but only half a one, was given to him, and not at a salary of four hundred or five hundred guilders a month, but only three hundred guilders; and also requests payment for his absence, alleging that it was due to him no less than to others who held similar commands, who took good care to be paid for their time of absence.

On all these points, we have instructed the Resident and Agent as far as possible of the true state of the case, and endeavoured to make him satisfied therewith, declaring and proving that the first offer of twelve hundred guilders yearly was flatly refused, that the second was never accepted, that not a half, but a whole, regiment was conferred, at such rate of pay as others got, and that the pay of those absent before Maestricht and elsewhere was not paid, giving on each point the reasons therefor.

But it appears that they still would not accept what we told them; and the said Agent gave utterance to somewhat improper words of threatening. Wherefore we have found it necessary to give a somewhat long account of this matter, not being able to see that the request has any foundation whatever.

By order of the Council of State of the United Netherlands,

HUYGENS.

At the Hague. February 6th, 1635.

---

[1] *i.e.* for the payment of the pension.

VI

PAPERS RELATING TO THE EARL OF MORTON'S REGIMENT, COMMANDED BY LORD KINFAUNS.[1]

1629-1630

Contract for enlisting a Regiment of Scots.
(March 16, 1629.)

Military Business, Portfolio 8.

The Ambassador Alb. Joachimi to the Council of State:

Noble and Mighty Lords,—Your Noble Mightinesses will receive enclosed in this the contract which I have made with the Lord High Chancellor[2] of Scotland and Earl Morton,[3] sealed and signed, with copies of a document granting permission to seize by force the Dutch captains who shall be found at Leith and thereabouts, and be unwilling to bring over the enlisted regiment to Holland. For which end this only serves, etc.—Your High Mightinesses's very obedient servant,

Alb. Joachimi.

London, March 19th, 1629.

---

[1] This regiment was taken into service for four months in the year 1629, probably for the siege of Bois-le-Duc. It had previously been in English pay. It passed five months in the Netherlands, and then was disbanded or returned to Great Britain.

[2] Sir George Hay of Kinfauns, Clerk-Register, 1616, Lord High Chancellor of Scotland, 1622, created Viscount Dupplin and Lord Hay of Kinfauns, 1627, and Earl of Kinnoull in May 1633. He had two sons, Sir Peter Hay, who died unmarried, and George, who married Lady Anne Douglas, eldest daughter of William, Earl of Morton, Lord High Treasurer of Scotland.

[3] William, Earl of Morton (whose brother, Robert Douglas, 'perished at sea in passing to the Low Countries, *anno* 1583'), succeeded his grandfather in 1606, and was appointed Lord High Treasurer in 1630.

Original Contract.

Aujourdhuj $\frac{4}{14}$ de Mars $\frac{1628\ St.\ Aug.}{1629\ St.\ Nov.}$ sont accordez Messire Albert Joachimi, Chevalier, Ambassadeur auprès du Sérénissime Roy de la Grande Bretagne, de la part des haults et puissants Seigneurs, Messeigneurs les Estats Généraulx des Provinces Unies du pais bas, en vertu de ses instructions qu'il a de Messeigneurs du Conseil d'Estat des d^tes^ provinces Unies, d'une part, et nobles hommes les Seigneurs George Viscomte de Dupline, Grand Chancelier d'Escosse, et Guilliaume Comte de Morton et tous deux Conseilliers d'Estat du Sérénissime Roj Charles en ses Rojaumes d'Angleterre et d'Escosse d'aultre part, des condicions suivantes.

A scavoir, Que les d^ts^ Seigneurs Grand Chancelier et Comte ont promis et promettent par cettes de faire transporter d'Escosse en Hollande au service de Messeigneurs les Estats Généraulx susd^ts^ pour estre desbarqué sur la Rivière la Meuse en dedans le mois de Mars courant, le Régiment d'infanterie auquel jusques ores a commandé led^t^ Seigneur Comte de Morthon, et lequel est encores sur pied et en estat, aud^t^ pais d'Escosse, rengé soubs seise compag^es^.

Qu'aud^t^ Régiment commandera en qualité de Colonnel Sir George Haies, Baron de Kienfaunes,[1] etc., et aux Compagnies les Capitaines et Officiers lesquels commandent à icelles à présent.

Que la Compagnie Colonnelle sera composée de deux cent testes, et les autres de cent et vingt, y compris les Officiers montans ensemble au nombre de deux mille hommes, lesquels recepvront pour leur solde chasque mois de quarante deux jours, la somme de deux mille six cents douse libures, de quarante gros la libure, pour la Compagnie Colonnelle, et les aultres compagnies à l'advenant, selon l'ordre observé aux provinces Unies.

Que le transport des d^ts^ deux mille hommes, et l'entretien d'iceulx se fera aux despens du d^t^ Sieur Colonnel et Capitaines,

[1] Sir George Hay, Lord Kinfauns, only surviving son of the first Earl of Kinnoull, afterwards second Earl of Kinnoull and Captain of the Yeomen of the Guard.

jusques à ce qu'ils soient arrivez dans la Meuse, et y soient desbarquez et passé moustre, laquelle se fera aussi tost qu'il sera possible, après que Messeig^rs du Conseil d'Estat susd^ts seront acertenez de leur arrivèe, et seront receus les d^ts Colonnel et Cap^nes et les aultres soldats au service de Messeigneurs les Estats des Provinces Unies, faisant le serment en tel cas accoustumé.

Qu'ausd^ts Sieurs Colonnel et Capitaines sera paié pour le d^t transport et entretien la somme de huict libures de quarante gros la pièce, pour chasque personne laquelle sera mise aux rolles de monstere, sur laquelle sō seront advancés icy ausd^ts Seigneurs Grand Chancelier et Comte huict mille desd^tes libures de quarante gros.

Au jour de la moustre, commencera la solde et le premier jour du service.

Et seront délivrées aud^t Colonnel et Capitaines des Commissions de par les Seigneurs du Conseil d'Estat susd^t in forma pour le temps de quatre longs mois de quarante deux jours chasque mois.

En esgard de la briefveté du temps que ce service durera, recepvront les haults officiers dud^t Regiment traictement co/s'ensuit. Le colonnel quatre cent libures de quarante gros la piece; le lieutenant Colonnel cent libures; le Sergeant Major quatre vingt libures; le Quartierm^r et le Prevost chascun cinquante libures, comme dessus, chasque mois de trente deux jours.

Et en toutes aultres choses sera ce Régiment durant son service reglé et traicté de mesmes que les aultres Régiments de la nation Escossoise estans au service de l'Estat des Provinces Unies.

Si le Sieur Colonnel n'amène le nombre complet des deux mille hoēs au Rendevous, à scavoir en la Meuse, on luy rabatra des deniers promis pour le transport, pour chacune personne qu'il aura moins amené quatre libures de quarante gros, lesquelles luj seront rabatués de la so/ promise pour le transport et entretenement de ceulx qui luj seront advouez en la monstre.

Pour faciliter le transport du d^t Régiment, consent le dict Seigneur Ambassador que les navires des Provincies Unies,

lesquels se trouveront au havre de Lith où l'embarquement se fera et ez environs puissent estre arrestez pour mener les compagnies en Hollande, aux despens touteffois du S^r^ Colonnel et Captaines, et à tel pris qu'ils scauront convenir avec les maistres des navires, où que Messeigneurs du Conseil d'Estat des Provinces Unies jugeront raisonnables, si convenir ne peuvent.

Et seront envoiez deux navires de guerre au dict havre de Lith, pour servir de Convoj au dict transport Pour l'accomplissement et entretenement desquelles condicions et de chacune d'icelles respectivement, a le dict S^r^ Ambassadeur obligé comme il oblige par cettes, ses Principaulx, et lesdicts Seigneurs Grand-Chancelier d'Escosse, etc., et Comte de Morthon etc. leurs personnes et biens, soubs leurs scels et subscriptions ici mises, le jour, mois et ans que desous.

(Signed) Alb. Joachimi.
Dupline.
Morton.

Annexa I.

A tous ceulx qui ces prñts verront salut. Comme ainsi soit que Messeigneurs les Est^s^ Gen. des Provinces Unies aient trouvé bon, pour le bien de leur estat, de prendre en leur service le Régim^t^ d'Infanterie auquel jusques ores a commandé noble et excell^t^ personnage le Seig^r^ Guillaume Comte de Morton, et auquel commande à présent en chef Monsieur le Baron de Kienfaunes, pour estre led. Régiment mené d'Escosse aux Provinces Unies endedans le pñt Mois de Mars, Si est ce que je Alb. Joachimi, chavalier, Amb^r^ auprès le Sérénissime Roy de la Gr. Bretagne mande à tous m^nes^ de navires, subject des d^ts^ Seigneurs Estats, lesquels se trouveront à Lith et aux environs, où le dit Régiment doibt s'embarquer, et que requis en seront qu'ils veuillent faciliter, tant qu'en eulx est, le transport du Régim^t^ susd. et recebvoir en leurs navires led. Seign^r^ Baron de Kienfaunes et ses Cap^s^, Officiers et Soldats, pour les rendre d'Escosse en la Meuse, à la place qui leur sera assignée; et en cas qu'aulcuns desd. mres de navires, inhabitants desd. Provinces Unies. entreprinsent de refuser ou de s'excuser de trans-

porter led. Baron de Kienfaunes et soud. régiment, ce que je ne veulx esp^{r}, je consens en vertu de l'authorisation que à ces fins m'est donnée, que tels mr̄s de navires puissent estre contraincts p. arrest de leurs navires, de rendre ce service à leur patrie. Bien entendu qu'ils seront contentez dud. Seig^{r} Baron de leur fres. selon et ainsi qu'ils pourront convenir ensemble, et si convenir ne peuvent, selon ce que les Seig^{rs} du Conseil d'Estat des Provinces Unies jugeront estre raisonnable.

Faict à Londres, le xix de Mars 1629.

Annexa II.

Lyste van de naemen van de Cappiteynen van't Schotse Regiment van den Grave van Morton, 't welck ten dienste van den Lande sal overcomen uyt Schotlant.

[Roll of names of the Captains of the Scots Regiment of the Earl of Morton that is to come from Scotland for the service of the country.]

De Grave van Morton, Colonel
Lutenant-Colonnel N.
Sergeant-Maior Stuart
Capn̄ Grey
Capn̄ Willem Car
Capn̄ Balantyn
Capn̄ Hamelton
Capn̄ Lesley
Capn̄ Ramsay
Capn̄ Jemes Heye
Capn̄ Guilliam Heye
Capn̄ Kammel
Capn̄ Diel
Capn̄ M. Kammel
Capn̄ Uttison
Capn̄ Hum

Annexa III.

Extract from a missive of Ambassador Joachimi, written to their High Mightinesses from London, 2nd April 1629.

The Lord Chancellor has been rather dissatisfied for some days past that he did not think of making some stipulation before the departure of the regiment, as for instance that it should be discharged at the end of four months or that it should be brought back to Scotland. A nobleman, come from the Netherlands, had told him that your High Mightinesses or the Councillors of State had resolved that half a month's salary was to be promised to the regiments, which are to be newly enlisted, as passage-money. His Excellency said to me that he would just as well like the conditions, agreed upon with me, carried out. He has received from Signor Borlamachi the

accounts for the transport money, eight hundred pounds sterling, which have been paid in partial settlement of what the said Burlamacchi [*sic*] promised to the king, for the four regiments sent to your High Mightinesses in the year 1624. He has in his possession an order from me and a receipt from the Lord Chancellor.

Let this contract be placed in the hands of the Council of State to serve the purpose for which it is intended.

CORN. MUSCH.

Actum, 13th April 1629.

1629 *April* 13.—Received a missive from Mr. Joachimi written at London on the 2nd inst., containing among other things the intimation that the Lord Chancellor of Scotland had received from Signor Burlamacchi, on behalf of the regiment, which belonged to the Earl of Morton, on the account of the transport-money, eight hundred pounds sterling, which was paid in partial settlement of what the said Burlamacchi promised to the king for the four regiments sent to their High Mightinesses in 1624, he, Burlamacchi, having in his hands an order of the said Joachimi, and a receipt from the Chancellor above-mentioned.

After discussion it was resolved, that an extract from the said letter dealing with this question be placed in the hands of the Council of State for their use. The President informed the meeting that eight or nine ships with Scots of the newly raised regiment had arrived.

After discussion, it was resolved and decided to inform the Council of State about this, and request them to make proper arrangements for their mustering, arming, and payment.

April 14.—Inasmuch as their High Mightinesses have found good to take into their service in England, for a period of four months, a regiment of Scots, which belonged to the Earl of Morton, but which Baron Kienfaunes will now command as colonel; it was resolved, after discussion, that a commission be despatched by their High Mightinesses to the said Baron Kinfauns to hold command as colonel; and that he shall thereafter take at their hands the proper oath.

And notification of this is to be made to the Secretary

Junius that he may transmit to the said Lord Kienfaunes His Excellency's document to their High Mightinesses.

May 13.—The Lords of Holland have communicated to their High Mightinesses a letter of the Burgomaster and rulers of the town of Gorcum, written yesterday to their Honours, concerning the support of some new Scots brought into their city. After hearing the report of the Council of State that suitable provision has been made for the maintenance of the said Scots, this matter was dropped.

May 17.—The Lords of Holland having communicated to their High Mightinesses a certain missive written by His Excellency to them, in which he requests that the newly arrived Scots may at once be armed and sent to the army; it was agreed and decided, after discusssion, to give this letter into the hands of the secretary Huygens, who had been called in, with a charge to the Council of State to make arrangements for this purpose.

December 15.—A petition was read from Colonel Hay, Baron de Kinfaunes, and his captains, requesting that a settlement of accounts for their five months' service be made both for money due them as pay and otherwise, and that, besides, the sum of forty thousand guilders be refunded to them, which they allege has been spent on the maintenance of their soldiers during the time of six weeks, owing to the fact that their High Mightinesses had not arranged for any ships-of-war going to Scotland at the appointed time to transport the said soldiers thither; further, that arrangements be made to transport their discharged soldiers from this country to Scotland.

After discussion it was decided to place this petition in the hands of the Council of State for examination, and thereafter to give their advice about it; and the said council is recommended to consult Captain van der Haept about sending the ships-of-war.

December 28.—There was read the advice of the Council of State dated the 27th inst., in regard to the request of Colonel Hay, presented on the 13th inst., to their High Mightinesses. It was agreed and decided, after discussion, to summon the said colonel to the meeting of their High Mightinesses, and to place before him the reasons advanced in the said advice to

let him understand that there is some foundation for his petition, and further inquiry is to be made from Captain Frans Touw, belonging to the Board of the Admiralty at Rotterdam, as to why the regiment of the said colonel was not brought over at the appointed time, and whether the fault lay solely with the want of the convoy for the foresaid ships.

December 29.—After discussion whether Colonel Hay should be summoned to this meeting to be informed of the unfounded nature of his claims, according to the resolution taken yesterday by their High Mightinesses, it was resolved that Mr. Schaffer and the Treasurer-General undertake the duty: and in the mean time it was resolved to write to Captain Franc Touw, so as to hear before next Monday, to find out from him how long he was in Scotland before Captain van der Abt, and if the regiment of Colonel Hay was ready long before Captain van der Abt arrived there.

To the Noble and Mighty Lords. (June 16, 1630.)

Letters to the Council of State.

My Lords,—Your letter of 13th May, in reference to Sir George Hay, and his departure in displeasure from the Hague, came to hand on the 25th of said month. On receipt I immediately informed Lord Dorchester about the state of the affair, and learned from him that nothing had been brought before the king regarding the matter. Nor was it afterwards brought before the king. Also I am not aware that Sir George Hay made his complaint very public, for I spoke about the matter with the Earl of Morton, his father-in-law, and he knew nothing but that the draft[1] was left in charge of the Lord Conservateur Drummond. At first the Lord Colonel was very stiff to me, and refused to send anybody again with the draft,[1] because, as he said, it is so small, or even to give me an order for the draft[1] to anybody, and complained much about what he had experienced in the Netherlands, namely, that in the pay list many sick men from the hospitals wére brought to him whose names were not known on the regimental rolls, and that it was told him that he would get warning a

---

Ordonnantie.

day or two before the regiment would be disbanded. The opposite of this took place, and yet on the very day of the dismissal it was said that more favourable terms were offered to and pressed on other colonels, who had also lately entered the service, than had been offered to him, and on which these men were continued in the service, and many other things. But he showed himself particularly annoyed at the arrest granted on the draft with consent of the Council to Lieutenant Lichton on the property[1] of the deceased Captain Ramsay, on account of debts incurred—if they really were debts—since the former captain and lieutenant were both in the service of the King of Great Britain, and the matter concerned the support of the king's company. He also desired that I would pay him the money here, but finally sent his mandate with Colonel Leeuwesthon to Holland. And information on the above case was forwarded to me on the 15th inst., in a missive which your Noble Mightinesses may see in the enclosed extract from the same. I should have much liked him to leave the country more contented, for the satisfaction of my Lord the Chancellor of Scotland, his honourable father, a personage rich in good qualities, and well affected towards the States of the United Netherlands. Your Noble Mightinesses, in your wisdom, will best know how to dispose of this matter, as you are accustomed daily to dispose of others weightier and more important.—Herewith, etc., your Honourable Mightinesses, etc., (Signed) Alb. Joachimi.

At Chelsey, the 16th June 1630.

Annexa.

Extraict d'une lettre à l'Amb^r^ des Seig^s^ Estats, par George Hay, le xv de Juin 1630.

Monsieur,—Voz comandemens m'ont fait rinvoier mes ordonnances en holland, et icy vous faire un petit recit de ceste affaire du Capitaine Ramsay, qui a esté tué au service de vostre estat, vu Lichton apres avoir refusé a son Capitaine et à moj par diverse fois de rendre contre de l'argént qu'il avoit receu

[1] Arrest on the *ordonnance* of Captain Ramsay; perhaps it is on the pay due to him.

pour l'intertenement de sa Compagnie, durant le temps qu'elle estoit paye du Roÿ, a suivy d'escosse en holand, aÿant esté cassé de sa charge de lieutenant et long temps après la mort de Ramsay s'est plaint au Conseil d'estat et a arresté son ordonance, aléguant que l'autre luy doibt environ mille franc, qu'il qualifie par sa parole et des comptes mal instruicts, le Conseil veut iuger le diferent, encore que les deux parties estoit alors au service du Roy, et ne sont point à ceste heur des Estats. Monsieur, ie ne veux pas presumer de vous enuyer plus long temps avec le recit de plus de particularities, sufira, s'il vous plait, que ie vous asseur que l'affaire est iniuste.

VII

RESOLUTIONS, DESPATCHES, ETC., RELATIVE TO RECRUITING IN ENGLAND AND SCOTLAND. 1632-1638.

Recruiting in England and Scotland.

Resolutions of States-General.

1632, *July* 19.—Inasmuch as with the consent of His Excellency a levy is being made by the commissioners for the army of two thousand horsemen and four thousand foot, and as His Excellency, with the commissioners, finds it necessary that, in addition, authority be given for levying French, English, and Scots recruits, namely, fifteen hundred French, two thousand English, and fifteen hundred Scots, the said Commissioners suggesting in the same letter of the 9th inst. in what manner the said levy can soonest and best be accomplished, it was resolved, after discussion, that the said two thousand horsemen and four thousand foot soldiers be paid from the one million five hundred thousand guilders granted by the Provinces at this juncture of affairs for carrying out their High Mightinesses' designs; and furthermore, that to each of those persons who shall bring the new soldiers from France, Scotland, and England respectively, to this country, eight guilders be paid for each soldier, and that promises be given them that each shall have a company of the new soldiers who are to be brought over, which companies are to be disbanded at the conclusion of the campaign, and the soldiers distributed among the other companies of the country, and the persons above-mentioned shall then each be provided with an ordinary company of the country, which may fall vacant while the army is in the field or afterwards, among the respective regiments of their nations. But the Deputies of Holland declared, with regard to this matter of bringing over recruits that, having received orders to the contrary from their Prin-

cipals, they cannot consent to it, maintaining that the said levy ought to take place on the old footing and according to the regulations of the country; and they were requested to discuss this matter again in their province and bring up a further resolution, which they undertook to do.

July 28.—The Deputies of the Provinces of Gelderland, Zeeland, Utrecht, Overÿssel, Stadt en Lande (those of Friesland being absent) again declared that they could have agreed to the proposal set forth by the commissioners for the army in their missive of the 9th inst. to their High Mightinesses regarding the matter of levies, or to the advice offered to their High Mightinesses by the Council of State, of date the 15th inst., but, having noticed that the Deputies of Holland could not agree thereto, had so far modified their terms regarding the said levies, that to each of those persons who are to bring the new soldiers from France, England, and Scotland, to this country, an Act Expectative is to be given, with a sure offer and promise that each of them shall be provided with an ordinary company of the country in the regiments for which respectively they should bring over the soldiers, as soon as such may fall vacant, either in the field or not, and that in addition they are to receive for each man whom they shall bring over eight guilders.

Whereupon the Deputies of Holland, having again been asked if they could not agree to this, declared that they had no authority to do so, it was resolved and decided, after discussion, to make a representation by letter anent this matter, and its necessity to the States of Holland, and to request the said province to agree to it.

July 30.—Regarding the declaration of the Deputies of Holland as to the levies for reinforcement of the regiments of the French, English, and Scots at present in the army, it was resolved and decided, after foregoing discussion, to write to Mr. van Langerack that he, by agreement . . . shall look out four persons, who will undertake to bring to this country each five hundred Frenchmen for the four regiments, amounting in all to two thousand soldiers, at the end of August next, and they shall receive for their expenses eight guilders for every man whom they shall succeed in bringing in; and that,

in addition, an Act Expectative be given them, with the sure offer and promise that each of them is to be provided with an ordinary company of the Land in the regiments for which they respectively shall bring over the soldiers, as soon as they fall vacant, either in the field or not. . . . Furthermore, a letter is also to be written to Mr. Joachimi, that he must also in England look out seven persons, of whom *four* shall undertake each to bring to this country five hundred Englishmen for reinforcement of the aforesaid English regiments, and *three* each five hundred men for reinforcement of the three Scots regiments, on the foregoing terms and conditions which are set forth above. And Mr. Joachimi shall do all in his power with the King of Great Britain, in order that it may please His Majesty to consent to the exportation of the said soldiers to this country; and Mr. Joachimi shall be authorised, as he is hereby authorised, to draw the money necessary for expenses from Receiver-General Doublet, and the bills for it will be promptly paid.

Minutes of Letters—the States to Joachimi.

Diplomatic Correspondence.

1632, *July* 30.—We receive more and more information, as time goes on, that the enemy are anew concentrating their troops, infantry as well as cavalry, around Durby, situated in the district of Limburg, and that General Papenheym is advancing with the army under his command to come to the aid of the enemy, and to see if he can assist in relieving Maestricht by force, or by cutting off supplies, or if he can undertake anything effectually, by way of diversion, which will be hurtful to the frontiers of this country, or by his approach stir up righteous jealousy in several provinces against this state, or, at least, put and keep it in great uneasiness.

In the second place, we are, to our great sorrow, informed that the army of this state before Maestricht is being greatly diminished and weakened by sickness, desertion of the soldiers, and the damage which the enemy is causing to the said army in the approaches and otherwise; and that the levying of horsemen and infantry, lately authorised to be made in these provinces and adjoining countries, is progressing but slowly.

Having deliberated, with reference to this, about the authority and power which must be employed and put into action against such misfortunes and apprehended inconveniences in this critical state of affairs, we have, among other measures, found fit on this occasion to request and desire that you, in England, should look out for and try to obtain seven qualified persons, of whom four shall each enlist as reinforcements for the four English regiments five hundred Englishmen, and the other three shall each enlist from Scotland five hundred men as reinforcements for the three Scots regiments, making altogether two thousand English and fifteen hundred Scots, which the aforesaid persons, each with the number appointed, are to bring over by the end of August next; and for this they are to receive for each man whom they bring hither eight guilders; and, in addition, either by you over there, or by us here, there is to be given to them an Act Fxpectative, with the firm promise and assurance that they will each be placed in command of an ordinary company of the country in the regiments for which they, respectively, shall bring over the soldiers, as soon as a vacancy occurs in the army, afield or elsewhere, after the aforesaid recruits shall have been distributed among the said regiments. Furthermore, you are to do all you can with the King of Great Britain, in order that His Majesty may be pleased to consent to the exportation of the aforesaid soldiers from his kingdoms to this country; and whereas we believe that the foresaid persons to be selected by you will wish to get over there the passage-money for the soldiers they are to bring over, we therefore authorise you hereby to draw the money necessary for the passage-money from Receiver-General Doublett, and the bills for it will be promptly paid. And that said persons may gain a firm trust in this, we wish to recommend that they would, as far as possible, take pains that the aforesaid recruits be enlisted on the above-mentioned conditions, or that, at least, if this cannot be done, as we do not expect to hear, the passage-money is to be retained.

Actum, July 30th, 1632.

The States-General to the King of Great Britain.

Au Roy de la Grande Bretagne, le 3 d'Aougst 1632.

D'aultant que les quatre régiments Anglois et trois Escossois pour le présent au champ devant Maestricht sont tellement diminués et affaiblis par maladies et aultres inconvenients, qu'on n'en peult tirer le service deu à l'estat et convenable à ces nations, ce que nous tâchons remédier. Tant qu'en nous est avons cõmis et authorisé le Sieur Joachimi, nostre ambassadeur pour trouver sept personages de qualité, à scavoir quatre Anglois et trois Escossois, qui soubs conditions raisonnables entreprendront d'amener par deça chacun cinq cens hommes, au dernier du mois d'Auougst prochain, pour recreuer desdits sept régiments. Mais sachans, Sire, que les dictes recrues ne peuvent sortir hors les royaumes de vostre Maiesté sans exprès consentiment d'icelle, nous la prions bien humblement nous faire l'honneur de nous accorder favorablement que les dictes recreues puissent venir par deça sans aulcun empèschement, afin que les régiments tant Anglois qu'Escossois soyent conservés en estat de pouvoir faire services à leur réputation glorieuse de nostre armée, et nous demeurerons tant plus capables à l'avancement du bien commun et du service de vostre maiesté en particulier, ce que le Sieur Joachimi fera plus particulièrement entendre à vostre maiesté de nostre part, etc.

Le 3 d'Aougst, 1632.

From Albert Joachim, Ambassador, and Govert Brasser, Extraordinary Ambassador.

To the States-General. (Rec^{d} Aug. 25, 1632.)

High and Mighty Lords,—Last Friday, the 6th instant, there was brought hither the duplicate of the missive of your High Mightinesses of July 30th, regarding the levying of seven times five hundred men to reinforce the four English and three Scottish regiments which are in the service of your High Mightinesses. The original letter has not yet come in. The king was on his way to Windsor, and at our request His Majesty signified that he would grant us an audience on

Sunday the 8th, at Ootland. So as to be in good time for that day, we immediately on receipt of the letter set out, and on the way we communicated the business of the levy to the Lord High Treasurer and to the Earl of Carlille, whom we found with the said Treasurer at New Hampton. When we mentioned the conditions to their Excellencies, and offered to engage such persons as they might recommend to us, the Lord Treasurer was well pleased, and considered the offer very acceptable. Then should the king afterwards have consented to the levy, His Excellency said that he had nobody of his own to recommend; the Earl of Carlille said to us that his nephew, Colonel Kienfaunes or Hayes, had not been fully paid for his services, and appeared very dissatisfied that he and his regiment had not been kept on, while other regiments had continued in the service.

Having arrived at Windsor, we found no opportunity to forward our business. And, as the king went out to hunt very early the next day, intending to go to Ootland, we directed our way thither, and there had a conference with the Earl of Holland, and also spoke to the Earl of Pembroke, both of whom considered it of great importance that a good understanding be maintained between the king their master and your High Mightinesses. On Sunday afternoon we were with the king, and asked his permission to levy the recruits. His Majesty said that recently many of his subjects had left his kingdoms and gone into the service of other masters, and after he had heard the conditions, said he believed we would get no soldiers on those conditions. We briefly showed that we did not ask for anything new in this case, and that such a thing had not been refused to any of the king's friends, not even to the far distant Muscovites. We commended the conditions, and the king taking time to think over the matter a little, we presented the memorial, of which a copy accompanies this, and in reply we received next day at Windsor the declaration of the good-will of His Majesty, which your High Mightinesses may find in the copy. Since then we have also received a missive to the Council of Scotland, to enable us to make the levies in that kingdom for the three Scottish regiments, and have used great diligence to find persons with whom we might

act. But though several of high rank offered themselves, and others well qualified, yet so many difficulties were placed in our way, that we greatly doubt whether your High Mightinesses will get the business carried through on that footing. All say in general that the time is short, and the season unsuitable for obtaining men, as in harvest a big wage can be earned; moreover, that for some time back many levies have been made in the country, and that still daily the drum is being beaten for the King of Sweden and for the Grand Duke of Muscovy. The officers of the Grand Duke promise big pay, namely, fifteen guilders per short month to the soldiers, and they give those who bring to them an additional man five guilders and more. The number of five hundred is also considered to be too large to be brought together and collected by one man, unless he happened to have many friends in the country, and such men say that they would not like to take out of the country men who would follow them for love or respect for them or their friends, and then leave them or hand them over to others, after having been taken over the sea. Some also consider that it rather diminishes than increases the reputation of a military man to levy soldiers and take them over when he is not afterwards to be put in command of any of them.

We have also met persons who have served your High Mightinesses in higher positions than that of captain, who would not like to hold a lower position, and go in a lower rank, among those whom they formerly commanded. Some take offence because they who are to undertake this work have been promised no pay or salary during the time that they may have to wait for their company. Two thousand men could be levied in one regiment with greater ease and more quickly than five hundred men by one officer alone, for the colonel would have his company formed by his captains, and the captains theirs by their respective lieutenants, ensigns, and sergeants, if each of the said officers, to obtain his place, be engaged to bring in a certain number of soldiers.

The foregoing considerations have been laid before us by the English, for we have not been able to find out any Scots to treat with, seeing that the king is making a progress, and the court is divided; wherefore we think of sending an express to

Scotland. And here we shall use every possible endeavour to carry through your High Mightinesses' intention. One other of the nobles, besides the Earl of Carlille, and divers others, expressed an opinion to us that the son of the Lord Chancellor of Scotland, who is also the son-in-law of the Earl of Morton, was not treated well in the Netherlands, and that some money is still owing to him for his services. We trust that the above-mentioned lords, who have great influence in that kingdom, will not for that reason fail to support the levy. But meanwhile it would be expedient (under correction) that any disputes between the country and the said colonel be settled, to prevent disaster. The warrants or deeds of consent, which in accordance with the order of Lord Coke have to be drawn up, are not yet in our hands. But we are seeing to the expedition of them.

On the same day as we made our request to the king to levy recruits, there was a rumour at the court that the Spanish ministry had also requested permissiou to levy troops. The levies of the recruits would be much facilitated, if those who are to bring over five hundred men were to get out of them a company among the ordinary regiments. Sir William Brouckers has a deed from your High Mightinesses, as he alleges, whereby he is held as recommended for employment in the service of your High Mightinesses as colonel, so soon as your High Mightinesses may resolve to levy new regiments of English nationality. He has offered himself to raise a regiment, and to arm it and bring it over at his expense, on condition that he and the captains who come over with him may remain all their lives in the service. We have undertaken at his desire to remind your High Mightinesses of the said deed. Mr. Boswel intends to sail next week for Holland with Mr. Carleton. He is considered an upright and moderate person, who favours the good cause, and who will endeavour to avoid everything in any way detrimental to the friendship and good understanding between his king and your High Mightinesses. Several gentlemen of good standing have desired us to recommend him as above to your High Mightinesses, etc.

Alb. Joachimi.
Govert Brasser.

Dated at Chelsea, 13th August 1632.

Memorandum presented by the Dutch Ambassadors to the King concerning the levy.

COPIE. A.

Au Sérénissime Roy de la Grande Bretagne, etc.

SIRE,—L'Ambassadeur et Député de Messeigneurs les Estats Généraulx des Provinces Unies, voz bons amys et alliez, supplient très humblement Vrē Ma^{té} sacrée par commandement exprès de leurs Supérieurs, qu'il plaise à Vrē Mat^{é}, en leur continuant ses faveurs accoustumées, de consentir et permettre gratieusement ques les d^{s} Seigneurs Estats facent lever en ceste vrē Royaume d'Angleterre, des recreues pour les quatre Régiments Anglois qui sont au service desdits Seigneurs Estats, au nombre de cinq cents persones par Régiment, et qu'ils les puissent faire transporter de ce royaulme aux Provinces Unies, et que pour faciliter lesdictes recreues et réforcements des Régiments, vrē Ma^{té} soit servie d'ordonner que les ordres, pour ce nécessaires soyent mis entre les mains dudict Ambassadeur et Député, avecq permission de batre le tambour.

Pareilles ordres sont tres humblement demandés pour les trois Régiments Escossois, pour faire les levées en vrē Royaulme d'Escosse. Et vrē Ma^{té} trouvera les d^{ts} Seigneurs trés promts à recognoistre selon leur possibilité, ledict bénéfice et les aultres qu'ils ont receus de vrē Maj^{é}, avecq leurs tres humbles services.

Faict à Otelandes, le $\frac{29 \text{ Juillet}}{8 \text{ Aoust}}$ 1632.

Consent given by the King for the levy.

COPIE. B.

His Ma^{té} is gratiously pleased to lÿcence for the leveing of their recreuts, according to his humbly request, made by the States, his good neighbors and Alliez, the Clerque of the Councel attending is to acquaint the lords therewth, and to prepare a warrant or warrants accordingly for the present execution of the service by such officers as the Ambassador, w^{t} the allowance of their Lordships shal nominate.

JOHN COKE.

Otlands, 28 July 1632.

(Received Aug. 25, 1632, dated Aug. 17, 1632.)

High and Mighty Lords,—As the time of His Majesty's progress approached, . . . we . . . requested an audience of His Majesty, and this having been granted us on the 8th inst., thought well to depart for the court on the 5th inst., both to hasten on the matter of the levy of the recruits, and to have time before the audience to give a few hints to some gentlemen, in order that the business with His Majesty might be put in train; for which purpose we addressed ourselves to the—85 320 z 453 [*i.e.* the Earls of Holland and Pembroke]. . . . By our missive of the 13th instant, a duplicate of which accompanies this, we have informed your High Mightinesses of the difficulties made here about the levying of the troops on the footing indicated by your High Mightinesses. Since then some other noblemen have been with us, who in addition assert further that they will be hated and get into disputes with the lieutenants and other officers of the old companies as depriving them of their hope of advancement. There are also those who propose that they should be permitted to levy a company of their own in addition to the five hundred men for recruits; others are of opinion that at least the title and pay of captain should be given them, till a vacancy shall occur in a company in the regiment; so that we do not see how any levies are to be carried out on the lines proposed by your High Mightinesses, unless you can agree to modify the conditions somewhat in accordance with the feeling here. Considering that the country-people are at present busy with harvest, not so much would be lost meanwhile, as sometime after this, it will be out of all comparison easier to obtain men than now. We have to-day sent Secretary Nyeuport by mail to Scotland, to negotiate there with Scottish noblemen about the levy, inasmuch as we have not been able to meet with any Scottish noblemen here. We have given orders to the above-named secretary to select a capable person there, who in his absence could carry on negotiations, in case the Scots nobles bring forward the same difficulties as the English, and your High Mightinesses may see good to arrange more favourable conditions. We shall await in everything the good pleasure of your

High Mightinesses, and shall submissively regulate our actions accordingly.

In order to obtain the warrants necessary for the levy, difficulties having been put in our way in regard to them, so far at least as concerning the beating of the drum, we were compelled to send an express to court, and there obtained the deed, a copy of which accompanies this. And hereby commending ourselves most humbly to the good favour of your High Mightinesses, we shall always pray to God Almighty, High Mightinesses, that He may cause the victorious arms of your High Mightinesses to prosper more and more every day in the deliverance of the long-oppressed Netherlands.

ALB. JOACHIMI.

17th August 1632, stylo novo, at Celsy [Chelsea?] GOVERT BRASSER.

Annexa A. [Original in English.]

Consent to levy in England.

Albeit his Majestie by gods blessinge enioyeth greate[1] with all Princes and Estates, and will not interrupt the same, by engageing himselfe into anie of their quarrelles, or by giueing ayde to one more then other in pīudice of anie Treatie established betwixt him and anie of them; yet other Princes giveing that reasonable libertie to their subiects in like case to put themselves into the service of forren Estates for their better inhablinge to serve their owne prince and countrey when occasion shall require; and since the same was practised in the tyme of his Ma^ties^ father of blessed memorie when he enioyed the like peace. For these considerations, by his Ma^ties^ Comandem^te^ wee thincke fitt, and hereby order, that leave be given to such fower Conducto^s^ and their deputies as shall bee appointed to levie w^th^ sound of drum or otherwise, such voluntarie soldie^s^ as shall willinglie put themselves into the service of the Lordes States, being his Ma^ties^ good neighbo^s^ and allies, as Recreuts to supplie the fower English regiments alreadie in their pay, namely, five hundreth men for every regiment, to be conducted and transported by such order and meanes as

[1] *Sic.* Word omitted, evidently 'peace.'

shal bee appointed and supplyed by the Ambassador and Deputie for the said States residing here. And we require all Mais[es], Justices of peace, Customers, Comptroller[rs], Searchers, Constables, and all other his Ma[ties] officers, not to interrupt, but to aide and assist the said Conducto[s] for p̄formance of this service, as they will answeare the contrary at their p̄ills.

K. Weston. Pembroke and Montgomery.
Carlile. Holland.
F. Edmonde. J. Coke.

A y[e] Court at Salisbury, y[e] 4th of Aug[t] 1632.

Annexa B. [Also in English.]

Consent to levy in Scotland.

Charles, etc.

Right trustie, etc.,—Whereas oure good friends and Allies, the Estates of the united Provinces, have by their Ambassador with us humbly requested oure Lycence for levying of certayne recruts of men for supplying the wants of the Regiments of those two Kingdomes serving under them, to w[ch] purpose haveing already gevin order for the levying here of fyve hundred men for every one of the foure regiments of the English: And being willing that they have the like supply from thence proportionable to the nomber of the regiments of that our Kingdome: Our pleasure is that with all diligent yow graunt into such as shall be deputed by the sayd Estates a sufficient warrant, with as ample com̄ission for levying there and transporting from thence ffyve hundred men for every one of the three regiments of Scottes as heretofore hath beene graunted; and to that effect that yow give Lycence to Tukke Drumes. The sayd persones soe deputed by the Estates gyveing alwise such satisfaction to every one of the nomber as shall be mutually condiscended upoun according to the forme accustomed for doeing, where of these p̄nts shall be yō warrant.

From ō Court of Otlands, the last of July 1632.

La superscription de la lettre estoit: To our right trustie and welbeloved cousin and counsell[r], to our right trustie and

welbeloved cousins and counsellors, and to our right trustie and welbeloved counsellors, the viscount of Duplin, our Chancelor, the Earle of Strathern, President of our privie counsell, and remanent noblemen and others of our privie counsellors of our Kingdome of Scotland.

Resolutions of States-General.

August 30.—Mr Vosbergen declared that in accordance with their High Mightinesses' resolution, of the 25th instant, he had extracted from the letters of Messrs. Joachimi and Brasser, dated 13th and 17th instant, the points for consideration, and found that they were as follows:

1. That said gentlemen are of opinion that the business of recruits for the English regiments will come to nothing, unless a change be made in the conditions appointed therefor by their High Mightinesses.

2. That in England complaint is made about defective payment to which ex-Colonel Hayes, or some of his ex-captains, pretend they have a claim on their High Mightinesses for services rendered by them in 1629.

. . . 4. That they want declarations of the damage done by the Dunkirkers to three ships of Rotterdam, in the river named the Forth, in Scotland.

After discussion thereanent, it was resolved and decided to write back to their High Mightinesses' ministers above-mentioned that the resolution in the business of recruits was taken with knowledge of the circumstances, and that, therefore, no alteration can be made therein.

Regarding the second point, information is to be asked from the Council of State.

Joachimi to the States-General.

Diplomatic Correspondence.

High and Mighty Lords,—Yesterday there arrived here the original missive of your High Mightinesses of July 30th, in which you command me to select here seven persons to bring over at the end of this month each five hundred men, as recruits or reinforcements for the four English and three Scottish regiments in the service of your High Mightinesses. Besides the said original missive, I have also received one of August 3rd, with a letter to the king, touching the same matters. That the king has

consented to the request for the levy, and that this could not take place on the conditions and in the time laid down in the communication of your High Mightinesses, at least not here in England, Mr. Brasser and myself informed your High Mightinesses, on the 13th instant, whether this matter is likely to make better progress in Scotland, thereof as yet we have not been advised. And as your High Mightinesses have already the consent of the king to carry out the said levy, I thought it unnecessary to trouble His Majesty with the delivery of the above-mentioned missive. It would, probably (under correction), be of more service and not unacceptable here, if your High Mightinesses should be pleased to thank His Majesty by missive for his consent to the levy, inasmuch as he, in reply to the request made at your instance by your High Mightinesses' ministers, at once graciously consented to the raising and transport of the aforementioned recruits or reinforcements for the English and Scottish regiments. Further, in view of the present constitution of the court, it can do no good to bring again under notice how the regiments have been so diminished and weakened by sickness and other misfortunes, that they are not fit for ordinary duty; for those who are ill-disposed to your High Mightinesses have attempted to turn the king's affection away from your High Mightinesses, giving out that in the siege of Maestricht a large number of his subjects were squandered.—Waiting for what commands your High Mightinesses may be pleased to give, etc.

At Chelsea, the last day of August 1632.

Resolutions of States-General.

September 20.—The report of Mr. Vosbergen having been heard, and Mr. Huygens being absent, having examined the three following letters—the first of the last day of August, the second of the 4th, and the third of the 7th inst.—the first, written by Mr. Joachimi at Chelsea, being to the effect that the King of Great Britain had consented to the levies of the English and Scottish regiments; the second . . .; the third, regarding the starting of an enterprise injurious to the state of these Provinces, also regarding the claims of Lord Kinfaunes, son of the Chancellor of Scotland, who in the year 1629 was in the service of their High Mightinesses. It was

resolved and decided, after discussion, on the first point, to write back to Mr. Joachimi to take an opportunity of thanking the most highly esteemed king, on behalf of their High Mightinesses, for his said consent to the levying of recruits. Second point . . . Regarding the third point, their High Mightinesses declare that, as far as the enterprise is concerned, it be allowed to proceed; and, as far as the claims are concerned, that more detailed information be obtained from the Council of State regarding how these stand.

The States to Joachimi.

Diplomatic Correspondence.

We have received your missive of the last day of August last, and these few lines will serve as answer to it, that you are to take an opportunity of thanking the King of Great Britain, in our name and on our behalf, for the ready consent of His Majesty to the levy of recruits; and we hope that it will still take place on the former conditions. Nevertheless, we have in the meantime requested the Lords of Holland to revise the said conditions, and come to a definite resolution about them.

Actum, 20th September 1632.

Extract from the Report of Joachimi to the States-General.

1633, *November* 19.—Point five. Your High Mightinesses are aware that in the spring some difficulty was made about the carrying out of the recruiting done by some officers for certain English companies in your service, notwithstanding the fact that last year a licence was obtained from the king to allow seven times five hundred men to be raised for your High Mightinesses, in England and Scotland, by beat of drum, for recruiting or reinforcing the English and Scottish regiments, and that documents [acts authorising this] can be shown; but the levy has not been carried out. And as a prohibition has been made in England against taking men out of the country for the service of other princes; but yet the lords of the council of the king have said that their Excellencies will examine further whether their prohibition extends to the recruits of the old regiments in the service of your High Mightinesses.

It is a matter to be looked into whether (under correction) it were better to demand on the part of your High Mightinesses a resolution from the Council, or that the matter be left to be gone on with by the English sergeants who are in England to levy recruits.

[The following declaration of the States is inserted in the margin :]

Regarding the fifth point, their High Mightinesses declare that Mr. Joachimi is to take every measure to ensure the preservation of the rights of this State to levy recruits in England for the English regiments in the service of this State, and that all levies of soldiers by our enemy may be forbidden and prohibited.

Resolutions of States-General.

1634, *January* 10.—Inasmuch as the companies of the English and Scottish nations in the service of this State will have to be reinforced by additional men in room of those who have died, so that the companies may by next spring be in a fit condition for service, it was resolved, after foregoing deliberation, to write to the Ambassador, Mr. Joachimi, to use and employ every endeavour with the King of Great Britain and his councillors, and if need be in other quarters, in order that His Majesty may consent to the officers of the companies enlisting recruits in His Majesty's kingdoms, and bringing them hither to reinforce said companies.

February 11.—After discussion, it was resolved and decided hereby to request and commission Messrs. Noortwijck and Vosbergen to go and call on the Resident, Mr. Boswell, and induce him by every argument possible to put himself to the trouble of doing his very utmost with His Majesty the King of Great Britain to persuade him to be pleased to allow the levies of English and Scottish soldiers to be carried out by the captains in the service of this State, for the reinforcement of their respective subordinate companies.

February 13.—Messrs. van Noortwijck and Vosbergen having reported to the meeting of their High Mightinesses that, in accordance with their resolution of the 11th inst., they had recommended Mr. Boswell, Resident of the King of Great Britain, to use his influence with His Majesty to persuade him

to be pleased to consent to the levies for the English and Scottish companies in the service of this State, and that the said Resident had undertaken to perform this office.

After discussion thereanent, it was resolved and decided to thank the said deputies of their High Mightinesses for the trouble they had taken, and further, to write to the most highly esteemed king, in order that he may give his consent as before, and their High Mightinesses' Ministers in England are to be instructed to second this.

February 24.—Received a despatch from Messrs. Joachimi and Brasser, written at London on the 12th inst., notifying that they had obtained from His Majesty of Great Britain permission to enlist recruits for strengthening the English and Scottish regiments in the service of this State. After discussion thereanent, it was resolved and decided to thank his most highly esteemed Majesty for the above-mentioned concession, and to lay aside the letter, which was ordered to be sent to His Majesty to induce him to give his permission.

From the Register of Instructions given by the States-General, 1632-1639.

1636, *March* 8.—Instructions, from their High Mightinesses the States-General of the United Netherlands, for Mr. Cornelis van Beveren, Lord of Strevelshouck and West Isselmonde, Councillor and Treasurer-General of South Holland, and ex-Burgomaster of the town of Dordrecht, now Ambassador-Extraordinary from their High Mightinesses to His Majesty the King of Great Britain, in conjunction with Mr. Albert Joachimi, knight, Lord of Oostende in Oedekenskercke, their High Mightinesses' Ordinary Ambassador to His Majesty the king aforesaid, to discharge in pursuance hereof the duties hereinafter set forth:

. . . . . .

39. Their Excellencies their High Mightinesses' Ambassadors are in especial to see to it that levies of soldiers for reinforcing the English and Scottish companies in the service of this State, as well as the export of ammunition of war, and other requirements serviceable to the country, may proceed as before without difficulty made.

Letters from van Beveren, Ambassador-Extraordinary of their High Mightinesses at the English Court.

Diplomatic Correspondence.

November $\frac{17}{27}$.— . . . The difficulty in regard to the recruits comes to this once for all, that information has been received here that your High Mightinesses grant soldiers of the English regiments to the East and West Indian Companies, and that their places are filled up with the soldiers who are fetched from here under the pretext of recruits being wanted, and that thus His Majesty's subjects, so they say, are misused, contrary to his intention; otherwise it could well be agreed to that the English regiments, for supplying the places of those deceased, injured, maimed, or discharged, should be provided with suitable recruits, and that this ought not to be refused.

(Jan. 1, 1637.)

High and Mighty Lords,—When His Majesty was getting ready to depart, I requested that I might be permitted to speak another word in support of my foregoing proposal and request with regard to the recruits. Mr. Cooke was retiring, when His Majesty said: 'Secretary, they are speaking to me again about the recruits.' To which Cooke replied that, before the matter could be disposed of, some better satisfaction regarding it should be given to His Majesty; that they had received certain information that eight hundred Englishmen had accompanied Count Maurits on the last ships to the West Indies; and His Majesty added that his people were being used contrary to his intentions, by being sent to the Indies. I replied thereto that I hoped they did not believe everything that this one or the other alleged; that it was seldom seen that one who served on land took service at sea; and that His Majesty would surely not wish that any one going from here to Holland to make his fortune at sea, should be refused on account of being an Englishman. 'No,' said His Majesty, 'my infantry soldiers in your country often take service at sea, and the captains profit by it, as they give them a passport for it.' And I replied that the fault of the captains could not be imputed to your High Mightinesses, and that the regiments must have necessary support. His Majesty

answered, 'I make no objections in the case of vacancies caused by death; for supplying these you may come for as many men as you like. But I speak only of those who leave their company for somewhere else.' Mr. Cooke added, 'Some satisfaction must be given His Majesty in this matter'; and I thought it unadvisable to contend much, the more so because His Majesty was again getting ready to go; but said in conclusion that I hoped indeed that some plan would be devised to remove all difficulties once for all, and that His Majesty might be pleased to instruct Mr. Cooke to consider the matter with me, and enter into a conference about it. To which His Majesty replied, 'Very well, that's good; see what plan you can find out together.' And so I took my leave.

Calling upon Mr. Cooke in his room after the audience . . . coming to the recruits, I requested the said Secretary that he might please to think of some plan whereby to remove all difficulties in the said matter once for all, and that, in the first place, he might enter into a conference about it. He said that he would be delighted to do so, and that I should also bethink me how reasonable it was that some satisfaction should be given to His Majesty in this matter, and some regulation about it should be made, and that to that end something should be put *in writing*; that I should have time enough for writing, as the winter was not nearly past. To which I replied that His Honour might well consider how much time would slip by us before I could give my advice, get a reply, the captains be informed of it, the sergeants cross the sea, the men be enlisted and recross; that in the meantime the army would be in the field; and therefore I requested that we might take the business in hand at the earliest opportunity, and asked if the last day of next week would not suit His Honour; but perhaps it might not be convenient to him owing to the Holy Week (as in the said week it is not usual here to do business). To which he replied, that if I liked to come and visit him at his house on the other side of London, he would make arrangements. As I understood that His Honour had to go to the council, I therewith took my leave, and he went out with me.

If the West Indian Company were to adopt a resolution, as

the East Indian one has done, not to take any Englishmen into their service, perhaps people here would be more reasonable, instead of, as now, placing difficulties in the way of the recruiting; or, perhaps, your High Mightinesses, by adopting a resolution, might give satisfaction. May it please your High Mightinesses to confer with His Excellency the prince about such or some other measures, as I undertook this business at his special command and instructions, besides the charge laid on me by the instructions from your High Mightinesses, and put into action in regard to the recruits of last year. . . . In the meantime I shall, nevertheless, see if I can discover, by conference with Mr. Cooke, any expedient which may not prejudice your High Mightinesses, or arrange that some written agreement be drawn up with the consent of His Majesty and your High Mightinesses; always labouring to discover what will give them satisfaction here. C. VAN BEVEREN.

Battersey, 1st January 1637.

Resolutions of the States-General.

January 16.—Received a missive from Mr. Beveren, their High Mightinesses' Extraordinary Ambassador to the King of Great Britain, written at Battersey on the 1st inst., intimating that he had spoken with respect to the recruits for the English and Scottish regiments in the service of this State, and that his most highly esteemed Majesty, in regard to that matter, requires security that men of the said nations shall not be employed, contrary to His Majesty's intention, at sea in the service of the West Indian Company. After discussion thereanent, it was resolved to draw up a draft placard, forbidding any Englishmen or Scotsmen to enter the service of the East or West Indian Company, and that the authorities, or others in the service of the said Companies, respectively, shall not take any one of the aforesaid nationalities into their service, on penalty of forfeiting a certain large sum.

(Jan. 9, 1637.)

Diplomatic Correspondence.

HIGH AND MIGHTY LORDS,—I had a conference yesterday with Mr. Secretary Cooke, in order that, in accordance with

the parting [words] of His Majesty, to see what expedient we could devise to remove, once for all, all the difficulties made here about the said matter some time ago (and now urged with the greatest vehemence). My duty was to put the matter in the best light so far as concerned us; and I said that I had understood in my last three audiences, from the mouth of His Majesty, that he had no objection to the necessary recruits for maintaining the English and Scottish regiments, that he even saw the necessity of the levies being carried out here, and, in addition, that this was what he intended; but that the difficulty consisted in these two points: firstly, that the sergeants coming here not only enlisted the number of men required to maintain the strength of the said regiment, but in addition, under pretence of recruits, also took away men who were used elsewhere. Secondly, that captains granted passports too easily to the soldiers, and, indeed, made a profit out of doing so; and these men then taking service elsewhere, other new men are sent for to this country. That, indeed, I thought, if indeed these things were true, that some expedient could be devised thereanent: that your High Mightinesses could make an order with regard to the first, *that sergeants coming over here are to* bring with them an attestation from their colonel, specifying *the number of vacancies* in their respective companies, and that the colonel shall *not* pass *such attestation* before and until the captain (on oath made to the country), *declares that the number specified* are actually vacant; and on the said certificate *being shown* au premier secrétaire d'Etat, that thereupon *permission* shall at once *be given for recruiting the number specified.* Regarding the second, *that the captains* are not to be allowed to issue *passports* without the consent of the colonels, and accordingly that no passport is to be considered valid unless signed *by the colonel* as well. And with this I concluded, hoping that without doubt His Honour would clearly comprehend how by such measures the difficulties raised might be cleared away; but that I made these suggestions without authority, in a loose form, and in conversational style, not knowing whether they would please or be acceptable to your High Mightinesses.

Whereupon His Honour[1] replied that I was right as far as the two points mentioned were concerned, and that he did not know of anything he could add to it; but that there was yet a third difficulty, which was the principal one, namely, that the officers of the new naval levies (denoting thereby chiefly those of the West Indian Company), go into the *places where the English companies* are garrisoned, and debauching the soldiers, entice them away to them, while the English officers do not know how to get them back again, or what action to take in the matter; and herein lay the principal grievance of His Majesty; and to this was also added that certain information had been received that Count Maurice, lying at anchor lately at Falmouth, had on his few ships above eight hundred Englishmen. If as to this a suitable remedy could be proposed, recruits would not always be refused; that, of course, everything could not, one knew, go on quite smoothly, still it was rather strong to employ so many people as naval recruits, aud that too under pretext of filling certain vacancies [in the army]. Provided His Majesty was in a measure recognised in such proceedings, there might not at times be any difficulty made, but for people to do this without any intimation given, was what His Majesty could not put up with, although he would otherwise assuredly be willing to allow the aforesaid regiments to obtain from time to time, without any difficulty, the recruits they required. I replied thereupon that I did not quite understand all this; that in your High Mightinesses' State there was a stringent regulation against those who were enticed away, and who had broken their allegiance; there were heavy penalties against them, including the gallows. So I suggested, in an off-hand manner, as before, to His Honour, to consider whether His Majesty could not be satisfied with this, that said regulation be renewed with beat of drum all about the places where English regiments are in garrison, and that the Council of War be instructed to put it into force without any connivance,[2] and that also those who deserted

[1] 'His Honour is the literal Dutch translation of 'zijn Edele.' But it scarcely has the meaning here that is generally implied by it now. 'Zijn Edele' is only a more respectful way of referring to a person than using the mere pronoun 'he.'

[2] Or 'indulgence,' *i.e.* very stringently.

their companies to serve in the companies of other nations be held as men who had broken their allegiance. (I considered that therein there was no innovation in regard to the old regulation.) His Honour replied that he was not adverse to this, if it were clearly understood and put into practice as well against those who deserted their companies to serve at sea as on land. But that His Majesty did not insist on such rigour; but only that the commissaries, when reviewing the new naval levies, should, on finding among them such persons, not pass them, but expel them. He repeated if they would do this all difficulties would thereby be removed. On my insisting that by my proposals sufficient satisfaction and ways of settling matters would always be given, he still said the same. In this way the matter chiefly, yea almost entirely, turns upon those who are enticed to desert their companies in order to serve the West Indian Company; and this comes from the complaints of the English officers themselves, who bring these tales to the ears of the king, and also from some who make it their business to write such things to the court, in the hope of thereby winning or keeping the good graces of the king. If the West Indian Company could take a resolution like the East Indian, to take no Englishmen into their service, perhaps even here many might wonder at it, and reflect on it; but in any case the difficulty would thereby be removed; and it must be considered if, nevertheless, sufficient soldiers may not be obtained, and if, consequently, it would be to their advantage either that their commissaries,[1] when inspecting new recruits, should do as before, or that your High Mightinesses should yourselves be pleased to take such a resolution and write to them; or at least cause a commissary in the service of your High Mightinesses to assist at the said inspection, and on the complaints of the English officers, let such persons return to them as have left them without passport. May it please your High Mightinesses to discuss this question with the Prince of Orange, inasmuch as His[2] Highness earnestly enjoined on me to do my best to have every

[1] *i.e.* Of the West India Company.

[2] There is an abbreviation here in Dutch, of whose import I am not sure, viz.

difficulty removed out of the way; and as it is necessary, before this can be effected, to have a reply directing my course of action, I shall expect a rescript at the earliest opportunity from your High Mightinesses of His Highness the prince. Should, however, your High Mightinesses and His Highness the prince not see fit to meet His Majesty still further in the difficulties put forward, it might be considered if it would not be best to leave the matter in the hands of the officers themselves; as, perhaps, the more we persist, the more they shall deem themselves indispensable to our State, and I already notice some signs of this. As far as regards the filling up of the places of the dead and maimed, no difficulty is made on the certificate of the colonels; and they must further see how to remove their own complaints, or patiently submit to having their numbers reduced; as we, indeed, remind other companies, and specially our newest Dutch companies.

C. v. Beveren.

Battersey, 9th January 1637, new style.

Resolutions of States-General.

January 19.—A missive received from Mr. Beveren, written at Battersea on the 9th instant, touching for the most part the matter of the recruits for the English and Scottish regiments in the service of this State.

After discussion thereanent, it was resolved that the said missive be placed in the hands of Mr. Vosbergen, in order that he may communicate regarding the above matter with the Prince of Orange, and give in a report about it.

C. v. Beveren to the States. (Jan. 16, 1637.)

Diplomatic Correspondence.

High and Mighty Lords,—Regarding the recruits, I do not see that anything further can be done profitably, before and until your High Mightinesses or his Princely Excellency please to honour me with a small reply to my last letter.

The first two difficulties can easily be remedied; the third

'zijn (his) furst. Gen.' This I have read 'furstelyke Genade,' literally 'princely Grace,' translated 'his Grace the Prince.' It may also be 'furstelyke Generaal or Generaalschap,' *i.e.* 'princely General or Generalship.' My conjecture, 'Zijn furstelyk Genade,' is confirmed on p. 23 of the Dutch manuscript.—(*Note by translator.*)

and almost only one would also be removed if the West Indian Company were pleased to do as the East Indian, and in that case such a course would be thought well of here; and, at all events, this point can also be settled by the other proposals in my last letter aforesaid; or possibly by a courteous letter written to His Majesty by your High Mightinesses or his Princely Excellency, to the effect that it is your intention, and you will take all fitting measures to prevent the English and Scottish soldiers from deserting from their companies and going into service in others, whether at sea or on land. Nevertheless there is some anxiety as to whether the complaints of the captains and colonels will cease, unless your High Mightinesses be specially pleased to agree that the inspections of new levies [for service] at sea take place with the assistance of a commissary of your High Mightinesses, who, at the complaints of the captains, may cause such as have deserted or escaped without passport to return to them; of whom, those who come from there, a considerable number have already been seen here. C. VEN BEVEREN.

Battersey, January $\frac{6}{16}$th, 1637.

Resolutions of the States-General.

January 21.—The report of Mr. Vosbergen having been heard, he having according to their High Mightinesses' resolution of the 19th instant, communicated with the Prince of Orange about the letter of Mr. Beveren, written on the 9th instant to their High Mightinesses, regarding the business of recruiting for the English and Scottish regiments in the service of this State, and about the carrying out of which the King of Great Britain makes some difficulty on account of certain considerations urged by His Majesty with respect to this matter, that to all appearance the said recruits, or the persons to replace whom the said recruits are enlisted for service, are to be employed and used in other ways, and contrary to the meaning and intention of His Majesty.

After previous discussion, it was resolved, in accordance with the proposal made by the said Mr. van Beveren, and the wise advice of His Highness which agrees with it, to write to said Mr. van Beveren to go on furthering of the business of the recruits, and, in order to remove the difficulties urged, propose

that the sergeants[1] coming to England for recruits for the said English and Scottish regiments in the service of this State, must also bring with them an attestation from their colonel containing the number of the vacancies in their respective companies, and the colonel shall not pass such attestation before the captain shall have declared on oath made to the country, that the number specified is the actual number of vacancies; and [that] the said sergeants on presenting the above attestation, 'au premièr secrétaire d'Estat' of His Majesty, shall thereafter be permitted to levy the number of soldiers mentioned in the attestation. Furthermore, the captains of the said regiments shall not be allowed, without the consent of their colonels, to give any passport to any of their soldiers; and should this be done, no passport shall be held valid except it be also signed by the colonel; and to remove further alleged difficulties, a placard in accordance with the foregoing resolution is to be drawn up and published; of which some copies are to be sent to the aforesaid Mr. Beveren to be shown to the king and to others, where found necessary, requesting thereafter permission for [levying] the said recruits, and in case that, contrary to expectation, still further difficulties or delay be made, the said Mr. Beveren shall declare to His Majesty that their High Mightinesses have done everything they could think of to satisfy His Majesty about the said difficulties which he had brought forward; and, inasmuch as he is not yet willing to be satisfied, that their High Mightinesses are compelled to reinforce the several regiments aforesaid with [men of] other nations; and he[2] is to keep their High Mightinesses informed about this, and allow matters concerning the said recruits to take their course.

C. v. Beveren to the States-General. (Jan. 22, 1637.)

Diplomatic Correspondence.

High and Mighty Lords,—Not doubting that your High Mightinesses have received my letters of the 1st, 9th, and 16th instant, I hope that you or the Prince of Orange will be pleased

[1] *i.e.* 'Recruiting sergeants.'

[2] *i.e.* Mr. Beveren.

[3] Or, 'proclamation.'

to honour me with a few words in reply, in order that we may see to the removing out of the way all the difficulties in the said matter. From the proposals made with that end in view your High Mightinesses can easily perceive that I cannot proceed or accomplish anything effectually without the said answer. Meanwhile several officers have arrived here for recruits they require for this year. I do not neglect to inform them how the difficulty which has arisen here regarding the said matter is due to what some colonels and captains have themselves made public here; and how therefore they ought likewise to set to work on the other side excusing their conduct, and in reporting the vacancies to refer only to those who have met their deaths by war or sickness, or become maimed and useless, and as to the knaves who have deserted their flag and fled the territory of your High Mightinesses, which they well understand is to their advantage, alleging that in that way they can better carry out their intention, they are to declare that the regulation against those knaves who desert was renewed in the last campaign and stringently (which I have not yet ascertained) executed in the case of several; and accordingly that your High Mightinesses and his Highness the Prince have again, in order to prevent desertion, drawn up and keep in use such regulations as one can desire. If it could be definitely stated that it was also your intention to put the said regulations into force against those who, deserting their companies, take service at sea under the flag of your High Mightinesses, or that by means of a commissary assisting at the inspection of the new naval levies, those who desert would be restored to their captains or expelled, it seems that all difficulties would be surmounted. I have also impressed on them that they can at the same time also inform the lords what pains are taken in our country to decrease the Netherland companies; and if they persist here in offering difficulties, as they have now been doing for some time, they need expect nothing but reduction in number while the Netherland companies will be kept at their present strength; also that his Highness the Prince intercedes for them both from affection for the nation and because they are regiments that have deserved well, and as otherwise there will be no lack of soldiers for the State; and

inasmuch as the business concerns them[1] chiefly, and might mean ruin to them, as during the difficulties they have suffered intolerable expense and loss. We shall see if this can also do some good. C. VAN BEVEREN.

Battersey, $\frac{12}{22}$ January 1637.

January 29.—There was read over to the meeting the draft of the placard drawn up against the desertion of the French, English, and Scottish soldiers from their companies to the service of the West Indian Company. It was resolved, after previous discussion, to adopt the draft, after making certain alterations; and the placard shall accordingly be sent to Mr. Beveren, with instructions that as before he is to promote the business of recruiting for the English and Scottish regiments; and, for removing the difficulties put forward, propose that the sergeants who come to England for recruits for the said English and Scottish regiments in the service of this State shall bring with them attestations from their colonel, containing the number of the vacancies in their respective companies; and the colonel shall not pass such attestations before and until the captains shall have declared on oath made to the country that the number specified is the actual number of vacancies; and that the said sergeants on presenting the above attestations 'au premier secrétaire d'Estat' of the King of Great Britain, shall thereafter be permitted to recruit the number of soldiers mentioned in the attestations. And some copies of the placard shall be sent over to the aforesaid Mr. Beveren to show to His Majesty and to others when necessary; and that he shall thereupon request permission for [levying] the said recruits; and should still further difficulties or delay, contrary to expectation, be made, the said Mr. van Beveren shall declare to His Majesty that their High Mightinesses have done everything they could think of to satisfy His Majesty about the difficulties made, and inasmuch as he is still unwilling to be satisfied, that their High Mightinesses are compelled to reinforce the several regiments aforesaid with [men of] other nations; and he is to inform their High Mightinesses about all this, and allow

Resolutions of States-General.

[1] *i.e.* the English and Scottish companies, or their captains rather.

matters with regard to the said recruits to take their course. And as regards the further contents of their High Mightinesses' resolution of the 6th instant, it is to be held as cancelled.

The States-General to van Beveren. (Jan. 29, 1637.)

Diplomatic Correspondence.

Noble, Austere, Brave, Wise, Prudent Sir,—We have received your letter written yonder on the 9th instant, in which among other things we have noticed the conferences and proposals which have taken place there about the removal of the difficulties brought forward by the King of Great Britain in regard to recruits for the English and Scottish regiments in the service of this State. As to which, after discussion and with the wise advice of his Highness the Prince of Orange, we have resolved and decided hereby to reply to you that you are to further said business of the recruits with His Majesty and with others where necessary; and, in order to remove the aforesaid difficulties which have been brought forward, you are to propose that the sergeants coming over from here for the levying of the said recruits for the said regiments shall be obliged to bring with them an attestation from their colonel, stating the number of vacancies in their respective regiments. And the colonel shall not pass such attestations before and until the captain who wants the recruits shall have declared on oath taken to the State, that the number specified is the actual number of vacancies; and the said sergeants, having there exhibited the aforementioned attestation 'au premier secrétaire d'État' of His Majesty, shall thereupon be authorised to levy the number of soldiers specified in the attestations; and for removing the other difficulties which have been adduced, and which reflect on those English or Scotsmen who may have entered the service of the West Indian Company, we have drawn up and caused to be announced, advertised, and published a proclamation about it, of which some copies accompany this, to be shown over there to the king and to others if need be; and, besides, you are again to ask permission for levying said recruits. And in case further difficulties be, contrary to expectations, made in this affair, or some obstacle arise, you are in such a case to inform His Majesty that we have used our best endeavours that we could think of to give satisfaction to

His Majesty regarding the difficulties adduced with reference to the said recruits; and if His Majesty refuses to be satisfied, we thereby find ourselves compelled to reinforce the several regiments aforesaid with other nations, and that accordingly your honour will no more trouble His Majesty about the matter. And your honour is to keep us and his Highness the Prince of Orange respectively informed about all this, and leave matters regarding the said recruits to take their own course.—Herewith concluding, we commend you to the Lord.

COM. MUSCH.

At the Hague, 29th January 1637.

Van Beveren to the States-General. (Feb. 6, 1637.)

HIGH AND MIGHTY LORDS,—Having neither from your High Mightinesses nor from his Highness received any answer in the affair concerning the recruits, in reply to my several previous letters, I have found it advisable to request that the officers who are here, and who are about to arrive here, may provisionally be allowed to take with them the recruits whom they at present require, inasmuch as the time when their numbers must be complete will have passed, even although this be conceded at once, and will have passed still further, if they are to await the orders which your High Mightinesses or His Highness may please to give me for satisfying His Majesty, so as once for all to remove these and all future difficulties in the above business. I have found it the more advisable to do this, inasmuch as the two nobles who have been commissioned to announce to Denmark and Sweden the resolution in favour of the Elector are ready to depart; and he who goes to the Chancellor Oxenstern is authorised to say that recruits and levying of soldiers have been granted to the Swedes. The Earl of Holland and Secretary Cooke have promised me to place before His Majesty on Sunday the reasons for the request drawn up in writing.

C. VAN BEVEREN.

Battersey, 6th February 1637.

Van Beveren to the States-General. (Feb. 17, 1637.)

HIGH AND MIGHTY LORDS,— . . . The secretary aforesaid

has just sent word, first by one of his people, afterwards by my secretary, that the king has granted the recruits for our English and Scottish regiments; that I am at liberty to make this known, and send to him all who come over for this purpose, and that he will at once despatch them. About the form of consent I shall inform your High Mightinesses as soon as I have seen him personally. . . . C. v. Beveren.

London, February $\frac{7}{17}$th, 1637.

C. v. Beveren to the States-General. (May 22, 1637.)

. . .—That His Majesty in the same session permitted the Swedish colonels, namely, Colonel Leidbout [to enlist], twelve hundred, Colonel Monroy eight hundred, Colonel Kunningham and another each eight hundred men, and further (as I understand) to enlist up to four thousand men, one-half in England and the other half in Scotland. The Spanish ambassador takes this very ill, saying that his master will look upon it as having been done against him particularly. . . .

Resolutions of States-General.

1638, *August* 27.—In the meeting there was present Mr. Duyst van Voorhout, delegated from the army at Gelder, according to the credentials from his Highness and their High Mightinesses' commissioners in the army respectively, both dated on 23rd instant in the army at Gelder; and he, in accordance therewith, proposed to their High Mightinesses, and requested . . .

Fifthly. That several companies in the field are weakened, and are daily being more and more weakened by sickness as well as other accidents, asking their High Mightinesses at the same time to consider if they could not resolve that, by some persons to be selected by his Highness above-mentioned, recruits be fetched with all diligence from France, England, Scotland, and Germany, in order to reinforce the army with them, and keep it in an efficient condition, and that they may be of great service to the country in the present state of affairs.

After discussion thereanent, their High Mightinesses resolved to hold it over for consideration.

1639, *May* 2.—Received a missive from Mr. Joachimi, written at London on April 19th last, intimating, among other

things, that Colonel Leveston, Baron d'Amont, had requested him, Mr. Joachimi, to bring under their High Mightinesses' notice for consideration, that he [Leveston] had grave doubts whether the Covenanters in Scotland would allow the sergeants and other officers who had come from here to that country to enlist recruits, to return again and take with them the men whom they had enlisted; and if the Scots should have already given their permission, he [the colonel] was afraid the king's ships of war would not permit them to cross.

After discussion thereanent, it was resolved hereby to request the Council of State to take the trouble to discuss this matter and communicate with the head officers of the Scottish regiments in the service of this country, and find out their opinion and advice, in what manner they should provide against such and similar inconveniences, in order that the said recruits may be obtained and brought over to this country.

May 13.—Received a missive from the Council of State, written here at the Hague on the 7th inst., containing a reply to their High Mightinesses' resolution of the 2nd inst., to the effect that they had communicated with high officers of the Scots regiments in the service of this country regarding the opinions of Colonel Baron d'Amont about the coming of the Scots recruits. After discussion thereanent, it was resolved that, in accordance with the proposal contained in the said reply, the King of Great Britain be requested to issue orders to his fleets to allow the officers of this State, with the recruits enlisted by them in Scotland, to come over to this country; and that a similar request be preferred of the king's councillors in Scotland to allow the said recruits to leave, lest some misfortune may happen to this country by delaying their passage.

VIII

RESOLUTIONS, REPORTS, REQUESTS, RECOMMENDATIONS, ETC.

1630-1645

(July 25, 1630.)

Requests to Council of State.

Noble and Mighty Lords,— . . . Your Noble Mightinesses' missive of the $\frac{20}{20}$ inst., enclosing the request of Lieutenant-Colonel Sir James Levistoune, was yesterday evening handed safely to me. Whereupon, in returning the said petition, I could not refrain from writing back that the company of the said Levistoune remained here some months in garrison, but in my time he was never with his company, nor even present at the two musters of the 11th January and 4th June, both new style. And since it is the usual rule, as your Noble Mightinesses are aware, that nobody is to draw service pay unless he remain personally with his company, which the already mentioned Lieutenant-Colonel Levistoune has not done. Then should it please your Noble Mightinesses to order me otherwise in this, I shall, on receiving information, regulate myself accordingly, and herewith, etc., (Signed) P. Sluysken.

Arnhem, 25th July 1630, *stylo veteri.*

Letters to the States-General.

1630, *November* 14.—We, the undersigned colonels of the three Scottish regiments, hereby declare that we have no objection to the United Provinces granting and assigning one hundred guilders more to the widow of the late Rev. Andreas Hunterus, in his lifetime minister of our nation; declaring also that during the lifetime of this widow, we shall provide for the support of our minister or ministers without assistance

or grant from their High Mightinesses or the Council of State, and that thus we would gladly see that this widow, during the short time that apparently she still has to live, be provided with necessary support. (Signed) William Brog.
Daniel[1] Balfour.
G. Couttis.

Actum at the Hague, 14th November 1630.

(Jan. 13, 1631.)

Noble and Mighty Lords and particularly good friends,— Sir Philips Balfour, knight, captain and sergeant-major of a Scottish regiment, along with Mr. William MacDowel, Provost-Marshal of the military residing here, have presented their respective remonstrances to the States of this Province. Wherein they request augmentation of wages, and to be treated like others in similar positions; which the States here declined to dispose of, without the orders of your Noble Mightinesses. They have thought proper to send the petitions to you, in charge of Mr. Albert Wijfferinge, in order that he may lay the same before your Noble Mightinesses, to the end that you may grant the remonstrants such pay in future as others enjoy who fill similar offices. Requests to Council of State.

. . . . . .

—Your Honourable Mightinesses' good friends.

The Deputed States of the City Groningen and Surrounding Districts.

Groningen, the 13th January 1631.

(April 14, 1631.)

Noble and Mighty Lords,— . . . Robert Fridsel, late soldier in the company of the deceased commander, Colonel François Henderson, has complained to the effect that he has served well and faithfully in the said company (all the time

[1] *i.e.* Sir David Balfour.

the said colonel was in the service of these Provinces), that he was present in several sieges, campaigns, and skirmishes, and (without boasting) conducted himself with ability and as a valiant soldier, and that the petitioner, being now arrived at a great age, is no longer fit for service; and being provided with no means wherewith to subsist, he therefore thought good to address himself humbly to your Noble Mightinesses with the prayer, that it may please your Noble Mightinesses to make him a grant, in consideration of his faithful services, great age, and poor circumstances. Also in respect of his wife, the daughter of Jan Aerts Bouman, who in his lifetime rendered, with his ships, notable and great services to the Provinces on the rivers, to the destruction of the enemy, for which he enjoyed no reward. Moreover, the deceased Adriaen Vijgh, formerly Governor of Gorcum, was indebted to him the sum of one thousand three hundred and sixty guilders, being unpaid wages for services done to the Provinces, according to the sentence of the honourable court of Holland, and of which he enjoyed nothing, nor could he get anything. Wherefore he begs that it may please your Noble Mightinesses graciously to favour him with a yearly pension, or at least an appointment in a company, when it pleases your Noble Mightinesses. With that end in view, on requesting from us letters of recommendation, we could not refuse them, and therefore handed them to him. Herewith we humbly request that it may please your Noble Mightinesses to dispose favourably of the request of the petitioner, and graciously accord him the one or the other, in order that he may have the means wherewith to subsist, etc.,

BURGOMASTERS, ALDERMEN, AND THE COUNCIL
OF THE CITY TIEL.

Tiel, the 14th April.

(May 6, 1631.)

MY LORDS,— . . . In accordance with the letter of your Honourable Mightinesses, I have spoken with Mr. Thomas Manson, and asked him about the gold chain and trinkets which Captain William Douglas had given him. And he has

answered that he had got from the said Douglas a small gold chain, worth about forty-six guilders, in recompense for many and manifold services done to him during his sickness; that he had also shown the same to the sergeant, who had come to Gorcum here in order to learn particulars about the said Douglas; but that the said chain is now not in 'esse,' but broken, and something else made out of it. And as to the trinkets, that they were given to the servant, who dwelt with him at the time, but has now left him. This is all that I can give for answer to your Honourable Mightinesses. And should it please your Honourable Mightinesses to do anything further in the matter, on receiving your orders I shall not delay in carrying them into effect, etc.

(Signed) JACOB VAN PAFFENRODE.

Gorcum, 6th May 1631.

Resolutions of States-General.

May 15.—The petition was read of the widow of Lieutenant-Colonel Allane Coutis, containing a request that their High Mightinesses would grant her a reasonable pension in recompense for her husband's long and faithful services, as well as on account of the claims which she deems she has against this State. After discussion thereanent, it was resolved and decided, before coming to a decision about it, to ask the advice of the Council of State.

May 22.—Having seen the advice of the Council of State of the 17th instant regarding the request of the widow of the late Lieutenant [Colonel] Alane Coutis, asking support for herself and her children, by which the petitioner's prayer was refused as involving too serious and injurious consequences, their High Mightinesses conformed to the said advice.

[Similar requests were again refused on 2nd and 25th July 1631.]

(Jan. 29, 1632.)

Requests to the Council of State.

HONOURABLE, POTENT LORDS,— . . . David Niel, the bearer of this, late soldier in the company of Colonel Henderson, and afterwards in that of the Earl of Buccleuch, has shown us that he was deprived of a hand by a bullet, when on sentry at the

siege of the city Groll, which has rendered him not only unfit for public service, but also unable to win his bread and support his wife and children. In these circumstances he is compelled to betake himself to your Honourable Mightinesses' liberality, and humbly pray that you may be pleased to grant to the petitioner a proper yearly pension; by which, being supplied to some extent, he may henceforth, with the poor winnings of his wife, maintain his household affairs in respectability.

In order to facilitate this request, the petitioner very earnestly begged of us letters of recommendation to your Honourable Mightinesses, which we could not refuse, he being an inhabitant of our city.

We also trust that your Honourable Mightinesses will take into consideration the fact that the said accident befell the petitioner in the service of the country, and at the spot where it pleased God Almighty to grant them a glorious victory; for which, no thankoffering more acceptable can be offered, than such charitable thankofferings and gifts to the poor and miserable. Moreover, it will encourage the soldiers to regard the perils of war less, when they see that the aid of your Honourable Mightinesses is not denied to them. And a small gratification will encourage the petitioner to help himself further; otherwise he must of necessity fall as a burden on the inhabitants of these Provinces. May it please your Honourable Mightinesses to grant with the mild hand of your liberality compensation to the petitioner for the loss of his hand, and not only move him to thankfulness, but also in so doing oblige us, for by this a particular favour would be done to us, etc.

BURGOMASTERS AND RULERS OF THE
CITY OF ALCKMAAR.

At Alckmaar, 29th January 1632.

Resolutions of States-General.

1632, *February* 18.—The request of Christina Boswel, widow of Lieutenant-Colonel Alane Coutis, to be granted support on account of and in recompense for her husband's services, was refused.

March 5.—With regard to the petition of the widow of Lieutenant [Colonel] Allane Coutis for a life-pension or allowance, it was resolved, before coming to a final decision, to obtain the

advice of the Council of State; but afterwards a sum of one hundred and fifty guilders was granted to the petitioner.

Recommendation by the King of George Stuart.

Diplomatic Correspondence.

Hauts et Puissants Seigneurs, Nos bons amis et alliez,—Le S^r^ Guillaume Vrry,[1] Capitaine d'une compagnie de gendarmes, aprez vous avoir servi plusieurs années en vos guerres, se trouvant ores forcé par la vieillesse et l'indisposition qui l'accompagne de recercher vostre congé et permission pō pouvoir resigner sa dite Compagne à nostre bien amé et feal le S^r^ George Stuart,[2] frère de nostre Cousin le Duc de Lenox, qui se porte d'une affection singulière à vous servir en ceste charge là. Nous vous avons bien voulu recommander ceste requeste, non seulement comme estant bien raisonable, mais aussy fort louable, en ce que l'un vous ayant servi tant d'années vous présente en sa place un si digne successeur, et l'autre estant descendu d'une tige illustrée, désire s'employer pour le bien de Vos Estats, et ainsy tous deux s'offrent esgallement (tant qu'est en eux) à la continuation de l'advancement de vostre service. Au regard de quoy Nous vous prions tres affectueusement de vouloir aggréer leurs désirs et l'intercession que nous vous faisons pour l'un et pour l'autre. Ainsy que Nous nous promettons de l'équité de l'affaire et de vostre affection, affin qu'avec Eux nous vous en puissions remercier. A tant Nous demeurerons tousjo^rs^, Hauts et Puissants Seigneurs, Nos bons amis et alliez, vostre bien bon Amy, Charles R.

A nostre palais de Westmestre, Ce 5^me^ d'Avril 1632.

---

[1] Urrie of Pitfichie was the name of an old family in the Garioch in Aberdeenshire. Sir John Urrie, 'a soldier of fortune and very changeable,' served on both sides in the Civil War, and was defeated by Montrose at Auldearn. He married Maria Magdalena van Jaxheim, daughter of Christopher Sebastian van Jaxheim de Erlabrun, and both his grandfather and great-grandfather were named William.—*Inverurie and the Earldom of the Garioch.*

[2] George, Lord d'Aubigny, fourth son of Esmé, third Duke of Lennox, was, says Douglas, 'a great loyalist who lost his life in the king's service at the battle of Keynton in 1642.' Lord Clarendon says 'he was a man of great hopes, of a gentle and winning disposition, and of very clear courage.'

Resolutions of the States-General.

May 25.—A missive was received from the King of Great Britain, written at Whitehall on April 28th last, recommending their High Mightinesses to give orders that the widow of Captain Ramsey be paid the sum of fourteen hundred and ninety guilders arrears of said captain due by this State.

After discussion thereanent, it was resolved that this matter be placed at the disposal of the Council of State.

June 4.—There was read the advice of the Council of State, of date March 6th last, with regard to the petition of the widow of Lieutenant-Colonel Coutis, presented on the previous day to their High Mightinesses, in which she requests support, both on account of her husband's long and faithful services and because of certain accounts.

After discussion, it was resolved and decided, in accordance with said advice, that this petition be not entertained, because it would be too great a burden for the country to support the widows of all captains and officers, where no petition has been addressed to the Provinces; besides, the petitioner's husband did not die when facing the enemy, but in his bed, and her son has received from His Excellency an ensigncy, and may in time be still further promoted. And as regards the claims for accounts due, no consideration can be taken of them, on account of their forming a precedent of importance.

From a letter of the Dutch Ambassador Joachimi.

London, 29th June 1632.

Requests to the Council of State.

HONOURABLE AND POTENT LORDS,— . . . Six days ago general consternation reigned, both at court and in the city, through a false report spread abroad, to the effect that before or about Maestricht, a large number of English and Scottish officers had been slain. Their names were Messrs. Vear [Vere], Morgan, Packingham, Brog, Carew, and Balfour. Neither Mr. Brasser nor I had anything to say in contradiction of this report, except what we thought would probably and likely tend to soften the evil tidings. Which ill news is now dead, because the letters from Brussels and Antwerp make no mention of the loss; but on the contrary assure us that the arms of my Lords the States-General advance successfully on

the Meuse and the Scheldt. May God further and further bless the same. (Signed) Alb. Joachimi.

Resolutions of States-General.

September 3.—With regard to the petition of Christina Boswel, widow of the late Lieutenant Couttis, for reasons brought forward by the petitioner, the sum of thirty guilders was awarded her as a gratuity; an order for it is to be despatched.

December 22.—The petition of the widow of the late Lieutenant-Colonel Coutis to receive a pension during her life-time, and to have it transferred to her daughter after her death, having been read, it was resolved, after discussion, to obtain the advice of the Council of State.

1633, *April* 9.—The [consideration of the] petition of Christina Boswel, widow of Lieutenant-Colonel and Captaine Alane Coutis to be granted a life pension for herself and her daughter was postponed.

May 28.—With regard to the petition of Christina Boswel, widow of the late Allane Coutis, it was resolved, after discussion, hereby to grant the petitioner, as a gratuity, the sum of one hundred guilders, in addition to what she has already received. An order for the money is to be despatched.

1634, *April* 28.—The petition having been read of Patrick Stuart, captain of a Scottish Company, repartitioned on [charged to] the province of Friesland, complaining that he, the petitioner, has since January of last year received no money from the said province, it was resolved, after discussion, to request the States of the said province that, in order to prevent all misunderstanding and other troubles, they should not be dilatory in continuing the support of the company commanded by the petitioner.

October 17.—The petition having been read of Christina Boswell, widow of the late Allane Couttis, it was resolved, after discussion, for reasons therein mentioned, that the petitioner, instead of two guilders, which she is actually receiving at present from the doorkeeper Hendersum, shall henceforth receive four guilders.

(May 24, 1636.)

Requests to the Council of State.

Honourable and Potent Lords, particularly Good Friends, —George Bruce, late sergeant of the company of Colonel Balfour, and afterwards ensign in the company of Captain Kirkpatrick, having been killed during the attack made on the hornwork before the fort of Schencken, three weeks after he got his ensigncy, left a sorrowing widow behind him, the bearer of this, and we could not reject her prayer, that we would herewith address these our letters to your Honourable Mightinesses, friendly entreating that it may please your Honourable Mightinesses to consider favourably the petition, which from poverty she is obliged to present to you; according as your Honourable Mightinesses shall find the faithful services of her husband to deserve.

Honourable and Potent Lords, particularly good friends, recommending herewith your Honourable Mightinesses to the protection of God Almighty,—Your Honourable Mightinesses' obedient friend, F[rederic] Hi. d'Orange.

At the Hague, the 24th May.

Resolutions of the States-General.

1637, *June* 2.—The petition having been read of Patrick Stewart, a captain in the service of this country, it was resolved, after discussion, to grant and furnish the petitioner, hereby, with a letter of recommendation to the States of Friesland, in order that he may obtain from them payment of three thousand four hundred pounds, being arrears of salary due to him from April 22nd, 1633 to April 18th, 1636.

July 30.—The petition having been read to the meeting of Christina Boswel, widow of the late Allane Coutis, in his lifetime for thirty-three years in the service of this State as captain and lieutenant-colonel respectively. It was resolved, after discussion, hereby, out of commiseration, to grant the petitioner forty guilders, for which an order is to be sent to her. And the doorkeeper Hendersum is ordered to continue to hand weekly to the said petitioner as much as she received weekly last year for another year.

November 2.—The petition having been read of Mrs. Christina Boswell, widow of the late Alane Coutis, in his lifetime for thirty-three years in the service of this country as captain and lieutenant-colonel, requesting, for reasons adduced by her, to be assisted with some special grant in this great need of hers. It was decided and resolved, out of commiseration for her, and on account of her husband's good services, to grant her a special allowance of forty guilders, as she has received before this time, without, however, considering it as a fixed pension.

1638, *January* 23.—The further petition presented to their High Mightinesses in the name and on behalf of Christina Boswel, widow of the late Alaine Couttis, was refused, after discussion.

January 26.—The further petition of Christina Boswel, widow of the late Alane Couttis, was again refused, after discussion.

January 28.—The further petition of Christina Boswel, widow of the late Alane Coutis, having been reconsidered, it was resolved, after foregoing discussion, to grant the petitioner twenty-five guilders, for which an order will be despatched [to her].

(Feb. 1638.)

Requests to Council of State.

Companies complete.	Colonels of Infantry.
Morgan.	Balfour.
Herbert, Henry, knight.	Baron d'Amont.
Goringh.	Sandelandis.
Colpepyr, Thomas.	etc.

(Feb. 18, 1638.)

To the colonels of all regiments, horse and foot.

We hereby notify to you that, in the name of the country, you must order all captains of your regiment, or the officers commanding the companies, to bring their companies up to the full authorised strength by the first of April next, and thereafter to maintain them at the full number; also thor-

oughly to equip them with good weapons, and other necessary instruments, so that there shall be nothing wanting; failing which we shall hold the colonels responsible.

Resolutions of States-General.

May 6.—With regard to the petition of Christina Boswel, widow of the late Alane Couttis, in his lifetime lieutenant-colonel, after discussion the petitioner was awarded the sum of fifty guilders in addition to what she has received previously from their High Mightinesses. An order for the said sum is to be despatched to her.

July 21.—With regard to the petition presented to their High Mightinesses in the name and on behalf of Christina Boswell, their High Mightinesses declared that they adhered to their former resolution.

August 13.—With regard to the petition of Christina Boswel, widow of the late Alane Couttis, in his lifetime lieutenant-colonel, their High Mightinesses resolved to continue hereby for another year to the petitioner four guilders a week, to be paid her by the doorkeeper Hendersum. And, in addition, a sum of twenty-five guilders was voted to her; for which an order is to be despatched to her.

June 8.—[Decision about] the petition of Hester Seldnytsky, widow of Sergeant-Major Hamilton, to receive support, was postponed after foregoing discussion.

June 16.—[Decision about] the petition of Hester Sednytsky to receive assistance was postponed.

June 25.—[Decision about] the further petition of Hester Sednytsky was again postponed.

July 5.—With reference to the petition of Hester Sitnisky, their High Mightinesses resolved to postpone their decision about the said petition.

October 21.—With reference to the petition of Hester Seldnytzky, widow of the late Sergeant-major Hamilton, supported by a recommendation from his Highness, to receive a yearly pension on account of the reasons adduced by her, it was resolved, after discussion, for the reasons brought forward in the said petition, to grant the petitioner hereby the cash sum of seven hundred guilders, an order for which is to be despatched to her.

November 4.—With reference to the further petition of Hester Sednytsky, surviving widow of Sergeant-major Hamilton, their High Mightinesses declare that they gave to the petitioner herself personally the seven hundred guilders granted to her before this, and that on account of their having done so they are not to be annoyed because of the debts of her husband.

July 6.—Messrs. Arnhem and Conders are requested and commissioned to attend the funeral of the late Lieutenant-Colonel Hinderson[1] with the short mantle, and this specially because the said lieutenant-colonel lost his life in active service of the State.

The Prisoners taken at Calloo.

August 18.—A despatch was received from the ambassador Joachimi, written in London on the 5th instant, announcing that Mr. Secretary Windebaugh had come to his lodgings on the day of writing, to notify to him that the king, having written several times to the Cardinal Infante about the release of four Scottish officers and six hundred soldiers of that nation, who were taken prisoners in June last in the country of Waes, had received that day a reply that the said cardinal was willing to oblige the king and release the four officers, on condition that they do not serve against the House of Austria for a year, and the aforesaid six hundred soldiers, on condition that he be allowed to enlist on his side an equal number of soldiers in England; that Mr. Windebaugh said that the king thought the conditions feasible, seeing that the district could not assist the prisoners; that he would like to know Joachimi's opinion about it, whether their High Mightinesses would accept the aforesaid officers and men on the above conditions; that he (Joachimi) had replied that the proposal was a matter which he did not know how to respond to, as it went beyond his instructions, that questions relating to the quartering on districts were settled in the Netherlands by the generals of both parties, and that he believed that negotiations were being carried on for the release of the said prisoners in the Nether-

[1] Lieutenant-Colonel James Henderson of Sir David Balfour's regiment, p. 230.

lands. Joachimi also stated that on the date of his previous letter he had gone to Mr. Secretary Coke to discuss with him the proposals which eight days ago he had laid before the king, and that he stated more distinctly that the Cardinal Infante was willing to restore to the king the aforesaid officers and soldiers on the conditions stated above; but that His Majesty would not accept them without knowing whether they be would acceptable to their High Mightinesses and the Prince of Orange, and desired that he (Joachimi) should write and obtain information on the point. The missive also contained some other points of importance worthy to be considered.

After discussion thereanent, it was resolved to write as speedily as possible, and without further consideration, about the case of the prisoners in connection with the point indicated in the foregoing despatch to his Highness the Prince of Orange, referring the said matter to, and placing it before, the most wise consideration of his Highness, in order that he, having come to a resolution on the matter, a reply in pursuance thereof may be sent to Mr. Joachimi; and in so far as the other points mentioned in the said missive are of importance, that Mr. Arnhem be requested to extract from it the points requiring consideration, and report them to their High Mightinesses, handing them in in writing.

List of the Soldiers captured at Callo and sent to Lillo.[1]
(Exhibitum. March 15, 1639.)

Petitions to the Council of State.

Van 't Regiment van den Coll^l Balfour.

Van de Comp^ie Colonnelle	Thomas Ritcharson
Alexander Litteljohn	Robbert Ment
Pieter Borrel	James Davitson
Pieter Olifant	Jhon Abercrombe
Gilbert Cetoum	Eduart Herwel
Pieter Thomas	George Schadij
William Paret	Jhon de Rycke
Robbert Hal	Jhon Themson
Andro Farghuardson	Alesser Tolloch
Robert Westwatter	Robert Anderson
William Arnot	Andro Wilson
Archibald Niderey	Jan van den Bosch
James Irland	Richard Wricht

[1] See Wagenaar, *Vaderlandsche Hist.*, vol. ii. p. 270.

Jhon Fosser
Alexander Allet
Jhon Macpuwel
Jhon Corvet
John Ogilve
Richard Smith
Francie Dog
Peter Donckan
Peter Robbertson
William Paterson
Matheu Roberson
Makeu Makadiu
William Ingels
George Waterson
Sandie Geddes
Renalt Davitson
Themos Theusten
Eduward Smonsie
Wichard Tenuys
William Wrrie
Franchejs Cornelis
Andries Rid
Alexander Broun

—

48

Van den Lt-Coronnel Douglas.

Robert Bler
Patrick Michel
James Seunrel
Alexander Imces
Willem Kar
Alexander Tremmelle
Philip Thencas
Robert Malice Tenger
Remb Rind
Thumis Jansson
Thomas Heupen
Jan Manschet

—

12

Van den Sergt-Major Kirpatrick.

James Balfour, lieutenant.
Davit Littel, sergeant.
Sanders Tenston
William Elder
Michiel Wilsep
William Breun
Gilbert Parcker
Robert Teuwen
Hen Saers
James Clarck
Jan Davidts
Davit Tendel
John Wachem
Alexander Robbertson

—

14

Van Capn Riddel.

Alexander Terlandt, sergeant.
Steen Jack
Jhon Simson
Nicolaus Kidsier
Sandie Ray
James May
Sandie Hog
Gerrit Peterson
James Teuper
Wessel Gerritsen
Eduart Hereng
Thomas Anderson
James Cunegam

—

13

Van Davidt Balfour.

Hubert la Mont
Georg Schot
Robert Makey
Thomas Eduard
John Muller

—

5

Van Capn Levingston.

Jhon Pewes
Jhon Houston
Jhon Barclay
Daniel Sinclaire
Mongo Kant

Peter Langlnes
Peter Muddie
Robyn More
Robert Menges
James Watt
Jacob Cammel
Peter Nieuwenhuysen
Patrick Craffort
Jan Hay
John Thomasson
Ritchard Borton
—
16

Van Cap^n Jhon Henrison.

James Nul
William Berentrop
Georg Schiel
Jhon Red de Yonger
Georg Steenson
Adam Kincgherme
William Ewart
Robyn Fraser
Jhon Redelder
Jhon Jansen
Robert Robertson
Jan Joly
James Straffen
John Marten
James Croffort
James Wod
Marcus Mager
—
18

Van 't Regiment van den Baron d'Amont.

Van de Compaignie Coronnelle.

Andries Wiijt
Reynier D'avison
William Mackey
William Spacker
John Smeth
Thomas Smechelman
Henry Ter
George Trommel
Robert Abercromme
Patrick Hum
John Macklyn
Jan Jader
Robbert Cusetter
Andre Hat
Stoffel van Dorten
Daniel Mackengam
James Bel
Alexander Levingstohn
Ritchart Hacklet
Patrick Spiedeman
Wouter Sproet
Robert Coster
Willem Philips
Jan Eduarts
—
24

Van den L^t-Coll^l Balfour.

William Kar, sergeant
Walter Moncrieff
George Kar
John Woth
Thomas Kar
Patrick Paverman
John Scha
Davidt Abercromme
Adam Mackalem
Sander Lesse
Angnus Macore
Hidu Macklyn
James Henrison
William Tenning
Thomas Douglas
Alexander Stimson
John Jong
Andries Schot
John Everson
Davit Gerits
Mongo Hotsey
James Hory
James Ramsay
—
23

Van den Serg^t^-Major Levingston.

John Wier, lieutenent
James Bely, sergeant
Alexander Cuningam
John Boyt
James Spret
Robert Walles
Jan Dryborch
Andries Andriess
James Bachler, tot Lilo gestorven [died at Lillo]

—
9

Van Cap^n^ Pidcarn.

Robbert Doncke, lieutenant
David Ogewe, sergeant
William Grey
William Schot
George Bornet
Henry Garden
John Robberts
Jan Huntter
Jan Coleys
John Schot
James Gooden
John Leyn
Alexander Mel

—
13

Van Cap^n^ Schot.

Nathanael Bruce, vendrich [ensign]
John Ree
Joris Miller
Meynart van Ravensberg
John Krichlyn
Gilbert Mackey
Alexander Staes
James Her
John Michiel
Anthony Viry
Thomas Scholt
Thomas van Soeste
Eldert van Wayle
William Kelly

—
14

Van Cap^n^ Lauder.

James Karrentres, vendrich
Andries Grand
Alexander Ham
Robert Foret
Adam Aringstrang
Orfre Calhoum

—
6

Van Cap^n^ Coutis.

John Brus, lieutenant
John Karckettel
Jan Janssen
David Coustreum
Patrick Bell
Eldert van Dousburch
Corst van Doesburch
Thomas Janssen
Willem Daint
Meynaert Jacobs

—
10

Van 't Regiment van den Coll^l^ Sandelants.

Van den L^t^-Coll^l^ Areskyn.

Willem Lel, Lieutenant
David Anderson, vendrich [ensign]
Andries Bredich
Matheus Peters
Gewin Tremmel
Alexander Douckers
Robbert Robberts
John Nies
Christoffel Kniper
Robbert Donckam

William Hael
Adam Jongh
John Pringel
Thomas Craffort
Patrick Mil
John Innes
Henrick Thomas

—
17

Van den Serg^{t}-Major Caddel.

N. Caddel, serg^{t}-major
Jan Hamilton, lieutenant
Laurens Janss, vendrich
Franchis Johnstil, sergeant
Thomas Hutson
Jan Treuwe
Christiaen Martens
Alexander Gipson
Willem Meur
Lachlam Mackwyn
Mathys Linson
James Rodersort
Alaxander Feulartoum
Eeuwe Wilson
James Broun
George Grinley
John Walson
Mans Smeth
James Corbeth
John Strath
Sander Bel

—
21

Van Cap^{n} Levingston.

William Wallis, vendrich
Robbert Wachep
Arsbalt Watson
Reynier Krichem
Willem Dircxson
James Thamson
James Grim
Robert Merck
Jan Robbertson
Robbert Rocoy
Christiaen Anbey
Henrick Grim, edelman [nobleman] [1]

—
12

Van Cap^{n} Jaicques Balfour.

Adam Witsert, lieutenant
Hendrick Sandelans, vendrich
Jan Balfourt, sergeant
Davidt Craffurt
Robbert Linson
John Estoun
Thomas Robbertson
Gilbert Fleck
James Renne
William Cadel
John Wach
Patrick Makerter
Olivier Borch
Eduard Armstrang
Robert Yong
Thomas Ecken
Thomas Yongston
Daniel Boomgaert
Hans Marcelis
Melchior Elschemel
John Christs
William Patrick
Sander Sim
Henrick Metsel
William Eduart
Robbert Christon
Andries Morrij
Lenaert Wolfsaert
Thomas Stuart
William Donalson

—
30

Van Cap^{n} Stuart.

Patrick Stuart, capiteyn
John Forbus, lieutenant
Dadat Trettray, sergeant
Hugo Faxson

[1] *i.e.* gentleman volunteer.

David Rattray
Alexander Ferbus
James Meur
James Wat
George Mirdoch
Evert Backer
Robert Berelton
Roelant Schotte
Gebert Schotte
Olivier Peters
Robbert Waddel
Daniel Mackyn
Daniel Smeth
Alexander Been
James Maurits
Paschier Lerin
John Ritsy
Bernt Hansen
William Douglas
Andries Stuart
Henrick Polman
William Simpson
Pauwels Ordre
Joris Wisser, edelman

—
27

Van Cap^n^ James Schot.

James Riddel, lieutenant
Thomas Cunegam } sergeanten
David Cra . . . [*sic*] }
Fulmer Muller
Robbert Walgraff
John Wals
Ewyn Johns
James Wales
Thomas Welreen
Franchis Lauder
Willem Henricx
William Storcke
John Blastock
Alexander Gordon
Thomas Pats
Alexander Hoseck
Davidt Story
John Christs
Daniel Mackmillen
James Teeck
John Bayer
John Vits

—
22

Van Cap^n^ Hum.

Jan Lame, lieutenant
Justus Grim
John Wricht
Adam Anderson
William Otterson
James Meuries
Thomas Hum
Willem Jacobss

—
8

Van 't Regim^t^ van Graeff Maurits van Nassau, etc.

(Feb. 5, 1639.)

Honourable Mightinesses,—I have not had before this a subject to write to your Honourable Mightinesses about, but now I cannot refrain from troubling your Honourable Mightinesses with these few lines, now that the circumstances of Captain Wight are under discussion, who was banished by your Honourable Mightinesses, and to request very humbly that it may please you to appoint the said Captain Wight again to his former command, and to pardon the misconduct

of which he has been guilty; as I doubt not that your Honourable Mightinesses will henceforth be greatly satisfied with him; and this, as being his colonel, I could not refrain from requesting all the more, because the good lady, his wife, has recently lost her father, Colonel Balfour, who served this country so long and so faithfully; and if her husband remains in banishment she would be utterly ruined; but I hope that this will be prevented by your Noble Mightinesses.

Accordingly I again request that, all these things being taken into consideration, it may please your Honourable Mightinesses to restore the said Captain Wight to his former position, and commending myself very humbly to the good favour of your Noble Mightinesses, I remain, as I have always been, your Noble Mightinesses' obedient and faithful servant,

(Signed) CHA. MORGAN.

Bergen op den Zoom, 5th February 1639.

Resolutions of States-General.

July 5.—With reference to the petition of Lieutenant-Colonel Balfour, their High Mightinesses resolved to obtain the advice of the Council of State.

Requests to States-General.

HIGH MIGHTINESSES,—With reference to the accompanying petition of Lieutenant-Colonel Balfour, to receive out of the pay of his colonel, Baron d'Amont, such amount as will make the petitioner's pay equal to a colonel's, for the time that he, during the year 1638, discharged the duties of colonel, in the absence of the above-mentioned Baron d'Amont, quoting as a precedent for doing so your High Mightinesses' resolution of February 9th, 1633, in a similar case, with regard to Lieutenant-Colonel Coutis, we would give the same advice (under correction) as we did at that time in the aforesaid case of the above-mentioned Lieutenant-Colonel Coutis, viz.:

That the petitioner's request is reasonable. And inasmuch as he, during the year 1638, on account of the absence of Baron d'Amont, had to undergo the trouble and fatigue which would have fallen to the colonel, had he been present, that therefore it would be unfair that another should draw the salary, and that the petitioner, who did the work, should go unrewarded.

Submitting however to your High Mightinesses, etc.

By order of the Council of State,

M. Huygens.

At the Hague, 9th July 1639.

Resolutions of States-General.

July 18.—There was read to the meeting the advice of the Council of State, dated the 9th instant, with reference to the petition presented to their High Mightinesses on the 5th instant, in the name and on behalf of Lieutenant-Colonel Balfour, to receive such an amount out of the pay due to his colonel, Baron d'Amont, as will make his (the petitioner's) pay equal to a colonel's, for the period during which he, in the year 1638, discharged the duties of colonel in the absence of the above-named Baron d'Amont. Decision was deferred.

November 10.—With reference to the petition of Hester Seldnytzky, widow of Sergeant-Major Hamilton, to have a life pension of six hundred guilders annually, it was resolved, after discussion, to ask the advice of the Council of State.

December 24.—The advice was read of the Council of State, dated the 9th instant, with reference to the petition presented to their High Mightinesses on the 10th November last by the widow of Sergeant-Major Hamilton, to receive six hundred guilders annually as pension; the said advice being to the effect that the petitioner had in the year 1636 from their High Mightinesses four hundred guilders, in the year 1637 six hundred guilders, in the year 1638 seven hundred guilders. And as their High Mightinesses know what considerations have moved her to apply, the said Council leaves said petition to the discretion of their High Mightinesses. Whereupon, after discussion, the matter was postponed.

1640, *January* 3.—To the widow of Major Hamilton is again granted for this and the last time, owing to peculiar circumstances, the sum of three hundred guilders, for which an order on Receiver-General Doubleth is to be despatched to her.

January 27.—A petition was read to the meeting, presented in the name and on behalf of Lieutenant-Colonel Balfour, requesting for the reasons mentioned therein that he shall receive as much of his colonel's pay as their High Mighti-

nesses allowed on February 9th, 1633, to his predecessor in office, for the time that he (the petitioner) filled his colonel's post in the field during the latter's absence, and bore the expenses. After discussion thereanent, it was resolved to find out what has been done previously in similar cases with regard to others.

February 9.—As, according to their High Mightinesses' decision, placed on January 27th last on the margin of the petition of Lieutenant-Colonel Balfour, referring to the course of action in previous cases, and the resolutions taken in consequence in regard to lieutenant-colonels, who in the absence of their respective colonels from the field filled their places, and bore the expenses usually entailed by such positions, have been taken into consideration, and as the Baron of Amont, colonel of the said Balfour, was absent from the field for a part of the year 1638, and for the whole year 1639, it was resolved, after foregoing discussion, that as Lieutenant-Colonel Balfour discharged, in the years aforesaid, the duties of his said colonel during the latter's absence, that therefore to recompense him, his pay for that time be raised to a colonel's pay of three hundred guilders per month, at the new rate and on the new footing, and the said increase is to be deducted from the pay due to said absent colonel during the time that the army was in the field.

January 27.—[Decision about] the further request of Hester Sednytsky, widow of Sergeant-Major Hamilton, to have a yearly pension, was postponed.

January 30—Idem. *February* 15.—Idem. *February* 18. —Idem.

June 1.—The further petition of Hester Seldnytzky, widow of Sergeant-Major Hamilton, having been read to the meeting, it was resolved, after discussion, owing to reasons brought forward by the petitioner, to grant her hereby a gratuity of three hundred guilders for the past, in addition to what she has received; and further, other six hundred guilders for the future; for which an order is to be despatched to her.

1640, *January* 30.—The petition of Mrs. Maria von Loon, widow of the late Colonel Sir John Hacquet, was, after discussion, placed in the hands of the Council of State for advice.

February 3.—There was read the advice of the Council of

State, drawn up on the 2nd instant, with reference to the petition of the widow of Colonel Hacquet, presented to their High Mightinesses on the 30th January last, to be granted a pension. The said advice being in effect that the said Council can see no reasons why this widow deserves less favour and consideration than the widows of other colonels; and accordingly the said Council thinks that she ought to be treated as the widows of other colonels have been treated; but that some assistance having been given to her before this, therefore, instead of fifteen hundred guilders, which the widows of the Colonels . . . each received in three years, this petitioner is to be granted the sum of one thousand guilders, to be paid in four years. After discussion thereanent, decision was deferred.

April 28.—With reference to the petition of Gertrude Walsdorf, daughter of Captain Walsdorf, [and] widow of Colonel Sir Archibald Douglas, to receive pecuniary assistance, it was resolved, after discussion, to get the advice of the Council of State.

May 4.—The petition of Gertrude Walsdorff, widow of Colonel Douglas, to be granted a life-pension for herself and her children, was, after discussion, placed in the hands of the Council of State to dispose of it.

May 31.—With reference to the petition of the widow of Colonel Douglas to be treated like other colonels' widows, it was resolved to obtain the advice of the Council of State.

June 6.—There was read to the meeting the advice of the Council of State, drawn up on the 1st instant, with reference to the petition presented to their High Mightinesses on May 31st last, by the widow of Colonel Douglas, to receive an annual pension. Decision was deferred.

June 15.—The foregoing petition of the widow of Colonel Douglas, having again been brought up before the meeting, was refused.

June 19.—The further memorial presented to their High Mightinesses by the widow of Colonel Douglas was read, requesting, on account of the good services rendered by her late husband to the country, an annual pension. After discussion thereanent, it was resolved to refer the petitioner's request to the Council of State to be disposed of.

Petitions to Council of State.

1644.—We, Franco van Heuvel and Peter van Chemselroy,

sheriffs of the city of Helmont, hereby attest and certify as truth and verity, that before us above-mentioned sheriffs appeared Aert Jansz van Hoff and Anthony Willem Princen, the lately retired burgomasters, together with Jan Joost Raess and Baltis Henrix, the present joint burgomasters of the town of Helmond; and, in the matter of the requisition of the district of Peelant, they declared and affirmed on oath, which the witnesses took on their assumption of the office of Burgomaster, that it was the truth that when the two first-mentioned witnesses were burgomasters of this town in the year 1644, they were summoned by special messengers of cavalry Captain Hey, passing through the said town of Helmont from his quarters, the said captain lying in garrison within the town of Maestricht, and lodging and foraging at Geldrop at the time, and they [viz. the mayors] were forced to compliment him in that way for the amount of thirty patacoons [a Spanish coin, two and a half florins], less a quarter. And the two last witnesses have declared solemnly and on oath, as the others, that they, on the 10th of November last, have granted and honoured, etc.

November 28th, 1644.

1645, *May* 28.—Summary of report presented by the Advocate-Fiscal of the United Provinces about the complaints from the borough of Bois-le-Duc about the exactions and extortions made from them by the soldiers on this side, and about the examinations of the officers commanding them, with the depositions and declarations made in presence of the deputies of your Honourable Mightinesses, at the time, as follows:

A formal complaint was lodged with the Sheriffs of Aerle and Beek against William Hay, that the people there had been forced to pay, by way of taxes, on 17th February 1644, the sum of seventy-three Rhenish guilders and eight stuivers.

Also, that they brought to him at Erp, on the 6th March following, one hundred and twenty guilders and ten stuivers.

He, having been questioned on the matter, acknowledged that he escorted Messrs. Loo and Haersholten about that time, but declared that he received no money; that he believed, however, that in going and returning about fifty or sixty rix-

dollars were given to the officers, without his knowing to whom, inasmuch as they were not distributed before that time, but the money, with the grant received for this purpose, was distributed on the next journey.

The captain of the horse aforesaid came with foot and horse soldiers to take up quarters at Geldorp from Stiphout [the distance], being one and a half miles, and remained for twenty-four hours on the following day at Erp, where, besides needful supplies, he exacted from the scanty population, ham knuckles, hams, and sixty-six Rhenish guilders in money; and one of the troopers wounded a resident with a stone, who has since died of the wound.

In answer to the above, the captain said that he was escorting Messrs. van Nederhorst and Sloet at the time, till the escort from Breda should take them off his hands at Turnhout; and that he had orders from the Count of Solms to bring the lieutenant of the young Count of Styrom, with the baggage of the company, over the Aa, which he did, and thus he was compelled to lodge at Erp because of the long ride; but that it could never be proved that he made exactions from any villages, but that he could well believe that the villages, from fear of the large body of troops, complimented the officers with some things, which may have amounted to some one hundred and fifty or one hundred and sixty rix-dollars, which were divided, with the former honorarium of February at Maestricht, into sums of six or eight rix-dollars.

A deposition was also made before the Court of Helmont, that in the year 1644 the governors were summoned by messengers from the captain, and that he threatened the town of Helmont with a siege, when he was in quarters at Geldrop, with the result that they had to give him a present of thirty patacoons, less one quarter.

In answer to this, the said captain denied that he made exactions or extortions, adding that for six years he had never been in quarters at Helmont; but he said he did not know if among the above mentioned complimentary gifts the grant made by Helmont was included. Having signed the above declarations under oath.

March 11th, 1645.

DIVISION IV

THE AGE OF WILLIAM OF ORANGE AND THE BRITISH REVOLUTION

1649-1697

INTRODUCTORY

With the peace of 1648 one long chapter in the history of the Netherlands closes. Hitherto the enemy had been Spain; in future the chief foe was to be France. Hitherto the position of the English and Scottish troops in the Low Countries had been assured by the continued friendliness of the British Court to the Government of the United Netherlands, and latterly strengthened by the alliance between the Houses of Orange and Stuart. For a time their relations with their Dutch paymasters were now to be clouded by a state of war between their native and their adopted countries, and their interests to be obscured by the temporary misfortunes of the House of Orange. The war with the English Commonwealth, between 1652 and 1655, left them untouched, for it was waged, not with a united nation under constitutional government, but with an English usurping power, which had only reduced Scotland to quiescence by armed conquest, and to which the Scottish soldiers in the Netherlands owed no allegiance, while the country they served was extending its hospitality to their own sovereign in his exile. Indeed, one of the causes of the rupture had been an act of discourtesy by one of Cromwell's ambassadors to the Duke of York.

The wars of 1665-1667 and 1672-1674 had, however, a very different influence. They stopped the supply of officers and men from Scotland, and while the senior officers of the regiments, and others whose families were among those longest identified with the Brigade, and had probably practically settled in Holland, retained their positions, the junior officers and men gradually became Dutch, or a mixture of Continental nationalities. The supremacy of the De Witt party in Holland, and the eclipse of the power and dignity of the Stadtholdership, owing to the early death of William II., the minority of his son, and the price to be paid for peace with Cromwell,

was injurious to the maintenance of a disciplined force, the true value of which had been realised by the great commanders, Prince Maurice and Prince Frederick Henry, and was again to be established by Prince William Henry, but with foreign invasion and with a Prince of Orange once more appearing as the rescuer of his country, the Scots Brigade was reorganised, and an English Brigade was re-formed, which were at a critical juncture to enable the Prince who restored them to change the current of the history of Europe, and gain for himself the monarchy of Britain.

Upon the conclusion of the peace, the States-General on the motion of Holland resolved to reduce their army to a large extent in order to save expense. The dissatisfaction of Prince William of Orange led to an open rupture between him and the city of Amsterdam, an attempt to seize which miscarried by the merest mischance. A sudden illness carried off the Prince while the resentments caused by his action were fresh, and although his son was born seven days after his death, the States resolved not to dispose of the offices of Stadtholder, Captain, and Admiral-General. The party of the De Witts, which represented that of Olden-Barneveld, the old antagonist of Prince Maurice, were restored to their offices, and although the English war which shortly broke out was favourable to the interest of the House of Orange, yet on peace being concluded in 1654, Cromwell insisted as a condition that the Estates should agree to exclude the Prince, grandson of King Charles I., and his descendants from the Stadtholdership, and from all governorships and higher military or naval commands. 'The people of the provinces in general and the whole army were so much incensed that they would not join in the rejoicings made on occasion of the peace, and most of the soldiers refused to drink the wine that was distributed amongst them.'[1]

In 1649 the field officier of the three Scots regiments were:

The old or H. Balfour's and Sir Wm. Brog's,	Colonel James Erskine. Lieut.-Colonel James Balfour. Sergeant-Major Walter Murray.
Lord Buccleuch's regiment (1604),	Colonel John Kirkpatrick. Lieut.-Colonel John Henderson. Sergeant-Major Thos. Livingstone.

[1] 'Historical Account.'

The Earl of Buccleuch's or Lord Almond's regiment (1628), { Colonel William Drummond. Lieut.-Colonel Walter Scott. Sergeant-Major David Colyear.

James Erskine died in 1655. John Kirkpatrick survived through all the vicissitudes of the period, and, raised to the rank of major-general, retained the command of his regiment till 1683. William Drummond, who had, in virtue of his marriage with his cousin, Lady Jean Ker, become Earl of Roxburgh, and had apparently been absent without his place having been filled up, petitioned for re-appointment in his previous capacity in 1652, but in December the States of Holland resolved to appoint Walter Scott as colonel, with lieutenant-colonel's pay, and in 1655, by a resolution of the States of Holland (March 24th, 1655), the three regiments were reduced to two, and the command of the one, which thus fell to be disposed of, was given to Walter Scott, formerly lieutenant-colonel of Drummond's, with Walter Murray, formerly sergeant-major of James Erskine's, as his lieutenant-colonel, and George Keir as his serjeant-major.

In 1659 some of the Scottish troops took part in the expedition to the Baltic, sent by the Dutch to the aid of Denmark against the King of Sweden, and bore their part in the complete rout of the Swedes on the island of Fuhnen, after 'a most obstinate and bloody fight, wherein the Dutch Foot did wonders.'

In 1660,[1] 'on recommendation made by the King of Great Britain in person, when by their High Mightinesses received *en corps*,' the two Scottish regiments were brought back to their previous formation, and Lieutenant-Colonel Henderson was appointed colonel of the third regiment, with Louis Erskine as his lieutenant-colonel, and Allan Coutts as sergeant-major. Louis Erskine succeeded to the command in 1662, and at the time of the war with England in 1665, the field officers stood thus (in order of seniority of regiments and not of colonels, the colonels' seniority generally determining the order of the regiments in the Dutch documents).

1. Walter Scott, colonel; George Lauder, lieut.-colonel; Alexander Bruce, major.

[1] Resolutions of Holland, 28th May.

2. John Kirkpatrick, colonel; Thomas Livingstone, lieut.-colonel; John Kirkpatrick, jun., major.
3. Louis Erskine, colonel; Allan Coutts, lieut.-colonel; Henry Graham, major.

Up to that time the regiments had remained thoroughly Scottish in character, and the lists of 1665 consist wholly of distinctive Scottish names. The States had, after the Peace of Munster, made a great reduction of the land forces, but principally by diminishing the strength of the regiments, not by disbanding them. 'The three Scots regiments, and Dumbarton's Scottish regiment (now the Royal [Scots]), then in the service of France, were a great resource for the adherents of the Royal family during the usurpation of Cromwell.'[1] In the spring of 1665, however, the war with Great Britain forced upon the consideration of the authorities the question of the footing of the four English and three Scots regiments in their service. They resolved to disband them, to form four Dutch or 'national' regiments from them, and to re-appoint the most efficient and trustworthy officers, on condition of their taking an unqualified oath of fidelity to the States. The result was that the three Scots regiments were converted into nominally Dutch regiments, that one nominally Dutch regiment replaced the four English regiments,[2] that a few of the English officers received posts in the Scottish regiments, and that no distinction was allowed between them and the native Dutch troops, 'the Holland March' being ordered to be beaten, the officers forbidden to wear any but Orange sashes and Dutch badges,

[1] 'Historical Account.'

[2] The Dutch papers do not wholly bear out the version of what occurred on this occasion given in an article on 'the Rise of the Buffs,' in *Macmillan's Magazine* of September 1896. It would rather appear that enough Englishmen to officer one regiment and to fill vacant commissions in the three Scots remained in Holland, while the majority of the English officers (the resolution being to reduce the four regiments to one) returned to England. For them 'the Holland regiment,' afterwards the Buffs (the Third) was raised exactly in the same manner as the Ninety-fourth (Scots Brigade) was raised in 1795, and officered by the Scottish officers who left the Dutch service in the eighteenth century.

In estimating the comparative patriotism of the two nations, it should be remembered that the officers of the Scottish regiments at that time were in several cases members of families which had been settled in Holland for two or three generations.

and the colours being ordered to have the arms of Holland in the corner. Gradually the composition of the regiments conformed to their circumstances; and in 1673, in Scott's regiment, there can only be found the three field officers and three captains of Scottish surnames; in Kirkpatrick's only three field officers and one captain; and in Erskine's only the three field officers. In Scott's two or three, and in Erskine's two captains were Englishmen, but all the rest of the captains of the three regiments were foreigners. In the following year Lieutenant-Colonel Allan Coutts is left as the sole representative of its original nationality in the third regiment, whose Scottish colonel, Louis Erskine, has been succeeded by Jacques de Fariaux, Heer van Maulde, a gallant officer, under whom it seems to have fought well at the siege of Maestricht, where in an important horn-work it faced the charge of the British troops that fought side by side with the French under the Duke of Monmouth.

At the time of the Restoration the fortunes of the House of Orange had begun to improve. The States-General had received Charles II. at the Hague, and conducted him with impressive ceremony to the fleet in which he embarked for England, and shortly thereafter the States of Zeeland declared the young Prince of Orange the legal heir of all his predecessor's dignities in their province as soon as he should attain the age of eighteen. When, in 1668, he attained that age, he was publicly proclaimed at Middelburg as President of the Province, although the States-General had in the previous year, under the influence of the De Witts, still all-powerful in Holland, passed the Perpetual Edict abolishing the Stadtholdership. In 1672 the storm which had been gathering burst upon the States from France, with which Great Britain was now in alliance. Instinctively the people of the Netherlands turned to the representative of William the Silent for leadership in the hour of difficulty and danger. He was declared Captain and Admiral-General, and although the disciplined armies of France rapidly overran the country, and city after city fell into their hands, his steadfastness and capacity carried the Republic safely through the most terrible crisis it had encountered since the days of the Duke of Alva.

Although Maestricht fell into the hands of the French in 1673, after a brave defence by De Fariaux, before the end of that year they had evacuated most of their conquests in Holland, and the conclusion of peace with England in February 1674 completely altered the face of affairs. Scotland was once more opened as a recruiting ground, while the officers and men of English regiments reduced at the peace were enlisted for the Dutch service, and many gentlemen of talent and family flocked to the standard of the Prince of Orange as volunteers. Among the British officers serving in Dumbarton's regiment (the ancient Royal Scots) under French colours in 1672 was Captain Hugh Mackay of Scourie. Quartered at Bommel, and billeted in the house of a rich and noble family, he fell in love with the third daughter, Clara de Bie, and as the mother would not sanction a marriage with an enemy, upon the conclusion of the peace, he left the French service, came over to that of the Netherlands, and by his marriage as well as by his personal qualities, established himself in the favour of the Prince of Orange.[1] The Prince had found his difficulties increased

[1] Bernardi in his *Memoirs* says that Mackay 'coming to the siege of the Grave in 1674, made such interest to the Prince of Orange by the assistance of Adjutant-General Collier, the present Earl of Portmore's father, who was a great favourite with his Highness, whereby he obtained a Breviate to command the said ten companies [of English subjects recently arrived from Bois-le-Duc] when upon duty in the trenches.' Among the British gentlemen 'who had entered themselves volunteers in the Prince's own company of guards,' before the battle of Seneff, Captain Carleton in his *Memoirs* mentions 'Clavers, who since was better known by the title of Lord Dundee; Mr. Collier, now Lord Portmore.' Claverhouse is said to have saved the Prince of Orange's life at Seneff, and to have been promised the first Scots regiment that should be vacant, which, however, was given to Mackay, whereupon he left the Dutch colours, saying he would no longer serve a Prince who had broken his word. According to the historian of the *House and Clan of Mackay* (founding on information communicated about 1798 to one of the Reay family, by Colonel Æneas Mackay of the Dutch regiment which the general had formerly commanded,—the general's great-grand-nephew) this occurred in connection with a lieutenant-colonelcy which became vacant at the siege of Grave. Bernardi states that Sir Walter Vane, who commanded the English troops, was killed at Seneff, 'and Sir William Ballantine, who was to have succeeded him in command, was also killed at a siege the same year, being no otherwise concerned thereat than as an spectator.' On 19th March 1675 Hugh Mackay received a commission dating from 12th October 1674, as lieut.-colonel of Colyear's regiment in place of Lieut.-colonel Balentyn, and on 27th August 1677, one dating from 28th Aprll 1677, as colonel of the old regiment in succession to Henry Graham. There seems no doubt that on one

by the low state of discipline to which the Dutch army had been reduced. 'The States gave,' says one historian, 'the chief employments in their armies and garrisons to the sons of burgomasters and deputies of cities, raw soldiers fitter to be taught than to command,' and the result was the imminent ruin of their country. The author of *Strictures on Military Discipline* records an incident which indicates the extent of the demoralisation and the method of the reorganisation.

'These regiments, particularly the Scots, having nobody to protect them, became in a few years very different from what they had been formerly; numbers of Dutchmen, French refugees, and other strangers having been by the means of the Burgomaster's interest made officers amongst them, which entirely ruined these regiments; and such was their situation till King William became Stadtholder; for in some skirmishes that happened in the army even in the years 1675 and 1676 the Scots did not behave with their usual spirit and conduct, and the Prince was much piqued and displeased, insomuch that he one day asked the brave General Mackay, lately come to his service from France, if he was not surprised and ashamed at the behaviour of his countrymen, the Scotch brigade; and he could not conceive, he said, the cause of their being so much changed and degenerated from what they had formerly been; and made an appearance different from what the Scotch brigade had done in the army of Gustavus Adolphus when commanded by his friend Lord Rae.

'Mackay, as much piqued as the Prince, and who stood much on the honour and bravery of his countrymen, and whose merit the Prince well knew and esteemed, told the Prince that he was indeed sorry to observe daily the bad behaviour of these troops called the Scotch brigade, but he begged leave to tell his Highness that altho' they had that name they did not deserve it, for that near one half of the officers and more of the men were not Scots, but were Dutch, French, Germans, and of all nations, even some officers in high rank as well as captains and subalterns; people of no family, of no education, and having no relations, connections, nor interest in Scotland; people ignorant of the

---

of these occasions the preference so sharply avenged at Killiecrankie took place, and if it was on the latter the fiery spirit of Dundee must have been still more deeply touched by the fact that the command had been formerly held by a Graham.

language, of the genius, customs, and spirit of that people, were very improper to command them: nay, when they went to Scotland to get recruits, they were despised and laughed at, and not getting recruits there, were obliged to enlist any they could find, deserters and the outcasts of all nations; and of these are composed the regiments called the Scotch brigade; so no wonder that their behaviour is not such as it formerly had been, when it was esteemed the best military school in Europe for young Scotch gentlemen to learn the art of war. But for a good many years past it has not been so, young gentlemen seeing the bad state of these regiments, the disrepute they are fallen into, the discouragement of Scotchmen, and the preference given to Dutch, Germans, and other foreigners, made many of the young Scotch gentlemen, officers and cadets, leave the service, and prevented others coming into it as volunteers, so that now there is not Scotch gentlemen to make officers, and commissions are given to sergeants or to strangers; and the Scotch soldiers being badly used, and unwilling to serve under foreign officers, desert daily. But, says Mackay, if I may speak my mind freely to your Highness, and give my opinion, allow me to say that the only way to recover these regiments and bring them to their former state is by dispersing all these Dutch and foreign officers, under-officers, and soldiers into the national and newly levied or other regiments; replace the officers with Scotch gentlemen of family and merit, raise Scotch recruits, and henceforth let officers, under-officers, and men be only Scots, and I shall answer for their being very soon as good troops as ever, and will behave as bravely, and as much to the satisfaction of your Highness as ever they did to that of your predecessors, or as ever my countrymen did in the army of Gustavus Adolphus, which your Highness has been pleased to take notice of so much to their honour. Such was the situation of the Scotch troops in the Dutch service till some years after King William was made Stadtholder, when General Mackay got the brigade put on a tolerable footing after having been long neglected; and it was Mackay, by that Prince's orders, who formed these plans for their clothing, pay, recruiting, etc., that we see in what is called King William's regiment, and which is the footing they remain on to this day.'[1]

Mackay's advice was taken: the Brigade was reorganised: and the foreign officers gradually disappeared. In 1677 Mackay

[1] 1774.

himself succeeded Graham in command of the old regiment, while in 1684 a second Bartholomew Balfour took the place of the veteran Kirkpatrick as colonel of the regiment that had commenced its service at Ostend; and in 1676 a new regiment was enlisted and embodied at Bois-le-Duc,[1] to take the place of that of De Fariaux, which seems to have become hopelessly Hollandised, and the command conferred upon the Prince's Scottish Adjutant-General Sir Alexander Colyear. The two old regiments, originally Scottish, now 'resumed both their ancient name and march.'[2] It is recorded that such was the prowess of the Scots in the Thirty Years' War 'that the Dutch [*i.e.* Germans] in Gustavus's service were many times glad to beat "the Old Scots March" when they designed to frighten or alarm the enemy.' Once again the air that had sounded on many a distant Continental battle-field was to announce the unfaltering advance of the Scots Foot, and the red uniforms of the British Brigade, to face unflinchingly the fiery charges of the chivalry of France.[3]

The campaign of 1672 had been signalised by the French

[1] *Records of 5th Foot.*

[2] *A Short History of the Life of Major John Bernardi*, 1729. Bernardi states that in the winter of 1674-75 four regiments of the English subjects were formed, two English, one Scots, and one Irish. The two colonels of the English regiments being Disney and Lillingston; Graham colonel of the Scots; and the Earl of Clare of the Irish. And that to these were joined, to make up a brigade, two old regiments, originally Scottish, which had been so many years in the service 'that they were become, as it were, natives of Holland, and beat the Dutch march.' There is, however, an error here. Graham had succeeded Walter Scott in command of the old regiment in 1673, and Colyear's appointment was as 'Colonel of a Scottish regiment of foot,—new enlistment from 1st January 1675.' Colyear was succeeded on his decease by James Douglas, whose appointment dated from February 8th, 1680, and he again on April 9th, 1685 by John Wauchope (of the Niddrie family), upon whose return to Britain at the summons of King James in 1688, the command passed to George Ramsay, brother of the Earl of Dalhousie.

The Earl of Clare was succeeded by Sir John Fenwick, and his regiment, losing its Irish character, became the third English one. Fenwick's regiment, subsequently commanded by Talmash, became the 5th of the British line after the Revolution, and Lillingston's regiment, afterwards Sir Henry Bellasize's, the 6th. See *Regimental Records of 5th Foot* and *Regimental Records of 6th Foot.*

[3] The air 'The Lowlands o' Holland' is said to have been the march of the Scots Brigade. As to the 'old English march,' revived by Lord Wimbledon, see Dalton's *Cecil*, p. 231. As to the uniforms of the Brigade, see *General Introduction.*

descent, under Condé and Turenne, upon Guelderland, and their penetrating even into Holland itself, which was only saved by the resolution to lay the country under water, by the Prince of Orange's ineffectual attempt to recover Haarlem, and by his bold demonstration before Charleroi. That of 1673 witnessed the French siege and capture of Maestricht, and the gradual recovery of their cities by the Dutch. In August 1674 occurred the bloody battle of Seneff, where Condé attacked the rear of the combined Dutch Imperial and Spanish army, which he overwhelmed. His fiery spirit impelled him to advance against the rest of the allied army, who received the French assault with steadiness, and maintained the battle, till at eleven o'clock darkness put a stop to the fighting, the result being so indecisive that '*Te Deum* was sung as well in France as at Brussels and the Hague.' After a spirited defence Grave surrendered to the Prince at the end of October. The campaign of 1675 in Brabant and Flanders was indecisive, and in 1676 the Prince laid siege to Maestricht. The three English regiments and Sir Alex. Colyear's Scottish regiment were employed in the siege, and were most active in the trenches and in the assaults. Two of the English and one Scottish colonel (probably Colonel Graham) were killed. The garrison being very strong, made frequent sallies, but after being beat off twice by the British brigade, 'they never attempted to sally afterwards when that brigade was on duty.' A detachment of the Prince's Blue Guards having been ordered to storm a detached bastion, and having been beaten off, detachments from each regiment of the British Brigade made the second attack, took the work, and held it, although the besieged exploded mines and made furious sallies, until the siege was raised.[1] They had more than their share of the hardest fighting, and after a very sharp night's service, the Prince gave each regiment an ox and six sheep in addition to their usual rations. The Dutch grumbled, and the British soldiers promptly told them 'that the same was given them to save Dutchmen's lives, and therefore they ought to be thankful to his Highness for it, without grudging.'[2] The advance of a French reliev-

[1] Captain Carleton's *Memoirs of an English Officer.*

[2] Bernardi's *Memoirs.*

ing force under Marshal Schomberg, and the difficulties connected with a composite army, compelled the Prince to raise the siege. Among the killed was Captain Robert Douglas of Colyear's regiment.

In 1677 the Prince, attempting to raise the siege of St. Omer, was attacked at a disadvantage by the French near Cassel, when passing a morass, and forced to retreat, the Dutch marines, posted between the Prince's Blue Guards and the British Brigade, failing to do their duty, and after the conclusion of the campaign he went over to England, and was married to his cousin, Princess Mary, daughter of the Duke of York. On his return the king sent with him the Earl of Ossory to command the British Brigade of three Scots and three English regiments, while in 1678 a new treaty of alliance was entered into between Great Britain and the Netherlands, and the position of the British troops fixed by a capitulation, signed by the Prince of Orange and the Earl of Ossory,[1] one of the articles being that the States 'should send these regiments to be embarked for Great Britain whenever the king should think proper to recall them.' Negotiations for peace were in progress, but on 17th August the Prince of Orange attacked Luxembourg in his lines at St. Denis. 'The three English and three Scots regiments, under the command of the ever-renowned Earl of Ossory, together with the Prince of Orange's guards, made their attack at a place called the Chateau, where the French took their refuge among a parcel of hop-poles, but their resource was as weak as their defence; and they were soon beaten out with a very great slaughter.'[2] 'The English and Scotch regiments did things to the admiration of all who beheld them.'[3] Sir Alexander Colyear advanced towards 'the Abbey, and seconded by General Delwick, filed through the narrow passages, and sliding down the precipices with an invincible courage, drove the enemy from their lines.'[4] The Earl of Ossory received the

[1] 'Historical Account.' See p. 559, for text.

[2] Carleton's *Memoirs*.

[3] *Records of 5th Foot.*

[4] The loss of the Brigade in officers at St. Denis was:

Sir A. Colyear's regiment,	killed	2	wounded	4
Major-General Kirkpatrick's,	,,	3	,,	6
Colonel Hugh Mackay's,	,,	4	,,	3

—*Records of 6th Foot.*

thanks not only of the States-General, but of the King of Spain, in a letter under his own hand, while the Duke of York wrote to the Prince: 'I am very glad you are so well satisfied with Lord Ossory and His Majesty's subjects, and that they behaved themselves so well.' The peace made by the treaty of Nimeguen was proclaimed next day in the evacuated entrenchments of the French, now occupied by the allied army.

On the death of the Earl of Ossory in 1680, King Charles proposed to confer the command of the British Brigade in Holland on the gallant George Douglas, Earl of Dumbarton, whose famous regiment, the Royal Scots, had been recalled from France. The Prince objected on the ground that he was a Roman Catholic, and it was given to Henry Sidney, afterwards Earl of Romney.

In 1685 the Brigade was despatched to Great Britain to assist in quelling Monmouth's rebellion. The Scots sailed first, being originally intended for service against the Earl of Argyll in Scotland, but his design had ended in disaster before they arrived, and they were directed to London. They arrived at Gravesend on 30th June,[1] on 3rd July they were 'drawn up in Blackheath before His Majesty, and the next day early they marched towards the west.'[2] But already the steadfastness of the Royal Scots, and Churchill's cavalry charges, had broken the army of Monmouth on Sedgemoor, and on this visit to Great Britain the Brigade saw no fighting. Their soldierly appearance made a great impression,[3] and in writing to the Prince of Orange about the English regiments which were to follow them, the King said: 'If they be but as good as the Scotch regiments which I saw this morning, I shall be doubly pleased: for as to those I have seen, there cannot be, I am sure, better men than they are: and they do truly look like old regiments, and one cannot be better pleased with them than

---

[1] Letter of King James.

[2] Luttrell's *Diary*.

[3] On 4th July 1685, W. Blathwayt, Secretary at War, wrote to the Duke of Albemarle, that the three Scots regiments, about fifteen hundred men, had marched through the city to Hounslow Heath, adding, 'They are the best men, and best prepared for service, that ever were seen, having their tents and all other necessaries of their own with them.' See papers, pp. 536-541.

I am.' Colonel Mackay was promoted by King James to the rank of major-general, and the Brigade returned to Holland.

They were soon to land again in Great Britain, but under another banner, and with different auspices. As the discontent with King James's policy in Britain grew deeper, and the relations between him and his son-in-law more strained, the disposal of this disciplined body of troops became a matter of grave moment, if not indeed the determining factor of the whole situation. There had been friction between the King and the Prince as to the command of the Brigade, and early in 1688 the king made up his mind to recall the whole of his troops serving in Holland. The States declined to comply with the royal demand to send the regiments to be embarked,[1] but allowed any of the officers who wished to do so to leave their service. But they sent deputies to all the garrisons where the regiments lay, to harangue the officers, pointing out the advantages of their employment, extolling the services of the Brigade, and urging the probability of the English Parliament praying the king to reduce his army; and it is said that General Mackay, upon whose fidelity King James had strong claims, made a speech to his officers, stating that he was going to leave in obedience to the king's command, and inciting them to follow his example, but that upon going to the Hague to

[1] See papers printed, pp. 542-565. 'There are,' says the 'Historical Account,' 'in King William's cabinet four letters from King James concerning the recall of his troops from the Dutch service, the first of which is as follows: '17th Jan. 1688.—I have charged my envoy, Mons. d'Albeville, who will give you this letter, to give you an account that I think it for my service to call for home the six regiments of my subjects which are under your command in the States' service, and have written to the States to the same purpose, and hope you will do your part to further their being embarked as soon as may be,' etc. In the second letter, 16th Feb. 1688, King James signifies his displeasure that any difficulty should be made in sending home his troops: in the third he appeals to the treaty made in 1678 betwixt Lord Ossory, on the part of King Charles II., and the Prince of Orange, on the part of the States-General, saying, 'You will have seen before this gets to you the copy of the capitulation you made with the late Lord Ossory, which is very home to this point.' In the fourth, dated 15th March 1688, he says, 'I did not expect to have had such an answer from the States to the Memorial lately given in by my Envoy, especially when your influence is so great; and sure it is the first instance, and I believe will be the last, where ever subjects were refused the liberty to return back when demanded to serve their Prince.'

take leave he was so influenced, that he returned and told his officers the king had called for them merely out of ill-will to the States, and that if they returned home they would soon want bread.[1] The result was that of two hundred and forty officers in the six regiments, only sixty resigned their commissions, and obeyed the royal summons. The king sent a royal yacht to transport them to England, gave them three months' pay, and raised three regiments to reinstate them in their respective ranks, the command of one of which, raised in Scotland, and apparently embodied at Musselburgh, was conferred upon Colonel John Wauchope.[2]

In October 1688 the Prince of Orange sailed on his momentous expedition to England. 'His army,' says Sir John Dalrymple, 'was composed of near four thousand cavalry, and about eleven thousand infantry, of the best troops of the Republic, with three hundred French officers, Protestant refugees. Of these troops the most formidable were the six British regiments in the service of the Dutch. The fleet was divided into three squadrons, on board of which were troops of different nations. The English and Scots, commanded by General Mackay, a Scotsman of a noble family, sailed under the red flag.'[3]

Who were the officers that sailed on that memorable voyage, under the colours of the old Scots Brigade, following the banner that bore, beneath the motto of the House of Orange,

---

[1] Captain Bernardi's *Memoirs*; 'Historical Account.'

[2] The following Scottish officers can be identified as having left at this time:

Of Mackay's regiment, Captains John Gordon, Æneas Mackay, and Henry Graham, all appointed to Wauchope's Scots Foot.

Of Balfour's, Captains Gavin Hamilton, Henry Balfour, and Ferdinand Cunningham, the two former being appointed to Wauchope's, and the last to Gage's foot.

Of Wauchope's, Colonel John Wauchope, and Captains John Ramsay, George Hamilton, John Dalyell, and Maurice Plunket. Hamilton and Dalyell both were appointed to Wauchope's, and Plunket to an Irish regiment. The eight senior officers of the new Scots regiment were thus all from the Scots Brigade. After the Revolution the command of it was given to David Colyear, Earl of Portmore, and it frequently served along with the old regiments of the Scots Brigade.

The three regiments raised were paid by France.

[3] For the names of the transports, see p. 518.

Je maintiendrai, the words, 'the Protestant Religion and the Liberties of England'? General Mackay, so soon to command a Lowland army against a Highland one, led by a Lowlander, was himself a Highlander of an ancient house, and of near kin to his chief, Lord Reay. His own adhesion to the Prince of Orange, and the presence of the disciplined body of British soldiery he commanded on board the fleet, were an emphatic proof of how different were the conditions of 1688 from those of the Civil War, for the great Lord Reay, who served under the 'Lion of the North, and the champion of the Protestant Religion,' had been one of the most steadfast of the Scottish cavaliers. The lieutenant-colonel of his regiment, David Colyear, connected with the Perthshire clan of Robertson, was destined to win fame and a peerage in the wars of Ireland and Flanders. His major, John Buchan, sprung from the old Aberdeenshire family of Buchan of Auchmacoy, traditionally said to be the only branch of the great house of Comyn spared by King Robert Bruce, on account of personal friendship, and on condition of its changing the hated name, when he devastated the Earldom of Buchan with fire and sword, was to bear arms against his brother, the successor of Dundee, and serve as a colonel in Flanders. Of his captains, his nephew, Æneas Mackay, had left and accepted a commission in Wauchope's Scots Foot, but was then under arrest in Edinburgh Castle, Walter Bowie was to be promoted for good service, and become lieutenant-colonel of Hamilton's Scots Foot, Peter Watkins to leave the regiment as a major, and George Connock to disappear from the lists, probably falling before the Highland broadsword on the braes of Killiecrankie. Charles Graham was to rise to the command of a regiment of the Brigade. Everard Halkett, a member of a family that had given and was to give many stout soldiers to its ranks, was to fall under its colours at Ramillies; and Alexander Lamy, also of a Forfarshire name, known and to be known in its records, was to go down in the sweep of the Highland charge. Of the subalterns whose names are known, Campbell was to command the victorious party in the little skirmish at Wincanton, on the march to London, Captain-Lieutenant Mackenzie and Angus Mackay were to be on the Killiecrankie death-roll, and

the general's youngest nephew, Robert Mackay, to be left for dead on the field with eight broadsword wounds, but live and became colonel of the Scots Fusiliers.

Of the second regiment its colonel who bore the name longest, and probably most frequently associated with the Brigade, Barthold Balfour, was to fall in the rout in Atholl; and the captain of the same name (probably his son) to be taken prisoner at Killiecrankie, to be wounded at Steinkirk, and to die a soldier's death, as lieutenant-colonel, in the bloody fighting among the hedges of Landen: Sir Thomas Livingstone, its lieutenant-colonel, whose ancient Scottish name had sent many sons to serve under the colours of the Brigade, was to rise to the supreme command in Scotland, to lead the Scots Greys, and like Colyear to win a peerage: and Lauder, its major, was to command it through the whole course of the later campaigns of King William and Marlborough, and become a lieutenant-general in the service of the States. Of the other captains, Alexander Livingstone was to succeed his brother in their father's baronetcy, and do good service as a soldier; Richard Cunningham was to go to the other arm, become the first colonel of the Seventh Hussars, and serve as a cavalry brigadier; and James Ferguson, son of an Aberdeenshire laird, whose elder brother had accompanied Montrose in all his campaigns, and whose own eldest brother, known to history as the 'Plotter,' disinherited by his father for being the only disloyal man of his family,[1] was now one of the returning exiles on board the same fleet, was to be intrusted with services of difficulty and honour, to become the colonel of the Cameronian regiment, to actively share as a brigadier-general in the stern strife and glory of the great days of Schellenberg and Blenheim, and to die at the very moment when his services had induced the Duke of Marlborough to select him to command the British army in his absence, and with Ramillies, Oudenarde, and Malplaquet still to come, greater opportunities were at hand. The name of Walter Murray is found as senior captain in

[1] Discharge and Renunciation, Mr. Robert Ferguson to William Ferguson of Badifurrow, his father, of his portion and birthright, May 27th, 1658, and other papers (*Pitfour Papers*).

1694, but of Thomas Erskine and William Mammy (or Nanning) there is no further trace. Of the lieutenants, Arnault was to distinguish himself, and Chambers to fall at Killiecrankie.

Of the regiment commanded by George Ramsay, a younger son of the chivalrous line of Dalhousie, the colonel, 'a thorough soldier with a great deal of fire and very brave,' was to serve as a general in Flanders, command the Scots Guards, and be commander-in-chief in Scotland: the major, James Mackay, brother of the general, to fall as lieutenant-colonel of his brother's regiment at Killiecrankie; Captain William Murray was to become lieutenant-colonel 'before Namur'; Walter Corbet was to serve in the three regiments in succession, becoming major of Lauder's and lieutenant-colonel of Mackay's, and ultimately to go, like his colonel, to the Scots Guards: John Sommerville, a younger son of the old Scots line of the Lords Somerville, was to become lieutenant-colonel before Murray; Lord Cardross, and Sir Duncan Campbell of Auchinbreck, who were but birds of passage in the Brigade, were to go, on arriving in Scotland, one to the command of a newly raised regiment of dragoons, and the other to the lieutenant-colonelcy of his chief the Earl of Argyll's regiment of Highlanders. Of William Miln, John Clerk, John Gibson, and William Douglas, there is no further trace. One of the lieutenants, James Colt, was to be taken prisoner at Killiecrankie, and be a principal witness in the process of forfeiture against the Jacobite leaders.

In the course of a few months the personnel of the Brigade must have changed much, so many of the superior officers being promoted to important commands elsewhere, and so many having fallen at Killiecrankie. The mere perusal of the names of those who are known to have been on its acting strength when it landed in Torbay indicates what a school it was for the training of men who were to lead the British arms to victory in Flanders and in 'Hie Germanie.' But it had also trained King James's officers. Dundee had served in Holland, Cannon had been colonel of one of the English-Dutch regiments, and Thomas Buchan and Wauchope had also held honourable commands under its colours. Others

who rose to high stations in the Dutch service, Lieutenant-General Murray of Melgum, Walter Philip Colyear, also lieutenant-general and governor of Namur, and George Hamilton, who was to become a Dutch major-general, and subsequently to accompany the Earl of Mar in the rising of 1715, had either already served in it, though not on its strength in 1688, or were soon to wear its uniform.

When the Prince of Orange's armament appeared in Torbay, the first troops to land on English soil were the three Scots and three English regiments. They marched to London, and a subaltern's party of Mackay's regiment had a skirmish at Wincanton, in which they beat off a superior party of the Royal troops. They took up their quarters near the Tower, and while in England the Scottish regiments were depleted of many of their best men, sent probably to stiffen up and to train other regiments. Much more serious service than had fallen to their English comrades lay before them in Scotland. On the 13th of March 1689 the three Scots regiments 'went down the river in the companies' barges to go on board some ships to carry them to Leith, in Scotland, to secure the peace of that kingdom.' On the 25th the Scots Convention granted authority to the magistrates of Edinburgh 'to quarter two regiments, under the command of Major-General Mackay, in Leith and the suburbs of Edinburgh.'

The commander-in-chief's force at first consisted only of his own brigade, the new regiment levied by the Convention, and some small bodies of horse. Of those 'the Dutch regiments' were the only seasoned troops, and these now only mustered eleven hundred. Exertions were made to recruit them, but the sudden change in their composition is probably responsible for the fact that while they were always drawn upon for services of special importance and hazard, they failed to exhibit at Killiecrankie the stubborn endurance worthy of their foreign laurels. But they formed the backbone of the army, and supplied the officers to whom were intrusted the most important enterprises and posts. After Mackay marched to the north, Brigadier Balfour was left in command at Edinburgh, where the Duke of Gordon still held out the Castle, till the arrival of General Lanier with reinforcements from

England. Lieutenant-Colonel Lauder was detached to secure Stirling, and Ramsay commanded the body of six hundred 'chosen Dutch foot with officers conform,' which Mackay summoned to his support at Inverness. He had previously despatched into Angus, along with his cavalry, 'two hundred chosen firelocks of the Dutch regiments,' and they, commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel Buchan, were the only infantry he had with him on his first expedition into the northern shires. When he returned to the south, leaving garrisons at Inverness and Aberdeen, he kept the Dutch troops for service in the field; and when in July he set out from Perth for Blair, the advanced guard, pushed forward to secure the Pass of Killiecrankie, was composed of 'two hundred fusiliers, picked men of the Dutch Brigade,' under Lieutenant-Colonel Lauder. The order of march through the gloomy defile was significant. First went the remainder of Balfour's regiment, then Ramsay's, then the newly raised battalions of Kenmure and Leven, with Belhaven's troop of horse, then Mackay's own veteran regiment, commanded by his brother, immediately in front of the baggage, while Annandale's troop and Hastings' English regiment formed the rear-guard. In the action the order was the same, the leading battalions being on the left of the line. The chief weight of the Highland charge was poured on Mackay's regiment, because, says Mackay, the Jacobite officers 'who had carried arms in that regiment abroad were of opinion if it were beat it would facilitate the rest of the work.' It lost its lieutenant-colonel, the general's brother, who was killed with some of the old pikemen, who stood by him when the 'shot' ran away, two captains, and five (or six) subalterns, while two other captains, one of them the general's nephew, and captain of the grenadier company, were left wounded on the field.[1] The left wing fared no better. Brigadier Balfour, who commanded it, was killed, and Highland tradition preserves this account of his fall. He was engaged at once by two Highlanders, one a brother of the Laird of Ballechin, but defended himself valiantly with his back against a tree. At

[1] General Mackay afterwards wrote that all the captains of his regiment present were 'either killed or do bear the marks of their good behaviour. Besides, I lost six very good subalterns and brisk fellows.'

length a young clergyman, son of Alexander Stewart, who had come out to fight along with his friends, came up, and seeing the inequality of the combat, cried out, 'Shame! shame! the like was never heard of before. Give the brave man his life.' He at the same time addressed some friendly words to Colonel Balfour, who, however, only replied by an expression of contempt and defiance. The exact words, it is said, are not fit to be repeated, but whatever they might have been they produced an immediate effect on the young minister. 'Earth to my body,' he exclaimed, 'and peace to my spirit, and one fair stroke at you.' Then taking the place of the two former assailants, and flourishing his broadsword three times round his head, he delivered such a cut on Colonel Balfour's shoulder that he cut a complete seam across his body from the collar to the thigh, and laid him at once dead on the ground.[1]

'Balfour's regiment,' says Mackay, 'did not fire a shot, and only the half of Ramsay's made some little fire. Lieutenant-Colonel Lauder was advantageously posted on the left of all, on a little hill wreathed with trees, but did as little as the rest of that wing, whether by his or his men's fault it is not well known, for the general would never make inquiry into the failings of that business, because they were too generally committed.' The loss of officers emphasised Sir William Lockhart's observation: 'It is a pity to give green men to good men, to command them, for their running was the loss of all.' Balfour's regiment, besides its colonel, lost Lieutenant Chambers, 'a resolute man, according to the testimony of his officers,' whose name has been preserved owing to Mackay's recommendation of his widow, 'a stranger'; and Ramsay's, a captain.

Among the prisoners were Captain Lieutenant Van Best, and Lieutenant James Colt, of Ramsay's. The Stuart Papers mention Lieutenant-Colonel [*sic*] Balfour[2] and Captain Fer-

[1] Chambers's *History of the Rebellions of* 1689 *and* 1715. The tradition has this curious contemporary confirmation: 'Colonel Balfour, after he was taken, was stabbed by a conformed minister.'—Newsletter of September 17th, 1689, Rydal Hall Manuscripts, Hist. MS. Commission, 12 Rep., App., p. 263.

[2] In a letter written subsequently to the king Mackay said: 'Le Lieut.-Col. Buchan merit que votre Majesté luy donne une meilleure poste, et Fer-

guson as taken prisoners, and in Captain Crichton's *Memoirs* it is stated that 'the Highlanders suffered their prisoners to depart on parole that they would never take up arms against King James, Colonel Ferguson only excepted, on account of his more than ordinary zeal for the new establishment.' This must have been the captain of Balfour's regiment, afterwards for many years Colonel of the Cameronians, for Fergusson of Craigdarroch, the lieutenant-colonel of Kenmure's regiment, was killed on the spot.[1]

With great fortitude, Mackay at once set himself to repair his defeat. He summoned to Perth 'the three battalions of the Dutch regiments that had not been at the late encounter in Atholl.' The death of Dundee robbed the conquerors of the fruits of victory, and ere long the heroic resistance of the Cameronians at Dunkeld checked the ardour of the clans.

In the spring of 1690 Mackay committed to Ferguson, now major of Lauder's regiment (formerly Balfour's), the command of an expedition of six hundred chosen men sent from Greenock to the Western Islands in three frigates. The appearance of this force kept the western clans from joining Buchan and Cannon in any considerable numbers, and had its influence on the attitude of the Earl of Seaforth. The force commenced the construction of Fort-William, where Mackay arrived from Perth with the main army, of which the entire three regiments formed a part. In the course of the summer the final and fatal blows were given by officers trained in the Brigade, for Ferguson defeated the Jacobites in Mull, and

---

guson seroit bien plus capable de commander le regiment de Lauder que Balfour s'il y avoit moyen d'accommoder celuyci autrement qui ne pourra guere plus suporter les fatigues de la campagne, estant incommodé d'un mal qui semble incurable depuis sa prison.'

[1] Account of the Battle of Killiecrankie in the Stuart Papers. 'In this battle there were killed of the rebels upon the place fifteen hundred, some say two thousand, and the next morning five hundred prisoners were brought in by the men of Athol. Those of note killed were Brigadier Balfour and Lieutenant-Colonel Mackay, brother to the major-general, with many more officers of less note: of the prisoners were Lieutenant-Colonel Balfour, Captain Ferguson, Captain Donaldson, and thirteen other officers, with all their camp-tents, baggage, artillery, and provisions, which was of great value, and also the Prince of Orange's standard, carried by Mackay's regiment, taken by Sir Alexander MacLean.'

Sir Thomas Livingstone, who now commanded at Inverness, surprised and routed Buchan and Cannon on the Haugh of Cromdale in Strathspey.[1]

In the campaign of 1691, although General Mackay was himself employed in Ireland, his regiment and Ramsay's were both serving in Flanders, while Lauder's was still stationed in Scotland.

In 1692 the whole three regiments formed part of the British army in the Low Countries. They fought with stubborn valour on the disastrous day of Steinkirk, where they suffered heavy losses as part of the British force that, unsupported, and indeed it is said wilfully left to its fate, faced the whole weight of the French attack. '"Had Count Solms, Trim, done the same at the battle of Steinkirk,"' said Yorick in *Tristram Shandy*, '"he had saved thee—" "Saved," said Trim, interrupting Yorick and finishing the sentence for him after his own fashion, "he had saved five battalions, an' please your reverence, every soul of them. There was Cutts's," continued the Corporal, clapping the fore-finger of his right hand upon the thumb of his left, and counting round his hand, "there was Cutts's, Mackay's, Angus's, Graham's, and Leven's all cut to pieces."' Brave old Mackay himself, ordered to a post he knew to be untenable, after pointing out the error, had ridden to death with the words 'the will of the Lord be done'; the gallant young Earl of Angus fell at the head of his Cameronians; Sir Robert Douglas of Glenbervie was killed rescuing the colours of the Royal Scots; and Colonel Lauder, whose regiment was forgotten by the Corporal, was taken prisoner. The Scots and English regiments alone left three thousand dead upon the field,

[1] In October 1689 Mackay's regiment was at Stirling, Balfour's at Perth, and Ramsay's at Dundee. In July 1690 Mackay's was at Stirling, Lauder's at Perth, and Ramsay's at Linlithgow. In Carleton's *Memoirs* is preserved an interesting anecdote. After the defeat at Cromdale, a number of the Jacobite officers had taken refuge in the old castle of Lethendy. After a few grenades had been thrown into it, they prepared to surrender. Sir Thomas Livingstone, in the presence of the Whig Highlanders who were with him, threatened stern measures, but immediately afterwards stepped up to Carleton, who was returning with the answer, and said quietly, 'Hark ye, sir. I believe there may be among them some of our old acquaintance' ('for,' adds Carleton, 'we had stood together in the service of the States in Flanders'), 'therefore tell them they shall have good quarter.'

and the number of new commissions signed at Lembeck on 1st August and at Gramen on 1st September,[1] bear eloquent testimony to the deadly character of the prolonged struggle in which the Scots Brigade had stood side by side with the Cameronians and the King's Own Borderers, and in which the Royal Scots and the Scots Fusiliers had also been hotly engaged.

The Brigade took an active part in the campaign of the following year. At the battle of Landen, Mackay's and Lauder's regiments, along with the Scots Fusiliers, the King's Own Borderers, and the Cameronians, under the command of Brigadier Ramsay, held the hedges and hollow ways on the right of the whole army. They sustained for long the overwhelming attack of the French, and when forced from their original posts, rallied and stood firm till all their ammunition was expended. The severity of the fighting is again illustrated by the number of new commissions issued shortly after the battle.[2]

The campaign of 1694 was uneventful, but in that of 1695 the Brigade again saw hard fighting. One of the battalions shared with Lord Lorn's Highlanders (the regiment of Glencoe) and three English regiments in the humiliation of the Danish General Ellenberg's surrender of Dixmuyde, and its Colonel, Sir Charles Graham, was among the officers 'broke' for signing the disgraceful capitulation. In the Prince of Vaudemont's famous retreat before Villeroi's army the rear-guard consisted of General Colyear's brigade, and at the siege of Namur, Lauder's regiment, brigaded with Maitland's (the King's Own Borderers), formed part of the covering force under Major-General Ramsay, while Mackay's took part in the hottest assaults. On 18th July an assault was made on the counterscarp by five battalions of English, Scots, and Dutch under General Ramsay and Lord Cutts, which drew from the phlegmatic William the exclamation, 'See my brave English.' On the 27th the English and Scots, under Ramsay and Hamilton, again assaulted the counterscarp and made

[1] See Dalton's *English Army Lists and Commission Registers*, vol. iii. pp. 280-282.

[2] *Ibid.* vol. iii. pp. 341-343.

important lodgments; and on the 4th of August the town was surrendered, and the French retired into the citadel. At the famous assault on the Terra Nova, on 20th August, the supporting regiments were Courthope's and Mackay's, and the reserve Colonel Buchan's and Colonel Hamilton's. Owing to a miscalculation in timing the arrival of the supports, the assailants were driven back after an apparently successful attack, and it fell to Mackay's regiment to make practically a new assault. Lord Cutts, who had returned to the fight after getting his wound dressed, ordered two hundred chosen men of Mackay's regiment, commanded by Lieutenant Cockle, to attack the face of the salient angle next the breach, sword in hand, while the ensigns of the same regiment were to advance and plant their colours on the palisades. Cockle and his men rushed forward 'with admirable intrepidity': they broke through the palisades, drove the French from the covered way, and lodging themselves in one of the batteries, turned the cannon on the enemy. Two thousand men had fallen in the assault, but a substantial lodgment had been made. A few days later the place surrendered, and the glorious capture of Namur consoled the allies for the honourable defeats of Steinkirk and Landen.

On the conclusion of the Peace of Ryswick in 1697, the English Parliament insisted upon a large reduction of the army. The three old regiments of the Scots Brigade were returned from a British establishment to the Dutch service, and in place of the three English regiments which came over in 1688, the Scottish regiments of Ferguson, Hamilton, and Lord Strathnaver were transferred to the establishment of the Netherlands, and, along with the old regiments, remained in the Low Countries.

I

STATES OF WAR.

1649

Hollandt. *Ruyteren* [cavalry]

	horsemen.	monthly pay.
Willem Hay, Curassiers	60	£2291
Sir Robbert Home	,,	,,

Voetvolck [infantry]

	men	monthly pay		men	monthly pay
Willem Killegrew, .	100	£1417	Philips d'Harrards, .	50	£825
Grave van Oxford, .	,,	,,	Willem Bedel, . .	,,	,,
Johan Kirckpatrick,[1]	,,	,,	Robbert Saunderson,	,,	,,
James Askin,[2] . .	,,	,,	John Arnolt, . .	,,	,,
John Cromwell, .	,,	,,	Thomas Morgan, de yonge, . . .	,,	,,
Ferdinando Carrey, .	,,	,,	François de Mackworts,	,,	,,
Edwart Stewart,[3] .	70	1059	Alexander Bruce,[8] .	,,	,,
Thomas Ogle, . .	,,	,,	Symond Killegreuw,	,,	,,
John Levingston,[4] .	,,	,,	Charles Gerrard, .	,,	,,
Thomas Dolman, .	,,	,,	Eduwart Bret, . .	,,	,,
Walter Vame, . .	,,	,,	William Trete, . .	,,	,,
James Balfour,[5] .	,,	,,	James Schot,[9] . .	,,	,,
Francois Veer Oxfort,	,,	,,	John Sayer, . .	,,	,,
John Hinderson,[6] .	,,	,,	Henry Hume,[10] .	,,	,,
Henry Winde,[7] .	,,	,,	Robbert Hacket,[11] .	,,	,,
Payton, . . .	,,	,,	Charles Lloyd, .	,,	,,
Thomas Hamon, .	50	825			

[1] Colonel Kirkpatrick. See p. 323.

[2] Colonel James Erskine. See p. 318.

[3] See p. 328.

[4] See p. 325.

[5] See pp. 320, 324.

[6] See p. 323.

[7] Henry Wylde?

[8] Alexander Bruce became sergeant-major in 1660 (of Walter Scott's regiment). Alexander Bruce, son of John Bruce of Airth and Margaret Elphinstone, who ultimately succeeded to Airth, served under Prince Rupert in Germany, and for many years in the Low Countries in the service of the States-General. He married a Dutch lady, Anna van Eyk. See *Sc. Ant.*, vol. xi. p. 61.

[9] See p. 333.

[10] See p. 328.

[11] Robert Halkett, previously lieutenant of Sir James Henderson's company, succeeded John Kirkpatrick as captain on October 25th, 1644. He was succeeded by William Sandilands in 1661.

	men	monthly pay
Adam Esday, . .	50	£825
Godefroy Lloyd, .	,,	,,
John Ingelby, . .	,,	,,
John Abraham, .	,,	,,
Raph Norwood, .	,,	,,
Willem Trogmorton,	,,	,,
Isacq Asteley, . .	,,	,,
Henry Wytheral, .	,,	,,
Broychwel Lloyd, .	,,	,,
Henry Echlyn,[1] .	,,	,,
Christoffel Plunket, .	,,	,,
William Riddel,[2] .	,,	,,
William Cromwel, .	,,	,,
Johan Kirckpatrick,[3]	,,	,,
John Roberts, . .	,,	,,
Herbert Trogmorton,	,,	,,
John Ropert, . .	,,	,,
George Keir,[4] . .	,,	,,
Thomas Mentis, .	,,	,,
Waltar Murray,[5] .	,,	,,
Samuel Clarke, .	,,	,,
Everwijn Kirkpatrick,[6]	,,	,,
Willem Swany, .	50	£825
John Mauley, . .	,,	,,
George Morton, .	,,	,,
David Robertsone, dict Colier,[7] . .	,,	,,
Thomas Levingston,[8]	,,	,,
Maurits Le Maire, .	,,	,,
John Griffie, . .	,,	,,
Louys Askyn,[9] . .	,,	,,
William Cave, . .	,,	,,
Henry Meolis, . .	,,	,,
James Kolepyper, .	,,	,,
George Ingoldesby, .	,,	,,
James Douglas,[10] .	,,	,,
William Pentelandt,[11]	,,	,,
Francis Nikles, . .	,,	,,
Rogier Temple, .	,,	,,
Alexander Hume,[12] .	,,	,,
John Watkin, . .	,,	,,
James Peye, . .	,,	,,
Bolantre, . . .	,,	,,
Read, . . .	,,	,,

[1] See p. 327.

[2] See p. 328.

[3] John Kirkpatrick (junior), formerly lieutenant of Colonel Kirkpatrick's company, succeeded John Riddell on February 19th, 1644. Sergeant-Major of Colonel Kirkpatrick's regiment July 12th, 1662, reduced and re-appointed. On October 6th, 1670, the company of the late John Kirkpatrick was given to Maurits de Savorny.

[4] See p. 323.

[5] See p. 322.

[6] Everwyn Kirkpatrick succeeded Alexander Murray, retired, on November 20th, 1646; reduced and re-appointed, became sergeant-major of Kirkpatrick's regiment in succession to John Kirkpatrick, February 8th, 1672, and lieut.-colonel in succession to Thomas Livingston on September 12th, 1673. Succeeded as from May 10th, 1677 by J. A. Lauder.

[7] See p. 319.

[8] Thomas Livingston. See p. 324.

[9] Louis Erskine, previously ensign of Colonel James Erskine's company, succeeded Thomas Livingston, deceased, on November 28th, 1645, became sergeant-major, October 1st, 1655, lieut.-colonel, June 11th, 1660, and colonel in succession to John Henderson, March 7th, 1662, was dead on July 19th, 1673, when he was succeeded by Jacques de Fariaux, Heer van Maulde.

[10] See p. 328.

[11] See p. 323.

[12] Alexander Hume. See p. 497.

	men	monthly pay
Henry Herbert,	50	£825
Maurits Hacquet,[1]	,,	,,

Tractementen op Hollandt

Collonnel Killegreuw,	£iic l
Sijn Successeur [his successor],	iic
Henry Winde, Lieutt Coll,	lx
Humphraye Payton, Serg. Major,	l
Henry Hexam, Quartiermr, ad vitam,	xxv
Willem Bagenolt, Provoost, ad vitam,	xx
De Baron Graven, Collonnel	iic l
Sijn Successeur [his successor]	iic
Walter Vame, Lt Col.,	lx
Herry Withipol, Sergeant Major,	l
James Stevens, Quartiermr, ad vitam,	xxv
Thomas Wod, Provoost, ad vitam,	xx
John Cromwel, Collonnel,	iic l
Sijn Successeur [his successor],	iic
Thomas Dolman, Lt Col.,	£lx
William Cromwel, St Major,	£l
Pierius Coel, Quartiermr, ad vitam,	xxv
Greffin Price, Provoost, ad vitam,	xx
James Askin, Collonnel,	iilc
Sijn Successeur [his successor],	iic
James Balfour, Lt Collonnel,	lx
Walter Murray, St Major,	l
William Alphinstone, Quartiermr, ad vitam,	xxv
John Leyl, provoost, ad vitam,	xx
John Kirckpatrick, Collonnel,	iic l
Sijn Successeur [his successor],	iic
John Hinderson, Lt Collonnel,	lx
Thomas Levingston, St Major,	l
Thomas Viner, Quartiermr, ad vitam,	xxv
James Morde, provoost, ad vitam,	xx
Collonnel Drumond,[2]	iic l
Sijn Successeur [his successor],	iic
Walter Schot, Major van 't selve regiment [Major of the same regt.],	l

1650

Wm. Drummondt, Col.	£200
His successor,	125
Walter Schot, Lt Col,	50
David Colyer, St. Major	42
Eduard Yonger, qr. mr., ad vitam,	£25
Eduaerdt Wolthelt, Pr. M., ad vitam,	20

[1] Maurits Halkett succeeded his captain, David Balfour, on October 9th, 1647, reduced and reappointed in place of Thomas Caddell on September 11th, 1660.

'Maurice Halkett, son of Sir John (killed at Bois-le-Duc), was,' says the family genealogy, 'a captain in the Dutch army, and married Agnes de Decquere, a lady of Artois.' He was killed at the siege of Maestricht in 1675.

[2] Sir William Drummond, fourth son of John, second Earl of Perth and Lady Jean Ker, daughter of the first Earl of Roxburgh, married his cousin Jean, eldest daughter of Henry, Lord Ker, and succeeded his maternal grandfather as second Earl of Roxburgh in 1650. 'His genius,' says Douglas in his *Peerage*, 'in his younger years leading him to a military life, he went into the service of the States-General, where by his merit he soon got the command of a regiment, and acquired the reputation of a brave and gallant officer, but upon the breaking out of the Civil War in Scotland he returned home, joined the loyalists, was

Lijffpensioenen [life pensions]

Janneken Nysbet, dochter van [daughter of] Capiteyn Nysbet, 's jaers [yearly] £100, ... £viii st. vi d. viii

Joffrouw Anna Kirckpatrick, wed^e^ wijlen [widow of the late] Capiteijn Strachan, £200 's jaers [yearly]

Margaretha Egger de Yonge, £lx st. x's jaers, . . £v st. iv d. ii

De weduwe van den Col. Hinderson [the widow of Col. H.], £v^c^ 's jaers, ... £xli st. xiii. d. iv

Barbara Butlar, £c 's jaers, ... £viii st. vi d. viii

Zeelandt

Voetvolck [infantry]

	men	monthly pay
Robbert Sidney, .	70	£1059
Philips Wassy, . .	,,	,,
Jeremias Nicolay, .	,,	,,
Jacob Colve, . .	,,	,,
Eduard Morgan, .	50	825
Charles Lettelbey, .	,,	,,
Christoffel Crumb, .	,,	,,
Courtenaey, . .	,,	,,
Walter Schot, . .	,,	,,
Thomas Amys, . .	,,	,,
Henry Pomeray, .	,,	,,
Robbert Mantal, .	,,	,,
Thomas Sondts, .	,,	,,

Tractementen op Zeelandt.

	monthly pay
Grave van Oxford, collonnel, [Earl of Oxford], . .	£ii^cl^
Sijn Successeur [his successor],	ii^c^
Robbert Sednay, S^r^-Major, .	monthly pay 1

Lijffpensioenen [life pensions] *op Utrecht*

De weduwe wijlen den Collonnel Sanderlans, jaerlicx [the widow of the late Col. S. yearly], £v^c^ £xli st. xiii d. vi

Frieslandt

Voetvolck [infantry]

	men	monthly pay
John More, . .	50	£825
Thomas Morgan, senior,	,,	,,
Patrick Stewart,[1] .	,,	,,
George Lauder,[2] .	,,	,,
Gilbert Coke, . .	,,	,,
Franchois Stanton, .	,,	,,
Henry Wielde,[3] .	,,	,,
George Douglas,[4] .	,,	,,
Charles Morgan, .	,,	,,

steady in the interest of the Royal family, for which he was fined by Oliver Cromwell in the sum of £6000 sterling.' He succeeded Sir Philip Balfour as colonel on May 19th, 1646, and seems to have left the service in 1655, when his name disappears as commanding a regiment, and William Kier obtained his company.

[1] Patrick Stewart took oath February 1st, 1654, in succession to Burnfield (deceased), was succeeded by James Hamilton on May 18th, 1656.

[2] George Lauder, see p. 326.

[3] Henry Wylde was dead by August 31st, 1656, and succeeded by his son Anthony.

[4] George Douglas took oath in succession to Alexander Fleming, February 14th, 1654, and was succeeded by John Murray in July 1655. George Douglas, fourth son of the second Earl of Morton, says Douglas, 'after the murder of the king, went into the service of the states of Holland, where he arrived at great preferment, and died without issue.'

The following officers took the oath between the years 1648 and 1664 : [1]

1649	Wm. Flemyng, . . .		May 6th
1050	J. Lamy,[2]		June 7th
1654	Patrik Stuart, . . .		feb. 3d
,,	George Douglas, . .		feb. 14th
,,	George Lauder, . . .		March 11th
1655	Walter Scott [colonel], .	March 27th	
,,	J. Murray, . . .		July 3d
,,	Willi. Ker, . . .	Sep. 13th	
,,	Thomas Caddel,[3] . .		Sep. 14th
,,	Loo Arskyne [sergt.-major],	Oct. 1st	
1656	James Henderson,[4] . .	May 18th	
,,	Anthony Wylde,[5] . .		Aug. 31st
1657	G. Lauder [as lieut.-colonel], ...		Sep. 11th
1659	J. Hay, ...		April 24th
1660	J. Henderson[6] als Colonnel, . . .		June 9th
,,	M. Halkett, . . .		Sep. 11th
,,	All. Couttis [as sergt.-major], ...		Sep. 16th
,,	Alexander Bruce [as sergt.-major], ...		,,
,,	J. Erskyne, . . .		Oct. 2d
1661	William Sandilands, . .	Aug. 9th	
,,	James Colepepyer,[7] . .		Oct. 3d
,,	Johan Lamy, . . .		,,
,,	A. Robertsone, dit Colyer .	Nov. 22d	
,,	François Brasset,[8] . .	Dec. 14th	Dec. 15th
1662	Loe Arskyne [as colonel], ...	March 7th	March 8th
,,	All. Couttis [as lieut.-colonel],		,,

[1] The first column gives the date of the commission ; the second that of taking the oath. In many cases only one date is extant.

[2] John Lamy succeeded Henry Hume as captain in James Erskine's regiment on June 16th, 1650, and either he or another John Lamy succeeded Captain Jeremias Pentland on October 1st, 1661. On February 8th, 1672, he was appointed sergeant-major, and on April 1st, 1673, became lieutenant-colonel of Henry Graham's (the old or Brog's regiment), on Graham succeeding Scott.

[3] Thomas Caddell, formerly lieutenant of Colonel James Erskine's company, received the command on September 13th, 1655, and was dead by September 11th, 1660, when he was succeeded by Mauritz Halkett.

[4] James Henderson, 'formerly colonel, but not of a Scottish regiment,' succeeded Patrick Stewart on May 18th, 1656, and was succeeded on retirement by James Erskine on February 21st, 1659.

[5] Appears in 1672 in Kirkpatrick's regiment ; succeeded his father ; sergeant-major, 1674.

[6] The testament of Sir John Henrysone, knight, sometime colonel of one of the regiments in Holland, is entered in the Edinburgh Commissariot Records of the date, 16th Oct. 1693.

[7] Appears in 1672 in Erskine's regiment.

[8] Appears in February 1672 in W. Scott's regiment.

1662	Grame (Henry Graham) [as sergt.-major], . .		March 8th
,,	Joris Robbert Couttis,		,,
,,	Petrus Watkin, . . .		,,
,,	William Lindsey, . .		July 11th
,,	J. Kirkpatrik [as sergt.-major], ...		July 12th
1663	Jo. Butler,[1] . . .		March 6th
,,	John Roper,[2] . . .	Sep. 18th	Sep. 19th
1664	P. Bitter,[3]		Aug. 7th

From the Resolutions of Holland, 1655.

Military Affairs viii. 1653-1668.

1655, *March* 24.—To make proper provisions for preventing further confusion caused by the circumstance that of several Reg^{ts} a portion stands under the Repartition of this Province, and another portion under that of another; and to bring all the forces on Repartition Holland together in complete Holland Regiments; Res. : . . . that the Holland Reg^{ts} shall provisionally be formed conform to the following list: that the high offices thereof, now vacant, shall be filled to-morrow, . . . that the aforesaid reformed List shall be put in the hands of the Committee for their information, and to notify the Colonels and all others they may deem proper of the respective changes in the Reg^{ts}.

Scottish Reg^{t} under Kirckpatrick

Holland.	John Kirckpatrick, Colonel,	100 men,	Oct. 24th, 1631[4]
	John Henryson, L^{t}.-Col.,	50	Sep. 22, 1629
	Levinghtone [*sic*],	,,	March 23d, 1635
	Alex. Hume,	,,	Nov. 16th, 1643
	R. Hacket,	,,	Oct. 25th, 1644
	John Kirckpatrick,	,,	Dec. 12th, 1644
	N. Greme [*sic*],	,,	Nov. 28th, 1645
	Everwyn Kirckpatrick,	,,	Nov. 19, 1646
The comp^{y} of Col. Ourskyn [*sic*], deceased			50 men
,,	L^{t}-Col. Balfour,	,,	,,
,,	Major Coljer,	,,	,,
,,	Cap^{n} James Douglas	,,	,,
,,	Cap^{n} Pentlandt,	,,	,,

---

1 Appears in 1672 in Erskine's regiment.

2 Sept. 18th.—Commission as sergeant-major Regiment Dolman, in the place of John Cromwel, for John Roper (transferred in same rank to Regiment Arskin by Res. Holland Committee, Aug. 22d, 1665); took oath next day.

3 Aug. 7th.—Commission as Captain for P^{r} de Bitter, reformed Captain in the place of van der Does, on appointment by Res. Holland of August 2nd. Appears in 1672 in Regiment Arskin.

4 Corrected, see Resolution of May 16th, 1655 (Scots).

Scottish Regiment under Walter Schot

Holland \ Zeeland	Walter Schot, Colonel,	100 men	Dec. 8th, 1638
Holland.	Murray, L[t] Col.	50	Sept. 19th, 1627
	George Kier, Major		May 12th, 1631
Stadt en Lande.	Philip Balfour	,,	June 2nd, 1621
Vriesland.	Geo. Douglas	,,	Dec. 6th, 1623[1]
Holland.	N. Bruce [*sic*]	,,	April 10th, 1635
Utrecht.	Jannes Schot	,,	Dec. 9th, 1636
Stadt en Lande.	Alane Coutes [*sic*]	,,	April 30th, 1638
Holland.	Louys Arskyn	,,	Nov. 28th, 1645
Vriesland.	Patrick Stuart	,,	
,,	Geo. Louder		
Holland.	The comp[y] of Rocxburgh formerly Colonel		
,,	The comp[y] of Cap[n] Echlin, deceased[2]		

. . . . The States further provisionally consent to making for the year 1655 the pay of a Col. of Foot 1600 guelders, of a L[t] Col. 400 glds., of a S[t] Major two thirds, and of a Q[r] m[r] and Provost Marshal one half of the am't carried out for that purpose.

Scots and Scottish Nation

1655. May 6th.

Corrected List of the 2 *Scottish* Reg[ts]

Regiment Kirckpatrick

Holland. John Kirckpatrick, Colonel
John Henderson, L[t] Col.
Thos. Levingston, S[t] Major
W[m] Riddel
Alex. Hum
Rob[t] Hacquet
John Kirckpatrick
U. Greme [*sic*]
Everwyn Kirckpatrick
The comp[y] of Col. Arskyn
,, L[t] Col. Balfour
,, Major Colyer
,, James Douglas
,, Pendlant

Regiment Schot

Zeeland. Walter Schot, Colonel
Holland. Walter Murray, L[t] Col.
,, Geo. Kier, S[t] Major
Stad en Landt. Philips Balfour
Vrieslandt. Geo. Douglas
Holland. U. Bruce [*sic*]
Utrecht. James Schott
Stad en Land. Aleane Coutis
Holland. Louis Arskyn
Vrieslandt. Patrick Stuart
Geo. Lauder
Holland. The comp[y] of the Earl of Roxburgh
The comp[y] of Capt[n] Echlin

---

[1] Probably an error, and should be December 6th, 1653. See p. 493.

[2] For correction, see Resolution of May 16th, 1655 (Scots).

From the Resolutions of Holland, 1662.

March 14. The List of the Holland regiments of the French, English, and *Scottish* nations is, from the death of field-officers and captains, now as follows:

Scottish Reg^t Kirckpatrick

Holland	John Kirckpatrick, Colonel	
	Thos. Levingston, L^t Col.	
	Riddel, Major	
	Alex. Hum	Nov. 16th, 1643
	John Kirckpatrick	Feb. 17th, 1644
	Everwyn Kirckpatrick	Nov. 20th, 1646
	Maurits Halquet	Oct. 8th, 1648 [1647]

Schot

Holland	Walter Schot, Colonel	
	Geo. Lauder, L^t Col.	
	Alex. Bruce, Major	
	Lamy	June 17th, 1650
Vriesland.	Jan. Murray	July 3d, 1655
Holland	Kayr	Sep. 14th, 1655
	Coller	Nov. 23d, 1661

Erskine

Holland	Louis Erskine, Colonel	
	Allane Couttis, L^t Col.	
Utrecht	Henry Grahame, Major	
	James Erskin, Feb. 21st, in commission in Denmark, took oath October 2d, 1660	
Vrieslandt.	Johan Hay	April 24th, 1659
Holland	Sandelants	Aug. 9th, 1661
	Joris Robbert Coutes	March 8th, 1662

1665

Holland. Voetvolck

Schotten

	men	monthly pay		men	monthly pay
Johan Krickpatrick,	75	£1122	George Lauder, L^t Coll.,	49	813
Walter Schot, Coll.,	75	1122	Alane Coutis, majoor,[1]	49	813
Louys Arskin, Coll.,	74	1110	Alexander Bruce, majoor,	49	813
Thomas Levingston, L^t Coll., . . .	49	813	Johan Krickpatrick, majoor, . .	49	783

[1] Allan Coutts had been promoted to lieut.-colonel in 1662. The third major in 1665 was Henry Graham.

	men	monthly pay
Joris Robbert Couttis,[1]	49	£783
William Lindsey,[2] .	49	783
Maurits Halquiz, .	49	783
William Kair,[3] . .	49	783
William Sandelandts,[4]	49	783
Everwyn Krickpatrick,	49	783
Johs Lamy,[5] . .	49	783
Alexander Colyer,[6] .	49	783
Alexander Hume,[7] .	49	783

Tractementen op Holland

Schotten.	monthly pay		
Walter Schot, Collonnel	£100	0	0
George Lauder, Lt.-Coll. van 't selfde regimt [of the same regiment]	42	0	0
Sijn Successeur	32	0	0
Alexander Bruce, majoor van 't selve Regiment . .	28	0	0
Willem Alphistone, Quartiermr van 't selve Regiment ad vitam	25	0	0
Johan Kirckpatrick, Coll.	200	0	0
Sijn successeur [his successor]	100	0	0
Thomas Levingston, Lt. Coll. van 't selffde Regiment .	42	0	0
Sijn successeur	32	0	0

[1] George Robert Coutts, captain, March 8th, 1662, in place of Colonel Henderson, deceased.

[2] William Lindsay, captain in place of William Riddell, July 11th, 1662.

[3] William Ker (or Keir), captain in place of Colonel Drummond (the Earl of Roxburgh), September 13th, 1655.

[4] William Sandilands, captain, August 9th, 1661, in place of Robert Halkett. In 1668 he was appointed sergeant-major of Louis Erskine's regiment, in place of John Roper, deceased, who had been transferred from an English regiment in 1665.

[5] See p. 493.

[6] Alexander Colyear, formerly lieutenant of Lieut.-Colonel Lauder's company. Captain in succession to Colonel [*sic*] Balfour (in Scott's regiment) November 22nd, 1661; became sergeant-major of Graham's regiment on April 1st, 1673; appointed adjutant-general to his Highness the Prince of Orange from July 1st, 1673; and colonel of a Scottish regiment of foot from January 1st, 1675; was succeeded by James Douglas, dating from February 8th, 1680. In the 'Historical Account' he is described as 'Sir Alexander Robertson of Dalcabon, in Perthshire, who assumed the name of Colyear, and was the father of David, Earl of Portmore.' He was the son of Major David Colyear (p. 319), who appears in the State of War of 1649 as 'David Robertson *dict.* Colyear.' Sir Alexander was created a Baronet in February 1677.

[7] Alexander Hume. Alexander, second son of Sir Patrick Hume, seventh Baron of Polwarth, 'a youth of great spirit, betook himself to a military life, and soon rose to the rank of a colonel, but died in the flower of his life, without issue.'—Douglas's *Peerage*.

Johan Kirckpatrick, majoor van het selfde Regiment .	£28	0	0
James Morde, provoost van't selffde regiment, ad vitam .	20	0	0
Louys Arskyn, Collonnel	28	0	0
Sijn successeur Titulair			
Alane Coutis, Lt. Collonnel van't selfde Regiment Titulair			
Hendrick Graham,[1] majoor van 't selve Regiment, Titulair			
Eduart Yorger, Quartiermr van 't selffde Regiment, ad vitam	25	0	0
Godefroy Woedfild, provoost van 't selffde regiment, ad vitam	20	0	0

Lijffpensioenen. Engelschen en Schotten

Christoffel Pluncket, gereformeert [reformed] Capt. .	£66	13	4
Willem Willougby	20	16	8
Anthony Craven, Gereformeert Rittmr. [reformed Capt. of the Horse]	100	0	0
Herry Clingh, gereformeert vendrich van [reformed ensign of] Capitain Hammon	16	3	4
Cleeff van Corbet, Capt.	66	13	4
Paul Risby, gereformeert vendrich van Capt. Witthipol .	16	13	4
Pieter Lloyd, als gereformeert Capitain . . .	66	13	4
Willem Norwod, Vendrich van Capt. Norwodt . .	16	13	4
Robert Morgan, lieutenandt van Capt. Meantis . .	20	16	8
William Willougby, Lt. van Capt. Lloyd . . .	20	16	8
Robbert More, Lieut. van Capt. Esday . . .	20	16	8
Robbert Warnaer, Lieut. van Capn. Stuart . .	20	16	8
William Bradley, desselfs Vendrich [his Ensign] . .	16	13	4

Utrecht.	*Voetvolck.*	*Schotten*
	men	monthly pay
Henry Graham, majoor	50	£825
James Arskyn[2]	50	795

Friesland.	*Voetvolck.*	*Schotten*
	men	monthly pay
Johan Hay[3]	50	795
Johan Murray[4]	50	795

[See also p. 534 for list of 1668.]

[1] Henry Graham, previously lieutenant of Captain Erskine, succeeded John Shiortes as captain on November 28th, 1645. He was appointed sergeant-major of Colonel Lewis Erskine's regiment in 1662, transferred to Scott's regiment in 1665, became lieut.-colonel of Walter Scott's regiment, February 8th, 1673, and on April 1st, 1673 succeeded him as colonel; was succeeded as colonel by Hugh Mackay as from May 2nd, 1677. Probably killed at siege of Maestricht 1676.

A Captain Henry Graham, a natural brother of the great Marquis of Montrose, accompanied him in his last expedition to Scotland, and succeeded in escaping to Holland.

[2] James Erskine, captain in succession to Captain Scott, deceased in Henderson's regiment, February 21st 1659.

[3] John Hay, captain in succession to James Henderson retired, April 24th, 1659 (formerly lieutenant same company).

[4] John Murray, captain in succession to George Douglas, July 2nd, 1655.

From the Resolutions of Holland. Militia.

1669, Sept. 25th.—List of 16 Regiments of Foot in the Repartition of this Province :

III

Johan Kirckpatrick, Colonel.	
Thos. Leviston, Lt. Col.	
Johan Kirckpatrick, S^{t} Major.	
Everwyn Kirckpatrick	Nov. 20th, 1646.
Maurits Hacquet	Sept. 11th, 1660.
Anthonis Weylde	Aug. 31st, 1656.
Ysbrandt Langier [*sic*]	*ut supra.*
Johan Pyl	July 21st, 1666.
Willem Ackersloot	

V

Walter Schotte, Colonel.	
Geo. Lauder, Lt. Col.	
Hendrick Graham, St. Major.	
Robt. Sanderson	July 24th, 1642.
Johan Lamy	Oct. 1st, 1661.
Alex. Colyer	Nov. 23rd, 1661.
Petrus Watkin	March 8th, 1662.
Jacob de Chamfleury	March 26th 1655.
Godengh van Braeckel	*ut supra.*

VII

Lodewyk Arskyn, Colonel.	
Alane Coutis, Lt. Col.	
Wm. Sandelands, St. Major.	
James Colpeper	Oct. 3rd, 1661.
Joris Robt. Coutis	March 8th, 1662.
Johan Butler	March 6th, 1663.
Gerrit van Haeften	March 26th, 1665.
Jacob Kuyck van Meteren	Sep. 26th, 1665.

1672. Feb. 2nd. List of old Regiments on Repartition Holland.[1]

II

Johan Kirckpatrick, *Colonel.*	Ysbrandt Laynier.
Thos. Leviston, *Lt. Col.*	Maurits de Hacquet.
Everwyn Kirckpatrick, *St. Major.*	Herman van Boeckhoven.
Erasmus van Valckenhaen.	Gaspar de Maurignault.
Maurice de Sauvourny.	Gildert de Creuset.
Anthonis Weylde.	Johan Pyl.

[1] The numbers of the regiments in the lists of 1669 and 1672 do not correspond, but are as given in text.

IV

Walter Schot, Colonel.	Lodewyk van Brakel.
Hendrick Graham, Lt. Col.	Jacob de Champfleury.
Johan Lamy, St. Major.	Hendrick ten Hove.
Alex. Colyer.	Karel Ottho Schele.
François Brasset.	Bartholomeus van de Graef.
Petrus Watkin.	

VI

Louis Arskyn, Colonel.	Johan Butler.
Alane Coutis, Lt. Col.	Pieter de Bitter.
Wm. Sandelants, St. Major.	Gerrit van Haeften.
Jacob van Imbise.	Jacob Cuyck van Meteren.
James Colpeper.	Diderick van Diepenbroeck.
Joris Rob^{t}. Coutis.	Bonaventura Bodeck.

1672, Sept. 27th.—H. H. desiring to have the Militia divided up over the Provinces conform to the following List and until Dec. 31st., Res. conform from Oct. 1st - Dec. 31st, Holland and West-Vrieslandt being thereby taxed beyond the contingent allowed, this circumstance to be considered in framing the New State of War.

Regiments on Repartition Holland.

Maastricht	Johan Kirckpatrick, Colonel. Thos. Levingston, Lt. Col. Everwyn Kirckpatrick, St. Major.	
Breda	Erasmus van Valckenhaen.	
Maastricht	Maurice de Savorny. Anthony Wylde. Ysbrandt Laignier.	
Sluys	Herman van Boeckhoven.	on Zeeland
Sas van Gent	Caspar de Mauregnault	,,
Maastricht	Gilbert de Creuset. Johan Pyl.	
Maastricht	Louis Arskin, Colonel.	
Gonnchem	Alana Coutis, Lt. Col.	
Maastricht	Wm. Sandelandts, St. Major. Jacob Imbise. James Colpeper.	
Breda	Johan Butler.	
Maastricht	Pieter de Bitter. Gerrit van Haeften.	
in Zeeland	Jacob Cuyck van Meteren.	
Maastricht	Diederich van Diepenbroeck. Bonaventura Bodeck.	

Rotterdam	Walter Schot, Colonel. Hendrick Graham, Lt. Col. Johan Lamy, St. Major.
Bergen	Alex. Colyer.
Rotterdam	Petrus Watkin.
Schoonhoven	Lodewyk van Brake. Jacob de Chamfleury.
Muyden	Sanderson, deceased. Carl Otto Schele. James Balfeur.

1673	1674
Holland. Foot	*Holland. Foot*
Johan Kirckpatrick, Col.[1]	Johan Kirckpatrick, Col.
Thos Levingston, Lt-Col.[2]	Everwyn Kirckpatrick, Lt-Col.
Everwyn Kirckpatrick, St-major[3]	Anthony Wylde, St-major
Erasmus van Falckenhaen	Caspar de Maurignault
Maurice de Savorny	Herman van Boeckhoven
Anthony Wylde[4]	Johan Pyll
Isbrandt Laignier	Gilbert de Creuzet
Casper de Maurignault	Isbrant Laignier
Gilbert de Creuset	Nicolaes Schraffer.*
Johan Pyl	Thos. Levingston[5]
Herman van Bouckhoven	A. van Esinga
Willem van Welderen.	. . . . .

[1] See p. 323. [2] See p. 324. [3] See p. 490. [4] See p. 493.

* Barent Sygers gets Schraffer's company, February 26th, 1676.—Transcriber's Note.

[5] Sir Thomas Livingstone, son of Sir Thomas Livingstone of Newbigging (see p. 324), formerly ensign of Lieut.-Colonel Livingstone's company (then deceased), was appointed captain on July 19th, 1673, sergeant-major, December 5th, 1678, lieut.-colonel, February 16th, 1684 (Balfour's regiment). He was, says Douglas, 'from his youth bred a soldier in the service of the States of Holland.' Received command of the Royal Scots Dragoons (Scots Greys) in December 1688, served in the Scottish campaign, commanded at Inverness, and defeated Generals Buchan and Cannon at Cromdale. Appointed major-general, and created Viscount Teviot, in 1696. Commanded a brigade in the Netherlands in 1697. Commander-in-chief in Scotland. Lieut.-general, 1703. Died 1711.

'He is a gentleman of a good head, and understands most things very well; hath purchased a greater estate than any soldier in the king's reign. . . . He is of a fair complexion, fine shape, and well-looked man, towards fifty-five years old.'

In Sir William Fraser's *Earls of Cromarty*, there is a curious story of the apparition of his ghost to ask forgiveness from his deserted Dutch wife.

1673.

Holland. Foot

Walter Scott, Col.[1]
Hendreck Graham, Lt-Col.[2]
Johan Lamy, St-major [3]
Alex. Colier [4]
Petrus Watkin
Fred. Sandelants [5]
Jacob de Champfleury
Carel Otto Schele
Jacob Robt Lennox [6]
Johan Abrahal.*
Herbert van Beaumont
Broighwell Flud [*sic*]
Lewis Arskin, Col.[7]
Alane Coutis, Lt-Col.[8]
Wm Sandelants, St-major [9]
Jacob van Himbice.†
James Colpeper
Johan Butler
Pieter de Bitter
Gerrit van Haeften
Jacob Cuyck van Meteren
Diederich van Deepenbroeck
Bonaventura Bodeck
Evert Dirck van Kessel.

1674.

Holland. Foot

Henry Graham, Col.
Johan Lamy, Lt-Col.
Alex. Colier, St-major
Petrus Watkin
Jacob de Champfleury
Carel Otto Schele
Jacob Robt Lennox
Johan Abrahal
Herbert van Beaumont
Broignel Floyott [*sic*]
Maurits Hacquet [10]
Henry Graham [11]
Jacques de Fariaux,
Lord [of the Manor] van Maulde, Col.
Alane Coutes, Lt-Col.
Geo. l'Alleman, St-major

1675

Jacques de Fariaux, Col.
George Lalemandt, Lt-Col.
Jacob van Meteren, St-major

---

[1] See p. 325. [2] See p. 498. [3] See p. 493. [4] See p. 497.

[5] Frederick Sandilands took oath on April 27th, 1672, and was dead by August 3rd, 1673, when he was succeeded by Henry Graham.

[6] James Robert Lennox took oath as captain on 20th April 1672. Robert [*sic*] Lennox was succeeded by Andrew Bruce from August 17th, 1673.

* Lachlane Macklin gets Abrahal's company, December 9th, 1678.—Transcriber's Note. See p. 504.

[7] See p. 490. [8] See p. 496. [9] See p. 497.

† Jacob van Imbice (Himbice or d'Imbice) disappears in 1674 in Regiment de Fariaux.—Transcriber's Note.

[10] Maurits Halkett (see p. 491). He had been transferred to Captain James Erskine's company, who had succeeded Colonel Walter Scott in April, and died before August 3rd.

[11] Henry Graham, formerly ensign of Colonel Kirkpatrick's company, succeeded F. Sandilands on August 3rd, 1673. Left Holland 1688, and appointed captain in Wauchope's Scots Foot. Killed at Walcourt, in Flanders, in an engagement with the Luxemburgers, 25th August 1689.

The following officers took oath between the years 1673 and 1688:[1]

1673	Gram (Henry Graham) [as colonel],	April 1st
,,	J. Lamy [as lieut.-colonel],	,,
,,	Alex. Colyear [as sergt.-major]	,,
,,	Ja. Erskine,	,,
,,	Thomas Levingstoune	July 19th
,,	Henry Graham	Aug. 1st
,,	A. van Esingha,[2]	Aug. 21st.
,,	Willem Nanningh [adjutant],	Sep. 12th
,,	E. Kirkpatrik,	,,
,,	Andreas Bruce,	Sep. 26th
,,	Alex. Colier [sergt.-major],	Sep. 28th
,,	Charles Graham [adjutant],	Oct. 23d
,,	Geo. Connocke,[3]	Dec. 13th
1674	John Wachope,	June 2d
,,	Edward Lloyd,[4]	July 2d
,,	Johan Murray,	Nov. 9th
,,	Cornelis Stuart,	Nov. 14th
,,	J. A. Lauder,	Nov. 23d
,,	Ja. Douglas,	Dec. 15th
1675	Alexander Colyear [as colonel.]	Jan. 16th
,,	P. Wesly,[5]	Jan. 24th
,,	Hen. Levingston,	Jan. 30th
,,	H. Mackay [as capt. and lieut.-colonel],	March 20th
,,	Johne Gibsone,	,,
,,	Will. Middleton,	March 25th
,,	Will. Makdougall [as capt. and sergt.-major]	April 9th
,,	C. Grame [Graham],	May 10th
,,	John Hale,	May 18th
,,	Ro. Douglass,[6]	May 20th
,,	[Walter Corbet, adjutant],[7]	Oct. 7th
,,	J. Colyer,	Dec. 23d
1676	B. Sygers,[8]	Feb. 26th
,,	Ferdinand van Casteren,[9]	,,
,,	Everardus Halkett,	Oct. 3d
,,	William Murray,	Oct. 24th
,,	George Ramsay,	Oct. 31st
,,	Ja. Douglas [as sergt-major],	Nov. 5th

[1] For particulars of service in most cases, see notes to preceding and subsequent States of War and regimental lists.

[2] Succeeded Falckenham.

[3] Captain of a new company in Zeeland from April 16th, 1672. Probably one of the English officers. Sergeant-major of Graham's, March 16th, 1674.

[4] Captain new enlistment. Probably one of the English officers.

[5] Captain new enlistment, January 24th, 1675. Probably also an English officer.

[6] Captain on new enlistment, May 20th, 1675.

[7] Probably an English officer.

[8] In succession to Nicolas Schraffer.

[9] In succession to Isbrandt Laignier.

1676	R. Bruce,[1]	Nov. 12th
,,	P. Levingstoung,[2]	Nov. 13th
,,	B. Balfour,	Nov. 14th
,,	Pieter Blom,[3]	Nov. 16th
,,	Johan de Maurignault [exchanged],	Nov. 20th
1677	David Windgom [qr.-master],	March 2d
,,	Frederick Cuninghame,	June 10th
,,	(Alexander Bruce, by proxy),	June 11th,
,,	(Roory Mackie Provost Marshal)	June 11th
,,	Alexander Lamy,	June 15th
,,	Jo. Bruce,	June 21st
,,	Alexander Hay,[4]	July 4th
,,	W. Nannijnk,[5]	Aug. 16th
,,	H. Mackay [as colonel],	Aug. 27th
,,	[W^{m} Dormel, adjutant][6]	Sep. 4th
,,	[Thos. Browne, adjutant],[7]	Oct. 13th
,,	J. Colyear [as sergt.-major],	Nov. 16th
,,	Jo. Wachope [as sergt.-major],	Nov. 17th
,,	J. Douglas,[8]	Dec. 3d
1678	J. A. Lauder [as lieu^{t}.-colonel],	Jan. 6th
,,	Jacob Macquay,	Jan. 12th
,,	(James Douglas, by proxy) [as lieut.-colonel],	Jan. 18th
,,	(Gerard Volkerse, Provost-Marshal),	Jan. 22d
,,	B. Balfour [as sergt.-major],	Jan. 25th
,,	Sommervaul,	June 13th
,,	G. Lauder,	Dec. 5th
,,	B. Balfour [as lieut.-colonel],	,,
,,	T. Levingstone [as sergt.-major],	,,
,,	Jo. Buchan,	Dec. 7th
1679	Jo. Wachog,	Jan. 5th
,,	C. Bruce,	May 1st
,,	John Clerk,	May 1st
,,	Alexander Levingston,	May 10th
,,	Wilhelm Schaep,[9]	Oct. 5th
1680	Walt. Bowie,	Jan. 6th
,,	Ja. Douglas als Col.,	March 22d
,,	Will. Middleton als S^{t}-Major,	,, ,,
,,	Jo. Wauchop als L^{t}-Col.,	March 23d
,,	T. Maxwell,	April 15th
,,	(Alexander Bruce, by proxy),	Aug. 8th
1681	T. Dalyell,	Sept 18th
,,	L. M^{c}Lame,[10]	Dec. 16th

[1] In succession to P. Wrohy.
[2] In succession to A. van Eesinga.
[3] In succession to Barent Sygers.
[4] In succession to Pieter Bloem.
[5] In succession to Cornelis Stuart.
[6] In succession to William Nanningh.
[7] In succession to Walter Corbet.
[8] John Douglas, in succession to Champfleury.
[9] In succession to Charles Ernest van Lens.
[10] 'Lauchlan MacLean of Coll,' says Douglas (*Baronage*), 'was a man of a rare military genius. He went over to Holland with some of his own men and soon got the command of a company. He returned to Scotland in the reign of King James VII., and was unfortunately drowned in the water of Lochy in Lochaber, *anno* 1687.'

1682	B. Balfour,	July 3d
,,	W. Douglas,	Oct. 6th
1683	Jo. Buchan [as sergt.-major],	Jan. 13th
,,	David Colyear [as lieut.-colonel],	Jan. 14th
,,	Jo. Gordon,	,,
,,	Middleton (James),	July 30th
,,	Gavin Hamilton,	Sep. 21st
,,	Richard Coningham,	Dec. 22d
1684	B. Balfour [as colonel],	Feb. 16th
,,	T. Levingstone [as lieut.-colonel],	,,
,,	Jo. Coningham [as sergt.-major),	,,
,,	Harrie Balfour,	,,
,,	Tho. Hamilton,	July 18th
,,	Aen. Mackay,	Nov. 28th
1685	Jo. Wauchope [as colonel],	April 9th
,,	Will. Middleton [as lieut.-colonel],	,,
,,	Geo. Ramsay [as sergt.-major],	April 13th
,,	J. Ramsay,	April 14th
,,	Maurice Plunkett,	Aug. 18th
,,	W. Corbett,	,,
,,	Geo. Hamiltone,	Dec. 3d
,,	Geo. Lauder [as sergt.-major],	Dec. 13th
1686	Areskine (Thos.).	May 22d
,,	Jo. Dalyell,	Sep. 5th
1687	Ja. Mackay [as sergt -major],	Sep. 8th
,,	Geo. Ramsay [as lieut.-colonel],	Sep. 10th
1688	Cardross (Lord, Henry Erskine),	March 29th
,,	Wm. Miln,	,,
,,	J. Ferguson,	April 1st
,,	J. Sommervail,	April 20th
,,	Walter Murray,	,,
,,	D. Ca. Auchinbroch,	May 22d

1676	
Holland.	*Foot*
Johan Kirckpatrick, Col.	
Everwyn Kirckpatrick, L^{t}-Col.	
Johan Alex. Lauder, S^{t}-Major[1]	

1680	
Holland.	*Foot*
Johan Kirckpatrick, Col.	
Bartholt Balfour, L^{t}-Col.[2]	
Thos. Levingston, S^{t}-Major	

[1] John Alexander Lauder took oath as captain on the repartition of Vriesland, March 14th, 1670. Sergeant-Major in succession to Anthony Wylde, deceased, on November 23rd, 1674. Lieut.-Colonel January 6th, 1678, dating from May 10th, 1677. Succeeded by B. Balfour, December 5th, 1678. Son of Lieut.-Colonel George Lauder (p. 326), and brother of George Lauder, who subsequently commanded the regiment. (Petition by Brigadier Lauder, January 31st, 1708. The brigadier states that five of his brothers fell in the service of the States.)

[2] Barthold Balfour took oath as captain in succession to Sergeant-Major Savorny, November 14th, 1676; became sergeant-major, January 25th, 1678; lieut.-colonel, December 5th, 1678, and succeeded to the command of old Major-General Kirkpatrick's regiment (formerly Lord Buccleuch's) on February 16th, 1684. Commanded the regiment on the voyage to England in 1688; acted as brigadier in the Scottish campaign; and was killed at Killiecrankie. In 1681 he was appointed 'Major-Commander of the town and garrison of Breda.' He was probably son of Colonel Sir Philip Balfour (p. 232), and grandson of Col. Bartholomew Balfour, who commanded the old regiment from 1585 to 1594 (p. 48). See petition by Charles Balfour, son of Sir William Balfour of Pitcullo (p. 76).

1676	
Holland.	*Foot*
Hendrick van Boeckhoven	
Caspar de Maurignault	
Johan Pyl	
Thos. Levingston	
Abraham Esinga	
Isbrandt Laignier	
Nicolaes Schraffer	
Johan Mourray [1]	

1680	
Holland.	*Foot*
	Geo. Lauder [2]
	Johan Bruce [3]
	Alex. Bruce [4]
	John Sommeral [5]
	Fred. Kuningham [6]
	Ferdinandt van Casteren [7]
	Alex. Levingstone [8]
	Johan Mourray

[1] John Murray succeeded Sergeant-Major Wylde as captain, November 9th, 1674, was dead by July[2nd, 1682, when he was succeeded by Bartholt Balfour.

[2] George Lauder, son of Lieut.-Colonel George Lauder (p. 326), took oath as captain, December 5th, 1678, in succession to his brother, Lieut.-Colonel J. A. Lauder; became sergeant-major, December 13th, 1685, in succession to John Cunningham, who had succeeded Thomas Livingston on February 16th, 1684; served as lieut.-colonel in the Scots campaign, and succeeded Brigadier Balfour as colonel after Killiecrankie. Wounded and taken prisoner at St. Omer. Taken prisoner at Steinkirk; wounded and taken prisoner at Landen. Commanded the regiment until 1716, when he was succeeded by A. Halkett. Brigadier, 1702. On December 17th, 1690, a petition was presented to the Scots Privy Council by 'Colonel Lauder's lady,' craving that her husband should be decerned to pay her an aliment. It was 'recommended to the Lord Fountainhall [himself a Lauder], and the Laird of Blackbarony, to meet and speak with the pairtyes, and see if they can agree the pairtyes, and report.' On January 6th, 1691, Colonel Lauder was decerned to pay an aliment to Elizabeth Wilhelmina van Gent, his wife. In recommending him to Lord Melville, Mackay wrote: 'He is certainly brave and affectioned to his Majesty's service as any to whom he can give the regiment.' Major-General in Dutch service from April 14th, 1704. Lieut.-General from January 1st, 1709. (Petition by him dated January 31st, 1708, vol. ii.)

[3] John Bruce took oath, June 21st, 1677. Succeeded by Gavin Hamilton, September 20th, 1683.

[4] Alexander Bruce succeeded John Pyll, May 1677; took oath, August 8th, 1680; succeeded by James Middleton, July 30th, 1683.

[5] John Sommervail took oath, June 13th, 1678, in succession to his Captain J. Kirkpatrick; succeeded by Richard Cunningham, December 22nd, 1683.

[6] Frederick Cuninghame took oath, June 10th, 1677, succeeding Peter Livingstone, retired, and became major of Colonel Henry Gage's regiment of foot in 1688 (September 27th).

[7] Ferdinand van Casteren took oath, February 26th, 1676.

[8] Sir Alexander Livingstone took oath, May 10th, 1679, as captain of the company of Alexander Hay, and commanded by Henry Livingstone, new enlistment, from January 30th, 1675, formerly lieutenant. Brother of Sir Thomas Livingstone, Lord Teviot, whom he succeeded as Baronet. Left issue two daughters, who both married in Holland, and their posterity are heirs of line of the Livingstones of Jerviswood in Scotland (Douglas's *Peerage*). In September 1693 Alexander Livingstone was appointed lieut.-colonel of Ferguson's regiment (the Cameronians), in which he served at Blenheim.

1676	1680
Holland. Foot	*Holland. Foot*
Cornelis Stuart [1]	Cornelis Stuart
Alex. Colyer, Col.	Alex. Colyer, Col.
Hugo Macquay, L^{t}-Col.[2]	James Douglas, L^{t}-Col.
Wm. MaDouwel, S^{t}-Major[3]	Johan Wacop, S^{t}-Major[5]
David Colyaer [4] *	David Colyaer

[1] Cornelis Stuart succeeded Captain Creuzet on November 14th, 1674.

[2] Hugh Mackay of Scourie, third son of Colonel Hugh Mackay of Scourie, born 1640, who had previously served in the French (Royal Scots) service, and also in the service of Venice, was appointed captain and lieut.-colonel on March 19th, 1675, in place of Lieut.-Colonel and Captain Balentyn, dating as captain from October 12th, 1674, and as lieut.-colonel from January 8th, 1675 (Colyear's regiment). In 1677 he was appointed colonel in succession to Henry Graham of the old (Sir William Brog's and Sir Henry Balfour's) regiment, dating from April 28th. In 1685, when the Brigade went to England in connection with Monmouth's rebellion, he was appointed major-general by King James, and, on February 7th, 1686, took oath as such before the President of the States-General. Commanded the British Brigade of six regiments in the expedition to England in 1688, and commanded in Scotland 1689-1691. Served in Ireland. Killed at Steinkirk, 1692.—*Life of General Hugh Mackay* by John Mackay of Rockfield; Mackay's *Memoirs of the War in Scotland*, 1689; *House and Clan of Mackay*; Manuscript Notes by John Mackay of Herriesdale, communicated by Dr. George Mackay, Edinburgh).

'He was,' says Burnet, 'a man of such strict principles that he would not serve in a war he did not think lawful. He took great care of his soldiers' morals, and forced them to be both sober and just in their quarters. He spent all the time that he was master of in secret prayer and in reading the Scriptures.' King William attended his funeral, and, when the body was laid in the grave, said, 'There he lies, and an honester man the world cannot produce.'

[3] William M'Dougall, appointed sergeant-major of Colyear's regiment, April 9th, 1674, was succeeded in 1677.

[4] Sir David Colyear, eldest son of Sir Alexander Robertson or Colyear, became lieut.-colonel of Mackay's regiment, January 14th, 1683. Was appointed colonel of 'the regiment of Scots Foot previously commanded by Colonel Wauchope' (*i.e.* King James's regiment), on December 31st, 1688, which was on the Dutch establishment during the war of the Spanish succession (vol. ii.). Sir David Colyear served under William III. in Ireland, was created Lord Portmore in 1699, and Earl of Portmore, etc., in 1703. Was commanding officer in Scotland in 1710; served in Flanders 1712; Governor of Gibraltar 1713; and colonel of Royal Scots Dragoons 1714. He married Catherine Sedley, Countess of Dorchester. He is thus characterised by John Mackay: 'He is one of the best foot officers in the world, is very brave and bold, hath a great deal of wit, very much a man of honour and nice that way, yet married the Countess of Dorchester, and had by her a good estate: pretty well shaped, dresses clean, has but one eye, towards fifty years old.'

* January 14th, 1683, transferred from reg^{t} Douglas, where he then was major, to reg^{t} Macquay, as l^{t}-col. in the place of Thos. Buchan.—Transcriber's Note.

[5] John Wauchope, son of ——— Wauchope of Niddrie, took oath on new

1676	
Holland.	*Foot*
Johan Gibson[1]	
James Douglas[2]	
Robt. Douglas[3]	
Wm. Wahop[4]*	
Wm. Middleton[5]	

1680	
Holland.	*Foot*
Johan Gibson	
Geo. Ramsay[6]	
Wm. Mourray[7]	
Jacob Macquay[8]	
Wm. Middleton	

---

enlistment, June 2nd, 1674, became sergeant-major (Colyear's), November 17th, 1677, lieut.-colonel, March 23rd, 1680, colonel, April 9th, 1685. Left the service in 1688, and received command of a new Scottish regiment raised by King James, and paid by France. Distinguished himself in the Irish campaign of 1689-1691, and subsequently fought with the Irish contingent under the Duc de Noailles in Catalonia. Killed at Marsaglia.

[1] John Gibson, captain on new enlistment from January 8th, 1675.

[2] James Douglas, captain from December 16th, 1674 (in succession to Lieut.-Colonel Mackay), became sergeant-major, November 5th, 1676, lieut.-colonel, January 15th, 1678, and colonel, in succession to Alexander Colyear, March 22nd, 1680. Was succeeded by John Wauchope, April 9th, 1685.

[3] Robert Douglas, captain from July 16th, 1674, on new enlistment. Fourth son of James, second Earl of Queensberry. Killed at the siege of Maestricht in 1676.

[4] William Wauchope does not appear in list of oaths; succeeded by William Murray as from August 26th, 1676.

* Appears only in 1676.—Transcriber's Note.

[5] William Middleton, captain from August 20th, 1674, on new enlistment, took oath, March 25th, 1675. Sergeant-Major Douglas's regiment, March 22nd, 1680, lieut.-colonel, April 9th, 1685, succeeded by George Ramsay, March 29th, 1688.

[6] Hon. George Ramsay of Carriden, younger son of George, second Earl of Dalhousie, took oath, October 31st, 1676, became sergeant-major, April 13th, 1685, lieut.-colonel, September 10th, 1689, and obtained the command of his regiment in 1688. He served in the Scots campaign of 1689. 'In 1690,' says Douglas, 'after the battle of Valcour, he was made a brigadier and colonel of the Scots regiment of Guards. In 1693, after the battle of Landen, he was made a major-general. In 1702 he was made a lieut.-general and commander-in-chief of all the forces in Scotland, in which office he died, *anno* 1705.' He was thus described by Mackay: 'He is a gentleman of a great deal of fire, and very brave; of a sanguine complexion, well shaped, and towards fifty years old [in 1702].'

[7] William Murray, formerly lieutenant, took oath, October 24th, 1676, in succession to William Wauchope. Appointed lieut.-colonel of the regiment 'before Namur, 1st July 1695.'

[8] James Mackay, brother of General Hugh Mackay, took oath, January 12th, 1678, as captain in place of Colonel Mackay transferred; became sergeant-major, September 8th, 1657 (Wauchope's regiment), and was lieut.-colonel of his brother Hugh Mackay's regiment at Killiecrankie, where he was killed.

1676	1680
Holland. Foot	*Holland. Foot*
John Hails[1]	John Wacop[3]
Jacob Wacop[2]	Eduardt Lloidt
Eduardt Lloidt	Earl Charles Bruce[4] (*sic*)
Patrick Wesley	
Guelderland. Foot	*Guelderland. Foot*
Henry Graham, Col.	Hugo Macquay, Col.
John Lamy, L^{t}-Col.	Thos. Bouchan, L^{t}-Col.[6] *
Geo. Canocke, S^{t}-Major	Johan Clerck, S^{t}-Major[7]
Alex. Colliaer[5]	Johan Lamy †
Pieter Watkin	Geo. Conocke
Jacques de Champfleury	Pieter Watkin
Johan Abrahal	Charles Graham[8]

[1] John Hailes, captain from January 1st, 1675, on new enlistment, succeeded by John Wauchope, January 5th, 1679. A John Hales became colonel of an English regiment.

[2] James Wauchope. Does not appear in list of oaths.

[3] A John Wauchope took oath on January 5th, 1679, in succession to his captain, Hailes, and Captain Wauchope was succeeded by Thomas Dalzell on September 8th, 1681.

[4] Lord C. Bruce took oath in succession to Captain Bruce on May 1st, 1679, and was succeeded by Alexander Bruce in August 1680.

[5] Alexander Colyear. Does not appear in list of oaths. A John Colyear took oath on December 23rd, 1675, and became sergeant-major, November 16th, 1677, of Mackay's regiment.

[6] Thomas Buchan was third son of James Buchan of Auchmacoy, Aberdeenshire. He had previously served in France in the Royal Scots regiment (commission as captain, dated May 15th, 1671, preserved at Auchmacoy). Does not appear in oath list. He retired from the Dutch service as lieut.-colonel, being recalled by a letter from the Earl of Moray, dated Whitehall, December 17th, 1682, the address on which shows that he was then serving as lieut.-colonel of Mackay's regiment in Holland (*Auchmacoy Papers*). Was lieut.-colonel of the Royal Scots Fusiliers, December 7th, 1682, and colonel, July 29th, 1686 (commissions at Auchmacoy). Brigadier-General, November 12th, 1688. Adhered to King James, and was appointed major-general and sent from Ireland after Killiecrankie to supersede Cannon as commander of the Jacobite army in Scotland. Surprised and defeated by Sir Thomas Livingstone at Cromdale, May 1st, 1690. Retired to France, and died in 1721 at Ardlogie, in Fyvie, Aberdeenshire He married Elizabeth, daughter of Patrick Urquhart of Meldrum, and widow of Sir George Gordon of Gight.

* Thos. Bouchan from 1679-1686 l^{t}-col. and cap^{n}, succeeded by David Colyer as l^{t}-col., and by John Gordon as cap^{n}, has probably never taken oath. He retired voluntarily.—Transcriber's Note.

[7] John Clerk took oath, May 1st, 1679.

† This is the comp^{y} of L^{t}-Col. Lamy, which went to Walterus Boye, January 6th, 1680.—Transcriber's Note.

[8] Sir Charles Graham, formerly captain-lieutenant of Colonel Graham, took

Guelderland. Foot	*Guelderland. Foot*
Herbert van Beaumont	Johan Abrahal
Van Brocknel Floid [*sic*]	Johan Bouchan[2]
Mauritz Halquet	Wm. Schaep
Henry Graham, jr.	Everhardt Halquet[3]
Andreas Bruyse [Bruce][1]	Henry Graham
	Alex. Lamy[4]

oath May 10th, 1675, in succession to B. Lloyd. Brigade-Major to English and Scots Brigades in Flanders, April 1st, 1691. Succeeded Hon. George Ramsay in command of his regiment, September 1st, 1691. 'Broke' in 1697.

[1] Andrew Bruce, captain in succession to Robert Lennox from August 17th, 1636. Succeded by Alexander Lamy, April 28th, 1677.

[2] John Buchan (of Cairnbulg), brother of Thomas Buchan, took oath, December 7th, 1678, as captain in succession to John Douglas of Mackay's, became serg.-major, January 13th, 1683 (Mackay's regiment), and served as lieut.-colonel of Ramsay's regiment in the Scots' campaign. Recommended for promotion by General Mackay along with Major Ferguson in 1690. Appointed colonel of a newly raised Scots regiment of foot, in succession to Richard Cunningham, who was transferred to a dragoon regiment in 1691, with which he served in Flanders till the Peace of Ryswick. His regiment suffered severely at Namur in 1695, and was disbanded in 1697. There are at Auchmacoy two portraits, one of Major-General Thomas Buchan, and the other of his brother, Colonel John. The one shows a red sash, and the other an orange one. Colonel John Buchan married a Dutch lady (Thanage of Fermartyn). Mackay wrote to Portland on June 5th, 1690: 'S'il arrive icy quelque vacance je vous prie de vous souvenir de Monsieur Buchan qui est un des plus sensées officiers que j'ay avec moy, et merit fort bien un regiment, estant affectionné au service et capable de le mettre sur un bon pied quand meme il en eut qui ne valut guere.'

[3] Everard Halket took oath, October 3rd, 1676, in succession to his father, Maurits Halket.

Edward Halket (son of Captain Maurice, killed at Maestricht 1675) says the family genealogy, 'married Judith de Pagniet, a lady of Guelderland. He was lieut.-colonel in General Colyear's regiment, and was killed at the battle of Ramillies in 1706.'

[4] Alexander Lamy, formerly ensign, took oath, June 15th, 1677, in succession to his captain, Andrew Bruce. Captain Lamy, of Mackay's regiment, was killed at Killiecrankie. 'He was a brave man, and had lately taken himself up so well that I was resolved to recommend him for his advancement when occasion should offer' (Mackay in recommending his widow).

1688[1]

Holland. Voetvolck	men	monthly pay
Henry Balfour[2]	55	£882
Bartholt Balfour, Coll.	,,	,,
Thomas Levingston, Lt. Coll.	,,	,,
Bartholt Balfour[3]	,,	,,
Thomas Arskyn[4]	,,	,,
Gavin Hamilton[5]	,,	,,
Ferdinandt Cuningham	,,	,,
Alexander Levingston	,,	,,
Willem Mammy[6]	,,	,,
Richard Cunningham[7]	,,	,,
George Louder, sergt. Major van Balfour	55	£882
Patrix Balfour, Major[8]	,,	,,
George Robbert Coutis[9]	,,	,,
Johan Watkin	,,	,,
Ulrigh Ulrighson	,,	,,
Alexander Stuart[10]	,,	,,
Johan Wacob, Collonel	55	£993 4 10
William Middleton, Lt. Coll.	,,	,,
George Ramsay, Major	,,	,,
George Hamilton[11]	,,	,,

[1] This list is given complete including the officers of the English regiments.

[2] Henry Balfour, third son of John, third Lord Balfour of Burleigh, appointed captain in succession to J. Kirkpatrick from May 6th, 1683. Left and was succeeded by Walter Murray, April 20th, 1688. Captain in Wauchope's Scots Foot, 1688. Captain in the Scots Greys, 1st March 1689.

[3] Barthold Balfour succeeded John Murray, deceased, as captain, May 16th 1682. Lieut.-colonel, 1689. Taken prisoner at Killiecrankie, wounded at Steinkirk, killed at Landen.

[4] Thomas Erskine, captain in succession to James Middleton, May 20th, 1686, who had on July 30th, 1683 succeeded Alexander Bruce, who again had succeeded Charles Lord Bruce on May 24th, 1680.

[5] Gavin Hamilton, captain, September 20th, 1683, in succession to John Bruce. See note, *infra*. Left in 1688, and became captain in Colonel John Wauchope's Scots Foot.

[6] William Mammy or Nanning.

[7] Richard Cunningham, captain, December 22nd, 1683, in succession to John Sommervel, appointed major of the Earl of Selkirk's late regiment of horse, December 31st, 1688. Colonel of a new-raised foot regiment in Scotland in 1689, and on its disbandment of a regiment of dragoons (now the 7th Hussars), December 30th, 1690. Brigadier-General, June 1st, 1696, served in Holland in command of a cavalry brigade, succeeded in command of his regiment by William Lord Jedburgh, 1st October 1696.

[8] Patrick Balfour. Probably son of Lieut.-Colonel James Balfour. See notes, pp. 44 and 320.

[9] George Robert Coutts. Untraced. Probably one of the family long connected with the Brigade.

[10] Alexander Stuart. Untraced.

[11] George Hamilton, captain, December 3rd, 1683 (formerly ensign), in succession to Thomas Hamilton, who had succeeded Colonel Douglas as captain on July 18th, 1684. He or Gavin Hamilton was succeeded by James Ferguson in 1688. The statement in the Commission Book makes Ferguson succeed George Hamilton, and Ferguson's commission (preserved at Kinmundy) appoints him to

	men	monthly pay
Johan Clercq[1] .	55	£993 4 10
William Murray .	,,	,,
Wolterus Corbet[2] .	,,	,,
Johan Ramsay[3] .	,,	,,
Jacob Macquay .	,,	,,
William Douglas[4] .	,,	,,
John Dayel[5] .	,,	,,
Maurice Plunket[6] .	,,	,,
Thomas Monck, Coll.	,,	,,
Godefriet Lloidt, Lieut.-Col. .	,,	,,
Eduard Lloidt, Major .	,,	,,
William Parsons, Lt. Col. van den Coll. Canon .	,,	,,
John Bernardy .	,,	,,
James Depuis .	55	£993 4 10
Davidt Bermvald .	,,	,,
Willem Saxby .	,,	,,
Willem Thaylor .	,,	,,
Sacharias Custus .	,,	,,
Johan Schelton .	,,	,,
Eduart Wiltson .	,,	,,
Henry Bellasise, Coll.	,,	,,
Philip Babbingston, Lt. Coll. .	,,	,,
Dionicius Macilli-cuddy, Major .	,,	,,
Salomon Slator .	,,	,,
Humphry Lanham .	,,	,,
Thomas Norgate .	,,	,,
Eduart Duttoncolt .	,,	,,

'the company of Captain George Hamilton which is now vacant.' But George Hamilton is, and Gavin Hamilton is not found in the lists of the regiments as they embarked in 1688, and while Ferguson was in Balfour's regiment, in which Gavin Hamilton had served, George Hamilton was then in Ramsay's, in which he had been originally commissioned.

Captain George Hamilton (formerly of Wauchope's Scots Dutch) received a commission as captain in Wauchope's Scots Foot in 1688. 'Probably,' says Dalton, 'the George Hamilton appointed colonel of a regiment of foot in Ireland in 1690, afterwards disbanded.' Possibly also the George Hamilton, who commanded a Scots regiment in the Dutch service, 1697-1699 and 1701-1716.

[1] John Clerk. See p. 509, n. 7.

[2] Walter Corbet, captain, August 18th, 1685, in place of John Gibson, served in Scotland, 1689, and Flanders, 1691-96. Major of Lauder's regiment, 1st August 1692. Lieut.-Colonel of Mackay's, May 1st, 1694. Major of the Scots Guards, July 1st, 1697.

[3] Hon. John Ramsay, second son of George, second Earl of Dalhousie, captain, April 14th, 1685, in place of John Sommervel [*sic*], was succeeded by Lord Cardross, March 27th, 1688.

[4] William Douglas, captain, October 6th, 1682, in place of Lord Bruce [*sic*].

[5] John Dalyell, third son of General Thomas Dalyell of Binns, captain, September 5th, 1686, in place of Thomas Dalyell who had on September 8th, 1681, succeeded Captain Wauchope. He left in 1688, and was succeeded by Sir D. Campbell of Auchinbreck. Captain 1688, in Wauchope's Scots regiment, and lieut.-colonel 1689. Lieut.-Colonel of R. Mackay's regiment (the Scots Fusiliers) May 29th, 1695, and killed commanding it at Blenheim, 1704.

[6] Maurice Plunket, captain, August 18th, 1685, in place of Thomas Maxwell, who had succeeded Colonel Colyear as captain on April 15th, 1680. Left in 1688, and was appointed Captain in Roger M'Elligott's Irish regiment of foot. Captain in his kinsman Lord Louth's regiment of foot in King James's Irish army in 1689.

	men	monthly pay
Robbert Godwyn	55	£993 4 10
Luke Lillingston	,,	,,
Ventrus Columbine	,,	,,
Arthur Babbingston	,,	,,
Thomas Walsingham	,,	,,

Tractementen (*Holland*)

Bartholomeus Balfour. .	£200
Thomas Levingston, Lieut. Coll.	80
George Lauder, Major .	60
[Patrix Balfour, Major .	60]
Johan Wacob, Collonel .	200
William Middleton, Lt. Coll.	80
Jacob Macquay, Major .	60
Thomas Monck, Coll. .	200
Godefriet LLoidt, Lieut. Coll.	80
Eduart LLoidt, Major .	60
Henry Bellasise, Coll. .	200
Thomas Zulyaert, Lieut. Coll.	80
Dionicius Machellicuddy, Major	60

Zeeland

	men	monthly pay
De Hr. Graeff van de Osserye Collonel sonder Compie		
Alexander Canon, Collonel .	55	£993 4 10
Willem Connock, Major . .	,,	,,
James Stanley .	,,	,,
Johan Farwel . .	,,	,,
Johan Cunningham .	,,	,,
Willem Graham .	,,	,,
Thomas Brudnel .	,,	,,
Rogier Macelligod	,,	,,
Emanuel Scroophour	,,	,,
Johan Graham . .	,,	,,
Robbert Pierson .	,,	,,
Henry de Caumont, marquis de Rade	,,	,,

(Exhibitum den 23*rd Octob.* 1688.)

1689

Extraordinary State of War (*Supplement*)

Holland. Voetvolk

	men	monthly pay
Barthold Balfour, Collonel . .	16	£184
Thomas Levingston, Lt ,, Coll. . . .	,,	,,
George Lauder, St Major	,,	,,
Bartholdt Balfour .	,,	,,

	men	monthly pay
Ferdinand van Castere	16	£184
Fredrick Cuningham .	,,	,,
Alexander Levingston .	,,	,,
William Mammy .	,,	,,
Richard Cunigham .	,,	,,
Thomas Arskyn . .	,,	,,
Jacob Ferguson[1] . .	,,	,,

[1] James Ferguson of Balmakelly and Kirktonhill, younger son of William Ferguson of Baddifurrow, M.P. for Inverurie 1660. After service as a subaltern received his commission as captain on 1st April 1688, served in the Scots campaign of 1689, promoted major after Killiecrankie; commanded expedition to west coast, and defeated the Jacobites in Mull, 1690. Received lieut.-colonelcy of Monro's (formerly Angus's) regiment, the Cameronians, after Steinkirk, August 1692, and succeeded Monro as colonel in 1693. His regiment was temporarily in the Dutch service, 1697-1699, and a commission in it as captain in Dutch is in possession of his descendant, Mr. Ferguson of Kinmundy. 'Led up the first line of foot,' in the assault of the Schellenberg, and commanded a brigade at Blenheim in 1704. Major-General 1705. Died suddenly when in command of the garrison at Bois-le-Duc in 1705, having just returned from the Hague where the Duke of Marlborough had 'acquainted him that he was going now to

	men	monthly pay
Walther Murray[1]	16	£184
George Robbert Coutis	,,	,,
Alexander Stuart	,,	,,

Engelse Compagnien

[English Companies][2]

	men	monthly pay
William Middleton, Lt Coll. . .	16	£220 8 8
George Ramsay, St Major . .	,,	,,
George Hamilton .	,,	,,
Johan Clercq .	,,	,,
William Murray .	,,	,,
Wolterus Corbett	,,	,,
Jacob Macquay .	,,	,,
William Douglas .	,,	,,
Godefriet La Loidt, Lt Coll. . .	,,	,,
Eduart Lloidt, St Major . .	,,	,,
William Persons, Lt Coll., van den Coll. Canon .	,,	,,
Willem Thaylor .	16	£220 18 8
Sacharias Custus, .	,,	,,
Henry Bellasise, Collonel . .	,,	,,
Philip Babinghton, Lt Coll. . .	,,	,,
Dionicius Machelly-Cuddy, St. Major	,,	,,
Johan Slator . .	,,	,,
Humphry Lankam	,,	,,
Thomas Norgate .	,,	,,
Eduart Duttoncolt .	,,	,,
Robbert Godwyn .	,,	,,
Licke Lillingston .	,,	,,
Ventrus Columbine	,,	,,
Thomas Walsingham . . .	,,	,,
Pieter Sanders .	,,	,,
Thomas Lolmach .	,,	,,
Henry, Lord Cardros	,,	,,
William Mil . .	,,	,,
William Lanwer .	,,	,,

declare him major-general and would send him the Queen's commission so soon as he got to London, but left him here this winter to command in chief all the British troops as well horse and foot on this side.' Buried in the chancel of St. John's Cathedral there. Married, first, Helen Drummond (of Cultmalindie), and, second, Hester Elisabeth Hibelet, a Dutch lady of Bois-le-Duc. His estates in Kincardineshire were sold by his son, who acquired instead those of Kinmundy and Coynach in Buchan. (*Two Scottish Soldiers*: Aberdeen, D. Wyllie and Son. 1888. *Records of Clan and Name of Fergusson*: Edinburgh, D. Douglas. 1895.) Described by General Mackay as '*personne de probité et d'honneur comme aussi bien affectionné au service de votre Majesté*' and as a 'resolute, well-affected officer, to whose discretion and intelligence he trusted much,' and by Marlborough as '*un officier de mérite pour lequel j'avais beaucoup d'estime, et que je ne puis assez regretter. Le public y a une grande perte.*' 'All the English themselves,' wrote one of his own officers, 'allowed he was by much the best officer we had in all the British troops. He was brave, knew the service, had great and long experience in thirty years' constant service, and the Duke was so sensible of this that when he had anything difficult or of importance to do he constantly employed him, even out of his turn.' (Hist. Manuscript Com., Fifteenth Rep., App. Part iv.) A series of his commissions in the Dutch Brigade (1677-1688) and his commission as lieut.-colonel of the Cameronians in 1692 are preserved at Kinmundy. His commission as colonel (1693) is at Pitfour.

[1] Walter Murray succeeded Henry Balfour as captain on April 20th, 1688. Senior captain in 1694.

[2] *Sic.* But as often occurs some of the Scots and English names are mixed. It has been thought better to give the lists in full as transcribed.

	men	monthly pay
Thomas Burroughs.	16	£220 18 8
Johan Saumerwael	,,	,,
Robbert Ciul . .	,,	,,
Thomas Handeside.	,,	,,
S[r] Duncan Campel van Aughenbreck	,,	,,
Robbert Jackson .	,,	,,
Bolfsy Sikes. . .	,,	,,

Zeeland

Engelsche [English]

	men	monthly pay
Den Grave van d'Ossery, Collonel sonder Compagnie		
Alexander Canon, Coll. . . .	16	£220 18 8
Johan Nivile . .	16	£220 18 8
James Stanley .	,,	,,
Johan Warwel .	,,	,,
Johan Cunningham	,,	,,
Willem Graham .	,,	,,
Thomas Brudnel .	,,	,,
Anthony Hudson .	,,	,,
Emanuel Scroophours . . .	,,	,,
Jan Cuts . . .	,,	,,
Robbert Pierson, Major van Coll. Canon . .	,,	,,
Henry de Caeumont, Marquis de Rade .	,,	,,

Formation of the three Scottish Reg[ts] at the time of departure in 1688 *conform to the State of War* 1689 (*exhibit April* 18*th*) except for what may be considered as an error, where Miln is put as colonel in the place of Wachop, and again as l[t]-colonel in the place of Ramsay) *and* conform *to Commission book H.*8.[1]

---

[1] This list, made up by the transcriber with care from the various Dutch documents, still requires correction to make it an accurate statement of the regiments at the actual time of departure.

Mackay's Regiment.—John Gordon, Henry Graham, and Æneas Mackay (the last probably with ulterior purposes in view) had all left the Brigade, and received commissions in Wauchope's Scots Foot, raised in 1688 for King James and paid by France.

In the list given in Dalton's *English Army Lists and Commission Registers*, 1661-1714, Alex. Lamy and Willem Schaep do not appear, but the names of the four following lieutenants are given:

Robert Mackay, younger brother of Captain Æneas Mackay, and son of the second Lord Reay and a nephew of General Mackay. Captain of grenadier company after the Revolution. Received eight broadsword wounds at Killiecrankie, and was left for dead on the field. Major 1689, and appointed to Colonel Earle's Foot, with which he served in Ireland. Lieut.-Colonel 1694. Served in Flanders, and appointed colonel of the Scottish Fusiliers, 13th November 1695. Died at Tongue, December 1696.

— Campbell. Boyer states that 'at Wincanton, in November 1688, twenty-five of the Prince of Orange's men, commanded by one Cambell, a lieutenant in Mackay's regiment, routed a detachment of seventy horse and fifty dragoons of the royal army commanded by Clifford, Sarsfield, and Webb.'

— Mackenzie, captain, lieutenant at Killiecrankie, where he was killed.

Angus Mackay, captain at Killiecrankie, where he was killed.

Captain Lamy was killed at Killiecrankie.

		Guelderland.	*Foot* men	Glds	Pay Glds	
	Hugo Macquay, Col.		55	882	300	
	Davidt Collyaert, Lt Col.		,,	,,	100	
	John Bouchan, St Major		,,	,,	80	
	John Gordon[1]		,,	,,	,,	Per current month
	Walterus Boye[2]		,,	,,	,,	
Dec. 13th, 1673	Geo. Conocke		,,	,,	,,	
Nov. 28th, 1684	Æneas Macquay[3]		,,	,,	,,	
March 8th, 1662	Petrus Watkin[4]		,,	,,	,,	
Aug. 3rd, 1673	Henry Graham		,,	,,	,,	
May 10th, 1675	Charles Graham		,,	,,	,,	
Oct. 2nd, 1676	Everhard Hacquet		,,	,,	,,	
June 15th, 1677	Alex. Lamy		,,	,,	,,	
Oct. 5th, 1679	Willem Schaep		,,	,,	,,	

Per month of 42 days

		Holland.	*Foot* men	Glds	Pay Glds	
	Bartholt Balfour, Col.[5]		55	882	300	
	Thos. Levingston, Lt Col.		,,	,,	100	
	Geo. Lauder, St Major		,,	,,	80	
April 20th, 1688	Walter Murray		,,	,,	,,	Per current month

Per month of 42 days

[1] John Gordon, captain, January 14th, 1683, in place of Thomas Buchan, retired. Left service 1688, and appointed captain in Wauchope's Scots Foot. A Captain John Gordon fought in James II.'s army in Ireland. A John Mudie received a commission in his place on 20th April 1688.—Dalton, p. 239.

[2] Walter Macdonald Bowie, captain, January 6th, 1680, in place of Lieut.-Colonel Lamy, promoted lieut.-colonel in respect of services in the Scots campaign, 24th September 1690. Served at Steinkirk and Landen. Lieut.-Colonel of George Hamilton's Scots Foot, 1st June 1695.

[3] The Hon. Æneas Mackay, second son of John, second Lord Reay, and Barbara, daughter of Colonel Hugh Mackay of Scourie, captain, November 28th, 1684, in place of Lauchlan MacLean, who had succeeded John Abrahal on December 16th, 1681. He left Holland in 1688, and accepted a company in Colonel Wauchope's new regiment of Scots Foot, but was suspected and thrown into prison. After the Revolution he was appointed major of the Scots Greys, and served in the Scots campaign. Lieut.-Colonel of General Hugh Mackay's (his uncle's) regiment, 1691. Present at Aghrim, and wounded at Steinkirk. Succeeded his uncle as colonel, August 1st, 1692. Brigadier-General 1695. Died at Bath in 1697, owing to wounds received in action. He married, in 1692, Margaret, daughter of Lieut.-Colonel Baron Francis Puchler and Jacoba de Bie. His son Donald afterwards commanded the same regiment.

[4] Peter Watkins left the regiment as major after Steinkirk, and was succeeded by Hugh Macdonald.

[5] *Balfour's Regiment.*—The list requires correction. Ferdinand Cunningham (as well as Gavin Hamilton and Henry Balfour, who had both been appointed to Wauchope's Scots Foot) had left, and been appointed to Gage's regiment.

		men	Glds	Pay	Glds	
May 20th, 1686	Thos. Arskyn	55	882		80	Per current month
April 1st, 1688	Jacob Ferguson	,,	,,	Per month of 42 days	,,	
Feb. 26th, 1676	Ferdinand Cuningham . . .	,,	,,		,,	
May 10th, 1679	Alex. Levingston	,,	,,		,,	
Aug. 16th, 1677	Wm. Nanning	,,	,,		,,	
Dec. 22nd, 1683	Richard Cuningham . . .	,,	,,		,,	

		men	Glds	s.	d.	Pay	Glds	
	Johan Wachop, Col.[1] . .	55	993	4	10		300	
	Geo. Ramsay, Lt Col. . .	,,		,,			100	
	Jacob Mackay, St Major [2] .	,,		,,		Per month of 42 days	80	Per current month
March 29th, 1688	Wm. Miln [3]	,,		,,			,,	
May 1st, 1679	Johan Clercq	,,		,,			,,	
Oct. 24th, 1676	Wm. Murray	,,		,,			,,	
Aug. 18th, 1685	Walterus Corbet . . .	,,		,,			,,	
Oct. 6th, 1682	Wm. Douglas	,,		,,			,,	
Dec. 3rd, 1685	Geo. Hamilton	,,		,,			,,	
Aug. 27th, 1687	John Gibson [4] . . .	,,		,,			,,	

Dalton's list omits Walter Murray and James Ferguson, but includes Hamilton, Balfour, and Cunningham. It also gives Barthold Balfour, junior, whose name is in the preceding State of War. An Alexander Gordon received a commission as captain on April 13th, 1688, in place of Ferdinand Cunningham.

It also mentions two lieutenants, *Arnault* (Arnot), of whom Mackay, writing on August 30th, 1689, says, 'one Lieutenant Arnault of Balfour's regiment hath behaved himself very honestly, . . . he had his colonel's promise to be recommended to the first vacant company of his regiment'; and Chambers, who was killed at Killiecrankie.

[1] *Wauchope's*, now *Ramsay's* Regiment.—Colonel Wauchope had left, and received the command of the new Scots Foot. Dalton's list gives Wauchope colonel, Middleton lieut.-colonel, George Hamilton, John Dalyell, and Maurice Plunket, who all left in 1688. Hamilton and Dalyell both received companies in Wauchope's Scots Foot, and Plunket one in an Irish regiment. It also gives John Ramsay, who had been succeeded by Lord Cardross. It omits Miln, Gibson, Lord Cardross, Somerville, who succeeded Plunket, and Sir D. Campbell, who succeeded Dalyell. It also mentions one of the lieutenants, James Colt, who was taken prisoner at Killiecrankie. The list in the text, to be accurate, at the time of departure should omit Colonel Wauchope and Captain Hamilton.

John Clerk does not appear in any subsequent list, and Miln cannot be further traced.

[2] James Mackay, brother of Major-General Hugh Mackay, whom he succeeded as captain of a company by commission dated January 12th, 1678, his service to date from May 4th, 1677. Sergeant-Major of Wauchope's regiment September 8th, 1687. Killed at Killiecrankie, commanding his brother's regiment as lieut.-colonel.

[3] William Miln, captain in place of Colonel John Wauchope or Lieut.-Colonel Middleton, retired on March 29th, 1688.

[4] John Gibson, captain, August 27th, 1687.

		men	Glds	s.	d.	Per month of 42 days	Pay Glds	Per current month
March 27th, 1688	Henry, Lord Cardross[1] . .	55	993	4	10		80	
April 20th, 1688	John Summerwail[2] . .	,,	,,				,,	
May 22nd, 1688	Sir Duncan Campbell of Auchenbrect[3]	,,	,,				,,	

[1] Henry, third Lord Cardross (whose son succeeded to the earldom of Buchan) received a commission as captain in place of John Ramsay on March 27th, 1688. He took an active part in the Revolution, and shortly afterwards raised a troop of dragoons.

[2] John Somerville, second son of James, eleventh Lord Somerville, succeeded Maurice Plunket as captain on April 20th, 1688. He became lieut.-colonel of the regiment before 1692.

[3] Sir Duncan Campbell of Auchinbreck succeeded John Dalyell as captain on May 22nd, 1688. He had been forfeited in 1686. Was appointed lieut.-colonel to the Earl of Argyll's regiment in 1689.

II

PAPERS ILLUSTRATING THE POSITION OF THE BRIGADE DURING THE WAR WITH THE ENGLISH COMMONWEALTH.

1652-1653.

New oath for the English and Scots.

Secret Resolutions of States-General.

1652, *August* 22.—After discussion it was resolved and agreed hereby to commission and request Messrs. van der Cappelle te Ryssel, van Beverningh and van der Hoolcke, in conjunction with certain members of the Council of State, to be nominated by themselves, to draw up a form of oath for the English and Scots soldiers in the service of this country applicable to the present conjuncture of time and situation of affairs. Also to consider at the same time how the said English and Scots soldiers may best and most conveniently be converted into Dutch companies. And this resolution of their High Mightinesses is to be published without reconsideration.

Resolutions of States-General.

1653, *September* 29.—Mr. Schoock, deputy of the Province of Gelderland, at the express command of their High Mightinesses the States, his principals, at present met at Zutphen for business of State, urged and insisted that the English and Scots foreign officers in the service of this State be cited and summoned, and have the oath administered to them, with intimation that those who remain away after the appointed time, or refuse to take the prescribed oath, be considered as discharged; and their posts open for others to fill.

Resolutions of Council of State.

October 23.—Resolution of their High Mightinesses of the 14th instant: 'The proposed form of oath for the English and Scots soldiers in the service of this country having again been brought before the meeting, also the proposals for converting the English and Scots troops into Dutch solely, it was

resolved and agreed after discussion that the said proposed Form of Oath, as well as the said proposals, be placed in the hands of the Council of State for their advice. This resolution having been read in the council, the above-mentioned proposed Form of Oath having also been examined, and everything having been discussed, it was decided to advise their High Mightinesses that the specified words standing out in the margin should be removed; and that they should only speak *in generalibus terminis*, unless it be their High Mightinesses' wish to make some such distinction in regard to the Scottish nation, as is sufficiently expressed in the further tenor of the draft-oath.

October 29.—There was read to the meeting the advice of the Council of State, drawn up at the Hague on the 23rd instant, in execution of their High Mightinesses' resolution of the 14th of the same month, regarding the proposed Form of Oath to be taken by the English and Scots soldiers in the service of these Provinces. It was resolved and agreed after discussion that the one and the other be placed in the hands of Mr. Schoock and the other foregoing commissioners of their High Mightinesses for inspection, examination, and report.

III

PAPERS ILLUSTRATING THE POSITION OF THE BRIGADE DURING THE WAR WITH GREAT BRITAIN.

1664-1668.

Dismissal of the English and Scots troops.

Resolutions of States-General.

1664, *December* 31.—With respect to the representations made to the meeting by the deputies of the Province of Holland, tending to the effect that the four English and three Scots regiments in the service of these Provinces may be dismissed and discharged from the service, it was after discussion agreed and decided hereby to request Mr. Huyghens and the other commissioners of their High Mightinesses, appointed about the business of commissions, in conjunction with some commissioners from the Council of State, to be nominated by itself, to have a conference on the above subject and report.

Proposition to convert the English and Scots troops into National Troops.

1665, *January* 3.—In regard to the representations made by the deputies of the Province of Holland to this Assembly, requesting that the four English and three Scots regiments in the service of these Provinces be discharged from service or disbanded, after discussion it was agreed and decided hereby, with reference to the letters patent, to request Mr. Huygens and their High Mightinesses' other deputies on commissions, along with some deputies members of the Council of State, and appointed by itself, to enter into conference on the subject and report.

February 11.—The Report of Mr. Huyghens and the other commissioners of their High Mightinesses on the business of

commissions, who, in accordance with their resolution of the 31st December last, held a conference with certain commissioners, members of the Council of State, about the representations made by the deputies of Holland and West Friesland on the same day to the meeting, tending to the effect that the four English and three Scots regiments in the service of the State be dismissed and discharged from the service. After discussion, it was resolved and decided, to request the said Council of State as to that business, to institute a strict investigation, and in pursuance thereof advise whether, and in what way and manner, the said English and Scots regiments are to be discharged, and in case of this being done, how the men who by that procedure will be lost out of the Government service may be replaced.

Resolutions of Council of State.

February 25. — Their High Mightinesses' commissioners' report was read, they having held an inquiry in pursuance and in fulfilment of their commissorial resolution, adopted on the 16th instant, with reference to the contents of the resolution of their High Mightinesses of the 11th instant, inserted in the foregoing minutes, to find, namely, whether and in what manner, and on what conditions, the four English and three Scots regiments in the service of these provinces are to be discharged and disbanded; and this done, how the men who will thus be lost to the army may be replaced.

After discussion, it was agreed and resolved that, to meet their High Mightinesses' resolution, the advice inserted below be given:

High Mightinesses,—It has pleased your High Mightinesses to request us in the said resolution of the 11th instant to appoint a strict investigation, and in pursuance thereof advise whether and in what manner the four English and three Scots regiments in the service of this country are to be discharged from the service and disbanded, and this done how the men who will thereby be lost to the army may be replaced.

We have accordingly had an inquiry instituted with regard to the matter above-mentioned, and examined the same, and with reference to the first point we give it as our opinion, that in this present difficult conjuncture of affairs, as regards the soldiers of the English and Scottish nations, there are strong

and plain reasons in the interests of the State and the service of the country, for the disbandment of both infantry and cavalry. And as regards the second point, we would advise that the said disbandment be effected by the local commissaries of muster, or by other authorised persons, and by the governors and commanders of the places and frontiers where the companies are quartered, on authorisation by a foregoing resolution of your High Mightinesses, to be followed by executory-order and mandate from this council; and further, we would advise that satisfaction or payment be given to the officers and soldiers in respect of their arrears of pay and their arms.

And inasmuch as the State, in the present situation of affairs, requires rather an increase than a decrease of the army, [we would advise] that by resolution and order as above, the local commissaries of muster, or otherwise the Government clerks in such places, or even other authorised persons, be empowered to enlist again all the discharged soldiers who are of Dutch or German nationality. And inasmuch as the said English and Scots infantry companies compose seven regiments, four English and three Scottish, in case of their disbandment with their chief officers, four efficient Dutch regiments can then be formed out of them; and of the said discharged chief officers, captains, subalterns, and soldiers, such as are considered most efficient and trustworthy might again be selected, commissioned, and enlisted, on condition that the said officers, in addition to the usual military oath, take an oath declaring that in all sincerity they agree not to respect or obey, nor will respect or obey, any other commands whatsoever, from whomsoever they may come, than those of your High Mightinesses, and specially those of the sovereign States their paymasters, besides those of the foregoing indicated in the said oath of fealty; also that they acknowledge no others but them as their sovereign rulers; that, in place of the discharged English and Scottish infantry and cavalry soldiers not again to be enlisted, the commissaries or others be authorised to fill their places at once with others of Dutch or German nationality. And, inasmuch as the present state of affairs points to open war, it cannot be allowed that vacant places be filled up by useless and not sufficiently capable

men, but it is absolutely necessary to employ the most efficient and experienced men; and inasmuch as it would bring no little discredit and disadvantage on the state if skilled officers and officers who have distinguished themselves were discharged, and others, inexperienced and unpractised men, should be employed, we consider it most highly advisable, in case your High Mightinesses resolve upon the said disbanding, that all those who will be appointed from the Dutch or German nation should have this qualification, namely, that they shall have been in the service of the country either before peace was made with the King of Spain, or at least (in order not, by requiring too many years' service, to exclude from advancement men otherwise experienced and efficient enough, and thus to deprive the country of their services) twelve years, as lieutenants, cornets or ensigns of infantry or cavalry. And that as regards subalterns, no others be employed than those who have been in military service some considerable time, at least six years.

On this occasion we should have liked also to bring to the notice of your High Mightinesses certain considerations with reference to the reformed officers, of English and Scottish nationality, who receive pensions from this country; but as your High Mightinesses did not ask for our advice in this matter, we shall conclude herewith, and submit, with reference to what we have said, to the wise decisions of your High Mightinesses.

Resolutions of States-General.

February 26.—There was read in the Assembly the advice of the Council of State resolved upon here, in the Hague, on the 25th inst., in execution of their High Mightinesses' resolution of the 11th inst., namely, as to whether, and in what fashion, the four English and three Scotch regiments are to be discharged, and if this be done how the men who will thereby be lost to the country's service may be replaced.

After discussion thereanent, it was agreed and resolved to place the said advice in the hands of Mr. Huyghens and the other commissioners of their High Mightinesses on commissions for inspection, examination, and report. A copy of the said advice was nevertheless taken by the deputies of the several provinces.

[The following extracts from the Resolutions of Holland and of the Councillors of Holland in Committee throw further light on this period of the history of the Brigade.]

Resolutions of Holland.

1665, March 5th.—Read a memorandum from the Council of State to T.H.M.,of Feb. 25th, respecting the licensing of the English and *Scottish* militia in the service of the State, and how to replace them by others. Res. : conform previous resolutions of Dec. 17th and Jan. 30th last to consider all English and *Scottish* officers, Field and otherwise, in command of any Reg^{t} or Comp^{y} of Horse or Foot, on Repartition Holland, to be hereby licensed, and none to be excepted; new appointments to be made in their places on the 20th inst., viz. of 4 Col^{s}, 4 L^{t}-Col^{s}, 4 S^{t}-Majors, all at the same time captains, and in addition of 30 Captains of Foot, in all 42, and of as many L^{ts} and Ensigns for these 42 Comp^{ies} of Foot, this being the full number of the English and *Scottish* C^{ies} on this Repartition, in 4 Reg^{ts}, . . . previously to deliberate and resolve on the number and persons of the officers so licensed to be retained in the service, and then to fill the remaining vacancies as follows : one-half to be selected from officers who served previous to 1642 as Ensigns, L^{ts}, or in higher ranks, Horse or Foot, and for the other half from officers who have served the State in the same capacities for at least 12 years ; finally, that none be appointed L^{t} or Ensign unless having been in actual service of the State for 10 years ; the reappointed English and Scottish officers to take an additional oath of the following nature :

That they recognise nobody outside of the United Netherland Provinces as sovereign, that they do not consider themselves bound to respect nor respect or obey any other commands, no matter from what source, than those from the States-General of the Netherlands, and more especially from the States of Holland and West Vrieslandt, their paymasters.

That the English and *Scottish* Capt^{ns}, before being admitted to such oath, shall be asked to state under oath whether they have taken previously an oath to the King of Great Britain, and after receiving their declaration the States to take such decision as required by the circumstances.

The said re-appointed officers then to be considered to be with their respective comp^{ies} *Netherland troops,* the Capt^{ns} to gradually replace the English and *Scotch* in their comp^{ies} with *Netherlanders* when vacancies occur.

March 6th.—Reformed officers of the English and *Scottish* nations to be considered as licensed.

March 12th.—All officers of merit of the English and *Scottish* nations under Repartition Holland, licensed conform the resolution of 5th inst., and not re-appointed, to receive an honourable discharge.

Ditto.—The special oath for the English and *Scottish* officers to be communicated to the Generality and to the other Provinces, so as to have a uniform oath adopted.

March 13th.—Form of Honorable Discharge for English and Scottish officers of merit.

The States, etc., make known to all who see and hear this read, that though conform our general Resolution on the licensing of all Field and other officers of the English and *Scottish* nations in the service of the United Netherlands, and in our pay, we have also licensed H. H. . . . who, however, for so far as we know, has served well and faithfully.

So we declare that the said . . . does not leave the said service from any cause or bad behaviour of his own, but only through general reflections and considerations of State. Done at the Hague, under the small seal of State, March 12th, 1665.

March 13th.—All Capt^ns^ of Horse and Foot to have their men take oath of loyalty and fidelity to the States-General, and especially to the States of Holland, their paymasters.

March 20th.—32 English and *Scottish* officers of Foot reappointed conform resolution of 5th inst.[1]

Johan Kirckpatrick,		Col. and Capt^n^
Walter Schot,		,, ,,
Louis Erskyne,		,, ,,
	Thos. Dolman,	Col. and Capt^n^
	Humphrey Peyton,	L^t^.-Col. and Capt^n^
Geo. Lauder,		L^t^-Col. and Capt^n^
Thos. Levingstone,		,, ,,
Alane Couttis,		,, ,,
	Ferdinand Carry,	S^t^-Major and Capt^n^
Henry Grahame,		S^t^-Major and Capt^n^
Johan Kirckpatrick, jr.,		,, ,,
Johan Roper,		,, ,,
Evernyn Kirckpatrick,		Captain
James Colpepyr,		,,
	John Abrahal,	,,
Wm. Kair,		,,
John Lamy,		,,
Alex. Coljer,		,,
	Henry Herbert,	,,
Anthony Wylde,		,,
	Wm. Read,	,,
Wm. Sandelands,		,,
Maurits Halquet,		,,
Robert Sanderson,		,,
Pieter Watkin,		,,
	Thos. Dolman,	,,
John Butler,		,,
	Eduard Ashley,	,,
Wm. Lindesay,		,,

[1] The first column contains the names of officers of Scots and the second of English regiments.

Robt. Mordaunt, Captain
Cornelis Oggle, ,,
Geo. Robt. Couttis, ,,

To the Comp^ies they commanded before the licensing; the necessary appointments as Colonels, L^t-Col^s, and S^t-Majors, and the necessary commissions as Captains to be made and issued in the *Dutch* language, conform resolution of Feb. 24th, 1656; the re-appointed to be treated on the footing of *nationals*.

March 20th.—Conform resolution of 5th inst. to appoint to the captaincies still remaining vacant of the English and *Scottish* nations, the majority being re-appointed, and one comp^y going to repartition Guelderland:

For one-half officers of the I. Class, viz. before 1642, Ensigns, L^ts, or officers of higher rank

. . . *Ysbrandt Leynier*, L^t.

For the other half officers of the II. Class, viz. having served in same capacities for at least 12 years

. . . *Jacob de Chanfleury*, L^t.
Gerrit van Haeften, Ensign.

Resolutions of the Councillors of Holland in Committee.

March 11th.—The back-pay of the commanding officers of the licensed English and *Scottish* Comp^ies to be paid promptly, conform Res^n- Holland of 5th inst., except Col. Killegrew's. . . . The Capt^ns of said nationalities which are not to be reappointed to receive compensation for arms, etc., which they had to provide on accepting their Comp^ies.

1665. March 16th.—The licensed officers of the English and *Scottish* comp^ies, and who are not re-appointed, to be paid until the end of the current month; the pay of the officers appointed in their stead to commence the same day.

March 27th.—All the L^ts and Ensigns here present, of the comp^ies licensed conform, Res. Holland of 5th inst., *and reorganised into Netherland Comp^ies*, stood in, and after being one by one asked, had they ever taken oath to the King of Great Britain, were they bound to anybody else, had they dispensation from the said King for being connected with this Government and this service; and after giving satisfactory answers to these questions, were all re-established in their respective functions, as follows:

In the Comp^y of Cap^n	
Gerrit van Haeften formerly Col. Sidney's	Ensign John Andrew.
Champfleury formerly L^t Col. Vane's	,, John Philips.
Isbrant Langnier formerly L^t Col. Sayer's	L^t Nicolaes Gibson.
S^t Major Roper	L^t Eduard Sprey.
	Ensign Wm. Norwood.
Rob^t Sanderson	L^t Thos. Sanderson.

Colpieper	Ensign	James Palvesyn.
Butler	,,	Robt. Herris.
Wylde	L^{t}	Ambros Maneton.

Those serving in the transformed comp^{ies} of the *Scottish* nation, as follows:

Col. Kirckpatrick	L^{t}	John Morrey.
	Ensign	John Danston.
Col. Schot	L^{t}	James Erskin.
	Ensign	Natane Bruce.
Col. Arskin	L^{t}	Rodoff van Sanckoelt.
	Ensign	Alex. Wichart.
L^{t} Col. Lauder	L^{t}	James Balfour.
	Ensign	James Murray.
L^{t} Col. Coutis	L^{t}	Marck Richardson.
	Ensign	Davidt Kinnemont.
Lodewyk van Brakel formerly Major Bruce's	L^{t}	André Bruce.
S^{t} Major Kirckpatrick	L^{t}	Thos. Riddel.
	Ensign	Eduant Eton.
Kirckpatrick	L^{t}	Philip Murray.
	Ensign	Wm. Elphiston.
Collier	L^{t}	Wigbeldt van Hamia.
	Ensign	Wolter Walterus.
Lindesey	,,	Archibald Murray.
Lamy	,,	John Eghlin.
Wm. Kair	L^{t}	John More.
	Ensign	Rob^{t} de Roeck.

To be considered as continued, being now in the country's service with *Lt. Admiral de Ruyter*:

Maurits Hacquet	L^{t}	John Wier.
	Ensign	Alex. Lauder.
Wm. Sandelants	L^{t}	James Balfour.
	Ensign	James Drommont.
Jan Maurits de Castelliegos formerly Alex. Hume's	L^{t}	David Bruce.
	Ensign	Cornelis Stuart.

Vacant L^{t} and Ensign's places of the aforesaid Comp^{ies} to be filled as follows:

Watkin	L^{t} formerly L^{t} Ensign same comp^{y}	Walter Carpenter.
Lindsay	L^{t} in the place of Patrick Vaens.	Archibald Murray.
Lamy	L^{t} former Ensign same comp^{y}.	Jhon Eglingh.

And the Committee appoints the following Ensigns :—

Lodewyk van Braeckel	En.	Younker H. van Voorst.
	in the place of	Alex. Bruce.
Isbrant Lainier	En.	Dumets.
	in the place of	Richard Sauwl.
Lamy	En.	Philip Balfour.
	in the place of	John Eghlin, promoted.
Watkin	En.	Elias Schoock.
	in the place of	Carpenter.

March 28th

Champfleury	Lt.	John Philips.
	former Ensign same c^{y}	
	in the place of	Thos. Honswod, retired.

April 14th.—The transformed English and *Scottish c^{ies}* on this Repartition each to be strengthened to 25 men, with the exception of the comp^{ies} of Cap^{n} *Gerard van Haeften* (formerly Col. Sidney) and . . . which are to be reduced by 5 men, so as by make them all alike and of 25 men.

Ditto.—Through the leaving of certain field officers of the transformed English and *Scottish* comp^{ies}, the St. Majors to be as follows :

St. Major Graham, formerly Regt. Col. Arskin, now *Regt. Col. Schot.*
,, *Rooper* *Regt. Col. Arskine.*

and respecting the mixing of certain of the transformed comp^{ies} with comp^{ies} already heretofore Netherland comp^{ies}, Res. conform Res. Holland of March 5th last, that 2 councillors in Committee shall prepare a List, taking proper regard of the seniority of the respective captains.

Ditto.—The transformed English and *Scottish* comp^{ies} *now being Netherland compies,* Res. that henceforth on mounting and leaving guard and on all other occasions they shall beat the *Holland* march ; that the field officers, captains and other officers shall wear no other sashes or other field-badges than of *Orange* and such as are now used by *Netherland* officers.

The standards of the respective transformed comp^{ies} may be of such colour as desired by the respective colonels, but in all cases must have in the corners along the staff *the Arms of Holland* added thereto, the col^{s} and captains to be notified of these Resolutions.

April 27th.—Appointed in the comp^{y} of Captain

Herman van Boeckhoven	Lt.	Andreaen van der Horst.

April 28th.—Appointed in the comp^{y} of captain

Butler	Lt.	Wm. Orock.
Lt. Col. Levingston	Lt.	Eduard Lauwer.
	former Lt. of Cap^{n}	Thos. Dolman.
Champfleury	Ensign	Jacob van Engelenbergh.
	in the place of	Johan Philips, prom^{d}.

April 29th.—*Wm Griffin, Lt.* of Cap^{n} Robt. Coutis on Repartition

Holland, allowed to exchange with *Fred. Sandelants, Lt.* of Cap^{n} Arskyn, on Repartition Utrecht.

Wylde — { Ensign Max Steenhuysen in the place of Robt. Carlton who left the service.

Aug. 5th.—The gentlemen requested to prepare a List of the English and *Scottish* comp^{ies} recently *transformed into Netherland Comp^{ies}* and to be divided in 4 Reg^{ts} report as follows:

One Regt. under *Colonel Kirkpatrik.*

Levingston, Lt. Col.
John Kirckpatrick, Major and Cap^{n}.

Appointed captain anno 1646.	Everwyn Kirckpatrick.
1647.	Maurits Hacquet.
1656.	Antoni Wylde.
1662.	Lindesay.
1665.	Castelliegos (in the place of Hum).
,,	Hersbergen (in the place of Swaen).
,,	Isbrant Laignier (in the place of Sauer).

Another Regt. under *Colonel Schot.*
Lauder, Lt. Col.
Rooper, St. Major and Captain.[1]

1642.	Sanderson.
1650.	Lamy.
1655.	Kair.
1661.	Colier.
1662.	Watkin.
1665.	Champfleury (in the place of Vane).
,,	Brakel (in the place of Bruce).

A third Regt. under *Col. Arskine*
Couttis, Lt. Col.
Graham, St. Major and Captain.[2]

1632.	Herbert.
1640.	Colpieper.
1641.	Sandelants.
1662.	Joris Couttis.
1665.	Royer (in the place of Meolis).
,,	Schoonhoven (in the place of Panerey).
,,	Gerard van Haeften (in the place of Sidney).

Res. approved and sent to the States for their information and notice thereof given to the respective officers.

---

[1] Conform to Resolution Holland of Aug. 22nd. Rooper placed as major under Colonel Arskin.

[2] Conform to Resolution Holland of Aug 22nd. Graham placed as major under Colonel Schot.

Aug. 22nd—*Graham* to be major of Col. Schot and *Rooper* of Col. Arskine.

Oct. 16th—Appointed in the comp^{y} of cap^{n}

Cuyck van Meteren	Ensign	J. Hacquet
	in the place of van der Graef.	

Dec. 1st.—Appointed in the comp^{y} of cap^{n}

Kirckpatrick	Lt	N. Maes
	in the place of P. Murray, deceased.	

1666, Feb. 10th—Appointed in the comp^{y} of cap^{n}

Col. Arskine	Ensign	Thos. Arskine.

Resolutions of States-General.

1665, *March* 12.—The deputies of the Province of Holland informed the meeting on what terms their principals would use the Form of Oath proposed to be administered by the Council of State to the English and Scottish officers to be chosen by them in the place of the discharged officers of the English and Scottish regiments who were under their charge; requesting to be informed if the other provinces had any consideration to offer in the matter with a view to arriving at a unanimous decision, and undertaking with that aim to provide the said provinces with a copy of the said Form of Oath. Whereupon no resolution was taken, but the other provinces undertook to inform their principals about it.

August 7.—The deputies of the Province of Holland informed the meeting that their principals, the commissioned councillors of said province, had requested and directed that all the officers of English or Scottish nationality, who were formerly in service on their repartition and had refused to take the Oath of Fealty on the formula contained in their resolution of the 5th of March last, should be made to leave the said province within a certain short period, to be fixed by the said commissioned councillors of the province.

After discussion about this matter, it was decided and agreed hereby to request the other provinces, each one for itself, to give orders and make arrangements that all such officers of English or Scottish nationality as could not be firmly trusted should leave their districts and jurisdiction within a certain short time. And the Council of State is also hereby requested to order and write to all the governors and commanders of the towns within the United Provinces to give like orders each in his own district.

Resolutions of the Council of State.

August 10.—A missive was received from the commissioned council of the Provinces of Holland and West Friesland, written here in the Hague on the 6th instant, intimating that the companies which were transformed some time ago by the said States from English and Scots to Dutch had been formed into four distinct regiments, as could be seen in the accompanying list.

After discussion, the said missive was accepted and held as a notification, and further is to be used as may be necessary.

Secret Resolutions of States-General.

1666, *March* 5.—The report was heard of Mr. van Braeckel and the other commissioners of their High Mightinesses on military affairs, who, in accordance with their Resolution of the 1st inst., have held a conference along with and in conjunction with some Commissioners from the Council of State about the lists drawn up by the said council of the regiments and subordinate companies of infantry, as well as of the regiments and subordinate companies of cavalry which are to be brought into the field. After discussion thereanent, it was resolved and agreed that at the next season the twelve regiments, with the subordinate companies of infantry hereafter specified, are to be taken afield, viz.

1st Regiment.

Colonel Kirckpatrick.
Lt. Col. Levingston.
Sergt.-Major Kirckpatrick.
From Heusden: the company of Colonel John Kirckpatrick.
From Emmerick: the company of Lt.-Col. Thomas Levingston.
From Bois-le-Duc: the company of Sergt.-Major John Kirckpatrick.
From Bois-le-Duc: Everwijn Kirckpatrick.
From Grave, etc. [no Scotsmen.]

7th Regiment.

Col. Louis Arskijn.
Lt.-Col. Alane Coutis.
Sergt.-Maj. Johan Roper.
From Groningen: the company of Col Arskyn.
From Nymegen: the company of Lt.-Col. Alane Coutis.
From Maestricht: the company of Sergt.-Major John Roper.
From Wesel: Willem Sandelands.
From Doesbosch: Joris Coutis, etc.

June 19.—The petition of Johanna Strachan, wife of William Lindesay, captain in the service of this country, having been read, after discussion it was resolved and agreed that a pass-port be despatched to the petitioner, to allow her to depart for Scotland with her two daughters and a maid-servant. Resolutions of States-General.

1667, *August* 5.—The deputies from the province of Holland announced to the meeting that their principals, the commissioned councillors of the said province, had requested and commanded all the officers of English and Scottish nationality, who had formerly been in the service on their repartition and had refused to take the Oath of Allegiance in the form contained in their resolution of the 5th March last, to quit the said province within a certain short time to be determined by the said commissioned councillors.

After discussion thereanent, it was resolved and agreed hereby to request the other provinces, each in its own sphere, to make such arrangements and provision that all such officers of the said English and Scottish nations as could not be thoroughly trusted leave their district and jurisdiction within a certain short period.

And, in addition, the Council of State was requested to give orders to and direct all the governors of towns and places situated within the United Provinces to make like arrangements in their districts.

August 8.—There was received from the Council of State a missive written here at the Hague on the 7th inst., to the effect that, in consequence and in execution of their High Mightinesses' resolution of the 5th inst., the Council had issued commands and written to the governors and the commanders of the towns and places acknowledging the sovereignty of the United Provinces, instructing each one to give such orders in his district and make such arrangements that all officers of the English and Scottish nations, in whom they had not thorough confidence, be made to quit the places intrusted to their government and command. And that they also held it to be their duty as regards this, taking into consideration the correspondence between the King of England and the Bishop of Munster, to ask their High Mightinesses to consider seriously whether Captain William Killegrew, with the company under

his command, at present in garrison in the town of Groll, should not be removed to another place, and for that purpose a despatch be sent him with orders to march as soon as possible to Bois-le-Duc; and on the other hand Major Dirk van Haersolte from the said Bois-le-Duc to Groll.

After discussion thereanent, their High Mightinesses approved of the above arrangements; and accordingly it was resolved that the necessary orders for removing the said company with the pertinent despatches be forwarded and sent off without their reconsideration. And the deputy of the province of Utrecht, who was present at the meeting, was requested to see that the aforementioned Captain Killigrew with his subordinate officers, as well as the other officers on the footing of the repartition of said province, be sworn on the same Form of Oath as the officers of the said English and Scottish nations who have been retained and who are sworn and stand on the repartition of Holland and West Friesland.

And further the deputies of the Provinces of Zeeland and West Friesland were also requested to execute the same duties in respect of the officers of the two nations above-mentioned standing upon their respective repartitions.

(May 24, 1668.)

Secret Resolutions of States-General, 1668.

Regiments of the English and Scottish nationalities transformed into Dutch:

Johan Kirckpatrick, collonel
Thomas Levingston, lt.-coll.
Johan Kirckpatrick, sergt-major
Maurits Halcquet
Everwijn Kirckpatrick
Anthony Wylde
Wm. Lindsay
Maurice de Castelieges
Ysbrande Laignies
Johan Pijl
Marten van Hartsbergen, vacant

Add to the above the three following companies, enrolled in April 1668, for such time as they may be kept in the service:

Bartholomaus de Toulemonde
Hendrick van Eck
. . . Hoen, heer van Wilberichhoff

Walter Scott, collonel
George Lauder, lt-coll[1]
Henry Graham, sergt-major
Robbert Sanderson
Johan Lamy
Alexander Colyer
Peter Watkins
Jacob de Chamfleury
Lodewyck van Braeckel
Pieter de Glarger

Add to the above regiment the four following companies, enrolled in April 1668, for such time as they may be retained in the service:

Qerlich van Rijswijck
Joost Willem Henrick, Baron van Hasselraet
. . . Spierings, heer van Sebender
Gedeon de Bije
Lodewijck Arskin, collonel
Allane Couttis, L^t^-coll.
Willem Sandelands, serg^t^-major
James Colpeper
Joris Robbert Couttis
Johan Butler
Gerrit van Haefften
Jacob Cuyck van Meteren
Johan Jacob de Laucourt
Willem van Schoonhoven, vacant
Ysbrandt Bottercoper, etc.

NOTE.—On 20th December 1665

Colonels John Kilpatrick
Walter Scott
Louis Erskine
Lt.-Cols. Thomas Livingstone
George Lauder
Coutts
Majors John Kilpatrick
Harie Grahame
Captains George Coutts
Evertson Kilpatrick
Collier
Sir William Sandilands
Moris Hackett
William Lindsay
James Erskine
Ker
Captain John Lambie
Lieutenants John Murray
Thomas Riddell
John Weir
Philip Murray
Archibald Murray
John Mure
Lauder
Orrat
Brown
Johnstone
Erskine
Ensigns Drummond
Elphingstone
Ecling
Drummond

were denounced rebels and put to the horn as fugitives, in respect that 'they being gentlemen and subjects of this kingdom, and native and born within the same, at the least such of them as are not born in this kingdom of Scotland being descended of Scottis parents upon the father's side, and having transmitted and derived to them from their respective fathers, grandfathers, and other ancestors, being Scottismen and subjects of this kingdom of Scotland, yet they have most disloyally and treasonably broken and violated their faith and allegiance to His Majesty, and committed the crime of treason.' The treason is detailed as consisting in their being in military service with the States, his Majesty's declared enemies, and their disowning his Majesty and accepting his enemies as superiors by taking the oath prescribed by the States, 'acknowledging thereby that the base and mercenary interest of pay and paymasters was more prevalent with them than the most strict and sacred bonds of honour, conscience, and allegiance.'

It is further specially narrated that the said Colonel John Kilpatrick, Colonel Livingstone, Lt.-Colonel Coutts, Majors Kilpatrick and Grahame, Captains Coutts, Ker, Sandilands, and Hackett 'to palliate in some measure disowning their sovereign Lord and Prince have most unnaturally disowned and disclaimed their country, denying that they are Scotsmen, to the great disdain, contempt, and dishonour of their country, friends, and families,' although they before 'professed and acknowledged themselves to be Scotsmen, and were most commonly designed Scottis officers.'—*Books of Adjournal of the High Court of Justiciary.*

IV

PAPERS RELATING TO THE DESPATCH OF THE BRIGADE TO ENGLAND ON THE OCCASION OF THE DUKE OF MONMOUTH'S REBELLION.

1685.

Resolutions of the Council of State.

1685, *June* 9.—The report was read of Mr. Everwijn and the other commissioners of their High Mightinesses in reference to military affairs, who, in pursuance and in fulfilment of the said resolution-commissorial, have looked over and examined the request made by His Majesty the King of Great Britain that the three Scottish regiments in the service of the State be lent to His Majesty for some time. The matter having been discussed, and the consideration and most wise advice of His Highness the Prince of Orange having been taken into account, it was agreed and resolved in accordance therewith that the said three regiments be sent over to serve His Majesty, and that his said Highness be requested to make the necessary arrangements that said transport, together with the support of said troops, be carried out at the expense of His Most Gracious Majesty, as long as they shall remain in his service. And an extract minute of this resolution of their High Mightinesses is to be placed by Agent Sproussen in the hands of Mr. Skelton, Envoy Extraordinary of the King of Great Britain, for the information of His Majesty. And a similar extract is also to be sent to Messrs. van Duvenvoorde, van Citters, and van Dijckvelt, their High Mightinesses' Ambassadors Extraordinary to the Court of England, for their information and use on occasion.

The deputies representing the provinces of Friesland and Stadt en Landen, who were present, declared that they did not hold themselves bound in reference to the above resolution, and accordingly refused consent [requiring ?] that the request of

the King of Great Britain, conveyed as it was to their High Mightinesses through His Highness, should be intrusted to their respective principals for consideration: but this reasonable request not being complied with, they reserved their comments for the next meeting of the Council of State.

June 11.—A resolution of their High Mightinesses, dated 9th instant:

'After discussion, it was agreed and resolved hereby to request the Council of State to draw up and send to their High Mightinesses a repartition and distribution among the several provinces of the profit that will accrue to the State from the three Scottish regiments being lent to His Majesty the King of Great Britain for a short time, and during which time they are to be [supported] by His Majesty.'

After discussion, it was agreed and resolved to place the above resolution in the hands of the Treasurer-General Burgh, for the purpose mentioned.

July 2.—Mr. van Dijck, president of the meeting, announced to their High Mightinesses that His Highness the Prince of Orange had requested him to inform their High Mightinesses that His Highness had received a despatch from His Majesty the King of Great Britain, in which His Majesty requested that the remaining troops of that country still in the service of this State might be lent for a time to His Royal Majesty.

After discussion it was agreed that a copy of the said proposal be placed in the hands of Mr. Everwijn and the other commissioners of their High Mightinesses on military affairs, to inspect and examine it, and to hear and give due attention to the considerations advanced by and the most wise advice of His Highness the Prince of Orange, and to bring up a report about all this to the meeting, without restatement [of the case].

The Dutch Extraordinary Ambassadors Baron de Wassenaer Duvenvoirde and Everard van Weede, and the ordinary Ambassador, Armont van Citters, to the States General. Diplomatic Correspondence, England.

$\frac{June\ 30}{July\ 10}$, 1685, *Westminster.*

. . . Last night the three Scottish regiments landed in this country at Gravesend, and they are said to be about to receive orders to march as quickly as possible to the west.

July $\frac{13}{3}$.— . . . The king this morning at Blackheath, below Greenwich, reviewed the three Scottish regiments lately arrived here from the coast of Scotland, two of us being present; and His Majesty was pleased again and again with various expressions to testify that he had never seen better or finer soldiers, and that therefore he was so much the more obliged to their High Mightinesses and His Highness for having sent them over.

July $\frac{17}{7}$.—My Lords,—Last Saturday the three Scottish regiments were marched in good order, with burning matches, through this city to the Heigpark, where both their Majesties were pleased to see them march past and execute their manœuvres. The same evening these troops were encamped at Brandfort, and after resting there for the Sunday, they departed yesterday to join the army.

Resolutions of States-General.

July 14.—Received a missive from the Council of State, written here in the Hague on the 13th instant, enclosing a repartition or appointment among all the several provinces of the profit that will accrue to the state from the three remaining English regiments which are in the service of this State being lent to His Majesty the King of Great Britain for a short time, to be maintained by His Majesty during that time.

After discussion, the deputies of the several provinces took each a copy of the above missive and repartition to make it better known to their provinces.

Letter from James II. to the States-General.

(Dat. July 14. Rec. July 28.)

Diplomatic Correspondence, England.

Hauts et Puissants Seigneurs, Nos bons Amis, Alliez et confédérez,—La promptitude et bonne volonté que vous avez montré en Nous envoyant sitôt, premièrement les trois Régimens Escossois qui sont dans votre service, et puis après les trois Régimens Anglois, pour Nous ayder contre Nos Rebelles tant en Escosse qu'en Angleterre, Nous a donné des preuves indubitables de votre amitié, dont Nous vous remercions très affectueusement. Par l'assistance du bon Dieu les Rebellions dans tous les deux Royaumes sont totalement supprimées et éteintes

sans que les dits Régimens ayent eue l'opportunité d'y contribuer par leur expérience et leur courage. Mais cela n'empesche pas que Nous ne vous en ayons de très grandes obligations, lesquelles Nous n'oublierons jamais. A cette heure les troubles de Nos Royaumes étans entièrement appaisez, Nous renvoyerons tous les dits six Régimens à votre service, comme Nous avions dessein de faire aussitôt que la Paix fût établie chez Nous. Au reste, Nous prions Dieu, Hauts et Puissants Seigneurs, Nos bons Amis, Alliez et Conféderez, qu'il vous ayt en sa sainte et digne garde.—Votre bien bon Amy, JACQUES R.

Escrit à Whitehall, ce 14e Juillet 1685.

Resolutions of the Council of State.

July 28.—A missive was received written by His Majesty the King of Great Britain at Whitehall on the 14th inst., *stilo loci*, in which His Majesty expresses his thanks to their High Mightinesses for sending the three Scottish and the three English regiments, in the service of this country, to assist His Majesty against the rebels, and announcing further that the rebellion having been put down in both kingdoms simultaneously, His Majesty will send back again the six regiments to the service of their High Mightinesses.

After discussion it was resolved and agreed that the said missive be answered by a letter of congratulation on the subjugation of the rebels, couched in courteous terms, and that the said missive to be written be sent to their High Mightinesses' Ambassadors Extraordinary at the court of His Majesty, to be delivered to him with compliments suitable to the matter in hand. And further, a copy of the said missive of His Majesty is to be sent to His Highness the Prince of Orange, for His Highness's information.

Reply of the States. (July 28, 1685.)

Au Roy de la Gr. Bretaigne.

Diplomatic Correspondence, England, (Minute).

SIRE,—Nous nous estimons heureux de ce que V. M. veut bien se contenter du peu que nous avons tasché de faire pour son service. En cela, Sire, nous avons une double joye, et d'avoir commencé en quelque sorte à satisfaire aux engagemens

où nous sommes d'obliger V. M. dans les occasions et de ce qu'en y travaillant, nous avons eu le bonheur de le faire d'une manière qui ne luy est pas désagréable. Nous avions, Sire, souhaité ardemment ces occasions par nos lettres précédentes, mais nous ne les desirions pas de la nature qu'elles se sont présentées. Et nous prions Dieu que celles-là n'arrivent jamais. Nous le bénissons, Sire, de la protection qu'il a donnée à la juste cause de V. M. et du succéz dont il a favorisé ses armes; mais nous le louerons particulièrement toutes les fois qu'il luy plaira de nous mettre au nombre des instrumens de ses faveurs envers V. M. pour la tranquillité et pour la félicité du règne de laquelle nous continuons de luy présenter nos voeux comme étant, Sire, etc.

The Dutch Ambassadors to the States General.

July $\frac{31}{21}$, 1685.

Diplomatic Correspondence.

High and Mighty Lords, . . . Last Saturday His Majesty held at Blackheath, in presence of the queen and almost all the nobles of the court, a review of the three English regiments, arrived from the Fatherland, and next Thursday he will hold at Honslow Heath a general review of all his soldiers, infantry as well as cavalry.

Nine soldiers of the Scottish regiments arrived here from Holland, having drunk with the others to the health of the Duke of Monmouth, and having engaged in some other unseemly talk, were tried yesterday on this account, and two of them were condemned to be shot with a harquebus on the day after to-morrow, when the king is to hold the general review above mentioned, and another to be flogged at the gallows.

$\frac{August\ 3}{July\ 24}$ 1685, *Westminster.*

. . . . . .

Yesterday His Majesty, in the presence of the queen and the whole court, held the review at Honseley [Hounslow] Heath of eight battalions and eight squadrons, all fine and choice soldiers, among whom were the three Scottish regiments.

To-day the baggage of the three English regiments which came over here from Holland was put on board the ships

which are lying ready for their transport, and to-morrow the soldiers will be embarked in them. Several barges, too, have been prepared to bring over here the Scottish regiments from their camp, it being intended that they should soon follow the English to the Fatherland.

Baron de Wassenaer Duvenvoirde.
Arnout van Citters.
Evrard van Weede.

The Dutch Ambassador to the States General.

August $\frac{28}{18}$, 1685, *Windsor.*

High and Mighty Lords,—Last Sunday there were examined here before the king in his council Mr. Hayes, who has lived a considerable time in Holland, and two or three others, taken prisoners in the last battle with the rebels; and after the trial they were conveyed to London in custody.

V

PAPERS RELATING TO THE RECALL OF THE BRIGADE BY KING JAMES AND THE EXPEDITION OF WILLIAM OF ORANGE.

1688.

LETTER FROM KING JAMES II. TO THE STATES-GENERAL.
(Jan. 17, 1688.)

The King recalls the troops from the Netherlands.

Diplomatic Correspondence, England, 1688.

HAUTS ET PUISSANTS SEIGNEURS, NOS BONS AMIS, ALLIEZ ET CONFÉDEREZ,—Ayant pris la résolution de rappeler les six Régiments, tant Anglois qu'Ecossois, nos sujets, qui sont présentem^t^ au service de votre Etat, pour Nous en servir icy, et ayant eu une preuve de votre amitié en les renvoyant avec beaucoup de promptitude en l'année 1685^e^, Nous ne pouvons douter que Vous ne leur accordiez leur congé de même, sur la demande que Nous Vous en faisons à présent. Nous avons ordonné à notre Envoyé Extraordinaire auprès de Vous, de pourvoir au plûtost à tout ce qui sera nécessaire pour leur transport vers tels ports et endroitz que Nous jugerons convenable; et Nous nous asseurons que Vous luy donnerez toute l'assistance qu'il vous pourra demander, pour faciliter et expédier l'embarquement des dits six Régiments.

Et sur ce Nous prions Dieu, qu'il Vous ayt, Hauts et Puissants Seigneurs, Noz bons amis, alliez et confédérez, en Sa sainte et digne garde.—Votre bien bon amy, JACQUES R.

Ecrite à Whitehall, ce 17^e^ Janvier $168\frac{7}{8}$.

Ambassador van Citters to the States-General.

Westminster, $\frac{\text{February 3}}{\text{January 24}}$, 1688.

HIGH AND MIGHTY LORDS,—My Lords, although it is but too true that the king sent off his orders last week to recall

the English troops from the Netherlands for his own service, yet this is for the most part not yet believed at court, because the secretary has received strict orders about it from the king, apparently, as the intelligent think, to make it burst forth all the more startingly, both yonder and here at the same time.

Resolutions of States-General.

February 6.—A missive was received from the King of Great Britain, written at Whitehall on the 17th of last month (January), in which His Majesty announces to their High Mightinesses the resolution he had taken to recall the six regiments, English and Scottish, His Majesty's subjects, at present in the service of this State, and asks their High Mightinesses to be pleased to grant said regiments their leave, in respect of the request of His Majesty which he is making in said missive, in which he further announces that His Majesty has given orders to his Ambassador Extraordinary here to make as speedily as possible all arrangements necessary for their transport to such harbours and places as His Majesty may determine, and requests that it may please their High Mightinesses to assist him in facilitating the embarkation of the six regiments aforesaid.

After discussion thereanent, the deputies of the several provinces took a copy of the said missive to make it known more fully to their provinces. And it was also resolved and agreed that a copy of said missive be placed in the hands of Mr. van Els and the other commissioners of their High Mightinesses on military affairs for inspection and examination, and after obtaining and considering the facts of the case, and the most wise advice of His Highness the Prince of Orange, to report on all here in the assembly.

February 19.—The report was read of Mr. Els and the other commissioners of their High Mightinesses on military affairs, who, in accordance with, and in execution of, their Resolution Commissorial of the 6th instant, have inspected and examined the missive of His Majesty the King of Great Britain, written to their High Mightinesses from Whitehall on the 17th ultimo, *stilo loci*, bearing that His Majesty had resolved to recall home the six regiments, English as well as Scottish, in the service of the State, not doubting that their

High Mightinesses would consent to it with such exhibition of good-will as was afforded in the year 1685, and that His Majesty had sent the necessary orders for the transport to the Marquis d'Albyville, his Ambassador Extraordinary to this State.

After discussion thereanent, and taking the facts of the case into consideration with the most wise advice of His Highness the Prince of Orange, it was agreed and resolved, in accordance therewith, to write back to His Majesty that their High Mightinesses are and continue willing to observe and carry out righteously and in their integrity the treaties existing between His Majesty and this State; and if it should happen (which God in His mercy forbid!) that His Majesty should need any help and assistance from this State, that their High Mightinesses will truly render and afford it with as much readiness, willingness and promptitude, as they did in 1685; that they have examined the said treaties and every resolution passed with reference to the raising of the said regiments, but do not find that either of the said treaties, or any other convention or capitulation, or anything whatsoever, binds or pledges them in any way to allow the whole or any part of the said regiments to be at His Majesty's service; that, on the contrary, said regiments were raised partly from regiments and companies which were in the service of this State in the year 1674 as Dutch regiments and companies, and partly from several levies of private Englishmen and Scots connected with no regiments, taken into service by their High Mightinesses, at great expense in the way of bounty-money and costs of transport, which were all the heavier at the time, because his late Majesty could not agree to give any help or assistance to facilitate the said levy, and that those men having thus come over were here distributed under special companies and ensigns, and afterwards formed into regiments; that, moreover, it is but too well known, and His Majesty will have the goodness to consider in his great wisdom, that the present situation of the time and affairs not only does not make advisable, but cannot permit or allow their High Mightinesses to part with such an important portion of their army, enlisted at so great expense, and up to this date reinforced, maintained, disciplined in military service and

drilled; but, nevertheless, in order to show how well inclined they are to please His Majesty as much as possible, they will give a discharge and dismissal to such of the officers of said regiments as may ask for it, and discharge them from the oath and service, by which they are bound to the States; and that, further, His Highness will be requested to discharge such officers as shall ask for leave and dismissal within a certain short and limited time, to be fixed for the purpose, and the original missive to His Majesty, along with a copy of it, is to be placed by the Agent Roseboom in the hands of the Marquis d'Albyville, Envoy-Extraordinary of His Majesty to this State, for his information, with a request to forward the said original missive to His Majesty; and, besides, an extract from this resolution of their High Mightinesses, along with a copy of the said missive, is to be sent to Mr. van Citters, their High Mightinesses' Ambassador at the Court of His Majesty to serve, for his information.

Refusal of the States to send the troops to England.

(Feb. 19, 1688.)

Au Roy de la Grande Bretagne.

Le 19^{me} *Février* 1688.

Diplomatic Correspondence, England (Minutes).

Sire,—Nous avons receu la lettre que votre Ma^{té} nous a fait l'honneur de nous écrire au sujet des six régimens qu'elle nous demande, et nous y aurions fait réponse plus tost, si nous n'avions pas jugé à propos d'examiner l'affaire à fons et dans toute son étendue, pour estre en état de donner une plus entière satisfaction à V. Ma^{té}. Nous venons présentement l'asseurer qu'elle nous trouvera tousjours dans une très-parfaite disposition d'accomplir les traittez qu'elle a bien voulu passer avec cet Etat, et que s'il arrivoit (à Dieu ne plaise) que V. Ma^{té} se trouvast jamais dans le moindre besoin de notre secours et de notre assistance, Nous le luy envoierions avec la même promptitude qu'en l'année 1685, et même avec une plus grande s'il estoit nécessoire. Nous avons, Sire, examiné avec une très-grande application non seulement tous les d^{ts} traittez, mais aussi ce qui s'est passé au sujet de la levée des d^{ts} régimens, et

nous n'avons trouvé aucun article ny période dans les dts traittez où il ait convention, capitulation ou quelque autre engagement que ce soit, qui nous puisse obliger d'envoyer ces régimens à Vre Mate et de nous en défaire, ny en tout ny en partie. Nous trouvons bien, Sire, que ces Régimens ont été formés en partie des régimens et Compies qui estoient en nostre service en l'année 1674, come régimens et compies de nostre nation, et en partie des levées particulières des Anglois et des Escossois qui se sont volontairement mis à notre service ; que ces levées aussy ont été faites avec beaucoup de frais, tout en regard des deniers d'enrollement qu'a celluy de leur transport, et que ces frais ont été d'autant plus grands, que nous avions le malheur que sa Mate de glorieuse mémoire ne pouvoit estre disposée à y donner les mains et à les faciliter, de manière que ces Anglois et ces Ecossois ne sont venu en ces païs cy que de tems en tems et par petit nombre, et qu'ils ont été mis en des Compies et sous des drapeaux séparez, dont en suite on a formé ces régimens. Nous doutons encor moins, Sire, que Vre Mate n'ait la bonté de considérer selon la grande prudence que la présente conjuncture des affaires dans la Chréstienté ne nous permet pas de priver cet état d'un corps de milice si considérable, fait à nos depens, recrutéz de temps en temps, entretenus et dressé dans la discipline militaire avec tant de frais. Cependant, Sire, pour mieux marquer à Vre Mate notre inclination, à luy complaire en tout ce que nous est possible, nous accorderons voluntiers dez à présent congé aux Officiers qui nous les demanderont, et la présente lettre n'estant à autre fin, Nous prions Dieu, Sire, etc.

Ambassador van Citters to the States-General.

Westminster, February $\frac{24}{14}$, 1688.

Diplomatic Correspondence.

Your High and Mighty Lords, . . . That here the English Brigade in the Netherlands is held in little esteem, as they are considered to consist of persons very ill affected towards His Majesty, and that it is still remembered how few were willing to be of service to His Majesty against Monmouth, but that the only object of the recall is to deprive others of the opportunity to employ them against the king, and that the opinion is

strongly held here that their High Mightinesses, from consideration for His Majesty, will dispose very lightly of the arrests of the soldiers and officers for debts which they are alleged to have incurred there, and whereby their coming over here is said to have been delayed, but it is also openly said, and I have been assured of it on good authority, that they are greatly embarrassed by the recall, and that had it not been commenced, it would not readily have been made in such a hurry, inasmuch as the immoderate spirits who urged it upon His Majesty did not foresee these difficulties.

Ambassador van Citters to the States-General.

Westminster, February $\frac{8}{18}$, 1688.

My Lords,—No sooner had the Dutch letters come in last Wednesday, than, to begin with, everybody was at first greatly surprised that your High Mightinesses had decided to refuse the transport of the said troops, and the displeasure of His Majesty on account of this rebuff has since been growing more and more evident, and the rumours of war thereupon also seemed to be doubled at the court, also rumours about the calling together of a Parliament, in order, as it is said here, to expose most clearly in all their bearings the measures taken by the Dutch, and the disrespect and injury they are daily bringing upon His Majesty and the nation, and for the purpose of maintaining and preserving their ancient glory and for resolving to carry out along with His Majesty their just resentment, but without in the meantime saying anything about religion. And what concerns some still more is that all unprejudiced persons are of opinion that their High Mightinesses are in the right, wherefore they are fain to put another interpretation upon the letter of His Majesty, as if he with extreme civility had simply demanded of your High Mightinesses his born subjects, who might be in those regiments. Mr. van Barillon was that same night for a very long time alone with the king in his Cabinet, where no doubt the discussion turned on this unexpected occurrence. . . . On Wednesday evening, as letters had come that afternoon from the Fatherland, the Cabinet Council met, and, as I hear, the opinions expressed

were very diverse, some thinking that His Majesty would be well advised to let the famous proclamation for the recall of the said troops take its course, on penalty of confiscation of life and property to those who should remain refractory, others that the officers ought to be commanded to come over and to bring the soldiers under their command with them, others again that the whole matter should be dropped. That night no final decision was come to; but I have not yet been able to ascertain what was resolved last night, nor as yet have I managed to hear.

Representation by the English Ambassador.

(Exhibitum March 1, 1688.)

The Amb^{r} Marquis d'Albyville to the States-General.

Hauts et Puissants Seigneurs,—Le refus que font V. V. S. S. par leur lettre au Roy mon Maitre, du 19^{e} de mois de Février, de laisser retourner au service de Sa Maj^{té} les Officiers et soldats, ses sujets, dont la Brigade Angloise et Ecossiese est composée, m'oblige de représenter à V. V. S. S. qu'il y a un traitté, fait avec cet Etat au regard des sujets de la Couronne d'Angleterre aussi ancien qui la Républicque, qui ne doit pas estre aboli par les guerres survenues depuis, sans un act ou une résolution particulierre des estats, et quand il n'y en auroit point, il n'est besoin que du droit des Gens, pour vérifier qu'on ne retient jamais les sujets des Roys, des Estats et des Princes du service de leurs souverains, quand ils en sont requis. C'est une usage receu de toutes les Nations et practiqué souvent mesme entre celles qui sont en guerre; on n'en point veu de refus jusque à prèsent.

Pour faire voir combien ces droit de la couronne d'Angleterre sont considérables et indispensables, V. V. S. S. ne scauroient ignorer ce qui est passé de nostre tems, quand le feu Roy d'Angleterre de Glorieuse Mémoire se trouva bannis et refugié à Bruxelles, durant la guerre entre l'Espagne et la France: quelques régiments de ses sujets se trouvant alors au service du Roy de France, le feu Roy (tout bannis et exillé qu'il étoit), les envoya demander en tems de guerre, Hauts et Puissants Seigneurs, et pour renforcer l'armée ennemie.

Néanmoins ils furent congédiez et envoyez au service de leur souverain.

L'année 1665, quand la guerre commença entre l'Angleterre et ces Etats, au commencement de l'année 1666, le Roy de France déclara la guerre au feu Roy d'Angleterre en leur faveur; il y avoit alors au service du Roy de France un régiment Ecossois, commandé par my Lord Douglass. Le feu Roy d'Angleterre, de Glorieuse Mémoire, envoya demander le Régiment; on le congédia et renvoya en Angleterre. Après que la paix avoit été faitte, le Régiment retourna au France, et (sans faire des nouvelles conditions) y servit diverses années. Le feu Roy envoya encor demander les meme Régiment et d'autres de ses sujets, qui furent au service du Roy de France, qui les encore fait renvoyer en Angleterre, quoy qu'en tems de paix, mais dans l'ettante d'une guerre, après le marriage de leur Altesses Royalles.

L'états qui jouissent d'une profonde paix (s'ils en désirent la continuation) coment peuvent ils après ces exemples refuser le service de ses sujets à un Royallié et Garrand de la tréve, qui n'a en veue que de conserver la tranquillité de la Chrétienté, à un Roy qui a uniquement renouvellé avec ces Etats les traitez faits avec le feu Roy son frère, et qui leur donne de tems en tems des assurances de son amitié et de son estime; à un Roy enfin qui travaille incessament à la paix de ces Royaumes, afin de se mettre en état de pouvoir maintenir la paix de l'Europe; car tant que l'Angleterre sera en paix, il n'y aura point de guerre à craindre.

Si ces officiers et soldats ont été levées, transportez, entrentenus et instruits en l'art militaire à des grands frais, c'est de l'argent bien employé, temoigné les siège et le batailles des dernières guerres.

L'Roy mon Maitre, ayant perdu de compte fait 15000 sujets au service des Etats depuis l'année 1674. Si ces officiers et soldats sont en partie venus se rendre volontairement au service des Etats à l'insceu du Roy et sans sa permission, ils ne scaurient expier leur fautes, ni éviter les rigeureuses pienes des lois que par leur prompt retour au service de sa Maj^{tée}, d'autant qu'il n'y a pas de consideration, d'obligation ni naturalisation, qui puissent dispenser les sujects des Roys d'Angleterre en quelques

endroit du monde qui se trovent, de retourner à leur service, quand ils en sont demandez, sans subir le nom infame et les peines de traitres; et si le Roy ayt refusé aux Etats en quelque tems la permission de faire des levées ouvertement, ça été une marque perticulière de la bonté du Roy envers leurs S. S. de conniver qu'on fist ces levées en cachet, et quasi à son insceu, pour n'ent pas permettre aux Roys de France et d'Espagne, qui demandoyent en même tems de faire aussi de levéez.

Le Marquis d'Albyville, Envoyé Extrā du Roy de la grand Bretagne, après avoir représenteez toutes ces choses à la prudence de V. V. S. S. pour en délibérer plus meurement leur demande, encore par ordre du Roy son Maitre, que les Officiers et soldats, ses sujets, qui sont dans les brigades Angloises et Ecossoises, puissent incessament retourner à son service.

Afin que Sa Majté ait sujet de continuer l'amitié et l'estime qu'elle a toujours eue pour les Etats des provinces Unies.

MARQUIS D'ALBYVILLE.

Donné à la Haye, le 1er jour de Mars 1688.

Resolutions of States-General.

March 1.—There was read at the meeting the petition of the Marquis d'Albyville, Envoy-Extraordinary of His Majesty the King of Great Britain to this State, regarding the six English and Scottish regiments in the service of this State, inserted hereafter as follows: 'Hauts et Puissants. . . .'[1]

After discussion thereanent, the deputies of the Provinces of Holland, and West Friesland, and Friesland, took a copy of the above petition to make it known more fully to their provinces. And it was resolved and decided accordingly, that a copy of the above petition be placed in the hands of Mr. Baar and the other commissioners of their High Mightinesses on military affairs, for inspection and examination, and, after hearing and taking into account the facts of the case, and the most wise counsel of His Highness the Prince of Orange, to report on all points to this Assembly.

The Dutch Ambassador, Van Citters, to the States-General.

Westminster, March $\frac{12}{2}$, 1688.

Diplomatic Correspondence, England, 1688.

HIGH MIGHTINESSES,— . . . Yesterday His Majesty was pleased to inform me, that on the previous day the Articles

[1] Already printed from the Diplomatic Correspondence, see p. 548.

of Convention made about the English troops in 1678 had come into his hands. The Earl of Middleton also, by command of the king, showed me the original, of which an authentic copy has been sent over to the Marquis d'Albyville; in which, *inter alia*, it is stipulated that whenever His Majesty shall find fit to recall his subjects, they are to be permitted to come over to this side, and to embark at and for such ports as His Majesty may decide. Wherefore he said to me that he now certainly expected that this permission would be accorded to the soldiers his subjects.

Resolutions of the States-General.

March 13.—The report was read of Mr. Baar and the other commissioners of their High Mightinesses on military affairs, who in accordance with, and in execution of their resolution commissorial of the first inst., have inspected and examined the petition of the Marquis d'Albyville, Envoy-Extraordinary of His Majesty the King of Great Britain to this State, regarding the despatch of the well-known six regiments of the English and Scottish soldiers referred to more explicitly in the minutes of the 1st inst.

After discussion thereanent and consideration of the facts of the case and the most wise counsel of His Highness the Prince of Orange, and in accordance therewith, it was resolved and decided that the following reply be sent to the Marquis of Albyville in answer to his memorial:

'That their High Mightinesses can honestly declare that they desire nothing so much as to retain the honour of His Majesty's friendship and good-will towards this State, and to that end they on their part would willingly contribute what shall or may be required, and execute with the utmost readiness whatever they are bound to in terms of the existing treaties between His Majesty and this State. That their High Mightinesses had hoped that the reasons given by them why they could not allow the aforesaid six regiments of English and Scottish soldiers to leave would have satisfied His Majesty, and that their decision is so peremptory that they cannot allow themselves to rescind the resolution they arrived at. That the Envoy-Extraordinary above mentioned does indeed in the said petition allege that there had been made with this State with regard to the subjects of the Crown of England a treaty

which is as old as the Republic itself, and which enforces this duty on the State, and that it is not to be held as annulled by the wars which took place afterwards. That their High Mightinesses have to say with regard to this that they could well have desired that the said Envoy-Extraordinary had been pleased to specify that treaty, and to mention and point out the obligation thereby laid upon their High Mightinesses. That they can honestly declare that they have no knowledge of such a treaty: that it is true that in the year 1585 a treaty was drawn up between Queen Elizabeth of glorious memory and this State containing several conditions on and under which Her Majesty agreed to succour this State, but that their High Mightinesses do not find in the said treaty anything at all to oblige them to allow certain English troops in their service and pay to enter Her Majesty's service at her desire. That Her Majesty, having decided in the year 1598 to relieve herself of the expenses of the said succour and not to bind herself any further to it except at Her Majesty's own good pleasure, was indeed pleased to covenant and stipulate how and in what manner their High Mightinesses should be obliged to assist her in case Her Majesty continued to carry on the war against the King of Spain, and, *inter alia*, also by the seventh clause of the said treaty that Her Majesty should be at liberty to discharge the troops which she had maintained till that time, but that their High Mightinesses should be at liberty to take into and retain in their service all such of them as should be willing to serve this State and as their High Mightinesses chose to enlist. And Her Majesty was good enough at the same time to promise and engage that their High Mightinesses should be allowed to enlist in England as many men as, on the one hand, they should deem requisite, and on the other hand, Her Majesty should think she can spare, and that all the said men on entering the service should be subject to the military orders of this State, again without making the slightest stipulation that their High Mightinesses should be compelled to make over the said troops to Her Majesty or allow them to enter her service when she might desire it. That it is well known that their High Mightinesses faithfully and fully discharged the obligations incumbent on them according to the terms of the

said treaty, in the time of King James, also of glorious memory. That the succour promised by the said treaties has been discontinued; and that the money owing to His Majesty by their High Mightinesses was so fully paid that His Majesty granted a complete and absolute acquittal from the debt, and the towns of Brielle and Flushing, which were mortgaged to him for the payment of the said money, were discharged from that hypothecation and mortgage and restored to the State. That, in addition to this, when their High Mightinesses were so unfortunate as in the years 1664 and 1665 to be plunged into a war with King Charles II., also of glorious memory, the English and Scottish regiments, at that time in service, were all entirely discharged from it, and the officers who had commanded the said regiments were dismissed, and that those of them who were again taken into service in course of time were never again considered or regarded as officers of English or Scotch regiments; in short, that even if already in the beginning of the Republic such a treaty about letting the said troops serve His Majesty at his desire (which yet has neither been mentioned or exhibited by the said Envoy-Extraordinary nor found by their High Mightinesses) may have been in existence, said treaty would have been annulled by the times which followed, even in respect of the said English and Scottish regiments, and would no longer continue existing owing to the dismissal and discharge of the said English and Scottish regiments. But the Envoy-Extraordinary will be unable to show that the said agreement made by Her Majesty Queen Elizabeth of glorious memory has ever ceased to be valid, wherein she promises to permit the levying of English soldiers as far as the State may need them, said soldiers to serve under the orders and in the pay of this State, especially as their High Mightinesses have not been able to discover that this would interfere with the rights of any nation; although the Envoy-Extraordinary above-mentioned, and that too without adducing any reasons or any solid foundation, wishes to assert the contrary, for their High Mightinesses in so far as concerns the rights of nations are of opinion that nothing is more natural than that any free-born man should have the right and opportunity to seek his living and settle

where he thinks, and believing he can do so with most profit and advantage to himself. That he, consequently, has it also in his power to have himself naturalised, or by residence or other agreement to subject himself to those under whose government with person and goods he settles down and constitutes a family or binds himself otherwise; and that the government under which a person so settles or otherwise binds himself is at liberty either to accept or refuse such a person coming into its jurisdiction, and should the government accept him, either openly, by formal letters and document, or otherwise quietly by receiving him into the country and allowing him to live in it, or by taking him into service, the government thereby obtains over such a resident the same rights as it possesses over its own subjects and the natives of the country. That the most illustrious men have acknowledged that right from ancient times, not only as a proper and valid right, but as a power founded on natural equity, namely, that one who is freeborn should have the privilege to use that right which is his by nature, to go or remain where he pleases, according to his inclination, if he has not bound himself to another and thus surrendered his natural right; and that this privilege is also one of the strongest supports of a person's liberty. That the maxim is still being put into practice everywhere and all around, and that in all countries, even including England, strangers from other countries are daily received and taken in, who have decided to settle as citizens; and that no kings, princes, or states have ever agreed to surrender such citizens or residents, whom they have admitted, to those kings, princes, or states under whose government they were born. That, consequently, this ought the less to be required of their High Mightinesses at this time; because since the aforesaid law of nations, yea, the law of nature, gave to the said English and Scottish soldiers liberty and permission to enlist in the service, wages, and pay of this State, and to submit themselves further to the order and military discipline of said State; and as, furthermore, the treaties formed between His Majesty and his most illustrious predecessors and this State not only do not forbid, but rather encourage this, the State not only having always been permitted and allowed to

take the said English and Scottish soldiers into service, and the said English and Scottish soldiers to enter into the State's service and continue subject to their orders, so that they are not permitted, without a passport or the consent of their High Mightinesses, to leave the military service which they have voluntarily entered, especially as the military laws of this State agree with a general and concordant law used by all Christian nations, namely, that such a one as has once entered the military service may not leave it without the permission of those to whom he has bound himself, unless some different stipulation has been expressly made. That their High Mightinesses are glad to acknowledge that they have received good services from the said English and Scottish regiments, and that they, as is usual with people of their nation, have indeed exerted themselves; that the misfortune of war always causes some to be left on the field, but that the Envoy-Extraordinary makes an exceeding great mistake when he makes the number so large. That their High Mightinesses will make no reply to the instances mentioned by the said Envoy-Extraordinary, as they do not know what stipulations were made as regards them with His Majesty the King of France, and they could easily show what a bad application was made of what happened in the sad and unfortunate times of his Majesty King Charles II., did not the veneration which they have for His Majesty's most illustrious house, and the horror of such calamitous times and misfortunes prevent them from touching on those matters. That the whole world so well knows the good intentions of their High Mightinesses to preserve, as far as they can, the peace which was made, and to avoid everything that might give reasonable cause or occasion for disturbance, that it is unnecessary to repeat this often, and that they wish to assure His Majesty that nothing would be more pleasing to them than to second His Majesty's good intention to do all in his power to preserve said peace and quiet.'

A copy of this resolution of their High Mightinesses is to be placed, by the Agent Roseboom, in the hands of the said Marquis d'Albyville, that he may make such use of it as he thinks proper. And likewise, a copy of this resolution of their High Mightinesses is to be sent to Mr. van Citters, their

High Mightinesses' ambassador at the court of His Majesty for his information.

Van Citters to the States.

Westminster, March $\frac{23}{13}$, 1688.

Diplomatic Correspondence.

My Lords,—Last Saturday, on the arrival of the letters of the $\frac{16}{6}$th instant, no little commotion arose at the court on account of the second refusal which your High Mightinesses had given to the Marquis d'Albyville, on the presentation of his second memorial about the recall of His Majesty's subjects, so much so that I know His Majesty complained greatly about it to the Swedish ambassador, saying that he did not know in what sort of way your High Mightinesses appeared to wish to treat him; yea, the talk of most tended all this way, that war was now certain; and much confirmation was given to this by the fact that the Duke of Barwyck being asked by the young Earl of Steweml whether he, the duke, would again be present at the next campaign in Hungary, replied, 'If nothing happens here'; but after I casually commenced to reason with the Earl of Middleton and some others about the grounds of your High Mightinesses' resolution of the 13th instant, the vehemence seems to have already considerably abated. His Majesty has promised to grant me an audience to-night, or at least at mid-day to-morrow, if he should return too late and tired from the chase. I shall advise your High Mightinesses very humbly by the following post what I may gather in that conversation. It might easily happen, if it has not been done already, that after this second refusal the said marquis will request of your High Mightinesses the execution of the known 'project of the capitulation,' which is here considered a perfect and complete treaty, and, consequently, the expectation seems to be held that in accordance with it the king's subjects at least will be permitted to return to this country, and to embark at such a place as His Majesty shall see good to appoint.

Appeal by the English Ambassador to the Capitulation of 1678.

(Exhibitum April 5, 1688.)

Le Marquis d'Albyville aux Etats-Généraux.

Hauts et Puissants Seigneurs,—Le Sousigné Envoyé Extraordinaire de sa Ma^té^ le Roy de la Grande Bretagne a receu

ordres exprez de représenter à V S S. que Sa Ma^té^ a esté fort surprise de voir par leur résolution du $\frac{3}{13}$ du Courant qu'Elles persistent encore à refuser permission à ses sujets qui sont au service de vostre Etat, de s'en retourner en Angleterre; alléguant pour cela des raisons tirées de la Loy de la Nature et du Droit des Gens, lesquelles comme Sa Ma^té^ est persuadée, paroitront assez mal fondées aux sentiments des désinteressez.

Le dit Envoyé ne prétend pas de raisonner icy sur l'origine et l'excellence des Gouvernements, ce que quelques uns de ces plus scavans aux quels V S S. dans leur dite Résolution se rapportent ont déjà fait; qui de plus sont d'avis que la subiection d'un sujet, né sous l'obéissance d'un Monarque, oblige plus étroittement que celle d'aucun autre Gouvernement.

Il ne s'étendra pas non plus, sur les Loix des Royaumes de sa Ma^té^ qui défendent bien expressément à tous ses sujets naturels de se mettre au service des autres Princes ou Etats, sans la permission de sa Ma^té^, et en cas qu'ils y contreviennent, sa Ma^té^ les peut rappeller quand il le trouvera à propos, par sa proclamation ou par des lettres sous son sceau privé; et ses dits sujets sont obligez d'obéir aux tells ordres sous des peines très rigoreuses, aux quelles le dit Envoyé ne scauroit croire que V S S. voudroient exposer des personnes qui, comme Elles avouent, ont rendu depuis tant d'années des services si considerables à Vostre Etat, en les détenant contre les ordres de sa Ma^té^ et leur propre volonté.

Ce que le dit Envoyé voudroit faire scavoir à V S S. et à tout le monde est, que les dits sujets du Roy, qui sont au service de vostre Etat, n'ayant esté aucunement contraints à leur premier levée de sortir de ses Royaumes, Sa Majesté demande de V S S. qu'Elles les laissent en pleine liberté de s'en retourner.

Mais comme dans la dite résolution de V S S. il s'y trouvent des assertions qui tendent non seulement à dissoudre les biens de l'obéissance à laquelle chaque sujet est obligé par sa naissance, et dont il ne sçauroit se défaire, mais qui sont aussy contraires aux sentiments et à la practique de la plus part des autres Nations, le dit Envoyé trouve à propos de fair voir que les dites assertions ont peu de fondemént, et sont aussi peu applicables à la question dont il s'agit.

Quant à ce que V S S. allèguent . . . 'Qu'il n'est rien de si conforme à la nature, que celuy qui est né libre, ait la faculté et le droit de s'établir partout où il juge luy estre le plus avantageux . . . et qu'il est en son pouvoir de se fair naturalizer et s'assujettir à ceux, sous la souveraineté de quels il vient soumettre sa personne . . . et que l'acceptant acquiert par là sur un tel le mesme droit qu'il a sur ses sujets propres et naturels.' On peu répliquer avec plus de raison que la dite prétendue liberté naturelle ne peut subsister après que la domination et l'obéissance ont esté introduites, tellement que les droits de la souveraineté et de l'obéissance doivent estre uniquement considérés. Et en vertu de ces droits, le sentiment commun a esté en tout tems, que un sujet naturel ne sçauroit se défaire de l'obéissance qu'il doit à son Prince.

Et c'est de là que la plus part des Gouvernements, et particulièrement les Roys de la Grande Bretagne, ont en tout tems défendu à leur sujets de s'engager au service des Souverains étrangers, et les en ont rappelés, et quantes fois qu'ils l'ont trouvé à propos; et il n'y à peut-estre aucune example jusques à présent, qu'on ait refusé aux tels sujets la permission de s'en retourner, et V S S. mesme avouent de l'avoir acordé en l'an 1665.

Et supposé que les sujets auroient une liberté telle que Vostre résolution marque, de se transferer à un Gouvernement étranger, on ne peut pas pourtant comprendre pourquoy une pareille liberté doit estre refusée aux mesmes sujets, quand ils la demandent à se remettre sous leur souverain naturel.

Mais sans entrer plus avant dans la discussion de la dite Résolution de V S S., le dit Envoyé est ordonné de faire sçavoir à V S S. que le Roy ayant remarqué par leur lettre du $\frac{9}{19}$ du mois passé, qu'Elles fondent leur refus de congédier ses sujets sur ce qu'il n'estoit pas stipulé par aucune convention ou capitulation; sa Ma^{té} luy a commandé de dire à V S S, qu'une capitulation solemnelle fut faite en l'an 1678 avec le feu Comte d'Ossory par S. A. Mons^{r} le Prince d'Orange en qualité de Capitaine Général de vostre Etat, signée de sa main, cachetée de son sceau et contresignée par son secrétaire, dont il y a une copie cy-jointe par laquelle entre autres choses il est arresté. . . . Qu'au cas que Sa Ma^{té} Britanique vint à rappeler ses

snjets, qui seront au service de l'Etat, il leur sera permis de se retirer et de se rendre en tel Port de mer qu'il plair à sa dite Ma^té^ de choisir pour leur Embarquement. Laquelle capitulation doit sans doute obliger V S S. puisque elle fut conclue en bonne et deüe forme, par sa dite Altesse Mon^r^ le Prince d'Orange, comme un Act de vostre Etat, et l'on ne sçauroit croire qu'Elle ne fut faite du consentement de V S S.; puisqu' Elles ne l'ont jusques à présent désavoué, et puisque les autres articles de la dite capitulation ont esté accomplis, de quels il y an a quelques uns, particulièrement sur l'augmentation de la solde, qui ne pouvoient estre exécutez que par vostre authorité.

C'est pourquoy le dit Envoyé Ex^re^ vient de recevoir des ordres précis du Roy son Maitre de renouveller ses instances auprès de vostres S. S. et de demander en vertu de la dite Capitulation, aussi bien que pour les raisons alléguées, que ses sujets qui voudroient retourner au service de Sa Ma^té^ soient d'abord congédiés. Sa Ma^té^ ne peut jamais se relascher de cette demande ny douter que V S S. ne l'accordent, comme estant si juste et raisonable, et qui contribuera à l'affermissement de l'amitié et de la bonne correspondance entre les deux Nations.

Le Marquis d'Albyville.

Fait à la Haye le 5^me^ d'Avril 1688.

Annexa to the letter of April 5th, 1688, *sent by the Marquis d'Albyville to the States-General.*

Copy.

Capitulation faite par son Altesse Monsieur le Prince d'Orange avec M^r^ le Comte d'Ossery en qualité de Général des sujets de sa Majesté de la Grande Bretagne au service des Seigneurs Estats des Provinces Unies, soubs approbation des d^ts^ Seigneurs Estats.

Premierement: il est convenu que celuy qui commandera les sujets de sa d^te^ Majesté sera son sujet naturel.

Que le d^t^ Général n'obéira qu'à sa d^te^ Altesse, aux Maréschaux de Camp Généraux et au Général de la Cavallerie.

Que le d^{t} Général commandera toute l'armée de l'Estat, s'il venoit faute de sa d^{te} Altesse et des Généraux susnommés.

Que les soldats de sujets de sa Ma^{té} dans le d^{t} service auront leurs gages ou paye augmenté d'un sous de plus par jour qu'ils n'ont présentement.

Qu'au cas que sa Majesté Britannique vint à rappeller ses sujets qui seront au service de l'Estat, il leur sera permis de se retirer et de se rendre en tel port de Mer qu'il plaira à sa d^{te} Majesté de choisir pour leur embarquement.

Que le nombre des Compagnies aux Régiments composés de sujets de sa d^{te} Ma^{te} ne sera point diminué.

Que le Général sus d^{t} jouira des mesmes gages, profits et avantages en tems de guerre et de paise, dont a jouy de son vivant feu Monsieur de Zuylesteyn, Général de l'Infanterie de cet Estat.

Que les recreues qui seront envoyées de temps en temps des Royaumes du d^{t} Seigneur Roy, au cas qu'elles viennent à périr par naufrage ou à estre prises par les ennemys, seront passées en moustre, et que l'on en fera bon les soldats aux Captaines, pouveu qu'il apparoisse deüement qu'ils auront esté levés.

Que le dit Général aura un Adjudant de mesme que les autres officiers Généraux.

G. Prince d'Orange.

(L.S)

Fait à la Haye, le 29 Janvier 1678.

Pour son Altesse, Huygens.

Resolutions of States-General.

April 5.—To the meeting was read the later memorial of the Marquis d'Albyville, Envoy-Extraordinary of His Majesty the King of Great Britain to this State, with reference to the discharge of the English and Scottish troops in the service of this State from said service; the said memorial being inserted *verbatim* as follows:

'Hauts, etc. Le sousigné Envoyé, . . .'[1]

After discussion thereanent, it was resolved and agreed that

[1] Already printed from the Diplomatic Correspondence, see p. 556.

a copy of the above petition be placed in the hands of Mr. Schimmelpenningh van der Oye and the other commissioners of their High Mightinesses on foreign affairs, for inspection, examination, and report of everything to this meeting.

April 9.—The deputies of the province of Friesland being present presented to the meeting the resolution of the States of the said province, their principals, with respect to their High Mightinesses' resolution about sending back the English and Scottish regiments in the service of this State, the resolution being inserted *verbatim* as follows:

'Extracted from the Resolution-book of the States of Friesland.

'A missive was read and examined from Mr. Stansius, deputy of this province, in the assembly of their High Mightinesses, intimating that the Envoy-Extraordinary of the King of England had requested by petition that the three English and three Scottish regiments in the service of this State be sent back to His Majesty, and asking them to give him, Mr. Stansius, their opinion [in the matter].

'After discussion thereanent, and after reading over the resolutions adopted by the other provinces, in which the sending back of the said English and Scottish regiments was refused in polite terms, the states of Friesland resolved to agree to and approve of the resolution of their High Mightinesses abovementioned, as they hereby do, and charge the deputy of this province to the union to take an early opportunity of communicating this at a meeting of their High Mightinesses. This resolution was taken at the Provincial Government House, on the 24th February 1688, and was signed

'For Oostergoo: F. v. Alyva; J. Bentingha.

'For Westergoo: S. v. Goslinga.

'For the Zevenwolden: Hessel Vegelin van Claerbergen, M. van Scheltinga.

'For the towns: A. van Schuurman, Wjbrandt Douwes.'

No resolution was taken in regard to the above.

April 23.—The report was heard of Mr. Everwijn and the other commissioners of their High Mightinesses on

foreign affairs, who, in accordance with, and in execution of, their resolution-commissorial of the 5th inst., have inspected and examined the second memorial of the Marquis d'Albyville, Envoy-Extraordinary of His Majesty the King of Great Britain to this State, regarding the discharge of the English and Scottish troops in the service of the State, set forth more explicitly in the minutes of the 5th inst.

After discussion thereanent, it was resolved and decided that the following be sent to the said Marquis d'Albyville in reply to his said memorial.

That their High Mightinesses much regret to observe with what disfavour His Majesty choses to regard the resolutions they were compelled to take to excuse themselves from sending over the well-known six regiments, and that they would have liked to dispense with a reply which they fear His Majesty will consider unpleasant, had not the said Envoy-Extraordinary urgently pressed for an answer. That their High Mightinesses neither can nor will enter into any dispute with His Majesty about the laws of His Majesty's kingdoms, much less presume to absolve or acquit any one who has offended against or forfeited anything according to those laws.

That they have only said that the law of nature and of nations permits all who are free-born and not expressly bound to any service to seek their living outside the place of their birth and to become subjects of that sovereign under whom they wish to settle, and to enter the service of the sovereign and bind themselves in such a way as they are at liberty to do according to the common principles of the law of nations, and that this is so well known that it is and has been the practice everywhere, even in England. That their High Mightinesses have never forbidden any subject of His Majesty to return to His Majesty's countries and kingdoms when they may choose to go thither, except only those who, having come as free men to this country, voluntarily entered the service, and thereby purposely bound and subjected themselves not to leave that service before they had received leave and permission to do so from, or on behalf of, the State. That it is an abuse of facts to allege that their High Mightinesses gave permission, in the year 1665, to the English and Scots to retire from the service of

this country; that it is true, however, that when at the end of the year 1664 and at the beginning of the year 1665 their High Mightinesses had the misfortune to be plunged into war with His Majesty the King of Great Britain, Charles II., of glorious memory, they found fit at that time to change the English and Scottish regiments into Dutch, to discharge the officers of all of them, and enlist none of them again except those who would take a particular oath to the State, which was effected at the time. But not the least proof can be adduced that this was done either at the request of the officers in the service or at the request of His Majesty. And, as regards the agreement mentioned in the said memorial, that their High Mightinesses are greatly surprised that the said Envoy-Extraordinary, having in his first memorial referred to an agreement as old as the Republic itself, now comes forward with articles of convention of the year 1678, thereby making it the plainer that such said old convention or agreement is not to be found.

That they can sincerely declare they never knew anything about said agreement, and were greatly astonished that the Envoy-Extraordinary was pleased to mention it, just as if their High Mightinesses were obliged thereby to allow the said soldiers to enter His Majesty's service; for it is clearly seen, by the mere reading of the heading of the said agreement, that it was entered into on approval by their High Mightinesses, and that it does not appear that His Majesty of glorious memory, Charles II., before this, or His Majesty, the present king, ever insisted on the approbation of the said agreement, not even when His Majesty was pleased to renew the treaties between His Majesty of glorious memory, Charles II., and this State. That it is also true that His Highness the Prince of Orange never showed the said agreement to their High Mightinesses, much less presented it to be approved of by them, and that not a single clause of the said agreement has ever been put into practice; for although the said Envoy-Extraordinary strongly asserts this, yet he has not adduced the slightest evidence to verify his statement, except that, it being stipulated in the said agreement that the soldiers who were subiects of His Majesty should receive a stiver more

daily than they were receiving then for their wages or pay, the said pay was consequently increased. As, however, it appears from that same clause, firstly, that the said increase was not drawn by any of the said English or Scottish regiments in the whole of the year 1678, when the companies of the said regiments were composed of eighty-nine men; that when the peace was made in the year 1678 aforesaid, and the new state of war was framed, the said English companies, along with the other ordinary companies, were reduced to fifty-five men, and that only in the year 1679 the said increase took effect, and was then only enjoyed by three regiments on the repartition of the province of Holland, and one regiment on the repartition of the province of Zeeland, and that the regiment of Colonel Macquey, on the repartition of the province of Gelderland, and the regiment then belonging to Sergeant-Major and Colonel Kirkpatrick, and now to Colonel Balfour, did not participate in the said increase; as, however, if the agreement had actually been formed, not only the aforesaid four, but also the aforesaid two regiments ought to have drawn the said increase of salary, not from the year 1679, but from the year 1678, as the said treaty was made at the end of January 1678; but the said increase was no more than a gratuity, which His Highness, having noticed the trouble which the said officers had in recruiting and maintaining their companies, procured from the State, for the said English and Scottish regiments, instead of the higher pay which had formerly been drawn by, and thereafter withdrawn from, the companies of marines, divided out among the provinces of Holland and Zeeland, to as great an extent as this larger pay could be spread; and therefore it was given to only the said four, and not to the said six regiments, as the said higher pay which was taken from the said companies of marines could not go further than the said four regiments. And inasmuch as the critical juncture of time and affairs, not only does not make it advisable or warrant their High Mightinesses in dismissing, but on the contrary makes it absolutely necessary to retain the soldiers got together by them at such great expense; and that they do not find themselves bound by any convention or agreement to make these over to His Majesty,

or allow them to serve him: that, accordingly, they cannot do otherwise than adhere to their resolution repeatedly taken on the above matter.

And a copy of this resolution of their High Mightinesses is to be placed by the agent Roseboom in the hands of the aforesaid Marquis d'Albyville for his use; likewise an extract of this resolution of their High Mightinesses is to be sent to Mr. van Citters, their High Mightinesses' Ambassador at the Court of His Majesty, for his information.

Van Citters to the States-General.

Westminster, $\frac{May\ 7}{April\ 27}$, 1688.

High and Mighty Lords,—Yesterday I again had a conversation with the Earl of Middleton, when, among other things, we discussed the later reply of your High Mightinesses about the recall and despatch of the Scottish and English troops. His Lordship gave me indirectly to understand that His Majesty was exceedingly displeased at this reply, and that I need not expect yet, at least for some time, a reply to my memorial, because His Majesty, as he said, wished to deliberate about it thoroughly; but, as I hear further on good authority, they are resolved not to reply at all. **Diplomatic Correspondence, England, 1689.**

VI

THE REVOLUTION OF 1688, AND THE PERIOD IN BRITISH SERVICE TO THE PEACE OF RYSWICK. 1689-1697.

Extract from the Resolutions of Holland.

Secret Resolutions.

1688, Sept. 29.—The Grand Pensionary, in the name of H. H., makes a (lengthy) communication on H. H.'s desire to go over to England with a sufficient force, not to obtain possession of that country, nor to dethrone the king, but in the interest of the Protestant religion, and to prevent a coalition of the kings of England and France for invading this country.

Res. : To thank H. H. for the communication, also for his decision to make this attempt on his own responsibility, though with the assistance of the States; to make all possible and the strongest efforts to secure the consent of the other provinces; that all members present shall promise under oath not to divulge this communication to anybody, only absent members excepted. Further, to earnestly request H. H. to take all possible precautions for his personal safety, to keep away from his presence all persons not well known, or suspicious from their religious tendencies, and not to expose himself to any danger, except in case of most urgent necessity.

Oct. 26.—H. H. takes leave on his departure for England.

Coll. of Holland.

Expedition of 1688 [1]

Ships on which the Scots Brigade sailed

The transports are to be divided in three fleets, and again each fleet in three squadrons.

First squadron

To the first squadron belong the following vessels, with Infantry; the commander (the chief officer) to carry a red flag from the main.

De Boom, ...	for Major-Gen. Macquay.
Gortmolen, ...	Regt Major Macquay.
's Gravenhage, ...	
Yonge Ruyter, ...	
d'Eendragt, ...	Balfour.
Juffrouw Hester, ...	
'tWapen van Amsterdam, . . .	

[1] Collection Holland. *Archives Wassenaer*, 1891, No. 28, 2 a-d. Bundle IIb. Fleet. (A printed order.)

De blaeuwe Pot, ...
De Koog in de Saen, . . . } Wacop.
De Trouw, ...

The Dutch Ambassador, A. Van Citters, to the States-General.

December $\frac{28}{18}$, 1688.

HIGH AND MIGHTY LORDS,— . . . This afternoon the three Scottish regiments took up their quarters at Southwark, and the three English round about the Tower, which one of them will enter to-night still. Diplomatic Correspondence, England, 1689.

1689, *January* $\frac{14}{4}$.— . . . What regiments are destined for Ireland and Holland, the accompanying list clearly shows, except the half of your High Mightinesses' cavalry, which is not mentioned there, but are also on the point of returning home.

Les Régiments qui doivent aller en Hollande :
Bataillons 9.
1. Un Bataillon du premier régiment des gardes.
2. Deux Bataillons du second régiment des gardes.
2. Deux Bataillons de Dumbarton Ecossois.[1]
1. Littleton.
1. Churchill.
1. Hastings.
1. Sir David Colyer.[2]

The Dutch Ambassadors-Extraordinary, N. Witsen, W. de Nassau, and Evrard van Weede, to the States-General.

London, March $\frac{15}{5}$, 1689.

HIGH MIGHTINESSES,—Following upon what we in our last, with proper respect, informed your High Mightinesses of, the king was pleased again to-day to assure us that next Saturday six, and on the following Monday four or five, English regiments will embark, to sail for Holland with the first favourable wind, and that the remaining three or four regiments will shortly follow.

---

[1] The Royal Scots, afterwards the 1st of the Line.

[2] This was the regiment raised by King James in 1688, largely officered by officers from the Scots Brigade, who had returned on his summons, and previously commanded by Colonel Wauchope.

To the Council of State. (April 16, 1689.)

Petitions to Council of State.

NOBLE AND MIGHTY LORDS,—In expectation of further information from His Majesty the King of England regarding the English regiments promised some time ago for the protection of the territories of this State, and having waited till I had received notice of the arrival of all the regiments, in order that I might give a full report of everything, I can no longer delay informing the council that of the fourteen regiments of infantry and two regiments of cavalry which His Majesty writes that he will send over, the troops specified below have arrived, and are quartered in the garrisons mentioned with them. For the rest, I have also indicated their garrisons according to the said specification, in accordance with His Majesty's intentions. And when I receive the further orders which I expect from Lieut.-General Churchill, I shall not omit to inform the council immediately of it. . . .

List of the places where the new English regiments will be quartered:

Regiments arrived.			Garrisons.
	2 Cavalry Regiments,	.	Gertruidenberg.
Hadchier,	2 Infantry, ,,	. .	Nijmegen.
,,	3 ,, ,,	. .	Bosch.
,,	1 ,, ,,	. .	Heusden.
Chursell, Britsman,	3 ,, ,,	. .	Bergen-op-Zoom.
2 Companies of Grafton, Selvijn, . .	3 ,, ,,	. .	Breda.
Douglas, . . .	1 ,, ,,	. .	Bommel.
Mil Chursel, . .	1 ,, ,,	. .	Thiel.

(Exhibitum May 12, 1689.)

On May 4th, 1689, the following newly enlisted companies marched from Bois-le-Duc. . . .

Arrived on the same date:

The regiment of Colonel D'Offeraall.[1]

Francois d'Offeraal, Collonel.
Thomas Douglas, Lieut[t]-Coll.

[1] This was the Scots regiment previously commanded by Colonel Thomas Buchan, and afterwards the 21st of the Line, or Royal Scots Fusiliers. It and the Royal Scots were never in the Dutch service.

Heugh Muntgumry.
Robbert Ma^cKinze.
William Campbell.
Alexander Stretton.
William Burnit.
William Shairp.
William Whyt.
John Pattersone.
John Kinghfort.
James Coneven.
Robert Ride.
} alle elliff Capiteyne [all eleven Captains.]

To the Council of State.

Noble, Mighty Lords,—Mr. van Uttwegen, governor of Bergen-op-Zoom, thinks it his duty to bring most humbly under your notice that Lieut.-Colonel Balfour, commander of the said Bergen, has informed him that the English regiment of Colonel Churchill, having received orders to come to the army, marched from Bergen last Saturday, and at the first halting-place in the afternoon, in a little hamlet in the marquisate named Put, committed many offences, for when the farmers brought to them on the highway fourteen half barrels of beer, bread and cheese, they first took the beer into a beautiful meadow, which was ready for haymaking, and they made havoc of it; besides, they extorted twenty guilders in money from a farmer, broke into cellars, took wine out of them, and finally stole a horse, without giving anything in payment but a hundred blows with a stick. Thus, your Noble High Mightinesses, the commander writes to me, and I have considered it my duty to inform you about it, etc.

Ph. van Maumaker en Uttwegen.

Resolutions of the Council of State.

1690, *February* 16.—On the report of Mr. van Amerongen it was resolved, after discussion, that Treasurer-General van den Burgh shall draw up an accurate statement of the profits that accrued to the several provinces from the regiments of the English and Scots which were last sent to England to the support of ex-King James; also of the profits that ought to have accrued on account of the recruits of Maestrigt.

ADDITIONAL NOTE.

[The following note shows the changes in the *personnel* of the Brigade during the period it passed in the British Service. For further details reference is made to Dalton's *British Army Lists* and *Commission Registers*, and for a complete list of the officers at the time, to the Flanders Army List of 1694, there printed.]

In 'An exact List of the Royal Confederate Army in Flanders, commanded by the King of Great Britain . . . as it was drawn up at Gerpines Camp, July 27, 1691,' appear :

L^t-Gen. Mackay's Scots Foot. (Uniform) Red lined blue.
Brig.-Gen. Ramsay's Scots Foot. ,, Red lined white.

In 'The Establishment for Scotland, 26th Oct. 1691,' appears :

Foot—Col. Lauder's. (Strength, 780.)

In the 'List of their Majesties British Forces in Flanders in 1692,' appear :

L^t-Gen. Mackay's.
Sir Chas. Graham's.
Col. Lauder's.

The following officers received commissions in the Brigade while it was in the British service :

The Regiment commanded successively by L^t-General Hugh Mackay, Colonel Æneas Mackay, and Colonel Robert Murray.

1692

Aug. 1. Æneas Mackay, Col.
,, John Macdougall, L^t-Col. (Killed at Landen.)
,, Hugh Macdonald, Major. (L^t-Col. Aug. 1, 1693.)
,, Gerrard Cattenburg, Capt. In succession to Capt. Watkins. (Killed at Terra Nova, Namur.)
,, Wm. Mackenzie, Capt.-Lieut. (Capt. April 20, 1693. Wounded at Terra Nova, Namur.)
,, John MacLeod, Ens. (Lieut. June 1, 1696. Wounded at Terra Nova, Namur.)
,, John Macdougall, Ens. (Lieut. 1692. Out of regt. 1694.)
,, Allan Macdougall, Lieut. (Trans. to Sir C. Graham's regt. Sept. 1, 1692.)
,, Hugh Mackay, Lieut. (Capt. July 16, 1695.)

Aug. 1. Geo. Mackay, Lieut. (Died of wounds received at Landen.)
,, Donald Cameron, Lieut. (Capt.-Lt April 20, 1693. Capt. Aug. 1, 1693. Second son of Sir Ewen Cameron of Lochiel.)
,, Alex. Mackenzie, Lieut.
,, Eustace Puchler, Capt. (Died of wounds received at Landen. Probably brother to Countess Puchler, wife of Col. Æneas Mackay.)
,, Alex. Macdonald, Lieut.
,, Neil MacLeod, Ens. (Lieut. July 16, 1695. Wounded at Terra Nova, Namur.)
,, George Bruce, Lieut. (Capt.-Lieut. Aug. 1, 1693. Capt. Aug. 31, 1695. Wounded at Terra Nova, Namur.)
,, John Wilson, Quartermaster. (Lieut. May 7, 1694.)
,, Alex. Henderson, Ens.
,, Hugh Mackay, Ens. (Capt. of the late Lt-General's company Sept. 1. Only son of Lt-Gen. Hugh Mackay, aged 12 years.)
,, Robert Munroe, Ens. (Capt. Sept. 10, 1696.)
Sept. 1. Alex. Cockle, Ens. (Lieut. April 20, 1694. (Led forlorn hope on Coehorne at attack on Terra Nova, Namur. Appointed Capt. of Grenadier Company in Col. James Ferguson's regt. Sept. 14, 1695. Trans. to Col. Wm. Northcote's regt. March 4, 1698.)
,, Thos. Dickson, Adjt. (Lieut. in 1694.)

1693

Apr. 20. Kenneth Mackenzie, Ens. (Lieut. Sept. 1, 1694.)
,, Chas. M'Hardie, Ens. (Out of regt. in 1694.)
,, Thos. Dickson, Ens. (Lieut. Aug. 1, 1693. Wounded at Terra Nova, Namur.)
,, John Cunningham, Capt. (Major May 7, 1694. Wounded at Terra Nova, Namur.)
Aug. 1. Donald MacLeod, Major. (Major of Lauder's May 7, 1694.)
,, Hugh Sutherland, Capt. (In succession to Puchler.)
,, Norman MacLeod, Lieut. (Capt.-Lieut. March 30, 1697.)
,, John Munro, Lieut. (Wounded at Terra Nova, Namur.)
,, Charles Gordon, Ens. (Wounded at Terra Nova, Namur.)
,, John Laurie, Ens. (Lieut. Sept. 10, 1696.)
,, Donald Martin, Ens. (Wounded at Terra Nova, Namur. Lieut. June 18, 1697. Half-pay 1698.)

1694

May 1. Walter Corbet, Lieut.-Col.
,, 7. John Monro, Lieut.
,, Andrew Mowat, Ens. (Capt. May 1, 1696.)
,, 22. Alex. Grant, Ens.
,, Walter Bruce, Quartermaster.
Aug. 20. John Stevenson, Lieut.
,, 17. John MacGee.

[The Flanders Army List also mentions Lieuts. John Macdonald, Donald MacLeod (Capt.-Lieut. Aug. 31, 1695, Capt. March 30, 1696, Half-pay, 1698), and two Ensigns both named John MacDonald. The Capts. in 1694 were Col. Mackay, Lt-Col. Corbet, Major John Cunningham (Lt-Col. Bowie), Fred. Lamy, James Cunningham, Robt. Bruce, John Macdougall, Ger. Cattenburg, Hugh Mackay, Wm. Mackenzie, Hugh Sutherland, and Donald Cameron.]

1695

July 16. Walter Bruce, Ens. (Lieut. June 18, 1697. Half-pay 1698.)

1696

June 1. —— Innis, Ens.
,, Geo. Mackay, Ens.
Sept. 10. Robert Mackay, Ens.

1697

Jan. 20. Peter Chapuzette, Surgeon. (Killed in action, see vol. ii.)
,, 25. Hugh Monroe, Ens.
May 30. Robert Murray, Colonel. (From the Scots Foot Guards.)
June 18. Rorie Bean, Ens. (Half-pay 1698. Ens. in Earl of Derby's Foot 1702. Lieut. in D. Mackenzie's Ind. Co. 1711.)
,, John Murray, Ens.
July 1. Gilbert Paterson, Quartermaster. (Half-pay 1698.)
,, James Douglas, Lt-Col. (From Capt. and Lt-Col. Scots Foot Guards.)

The Regiment commanded by Colonel Lauder.

1691

Feb. 20. Sir James Araskin, Capt. (Eldest son of Sir Charles Erskine of Alva, and third Bart. Killed at Landen.)

1692

June 15. James Bennet, Ens.
Aug. 1. Walter Corbet, Major.
,, Geo. Preston, Capt. (In succession to Major James Ferguson, appointed Lt-Col. of the Cameronians.)
,, Robert Fleming, Capt. (In succession to Andrew Bruce.)
Sept. 1. Sir John Keith, Capt. (Previously in Scots Guards.)
,, Robert Ferguson, Lieut. (Capt. May 7, 1694.)
,, John Crege (Craig), Lieut. (Out of regt. in 1694.)
,, Charles [*sic*, probably Peter?] Bruce, Lieut. (Peter Bruce, prisoner at Landen.)
,, Alex. Aikenhead, Lieut.
,, Alex. Nisbet, Ens. (Out of regt. in 1694.)

Sept. 1. Wm. Sandilands, Ens. (Adjt. Nov. 1, 1694. Lieut. June 1, 1695.)
,, Wm. Bruce, Ens.
,, Andrew Lauder, Lieut. (Capt.-Lieut. May 15, 1695.)
,, George Lauder, Ens. (Does not appear later.)

1693

Jan. 1. Hugh Ross, Chaplain.
,, 31. David Douglas, Ens.
Apr. 20. Daniel Somstrom, Ens.
Aug. 1. Alex. Stuart, Lt-Col.
,, 10. John Cunningham, Ens.
,, ,, Walt. Innes, Ens. (Lieut. May 7, 1694.)
,, ,, John Blair, Ens.
,, ,, Wm. Nicholson, Capt.
,, ,, Wm Yuil, Capt. (Out of regt. May 15, 1695).
,, ,, Charles Bruce, Lieut.
,, ,, Alex. Halket, Lieut.
,, ,, James Murray, Lieut.
,, ,, Walt. Lauder, Ens.
,, ,, Alex. Scott, Lieut.
,, ,, Alex. Nicholson, Ens. (Lieut. July 20, 1695.)
,, ,, Patrick Gordon, Capt. (Left regt. June 16, 1695.)

1694

May 7. Donald MacLeod, Major.
,, ,, David Wedderburn, Ens.
,, ,, Robert Farquhar, Ens.
June 12. James Douglas, Ens.
July 1. John Cunningham, Ens.
,, ,, James Elphinstone, Lieut.
Nov. 6. Arch. Patton, Major.

There were also serving in 1694 : Capt.-Lt. Bedro, Lieuts. Murray, MacRonnal (April 5, 1690), James Innes (March 15, 1689), Sinclair, Alex. Bruce (March 15, 1689), and James Moncour (Jan. 1, 1689), Ensign William Cunningham, and Surgeon William Gledstanes.

The complete List of Captains was :

Colonel Lauder, Lt.-Col. Alex. Stuart, Major D. MacLeod, Walter Murray (March 23, 1689), James Blair (Sept. 2, 1689), Geo. Preston, Robert Fleming, Sir John Keith, Wm. Nicholson, Wm. Yuill, Peter Gordon, Robert Ferguson, and Major Arch. Patton.

1695

May 15. David Baird, Capt. (*vice* Yuill.)
June 16. Thos. Davidson, Capt. (*vice* Gordon.)
,, ,, James Balgary, Ens.

June 16. John Reynolds, Quartermaster. (Lieut. 20th July.)
July 20. Nicholas Hollenburg, Lieut.
,, ,, Hugh Ross, Ens.
Aug. 1. John Buchanan, Capt. (*vice* Sir John Keith. From Ferguson's Foot.)

1696

No entries.

1697

June 1. Wm. Rosendael, Ens.
,, ,, Alex. Skene, Quartermaster.

The Regiment commanded successively by Brigadier-General Ramsay, Sir Charles Graham, and Col. Walter Philip Colyear.

1692

Sept. 1. Allan MacDougall, Lieut. (Trans. from Mackay's regt.)
,, ,, John Mackenzie, Capt.-Lieut.
,, ,, Robert Boyd, Lieut.
,, ,, Ant. Swynborn. (Out of regt. Aug. 1, 1693.)
Dec. 29. Christian William Lichtenberg, Capt. (*vice* Gordon.)

1693

May 1. Simon Fraser, Capt. (Exchanged from Mackay's regt. with James Cunningham.)
Aug. 1. Alex. Clark, Lieut.
,, ,, Charles Boyd, Ens.
,, ,, James Graham, Ens.
,, ,, David Graham, Ens. (Lieut. March 8, 1694. Capt. July 20, 1695.)

1694

March 15. Gavin Ramsay, Lieut.
,, ,, John Chambers, Ens.
May 7. Alex. Boyd, Ens. (also June 5, 1695.)
,, ,, John Ramsay, Ens.
,, ,, Adam Gordon, Ens.
,, ,, Philip St. Amand, Capt.-Lieut. (Adjt. March 15.)
,, 22. James Alexander, Capt.
,, ,, John Maxwell, Lieut.
,, ,, John Mackenzie, Ens.
,, ,, Robert Young, Capt. (*vice* Muschet.)
,, ,, Simon Duff, Ens.

There were also serving in 1694: Lieuts. Colin Campbell, Alexander Burnett, John Campbell, Henry Fleming, Alex. Alexander, John

M'Kinsh, John Grant; Ensigns John Graham, James Ramsay (Lieut. June 5, 1695), John Forrest, John Forbes, John Lamy, and Philip Graham, and Quartermaster Patrick Douglas (Ensign June 5, 1695).

The Captains were: Col. Sir Charles Graham, Lt.-Col. John Somerville, Major Wm. Murray (Lt.-Col. July 1, 1695), Wm. (? E.) Halkett, Wm. Graham, John Ramsay, Joost van Beest, George, Earl of Dalhousie (killed in Holland by one Mr. Hamilton in 1696 (*Douglas's Baronage*), James Boyd, Robert Mushet (who obtained a grant of Arms from the Lyon office in 1680, in which he is described as 'Lieut. in Col. Douglas, his regt. in the service of the States-General of the United Provinces under his Highness the Prince of Orange, who is grandson of Craighead, which Craighead was second son to Craighead of that ilk,' Capt. in Scots Foot Guards May 12, 1694), Simon Fraser, C. W. Lichtenberg, and James Alexander.

1695

Apr. 30. John Alex. Lamy, Ens. (Lieut. in Mackay's regt. Sept. 20, 1696.)
July 1. George Monroe, Major.
,, 20. Wm. Ramsay, Capt.
Sept. 20. Maximilian Franks, Ens.
Oct. 31. Walter Philip Colyear, Colonel. (*vice* Sir Charles Graham cashiered.)

1696

Apr. 20. Peter Best, Lieut. (Placed on half-pay in 1698, and entered Russian service. Father of Alexey Bestucheff, Grand Chancellor to the Empress Elizabeth.)
June 20. David Nicholson, Major (from the Royal Scots).

1697

Apr. 21. Alex. Martin, Quartermaster.

Three companies of each of the three regiments were disbanded in the winter of 1697-98, after which date no commissions for the Scots Brigade appear in the English Commission Books.

SUPPLEMENTARY NOTES

[The following Notes are from sources to which the Editor only obtained access after the sheets were printed, and for directing his attention to some of which he has to thank Mr. C. H. Firth.]

EARLY SERVICES OF THE SCOTS.

(From Roger Williams's *Actions of the Low Countries.*)

The first arrival of English was under Capt. Morgan after the revolt of Flushing.

SIEGE OF HAARLEM.

'In the town were most of the Prince's best Captains, Smith, Balford . . . with divers others of the Scots.'

The Duke of Alva 'executed the most part of them most cruelly, saving the Almaines of Stenbagh's regiment (who compounded for the most part to serve the king), and Balfort with a few Scottish men; who to escape Duke d'Alva'es cruelty, promised to kill the Prince of Orange, but being arrived with the Prince he confessed his promise, and served him faithfully long after.'

SIEGE OF ALKMAAR.

'The Prince and States of Holland had sent into the town five or six expert Captains; especially the Scottish men, Smith and Cornelleys, who entered the town with some four hundred soldiers. The most of these Captaines had been in Haarlem, and saved the town for a long time, next unto the Almighty's will.'

SIEGE OF LEYDEN.

In Leyden were 'other companies of Scots.'
In Rotterdam were 'some bands of Scots.'
In Dilfshaven 'sundry bands of Scots.'

SEA FIGHT NEAR MIDDELBURG.

The navy was 'well manned with good store of gallant soldiers of the nations of English, Scots, and French. . . . Our Vice-Admirall boarded theirs, so did valiant Robinson, a Scottish Captaine, being in one of the best Flusheeners, board their Rear-Admirall.'

SEA FIGHT OF ROMERSWALL, NEAR ZIERCEKZEE.

'A good number of soldiers of Scots, etc. on board.'

COLONEL SIR WILLIAM EDMOND.

(From Birch's *Life of Henry, Prince of Wales*, son of King James I. of England and VI. of Scotland.)

'The Prince's love of arms, which soon discovered itself, and his esteem for men eminent in that profession, recommended to his notice and regard Colonel Clement [*sic*, Sir William] Edmondes, a Scots officer in the service of the States-General, who had advanced himself by his merit. The Colonel, who had been desired by his Highness to send him over from Holland some armour, having been prevented for some time from executing this commission, wrote to the Prince on the 13th of May N.S. 1604, from the camp in the Low Countries, excusing this delay, and alledging that he could never yet have time, on account of the continual exercise of the wars, to perform his promise with relation to the Prince's corslet. "Yet I hope," says he, "with God's grace to tie myself fast upon your Grace's body; hoping in God that it shall be good handsel, and that through the good hope that it has pleased the Lord to bestow upon your person that your Grace's name begins already to be spread through the whole world. I hope in God that you shall follow the footsteps of the Prince of Wales, King Edward the Thirds son, who not only did subdue France, but also reduced the proud Spaniards in their own country. I shall bring with me also the book of Froissart, who will show your Grace how the wars were led in those days, and what just title and right your Grace's father has beyond the seas."

'The Prince returned an answer to the Colonel from St. James's on the 21st of May 1604, thanking him for the kind remembrance of his promise, the performance of which would be very acceptable; and assuring him that whenever a fit opportunity should be offered him of repairing into England, he should find him, the Prince, willing to requite the Colonel's affection. But Colonel Edmondes did not live long enough to receive much advantage from the Prince's regard for him; for on the third of March 1606-7 N.S. his widow, who signs herself Agneta Berck, wrote a letter to his Highness from Utrecht, acquainting him with the death of her husband, who had procured a set of arms, which he had designed to have presented to the Prince in April following, and at the same time to have introduced his son to his Highness.'

(Anecdote from Peacham's *Compleat Gentleman*, 1634.)

'Neither are the truly valorous, or anyway virtuous, ashamed of their so mean Parentage, but rather glory in themselves that their merit hath advanced them above so many thousands far better descended. . . . I remember when I was in the Low Countries, and lived with Sir John Ogle at Utrecht, the reply of that valiant Gentleman, Colonel Edmonds, to a countryman of his newly come out of Scotland went current; who desiring entertainment of him, told him, My Lord his father, and such knights and gentlemen, his cousins and kinsmen, were in good health.

Quoth Colonel Edmonds, "Gentlemen (to his friends by) believe not one word he says; my father is but a poor Baker of Edinburgh, and works hard for his living, whom this knave would make a Lord to curry favour with me, and make ye believe I am a great man born."

THE SIEGE OF BREDA, 1637.

(From Lithgow's *Siege of Breda.*)

The Scots quarter was upon the river A.

'The second quarter, consisting of three Scots regiments, and they also under these three colonels, the Lord Amon, Sir James Sandilands, and Sir David Balfour, to whose courtesies I was greatly obliged, and in a singular respect to mine old acquaintance, Colonel Sandilands, besides the kindnesses of most part of all these Captaines and other officers there, who now and then did feast me with good cheere, and kindly draughts of French, Rhenish, and Spanish liquors.'

'I will fall down a League westward to Grave William's Brigade, or Scots quarter, which was the place of my chiefest abode.

'Heere, as in the Princes quarter, at the beginning of their approaches, with three Redoubts and two Batteries, the enemy did divers times sally forth upon them; but they were ever viriliously repulsed back to their owne repugnable limits, with Martial Affronts and loosing of lives. But when the utmost of the Scots trenches and works encroached within push of pike to the Enemies Horneworke, at which time Colonel Sandilands was shot through the left arm from the wrist almost to his elbow, whereof (praised be God) he is now happily convalesced. Then I say grim fatality overspread these journall and nocturnall Combattants of both Factions, with the black Cymmerian wings of preposterous Death; for as Empidocles threw himself in the Aetnean fires to be reputed for a god, so these rash and temerarious souldiers (of whom my countrymen were only chiefest) did desperately cast themselves before the mercilesse mouthes of the Cannon and Musket, thinking thereby to gain a Bellonean reputation. . . . But now to be punctuall: upon the second of September there came direction from his Hignesse to Grave William that the Scots the day following should storm the Horneworke, and that the Dutches should second them. To behold this assault came hither the Prince Elector Palatine, accompanied with two young German Dukes, Lantsberg and Swavbridge, etc., the Lord Viscount Grandeson, the Lord Craven, and certain other English Gallants of singular note. Now with much difficulty had the Scots made a Bussebridge over the mouth of the Horneworke, where fastening a mine within the bosome of an earthen Rampier for passage sake, which being blowne, it rebounded back on themselves (being the Enginier's fault), yet without any dammage, save onely a part of the Bridge broken downe.

'Then was Lievtennant Gladstanes commanded by the Generall to fall on, and with him divers officers and some choice companies of selected

souldiers, which indeed they both bravely and manfully accomplished; and with them fell on a certain number of uncommanded Voluntiers, all Scotsmen. The conflict for an hour's space was exceeding doubtful and dangerous, for the Muskets and Firelocks never ceased, neither was the Sword and Pike short of the manliest usage couragious valour could afford magnanimous Gallants.

'At last the Enemy was beaten out of the body of the Horneworke, and above threescore of them left there killed, and retired to a cross Demilune, erected within the inmost corner of this worke, from which place they damnably threw over Handgarnads, Bullets of three Pounds weight, and being empty within they are filled with Powder, Pitch, and Sulphur, where falling on the ground and breaking, spoyled a number of our men.

'Then came certain companies of Dutch Firelockes to second them, and gave once fire, but by your leave like cowardly Beasts and greedy slaves as they are, they left their service and fell a spoiling of the dead bodies which the Scots had slaine.

'In the end the buttery Dutches perceiving fresh supply coming out of the town to aid their almost vanquished consorts, the Burgundians, they shamefully fled, leaving with the incensed and exasperate enemies the Scots at *pell mell*, in which place there were Thirtyseven of them left dead, and Fortyfour wounded, who with the rest were enforced to retire again to their own Trenches, with the generall applause of dear bought praise and commendation. In which retreat Sergeant Lindsay was drowned in the Moat, whose body could never be found, notwithstanding we supposed he had been taken prisoner, but the Enemy the next day avouched the contrary to the great grief of all his fellow-soldiers, and to me much more, for I lay in his strawbuilt cabin, and was familiar with him as with a sociall friend.

'The speciall of which fatal Voluntiers was Lievtenant-Colonel Henderson, whose Father, Sir Robert Henderson, Colonell, and lately killed at Bergen-op-Zoom, was a son of the venerable and Martial Race of Fordell, and this young Accadent, as he was bred of a valourous father, so he fought as valiantly as ever could a noble heart perform a manly part, and died in the bed of Honour.

'Secondly, that gallant and ever lamented Gentleman, Captain Williamson, who killed three men with his own hands, and the fourth killed him. The third was Auncient Hammilton, Pardevan's son, beside Lithgow, who lately eight days before in another conflict had so courageously behaved himself that he slew two Vallounes and took captive the Neapolitan Cantelmo, carrying him away perforce, and with strong hand, from amongst the midst of his enemies, to his eternal fame; and now and at this time he killed four Burgundians before he fell, whom then the enemy knew well, because of his red cloaths, where in a base and inhumane revenge they mangled, cut, and carved his head, face, and dead body, that scarcely the next day, when his corps was sent over the Moat, could he well be known. The rest were these Sergeants, Lindsay, Inglis, and

Corbet, with divers more young Scotsmen, of whom one Moncreeffe, a delicate stripling, was much lamented.

'Of the hurt Voluntiers was Sir Philip Balfoure, one who, with Sword and Pike, manfully behaved his weilding hands, and being shot in the left arm, came fairly off with deserved Reputation; where and there also Auncient Drummond had his leg shot from him, which, although it be the badge of a souldier, yet it hath spoiled the comely feature of a gallant personage.

'Now, of the commanded souldiers there was principally slain Lievtenant Gladstanes, an aged man, whose death his own hands revenged upon the lives of five Burgundians before he fell dead, whose valour the very enemy the next day mightily applauded. So with him was killed Auncient Fargeson, with certain others whose names I suspend to relate. The next morning there was a parley beaten on either side, that both foes might take away the dead and bury them. All the dead Scots were spoiled by the Enemy, save only Captain Williamson, whose body one David Anderson manfully brought off, to his great credit and thereupon present preferment, and saved thereby his cloaths and forty pieces of Gold that were in his pockets. The rest were sent over the Graffe in Boats, stark naked and loathsome to behold.

'The Corps of Lieutenant.-Colonel Henderson was sent to Dunhag, and there buried in the great Church beside his father, and the bodies of Williamson, Gladestanes, and Valiant Hammilton were sent three leagues off to Gutrenberg, and there interred in a church. The rest were buried at the Hage, and near the Scots quarter, with hollow drums and volley shots and souldiers trailing Pikes before them, the miserable mourning of Mars.

'The next morning after this the Scots made another sally upon the Horneworke, and then the Burgundians fled, leaving behind them some barrels of Beer, a number of firelocks, and divers Bedsteads. Well, this dear bought Horneworke was instantly turned over and made defensive for the Victors' use, and then close by the Moat side there were two new Batteries made up, which forthwith dismounting the Enemies cannon, constrained the Spaniards to sink them lower in the walls, and so they taught them (as the proverb is) to eat their Meat in order, for upon these four batteries here there were mounted 14 half cannons, with twenty-three cannoniers. Then that same night they began their chief Gallery, whereof one James Lecky was chief workmaster, who was to have for perfecting the same Thirty-six thousand Guilders.

'. . . When the Scots Gallery was half over the Moat, and Lievtenant-Colonel Coutts standing there giving directions to Souldiers, there was a Burgundian from a wooden windmill on the town wall shot him through the thigh, and burst the bone in pieces, by the which this aged and brave commander was left there for death, yet a my departure there was great hope of his recovery. Whereupon the next day Colonel Balfour caused four half-cannons to be stalled against the windmill, where down it came with a rattle and bruised the bones of some Burgundians till their guts

rattled again. So likewise, about this time one Captain Wachub sickened in the quarter and died the third day thereafter, which was thought to have been the Plague.

'The city beat a parley on 6th October.

'Eight companies of Scots were left in the garrison.'

CAMPAIGN OF 1674.

(From Sir R. Bulstrode's Letters to the Earl of Arlington, 1712.)

June 1st, 1674, Brussels.

'Captain Mackully, a Captain in the Scotch Regiment here, who put himself voluntarily into Navagne with Thirty men just as it was besieged, came hither yesterday by his Excellency's order to give him an account of the Condition and Rendition of that place.' He says . . . 'that if they had not surrendered when they did, they must have lost it upon the attack, and that it was a battalion of my Lord Douglas's Regiment that were entered the Trenches to have attacked them, who first entered and took possession of the Fort.'

June 12th, 1674.

'A vessel coming from Scotland with One hundred men, being a part of the Recruits for Marquis Douglas's Regiment, was taken by a Privateer of Ostend and brought in thither, but another vessel with treble her number got safe into Dunkirk. His Excellency having notice of this, and that the men were willing to serve here, sent down Colonel Scot to Ostend with orders to receive such as are willing to take service, and to march with them hither, where they shall be mustered in his Regiment.

June 19th, 1674.

'Last night Master de Camp Scot came hither with the sixty Scotch Men that were taken at sea by the Ostend caper. They were immediately mustered, and his Excellency gave orders for cloathing them, and giving them a months pay, and so the Colonel to march with them to his quarters at Leuwe. There are two Lieutenants and an Ensign, one of them Mr. Maitland, but they would not take service, and will, I think, be sent to the French army to-morrow.'

Sept. 18th, 1674.

'Sir William Ballandine, having lately brought over six companies of Foot from Scotland to Bolduc, went on Tuesday last to pay his respects to General Rabenhaut (at the siege of Grave), and after that would, in curiosity, go down to the Meuse side to see the approaches and the Fort which the French had blown up and quitted, which he entered; and in his return back he was killed with a Cannon-shot, which hit him in the back, took away the greatest part of his body, leaving his head and arms hanging by a little skin; his heart was found entire some paces from the place. There was a Lieutenant also killed with him. The remaining part of his body was taken up and conveyed to Bolduc, and there interred.

WAR OF 1672-75.

(From the Netherlands Historian.)

In 1673 Lieut.-Col. Greyme was made Colonel in place of Colonel Scot, who was ill. Lamy, Lt.-Col., and Colier, Sergt.-Major.

Among the officers killed at the siege of Maestricht was Lieut.-Col. Sandilant, and among the wounded were Lieut.-Col. Leveston and Ens. Erskine.

On July 1673, Lt.-Col. Grim [Grahame] and his Lieut.-Col. were taken prisoners at Swartsluyce. Colonel Kirkpatrick appears as Governor of Crèvecœur.

SIEGE OF MAESTRICHT, 1676.

(From W. Carr's *Particular Account of the Siege of Maestricht.*)

Officers injured in the attack on the Bastion called the Dolphin, Aug. 4.

Capt. Stone, Capt. Widdrington, Capt. Crane, Capt. Middleton, and Capt. Hales, described as 'Captains in the Scotch regiment under Col. Collier, with two other captains of Col. Kilpatrick's regiment of Scots, coming in to the assistance of the English in the Bastion, were all blown up and wounded' by the explosion of a mine. Crane and three Scotch officers were killed. Stone, Widdrington, Hales and Middleton, badly hurt, but alive and recovering.

'Valiant Col. Collier, who, as adjutant-general and also Colonel of a Scotch regiment, hath done very bravely in every place where he commanded.'

In a list of officers killed and wounded in the siege appear :

Capt. Douglas, killed with a shot.
Lt.-Col. Magdugle, wounded.
Capt. Wacup, wounded.
Lieut. Cunningham, killed.

Cornet Grahame is named in a list of officers quitting the service.

END OF VOL. I.

INDEX

The lists of Scottish names, written down by Dutch clerks, are full of errors, which cannot always be rectified, even by conjecture. Where there is any room for doubt, they are here printed as they appear in the copies. Unfortunately the difficulty often arises in the initial letter. For example (compare pages 346, 347 *and* 349), *Orifkin may be Erskine or Griffin. Farren and Warren may be the same person. Prefase is perhaps Trefuse or Trefusis; and Kirgardhome and Kaynsford are probably clerical errors for Richardson and Raynsford.*

Aa, van der, 213.
Abercromby, David, 452.
—— John, 450.
—— Robert, 329, 452.
Abrahal, Johan, 502 and *n*, 509, 510, 516 *n*, 526.
Abraham, John, 490.
Abram, ensign, 347, 349.
Abt, van der, 403.
Acheson, A., of Gosford, 14.
—— Henry, 14.
—— Patrick, 14.
Ackersloot, William, 499.
Adams, capt., 36.
Adamson, John, 6.
Aerschot, 18.
Aerssen, recorder, 120, 131, 153, 212.
Aikenhead, Alex., 572.
Albert, archduke, 30.
Albyville, marquis d', 545; letter from, to the states-general, on the recall of the brigade, 548; the states' reply, 551; he appeals to the capitulation of 1678, 556; the states' reply, 562.
Aldena, captain, 30.
Alexander, Alex., 574.
—— James, 574, 575.
Alkmaar, siege of, 576.
Allen, John, 278.
Allet, Alexander, 451.
Almond, lord. *See* Livingstone, sir James.
Alost, 24.
Alphistone. *See* Elphinstone.
Alva, duke of, 3, 576.
Alyva, F. v., 561.
Amerongen, Mr. van, 569.
Amsterdam, 466.
Amstratter. *See* Anstruther.
Amys, Thomas, 329, 492.
Anbey, Christiaen, 454.
Anderson, Adam, 455.
—— Andrew, 337.
—— David, 453, 580.
—— Robert, 450.
—— Thomas, 451.
Andrew, John, 527.
Andriess, Andries, 453.
Angus, earl of, 159, 486.
Anjou, duke of, 22, 23.
Anne of Denmark, 163.
Anstruther (Amstratter), capt., 21 *n*, 47 and *n*, 146.
Antwerp, 19, 23-25, 313, 316.
Argyle, earl of, 223.
Aringstrang, Adam, 453.
Armstrang, Eduard, 454.
Arnault, lieut., 481, 517 *n*.
Arnhem, M., 449, 450.
Arnold, John, 489.
Arnot, William, 450.
Arran, earl of, 117 *n*.
Arrol, earl of, 159.
Ascough, ensign, 347.
Asheby, Wm., 123.
Ashley, Edward, 526.
Askyn. *See* Erskine.
Asteley, Isaac, 490.
Atkinson, John, 282.
Aubigny, lord d'. *See* Stuart, George.
Auchinbrock. *See* Campbell of Auchinbreck.

Baar, Mr., 550, 551.
Babingston, Arthur, 513.
—— Philip, 512, 514.
Bachler, James, 453.
Backer, Evert, 455.
Baerle, chateau de, 22.
Bagenolt, William, 491.
Baillie (Bely), James, 453.

Bailie (Baelze), Robert, 280.
Baird, David, 573.
Balcanqual, Dr. Alexander, xxix; petition of, 292.
Balfour of Burleigh, 44 *n*, 45 *n*.
—— Alex., 377 *n*.
—— —— of Denmylne, 50 *n*.
—— Andrew, of Mountquhanny, 64 *n*, 65 and *n*-69 *n*.
—— —— of Strathor, 51 *n*, 65 *n*.
—— Bartholomew, xxv, xxxiv, 20-28, 43 *n*, 48 and *n*, 56, 69 *n*, 75, 114, 324 *n*; commission in favour of, 84, 86; extracts rel. to the claims of, 96-114; petition of, 245.
—— —— 49 *n*, 70 *n*, 473, 480, 483-484 and *n*, 504, 505 and *n*, 511 and *n*, 516 and *n*, 517.
—— Charles, 70 *n*, 377 *n*.
—— sir David, xxv, xxxiv, 64 *n*, 65 and *n*, 66, 70, 73, 74, 226, 228, 230, 307, 308, 313, 314 *n*, 318-320, 322, 323 and *n*, 328 *n*, 329 and *n*, 330, 331, 332, 439, 491 *n*, 578.
—— David, 330 and *n*, 332, 491.
—— Duncan, 140 and *n*.
—— Emilia, 377 *n*.
—— sir Henry, xxv, xxxiv, xxxv *n*, 3 and *n*, 4, 5 and *n*, 8 and *n*, 10 and *n*, 11 and *n*, 12-15, 18-21, 43 and *n*, 45 *n*, 62, 140, 152, 170, 174, 186, 307.
—— —— 59, 66, 69, 72, 74, 226, 227.
—— —— bro. of Balfour of Burleigh, xxx, 44 *n*, 61 and *n*; extracts rel. to his services and claims, 250-255.
—— Henry, 478, 505, 511, 514, 516 *n*.
—— Isabella, 377 *n*.
—— J., 41, 104.
—— James, 72 *n*, 320 and *n*, 322, 324 and *n*, 328, 329, 331-333, 451, 454, 466, 489, 491, 501, 528.
—— sir James, of Pittendreich, 45 *n*.
—— John, 50 and *n*, 51 and *n*, 71, 73, 74, 169, 174, 203, 226, 228, 233, 320, 454; commission of, 79.
—— sir Michael, of Burleigh, 48 *n*, 67 *n*.
—— —— of Montquhanney, 14, 65 *n*.
—— Patrick, 511 and *n*, 513.
—— sir Philip, xxv, xxxiv, 232 and *n*, 308, 314 *n*, 315, 317, 322, 325 and *n*, 328, 329, 330, 334, 492 *n*, 439, 495, 505 *n*, 529, 580.
—— Susanna, 377 *n*.
—— sir William, xii, xiii, xxx, 43 *n*, 48 *n*, 49 *n*, 54 and *n*, 69 and *n*, 73, 74, 215, 221, 222, 223 *n*, 226, 228-231, 233, 308, 318, 322, 347, 377 *n*; commission of, 93; petition of, 336; claims of, 199-200; extracts rel. to his services and claims, 69, 199, 215, 250-255, 369-377.
Balfour, William Charles, 377 *n*.
—— capt., 28.
—— col., 231, 456, 458, 566, 580.
—— family of, 43 *n*-45 *n*.
Balgary, James, 573.
Ballantine, sir William, 470 *n*, 581.
Ballantyn, capt., 400.
Banckerts, Jan, 278.
Barclay, captain, 211, 278.
—— David, of Urie, letter of recommendation from James VI., 181.
—— John, 233, 451.
—— Robert, 31, 57 and *n*, 59, 195, 205, 206; commission of, 93.
Barillon, Mr. van, 547.
Barincouw, Christian, Danish ambassador, 163.
Barneveldt, Johan van Olden, 100, 101, 120, 142, 144, 153, 213.
Bassewits, Joachim, ambassador of Mecklenburg, 163.
Bax, Anne, 44 *n*.
Bayer, John, 455.
Bean or Been, Alexander, 455.
—— Rorie, 572.
Beaumont, C. P., mayor of Rotterdam, 38.
—— Herbert van, 502, 510.
—— M., 381, 389.
Bedel, William, 489.
Bedro, capt.-lieut., 573.
Beeckman, Engelbert, 336, 337.
Been. *See* Bean.
Beest, Joost van, 575.
Beken, Thierry van der, 201, 202.
Bell, Andrew, 337.
—— James, 452.
—— Patrick, 453.
—— Sander, 454.
Bellasize, sir Henry, 473 *n*, 512-514.
Bellenden of Stonehouse, 14.
—— Annabella, 326 *n*.
—— John, 229 *n*, 311 *n*, 325 *n*, 331 and *n*.
Bellis, Walter, 329.
Bely. *See* Baillie.
Bennet, James, 572.
Bentingha, J., 561.
Berchem, Beatrix van, 60 *n*.
Berckel, Gerrardt van, 357.
Berelton, Robert, 455.
Berentrop, William, 452.
Bergen-op-Zoom, siege of, 27, 309.
Bermvald, David, 512.
Bernardy, John, 512.

Berwick, duke of, 556.
Best, Peter, 484, 575.
Bestucheff, Alexey, 575.
Bethune, Archibald, 232 and *n*, 308, 311 *n*, 322, 332.
Beton, Robert, surgeon, 293.
Betteridge, lieut., 347, 349.
Betts, lieut., 347, 349.
Beveren, Cornelis van, ambassador at the court of England, 422, 519; letters from, 423-433, 435, 436; letter to, from the states-general, 434.
—— W. van, 385.
Bhuborough. *See* Shuborough.
Bie, Clara de, wife of Mackay of Scourie, 470.
—— Jacoba de, 516 *n*.
Bigge, Thomas, 217.
Bilde, Steijn, Danish ambassador, 163.
Biron, maréchal, 23.
Bitter, Pieter de, 494 and *n*, 500, 502.
Blackheath, review of the Scots regiments at, 538, 540.
Blair, James, 38, 75, 205, 227, 573.
—— John, 218, 573.
—— Joost, 75, 227, 321.
—— Robert, 451.
—— captain, 47, 49 and *n*, 51, 56, 58, 62, 72, 103.
—— quarter-master, 229, 230, 232, 256, 332.
Blastock, John, 455.
Bloemendaal, commissary, 247-249.
Blom, Pieter, 504.
Bodeck, Bonaventura, 500, 502.
Boeckhoven, Hendrick van, 506.
—— Herman van, 499, 501, 529.
Bogaert, Johan, 214.
Bois-le-Duc, 19, 311, 460.
Boisot, admiral, 10.
Bolantre, 490.
Bombergen, D. van, letter from, on the companies of Douglas and Balfour, 273.
Bomené, 10.
Bonar, Henry, 217.
Boomgaert, Daniel, 454.
Borch, Olivier, 454.
Borgherhout, 19.
Borlamachi, 400.
Borrel, Pieter, 450.
Borthwick, William, xxxv.
Borton, Richard, 452.
Bosch, Jan van den, 450.
Boswell, earl of, 29, 159, 171.
—— Christina, widow of col. Coutts, 60 *n*; petition of, 441-448.
Bothwell, Francis, 280.
Bothwell, George, 66 *n*, 70 and *n*, 73, 74, 226, 228, 230, 280.
—— lord John, 280.
—— capt., 50.
—— Mr., 413, 421.
Bottercoper, Ysbrandt, 535.
Bouman, Jan Aerts, 440.
Bowes, Mr., English ambassador, 156, 164, 170.
Bowie (Boye), Walter, 479, 504, 509 *n*, 516 and *n*, 572.
Boyd, Alex., 574.
—— Charles, 574.
—— James, 575.
—— John, 195, 453.
—— Robert, 574.
—— colonel, 23, 24.
Boye. *See* Bowie.
Boyle, John, of Kilburn, 60 *n*.
Brachton. *See* Broughton.
Bradley, William, 347, 498.
Braeckel, Lodewyk van, 499, 500, 501, 528-530, 532, 534.
Brandenburg, elector of, 143.
Brandt, capt., 36 *n*.
Brasser, Govert, 410, 416-419.
Brasset, François, 493, 500.
Breda, 214, 236; siege of, 310, 312, 578.
Bredenrode, captain, 279.
Bredich, Andries, 453.
Bret, Edward, 489.
Brock, captain, 311 *n*.
Broersma, Mr., 378.
Brog, sir William, xxxiv, xxxv *n*, 28, 30, 31, 33, 49 *n*, 54 and *n*, 66, 69-74, 114, 183, 184, 205, 221, 266 and *n*-232, 250, 251 and *n*, 307, 308, 312 *n*, 322, 330, 332, 335, 379, 380, 385-388, 439; commission of, 87, 94; letter of recommendation from James VI., 179; petitions of, 284, 285.
—— William, 312 *n*, 322 and *n*, 333.
Brouckers, sir William, 413.
Broughton (Brachton), John, 33 *n*, 187 and *n*.
Brown, Alexander, 451.
—— James, 454.
—— Thomas, 504.
—— William, 451.
—— major, xxvii.
Brownfield, Steven, 72 and *n*, 73, 75, 228, 231, 334.
Bruce, Alexander, 467, 489 and *n*, 493, 496, 497, 504, 506 and *n*, 509 *n*, 511 *n*, 529, 573.
—— Andrew, 502, 503, 510 and *n*, 528, 572.

Bruce, Barbara, 320.
—— lord Charles, 504, 509 and *n*, 511 *n*, 512 *n*, 573.
—— David, 528.
—— George, 446, 571.
—— Henry, xiii, 57 *n*, 63 and *n*, 64, 66 *n*, 67 and *n*, 199, 205, 211-213, 224 and *n*.
—— James, xiii, xxvii, 211.
—— Jean, 319 *n*.
—— John, 453, 504, 506 and *n*, 511 *n*.
—— Nathanael, 453, 495, 528.
—— Norman, 68 and *n*, 72, 73, 75, 197, 229, 232 *n*, 280.
—— Patrick, xiii, 217; commission of, 92.
—— Peter, 572.
—— R., 504.
—— Robert, 572.
—— sir Walter, 61, 63, 67 *n*, 68, 71, 73, 75, 187, 227, 228, 231, 310 *n*, 321, 340, 358 *n*.
—— Walter, 571, 572.
—— William, 573.
Brudnel, Thomas, 513, 515.
Bruges, 23.
Brunswick, count of, 143.
Brunton. *See* Buntin.
Brussen, Jan, murder of, 299-302.
—— Thomas, 299.
Buccleuch, lord, xi, xx, xxx, xxxiv, 33 and *n*, 34, 64 and *n*, 66-75, 192, 193, 195, 198, 199, 221, 226; representation in favour of, 188-191; extracts rel. to his services and claims, 256-269. *See* also Butler, Delia.
—— Walter, earl of, 307, 308, 331, 374; extracts rel. to his services and claims, 256-269, 378-395; letter from the duke of Buckingham on behalf of, 383 and *n*.
Buccoy, count de, 307.
Buchan, John, 479, 504, 505, 516.
—— —— of Cairnbulg, 510 and *n*.
—— Thomas, 481, 507 *n*, 509 and *n*, 516 *n*, 568 *n*.
—— Windelia van, 328 *n*.
Buchanan, John, 574.
Buckingham, duke of, 375, 380, 382, 393; letter from, on behalf of the earl of Buccleuch, 383 and *n*.
Buntin or Brunton, Archibald, 54 *n*, 56 and *n*, 57, 59.
Burgh, treasurer-general, 537, 569.
Burleigh, lord, 122.
Burnenstein, commendator, 12.
Burnett, Alex., 574.
—— George, 453.
Burnett, William, 569.
Burroughs, Thomas, 515.
Butler, Barbara, 492.
—— Delia, her claim against lord Buccleuch, 262-266 and *n*, 393.
—— John, 321, 494 and *n*, 499, 500, 502, 526, 528, 529, 535.
—— Thomas, 262.
Bye, Gideon de, 535.
Byron, Cicely, 377 *n*.

Caddell, Andrew, 72 *n*, 314 *n*, 322 and *n*, 329 and *n*, 332, 333, 454.
—— James, 31, 59, 60 *n*, 61-63, 66, 69, 72 and *n*, 74, 195, 222, 226, 227, 285.
—— N., 454.
—— Thomas, 491 *n*, 493 and *n*.
—— William, 454.
Calandrini, Philippo, 356.
Caldwell, captain, 346.
Calhoum, Orfre, 453.
Call, Andris A. H., 217.
Calloo fort, prisoners taken at, 313-314 and *n*, 449; list of prisoners, 450.
Caluart, lieut.-col., 320.
Cameron, Donald, 571, 572.
Campbell, Alexander, 14, 36, 37.
—— Catherine, of Glenurchy, 50 *n*.
—— Colin, 574.
—— sir Duncan, of Auchinbreck, 481, 505, 512 *n*, 515, 517 *n*, 518 and *n*.
—— Jacob, 452.
—— John, 574.
—— M., 400.
—— William, 569.
—— 515 *n*.
Cannon, Alex., 481, 485-486, 513-515.
Cant, Beatrix, 49 *n*.
—— Christian, 43 *n*, 50 *n*.
—— David, 43 *n*, 49 and *n*, 51, 54 *n*, 69 *n*, 83 *n*, 100, 104, 151, 252-255.
—— Mongo, 451.
—— Walter, 151.
Capellen, H. van der, 387.
Car. *See* Kerr.
Carcadie. *See* Kirkcaldy.
Cardross, Henry Erskine, lord, 481, 505, 514, 517, 518.
Carew, 444.
Carleton, sir Dudley, 65 *n*, 223 and *n*, 224, 266-268, 291, 346, 348, 376, 378 and *n*, 380, 383-385, 393, 394.
—— Robert, 530.
—— ensign, 349.
Carlisle, earl of, 411, 417.
Carmichael (Carmicle), lord, 155, 156, 158, 161, 171.
Caron, Noel de, 194, 235, 380; letter

from, on behalf of sir William Balfour, 251; letter from, on behalf of lord Buccleuch, 266.
Carpenter, Walter, 528, 529.
Carry, Ferdinand, 489, 526.
—— sir Robert, 322, 354.
Casimir, duke Jan, 143.
Castelieges, Maurice de, 528, 530, 534.
Casteren, Ferdinand van, 503, 506 and *n*, 513.
Cathcart (Corchard), David, 64 *n*-67, 211.
Cattenburg, Gerrard, 570, 572.
Cave, William, 490.
Cecil, sir Edward, 222, 241, 309, 348.
Cetoun. *See* Seton.
Chambers, John, 481, 484, 574.
Champfleury, Jacques de, 499-504 *n*, 509, 527, 529, 530, 534.
Chapuzette, Peter, 572.
Charles I., letters from, rel. to sir Wm. Balfour, 369, 370; letters from, on behalf of the earl of Buccleuch, 382, 390, 391; permits recruiting for the Dutch service, 416-419, 423, 425-427; letter from, on behalf of lord d'Aubigny, 443 and *n*; requests release of prisoners taken at Calloo, 449.
Charreté, D., 41.
Chastelain, Esias, 196, 197.
Chatillon, comte de, 33, 392.
Chemselroy, Peter van, 459.
Chester, col., 10 *n*.
Cheyne (Chinne), James, 64 *n*, 65 and *n*, 66, 71 *n*.
Chimay, prince of, 22, 23.
Christon, Robert, 454.
Christs, John, 454, 455.
Churchill, John, 567-569.
Cincler. *See* Sinclair.
Citon. *See* Seton.
Citters, Arnout, 536, 537, 541, 545; letters from, to the states-general, 542, 546, 547, 550, 556, 565, 567.
Ciul, Robert, 515.
Claerbergen, Hessel Vegelin van, 561.
Clapham, captain, 346, 349.
Clare, earl of, 473 *n*.
Clark, Alex., 574.
—— rev. George, 329, 350, 351.
—— James, 451.
—— John, 260, 346, 379, 481, 504, 509 and *n*, 512, 514, 517 and *n*.
—— Samuel, 490.
Clingh, Henry, 498.
Cockle, Alex., 488, 571.
Coel or Cool, Pierius, 329, 491.
Coke, Gilbert, 492.
Coke, sir John, 413, 414, 417, 423-425, 435, 450.
Colbraith. *See* Galbraith.
Coldstream (Coustreum), David, 453.
Colepepper (Kolepyper), James, 490, 493 and *n*, 499, 500, 502, 526, 528, 530, 535.
—— Thomas, 447.
Coleys, Jan, 453.
Coligny, col., 315.
Colt, James, 481, 484, 517 *n*.
Columbine, Ventrus, 513, 514.
Colve, Jacob, 492.
Colyear, sir Alex., xxxiv, 319 *n*, 320, 473 and *n*-475, 487, 493, 497 and *n*, 499-503, 507, 508, 528, 530, 534, 535.
—— Alexander, 509 and *n*, 526.
—— sir David, xii, xxxi, xxxv and *n*, 319 and *n*, 325, 328, 331, 467, 478 *n*, 479, 490, 491, 497 *n*, 505, 507 and *n*, 509 *n*, 516, 567 and *n*.
—— J., 504.
—— Joanna, 319 *n*.
—— John, 509 *n*.
—— Martha, 319 *n*.
—— Walter Philip, xxxi, xxxv, 482, 574, 575.
—— col., 582.
—— sergt.-major., 582.
Conders, M., 449.
Coneven, James, 569.
Connock, George, 479, 503 and *n*, 509, 516.
—— William, 513.
—— capt., 209, 210, 321.
Conradi, William, 320.
Constable, John, 324 *n*.
Corbet, Cleef van, 498.
—— James, 454.
—— Richard, 329, 330.
—— Walter, 481, 503, 504 *n*, 505, 512, and *n*, 514, 517, 571, 572.
—— capt., 346.
—— sergt., 580.
Corchard. *See* Cathcart.
Corens, commissary, 272 and *n*.
Cornelis, Franchis, 451, 576.
Cornille, capt., 39.
Corvet, John, 451.
Coster, Robert, 452.
Courtney, John, 329, 346, 349, 492.
Courtray, 21.
Coutts, Allan, xxviii, 59, 60 and *n*, 62, 63, 66, 69, 72, 74, 227, 230, 232, 285, 308, 311 *n*, 319, 322, 323 *n*, 331, 332, 334 and *n*, 344, 469, 493, 495, 496, 498-502, 526, 532, 580; petition of the widow of, 441-448.

Coutts, George, 68 *n*, 232 and *n*, 280, 308, 312 *n*, 321, 325, 334 and *n*, 439, 453, 528, 530, 532, 535.
—— George Robert, 494, 496, 497 and *n*, 499, 500, 511 and *n*, 514, 527, 535.
—— Louis, 535.
—— Robert, 61 *n*, 230 and *n*, 232, 318, 331.
—— William, 226 and *n*.
Cox, James, 217.
Craig, John, 572.
Craik (Craeck), Hans, 56, 57, 62.
—— James, 245.
Crane, capt., 582.
Cranston, capt., 210.
Crause, Adam, 163.
Craven, Anthony, 498.
—— col., 315.
—— lord, 578.
Crawford, David, 454.
—— James, 452.
—— Patrick, 452.
—— Thomas, 454.
Creuset, Gilbert, 499, 501, 507 *n*.
Crèvecœur, 582.
Creynier, James, 329.
Crichton, Elizabeth, 50 *n*, 74, 193, 226.
Crimpen, 39, 40.
Croessen, Jacob, 299, 346.
Croffort. *See* Crawford.
Cromwell, John, 489, 491, 494 *n*.
—— William, 490, 491.
—— capt., 40, 346.
—— col., 315, 328, 329.
Croy, Albert de, 357.
Crumb, Christoffel, 492.
Culenborch, count van, 385.
Cumyn, Thomas, recommendation of, by James VI., 270.
—— William, 270.
Cunningham, of Entricken, xxvi.
—— Alexander, 453.
—— Elisabeth, 74, 233, 321.
—— Ferdinand, 478 *n*, 511, 516 *n*, 517.
—— Frederick, 504, 506 and *n*, 513.
—— James, xxx, xxxv, 451, 572, 574.
—— John, xiii, xxxv, 4, 40, 56 and *n*, 58, 62, 505, 506 *n*, 513, 515, 571-573; commission of, 77, 78.
—— Richard, 480, 505, 506 *n*, 510 *n*, 511 and *n*, 513, 517.
—— Thomas, 455.
—— William, 573.
—— col., 41, 228, 231, 436.
—— lieut., 582.
Cusetter, Robert, 452.
Custus, Sacharias, 512, 514.
Cuts, Jan, 515.
Cutts, lord, 487-488.

DAINT, WILLEM, 453.
Dalhousie, George, earl of, 575.
Dallachy, Catharina, 226, 231, 233, 320.
—— John, 46, 47 *n*, 50 and *n*, 51, 55-57, 59, 74, 83 *n*, 100, 114, 193, 226, 228, 231, 233, 320; letter from James VI. on behalf of, 178.
—— Laurens, 75.
Dalrymple, John, xxxv and *n*.
Dalyell, John, 478 *n*, 505, 512 and *n*, 517 *n*, 518 *n*.
—— Thomas, 504, 509 *n*, 512 *n*.
Dammann, Adrian, 134, 137, 155, 160, 165, 166, 168, 170, 174, 187; instructions for, 148 and *n*.
Danston, John, 528.
Davidson, George, 217.
—— James, 450.
—— Margaret, 353.
—— Mary, 72 *n*.
—— Renalt, 451, 452.
—— Thomas, 573.
Davidts, Jan, 279, 451.
Decquere, Agnes de, 491 *n*.
Delwick, general, 475.
Denniston, Robert, 108, 155, 174.
Depuis, James, 512.
Despontain, capt., 39.
Dickson, Thomas, 571.
Diel, capt., 400.
Diepenbroeck, Diderick van, 500, 502.
Dieren, Johan, 302.
Dijckvelt, van, 536.
Dilfshaven, 576.
Dirck, Elsken, 299.
Dircxson, Willem, 454.
Disbanding of English and Scottish troops, 521-524.
Disney, col., 473 *n*.
Dixmuyde, 487.
Doesburch, Corst van, 453.
—— Eldert van, 453.
Doesburg, 25.
Doig (Dog), Francie, 451.
Dolbier, N., 372.
Dolman, Thomas, 329, 489, 491, 526, 529.
Donaldson, Andrew, 68, 69, 72, 75, 227, 229, 285, 310 *n*, 318, 322, 332, 353; memorial for, 286.
—— William, 454.
Doncaster, earl of, 346.
Donckan. *See* Duncan.
Doncke, Robert, 453.
Donder, Bartholomew, 211, 278.

Dorchester, Catherine Sedley, duchess of, 507 *n*.
—— lord, 403.
Dormel, William, 504.
Dorten, Stoffel van, 452.
Doublet, François, 245, 246, 356, 363-366, 408, 409.
—— Philippe, 147.
—— William, 289.
Douchant, col., 315.
Douckers, Alexander, 453.
Douglas, lady Anne, 396 *n*.
—— sir Archibald, xxxiv, 308, 314 *n*, 319 and *n*, 323, 328 *n*, 331, 332; petition from the widow of, 459.
—— David, 573.
—— George, 492 and *n*, 493, 495, 498.
—— James, xxxiv, xxxv, 211, 328 and *n*, 331, 473 *n*, 490, 494, 495, 503, 504, 507, 508 and *n*, 572, 573.
—— John, 504 *n*, 510 *n*.
—— Patrick, 575.
—— Peter, 166.
—— Robert, 475, 503 and *n*, 508 and *n*.
—— sir Robert, of Glenbervie, 486.
—— Thomas, 452, 568.
—— William, xiii, 65, 69 and *n*, 72, 74, 226, 227, 311 *n*, 325, 440, 455, 481, 505, 514, 517; resolutions rel. to his invention of guns, etc., 358 *n*-368.
—— capt., 582.
Douwes, Wjbrandt, 561.
Drominert, Willem, 320.
Drumlanrig, earl of, xii, xviii, xxxv.
Drummond, Alex., of Meadop, 230 *n*.
—— Helen, 514 *n*.
—— James, 528.
—— sir William, xxxiv and *n*, 229 *n*, 232, 317, 330, 467, 491 and *n*.
—— William, 230 and *n*, 310, 319 *n*, 322 and *n*, 331, 333, 353.
—— ensign, 535, 580.
Dryborch, Jan, 453.
Duff, Simon, 574.
Duinen, Elizabeth van, 352.
Duivenvoorde, Anna van, 74, 228, 231, 233, 321.
—— Margriet van, 74, 231, 233, 321.
—— baron de Wassenaer, 536, 537, 541.
Dumbarton, George Douglas, earl of, 476.
Dumets, ensign, 529.
Dunbar, Thomas, of Grange, 319.
Duncan (Donckan), Peter, 251.
—— Robert, 453.
Dundas, James, of Dundas, xxvii.
—— R., xxxv.
Dundee, viscount, 470 *n*, 481.
Dunkeld, bishop of, 174.
Dunlop (Duntap), James, 329, 333.
Duplin, viscount. *See* Hay, sir George.
Duttoncolt, Edward, 512, 514.
Duyst van Voorhout, Mr., 436.
Dyck, Anna van, 227.

Echlin, Henry, 326-327 and *n*, 328, 331, 490, 495.
—— John, 528, 529, 535.
Eck, Hendrick van, 534.
Ecken, Thomas, 454.
Edgar (Egger), of Wedderlie, 55 *n*.
—— Alexander, 55 *n*, 56 and *n*.
—— James, 55 and *n*, 62, 75, 93, 114, 227, 228, 231, 233, 321.
—— Margaretha, 72, 228, 231, 233.
—— Nicholas, 55 *n*, 72, 228, 231, 233, 321.
—— Patrick, 55 *n*.
—— Philip, 249.
—— captain, 28.
Edinburgh, Dutch embassy in, 132.
Edmond, F., 417.
—— Thomas, xiii, 229 and *n*, 232, 319 *n*, 331, 339, 346, 354; petition of, 340-341.
—— sir William, xii, xxxiv, 28-35 and *n*, 54 and *n*, 58-63, 66, 91, 178, 181 *n*, 183, 191, 192, 203, 205-207, 221, 307, 322; commission of, 90; letter on behalf of, from James vi., 179; recommendation on behalf of his family by James vi., 282, note on, 577.
Edmonstone, Christopher, 200.
—— John, 37, 38.
—— William, 36, 37.
Edwards, John, 452.
—— Thomas, 451.
—— William, 454.
Egger. *See* Edgar.
Eindhoven, siege of, 23.
Elburgh, 356.
Elder, William, 451.
Elizabeth, queen, xx; letter from, to the king of Scotland, 129; letter from, to the states-general, 131; her interview with the Dutch ambassadors, 161-162, 171, 172.
Ellenberg, general, 487.
Elphinstone, lord, 162.
—— James, 65 *n*, 312 *n*, 319 and *n*, 331, 573.
—— Margaret, 319 *n*.
—— William, 333, 491, 497, 528, 535.
Els, Mr. van, 543.
Elschemel, Melchior, 254.
Elshout, 39.

Embden, count of, 191.
Emmerick, 308.
Engelenbergh, Jacob van, 529.
Ensleip, Raeff, 217.
Ernest, count of Nassau, 30, 31, 309, 311, 372.
Erskine, Alexander, 64 *n*, 66 and *n*, 67, 70 *n*.
—— sir Alexander, of Cambo, 324 *n*.
—— Archibald, xiii, 58 *n*, 61 and *n*, 69, 72, 196-198, 215, 217, 218, 275.
—— David, 247.
—— Henry. *See* Cardross, lord.
—— James, xxxiv, 229 *n*, 308, 314 *n*, 315, 317, 318 *n*, 319, 322, 328, 329, 331-333, 466, 467, 489, 491, 493 and *n*, 496, 498 and *n*, 503, 528, 530, 531, 535, 572; letter from James VI. on behalf of, 243.
—— Louis, xxxiv and *n*, 322, 323 *n*, 328 *n*, 330, 467-469, 490 and *n*, 493-502, 526, 532, 535
—— Thomas, xiii, 63, 67, 69, 72, 74, 221, 226, 227, 230, 232, 318 and *n*, 481, 505, 511 and *n*, 513, 517, 531.
—— ensign, 582.
Esday, Adam, 490.
Esinga, Abraham van, 501, 503 and *n*, 504 *n*, 506.
Estoun, John, 454.
Estrades, col. d', 315.
Eton, Eduant, 528.
Everson, John, 452.
Everwijn, Mr., 536, 537, 561.
Ewart, William, 452.
Ewing, Thomas, 61, 71, 73, 74, 226, 228, 230.
Eyck, Maria van, 231.
Eyk, Anna van, 489 *n*.

FALCKENHAEN, ERASMUS VAN, 501.
Fariaux, Jacques de, 334 *n*, 469, 470, 490 *n*, 502.
Farquhar, Robert, 573.
Farquharson, Andrew, 450.
Farren, lieut., 346.
Farwel, Johan, 513.
Faxson, Hugo, 454.
Fensty, Raff, 217.
Fenwick, sir John, 473 *n*.
Ferguson of Craigdarroch, 485 and *n*.
—— rev. David, 116 *n*.
—— James, xii, xxvi and *n*, xxxv, 480 and *n*, 484 and *n*, 488, 505, 511 *n*, 513 and *n*, 517 and *n*, 571, 572.
—— Robert, 572, 573.
—— 580.
Flack, Asbal, 279.
Fleck, Gilbert, 454.
Fleming (Flammurgh), lord, 162.
—— Alex., 492 *n*.
—— Henry, 574.
—— Robert, 572, 573.
—— sir William, 325 *n*, 493.
Flinn (Flenne), James, 217.
Flint, David, 217.
Floid or Flud, van Brocknel, 502, 510. *See* also Lloyd.
Forbes (Verbaas), Alexander, 455.
—— Arthur, 65 *n*, 71 and *n*, 73, 75, 206, 229, 236; petition of, 245-247, 256.
—— Elizabeth, 50 *n*, 74, 226, 228.
—— J., 42 and *n*.
—— John, 454, 575.
Foret, Robert, 453.
Forme, rev. James, petition on behalf of the creditors of, 343.
Forrest, John, 575.
Fort William, 485.
Fosser, John, 451.
Fotheringham (Fozzeringam), James, 217.
Foulis, David, 170.
Franchenbergh, sieur de, 12.
Franks, Maximilian, 575.
Fraser, Robyn, 452.
—— Simon, xxvii, 574, 575.
Frederick Henry, prince, 307, 308, 310-314, 316, 466.
Freycamp, Wilhem van, 296.
Fridsel, Robert, petition of, 439.
Fryer, lieut., 347, 349.
Fuhnen, defeat of Swedes at, 467,
Fullarton (Feulartoum), Alexander, 454.

GACKHOME. *See* Jackson.
Galbraith, Gabriel, 217.
—— Robert, of Culcreuch, 60 *n*.
Garden, Henry, 453.
Geddes, Sandie, 451.
Geddi, N., charged with murder, 299-302.
Gelder, Adolphe van, 33.
Gemblours, battle of, 15, 16.
Genffort, capt., 36 *n*.
Gennep, 314.
Gent, Elizabeth Wilhelmina van, 506 *n*.
Gerits, Davit, 452.
Gerrard, Charles, 489.
Gerritsen, Wessel, 451.
Gertruydenberg, 27.
Gevers, Evert, 278.
Ghent, 22.
Gibson, Alexander, 454.
—— James, 117 *n*.

Gibson, John, 49 *n*, 71 and *n*, 73, 481, 503, 508 and *n*, 512 *n*, 517 and *n*.
—— Nicolaes, 527.
—— captain, 346, 349.
Gigel, Michell, 217.
Gijsberts, Reynier, 246, 247.
Gilpin, lieut., 346, 349.
Gladstane, lieut., 578, 580.
Glarger, Pieter de, 534.
Gledstanes, William, surgeon, 573.
Glen, Robert, 217.
Glenawley, lord, 377 *n*.
Glind, George, 217.
Godwyn, Robert, 513, 514.
Gonntrey, ensign, 347.
Gooden, James, 453.
Gorcum, 402.
Gordon, duke of, 482.
—— of Gight, 47 *n*.
—— Adam, 574.
—— Alexander, 47 and *n*, 49, 455, 517 *n*.
—— Charles, 571.
—— John, xxxv, 47 *n*, 236, 237, 243, 253 and *n*, 285, 292 and *n*, 478 *n*, 505, 509 *n*, 515 *n*, 516; letter from, petitioning for arrears of pay, 283; his company disbanded, 239.
—— Michel, 52.
—— Patrick, 573.
—— Peter, 573.
—— William, 223 *n*.
—— captain, 25.
Goring, lord George, 322, 328, 329, 447.
Goslinga, S. v., 561.
Gowrie, earl of, 158.
Graef, Bartholomeus van de, 500, 531.
Graham, general, xxvii.
—— sir Charles, xxxiv, 487, 503, 509 and *n*, 516, 570, 574, 575.
—— David, 574.
—— Henry, xxxiv, 329 *n*, 330, 468, 470 *n*, 473 *n*, 474, 478 *n*, 479, 494, 496 and *n*, 498 and *n*, 499, 500, 501, 502 and *n*, 503, 507 *n*, 509, 510, 515 *n*, 516, 526, 534, 535.
—— James, 574.
—— John, 513, 575.
—— N., 494, 495.
—— Philip, 575.
—— Wm., 513, 515, 575.
—— lieut.-col., 582.
—— major, 529, 530 and *n*.
—— cornet, 582.
Grand, Andries, 453.
Grandeson, lord, 578.
Grant, Alexander, 571.
—— Andrew, 300.
—— John, 575.
Grave, surrender of, 474.
—— milord, 328, 329, 491.
Gray, lord, 186.
—— A. T., 217.
—— sir Andrew, 309 *n*.
—— Robert, recommendation of, by James VI., 193.
—— Unfred, 174.
—— William, 453.
—— captain, 400.
—— colonel, 346.
Greene, John, 217.
Gregoir, 330.
Greve, capt., 36 *n*.
Griffie, John, 490.
Griffin, Wm., 529.
—— lieut., 346, 349.
Grim, Henrick, 454.
—— James, 454.
—— Justus, 455.
Grinley, George, 454.
Groll, siege of, 310.
Gueldres, 314.
Guetelberg, Bartholemeus, 217.
Gulick, siege of, 222.
Guns, invention of, by William Douglas, 358-368.
Gunter, secretary, 356.

HAARLEM, siege of, 3, 4, 5, 576.
Hacquet. *See* Halkett.
Haddon, James, 311 *n*, 332.
Haeften, Gerrit van, 499, 500, 502, 527, 529, 530, 535.
Hael, William, 454.
Haen, captain de, 132.
Haept, van der, 402.
Haersolte, Dirk van, 534.
—— M., 460.
—— S. van, 348.
Hailes or Hale, John, 503, 509 and *n*.
—— capt., 582.
Haldane, James, 117 *n*.
—— Thomas, 217.
Halkett of Pitfirrane, 116 *n*.
—— A., xxxv.
—— Alex., 573.
—— Anna, 60 *n*.
—— C., xxxv.
—— Edward, 510 *n*.
—— Everard, 479, 503, 510 and *n*, 516.
—— George, 16, 323 and *n*, 332.
—— J., 73, 531.
—— James, 314 *n*, 321, 323, 329 *n*, 332.

Halkett, sir John, xxxiv, 65 *n*, 67 and *n*, 70, 74, 226, 228, 230, 308, 311, 318, 319, 332; petition from widow of, 458, 459.
—— Maurice, 329 *n*, 330, 491 and *n*, 493, 496, 497, 499, 502 and *n*, 510, 526, 528, 530, 534.
—— R., 494.
—— Richard, 452.
—— Robert, 330, 450, 489 and *n*, 495, 497 *n*.
—— William, 575.
—— 206, 230, 232, 322, 346, 349.
—— family, 67 *n*, 68 *n*.
Haltringe, Saunder van, 217.
Ham, Alexander, 453.
Hamia, Wigbeldt van, 528.
Hamilton, marquis of, 380.
—— Archibald, 22 *n*.
—— Gavin, 22 *n*, 478 *n*, 505, 506 *n*, 511 and *n*, 516 *n*.
—— George, xxxv, 478 *n*, 482, 505, 511 and *n*, 512 *n*, 514, 517 and *n*.
—— J., 73, 75.
—— James, 492 *n*.
—— —— of Bothwellhaugh, 5 *n*.
—— John, xiii, 32 and *n*, 57 and *n*, 66 *n*, 67 *n*, 68, 71, 199, 228, 302, 335, 454.
—— Margaret, 302, 335.
—— Mungo, 70 and *n*, 73, 74, 226, 228, 230, 312 *n*, 318, 319, 324 *n*, 331, 332, 352.
—— Thomas, 505, 511 *n*.
—— William, 64 *n*, 66 and *n*.
—— captain, 33, 34, 62-64, 184, 227, 400.
—— sergt.-major, 448.
—— 579, 580.
Hamon, Thomas, 329, 347, 349, 489.
Handeside, Thomas, 515.
Hansen, Bernt, 455.
Hardebrouck, councillor of state, 191.
Harderwyck, 356.
Hardy, Robert, 247-249.
Harrards, Philip d', 489.
Hartsbergen, Marten van, 534.
Haseman, Frans, 215.
Hasselraet, Joost Willem Henrick, baron van, 535.
Hasting's regiment, 567.
Hat, Andre, 452.
Hauterive, colonel, 315.
Hautheyn, M. d', 273, 274.
Hay, Alex., 504, 506 *n*.
—— sir George, lord Kinfauns, xii, 311, 396 and *n*, 401-403, 411, 413, 418, 419.
—— J., 493.
Hay, James, 400.
—— John, 452, 496, 498.
—— sir Peter, 396 *n*.
—— William, xiii, 66 *n*, 67, 83 *n*, 104, 400, 460-461, 489.
—— captain, 51, 100.
Hayes, col., 418.
—— Mr., 541.
Hecson, Henry, 329.
Hector, capt., 39.
Henderson, Alex., 571.
—— sir Francis, xxxiv, 60 *n*, 65 and *n*, 67, 69, 72, 74, 206, 226, 227, 230, 232, 268 *n*, 307, 310 *n*, 318, 319 *n*, 331, 332, 378 *n*, 385, 389, 393, 394, 439; petitions of, 289, 290.
—— James, 70 *n*, 230, 308, 318, 319, 323 and *n*, 329 and *n*, 330-332, 449, 452, 493 and *n*, 498.
—— John, xxxiv, 230 *n*, 323 and *n*, 328, 329, 332, 452, 466, 489, 491, 493 and *n*, 494, 495.
—— Michael, 75, 229, 230, 232, 333.
—— sir Robert, xxvii, xxxiv, 59 and *n*, 69, 72, 74, 75, 221-224, 226, 227, 229, 259, 268 *n*, 274, 283, 307, 309, 322, 331, 332, 335, 345, 378 *n*; petition of, 288; petition from the widow of, 342-343, 579; death of, 309-310.
—— Wm., 231.
—— captain, 31, 322.
—— colonel, 232, 256, 314 *n*.
Hendrick, Wm., 228, 455.
Henrietta Maria, queen of England, 314 and *n*.
Henrix, Baltis, 460.
Henry, prince of Wales, baptism of, 161-164; extract from Birch's *Life of Henry*, 577.
Hepburn, David, xxvii.
—— John, xxxv.
Her, James, 453.
Herbert, Gerard, 321.
—— sir Henry, 315, 322, 328, 330, 447, 491, 526, 530.
Hereng, Eduart, 451.
Herris, Robert, 528.
Hersbergen, 530.
Herwel, Edward, 450.
Hesse, count of, 143.
Heupen, Thomas, 451.
Heusden, 209, 217.
Heuvel, Franco van, 459.
—— Jacob de, 278.
Hexam, Henry, 491.
Hey. *See* Hay.
Heydon, John, 321.

Hibelet, Hester Elizabeth, 514 *n.*
Hierges, 9.
Hoff, Aert Jansz van, 460.
Hog, Sandie, 451.
Hohenlohe, count, 19, 41.
Holland, earl of, 393, 411, 415, 417, 435.
Hollenburg, Nicholas, 574.
Hollett, lieut., 346.
Home, lord, 162, 163, 166.
—— sir Alexander, 320 *n*, 490, 494-497 and *n*, 528.
—— George, 65 *n*, 71 and *n*, 73, 75, 227, 228, 231, 328 *n*, 330, 334.
—— Henry, 328 and *n*, 330, 493 *n*.
—— Magdalena, 243.
—— Patrick, 452.
—— sir Robert, xiii, 489.
—— Thomas, 455.
—— William, 156.
—— captain, 310 *n*, 400.
Honswod, Thomas, 529.
Hoolcke, van der, 519.
Hoorn, count, 315.
Hormes, Maximilian de, 218; letter to the council of state on disorders in Connock's company, 210.
Horst, Andreaen van der, 529.
Hory, James, 452.
Hoseck, Alexander, 455.
Hotsey, Mongo, 452.
Hounslow, review of Scottish regiments at, 540.
Houston, John, xxxv, 451.
Houter, James, 333.
Hove, Hendrick ten, 500.
Howell, ensign, 349.
Hudson, Anthony, 515.
—— Thomas, 454.
—— William, 67 *n*, 70, 73, 74, 226, 228, 230, 310 *n*, 318, 319 *n*, 322.
Hulst, siege of, 314, 316.
Hume. *See* Home.
Hunter, rev. Andrew, xxix, 57 and *n*, 58, 62, 63, 71, 73, 74, 187, 226 and *n*, 228, 231, 232, 294, 320, 329, 333, 438; petition of, 245, 294.
—— James, 329.
—— John, 453.
—— William, of Menhal, 150.
Huntly, earl of, 159.
Hutson. *See* Hudson.
Hutton, 321.
Huygens, secretary, 183, 387, 395, 402, 521.

Imbice, or Himbice, Alexander, 451.
—— Jacob van, 500, 502 and *n*.
Ingelby, John, 490.
Inglis (Ingels), William, 451.
—— sergt., 579.
Ingoldesby, George, 490.
Innes, James, 573.
—— John, 454.
—— Patrick, 217.
—— Walter, 573.
—— 572.
Inventions of quick-firing guns, etc., by William Douglas, 358-368.
Ireland, James, 450.
Irving, Robert, xiii, 221, 229, 233.

Jack, Steen, 451.
Jackson, Robert, 515.
—— (Gackhome), lieut., 347, 349.
Jacobs, Meynaert, 453.
—— Willem, 455.
Jader, Jan, 452.
James vi., letter to, from queen Elizabeth, 129; letter to, 130; report of Dutch ambassadors to, 132, 154-170; letters from, in recommendation of Murray, Brog, Balfour, Ramsay, Buccleuch, etc., 178-186, 193, 199, 207, 240, 243, 256, 259, 267, 270, 282; letters from, 234, 235.
—— ii., of England, 476, 536, 537, 538; recalls British troops from the Netherlands, 477 and *n*, 542, 543; the states refuse his request, 539, 544, 551, 562; letters from, to the states general, 538, 542; the states' reply to, 539.
—— captain, 25 *n*.
Jansen, Jhon, 452, 453.
—— Thomas, 451, 453.
Janss, Laurens, 454.
Jansz, Bentgen, widow of William Moncrieff, 47 *n*; petition of, 295.
Jedburgh, William, lord, 511 *n*.
Jesuits in Scotland, 143.
Joachimi, Albert, 370, 380, 396-401, 404, 408, 422, 449, 450; letters from, on recruiting, 410, 415, 418; the states' reply to, 420; extract from report of, on recruiting, 420; letter from, to council of state, 444.
John of Austria, 12, 15, 17.
Johns, Ewyn, 455.
Johnstone, 535.
—— Archibald, 59 *n*, 68 *n*.
—— G., 54 *n*.
Johnstil, Franchis, 454.
Joly, Jan, 452.
Jongh, Adam, 454.
—— John, 120, 121, 452.
Juliers, siege of, 308.

KAIR. *See* Kerr.
Karckettel, John, 453.
Karrentres, James, 453.
Kattenborch, Dirck van, 296.
—— Johan van, 296.
—— Wilhem van, 296.
Kaynsford. *See* Raynsford.
Keith, sir John, 572-574.
—— Richard, 329.
—— sir Robert Murray, xxvii.
—— sir William, 149, 169-171.
Kelly, Alexander Erskine, 4th earl of, 324 *n.*
—— William, 453.
Kennedy, of Bargany, 14.
Kennithorpe, ensign, 347.
Kennodt, John, 319.
Kerckman, secretary, 336, 337.
Kerr or Keir, George, 323 and *n*, 328, 331, 452, 467, 490, 495, 496.
—— lady Jean, 467.
—— John, 31, 59 and *n*, 60 *n*, 63, 64; letter in recommendation of, from James VI., 182.
—— Thomas, 452.
—— William, 333, 400, 451, 452, 492 *n*, 493, 497 and *n*, 526, 530, 535.
Kessel, Evert Dirck van, 502.
Kesseler, Johan de, 357.
Ketelbi, Charles, 329.
Kidsier, Nicolaus, 451.
Kiets, capt., 49.
Killicrankie, battle of, 482-483.
Killigrew, Henry, 321.
—— Symond, 489.
—— William, 328, 329, 346, 349, 489, 491, 533, 534.
Kincgherme, Adam, 452.
Kinfauns. *See* Hay, sir George, of Kinfauns.
Kinghfort, John, 569.
Kinnarie, Andreis, 217.
Kinninmont, David, 528.
—— John, 227 *n*, 229 and *n*, 232, 311 *n*, 326 *n*, 331.
Kirgardhome. *See* Richardson.
Kirkcaldy (Carcadie), of Grange, 3.
—— William, 61, 71, 73, 228, 231, 232.
Kirkpatrick or Kilpatrick, Anna, 55, 60 *n*, 74, 227, 228, 231, 233, 320, 492; petition of, 342-343, 345; answer to petition, 349-350.
—— Everwyn, 330, 490 and *n*, 494-501, 503, 505, 526, 530, 532, 534, 535.
—— Helena, 75, 231, 233.
—— John, 31, 50 *n*, 59, 60 *n*, 72, 75, 230 *n*, 231, 233, 315-319, 323 and *n*, 324 *n*, 328 and *n*, 329 and *n*, 330-332, 466-468, 473, 489, 490 and *n*, 491, 494, 495, 496, 498-501, 505, 526, 528, 530, 532, 534, 535, 564.
Kirkpatrick, Mal. M. R., 217.
—— Maria, 75, 231, 233, 320.
—— Mary, 324 *n.*
—— Thomas, 217.
—— col., 582.
Knichtley, Ferdinand, 330, 346.
Kniper, Christoffel, 453.
Kolepyper. *See* Colepepper.
Koningham. *See* Cunningham.
Krichem, Reynier, 454.
Krichlyn, John, 453.
Kryhiers, James, 333.
Kuyng or Smit, Ja., 37.

LAEN, NICOLAS VAN DER, 37.
Lagan, capt., 36 *n.*
La Garde, colonel, 18, 22.
Laignier or Lanier, Ysbrandt, 482, 499, 501, 503 *n*, 506, 527, 529, 530, 534.
Lamond, George, 64 *n*, 66 and *n*, 67, 318 *n*, 319 and *n*, 323 *n*, 332, 502.
—— Hubert, 451.
La Motte, general, 14.
Lamy, Alexander, 479, 504, 510 and *n*, 515 *n*, 516.
—— Frederick, 572.
—— John, 328 *n*, 455, 493 and *n*, 496, 499, 500-503, 509 and *n*, 526, 528-530, 534, 535, 575.
—— John Alexander, 575.
—— col., xxxv, 582.
Landen, battle of, 487.
Lang, David, 217.
Langerack, van, 407.
Langlnes, Peter, 452.
Lanham, Humphry, 512, 514.
La Noue, sieur de, 21, 30.
Lantsberg, duke, 578.
Lanwer, William, 514.
La Rame, Pierre, 301.
Larrey, sir Henry, 321.
Laucourt, John Jacob de, 535.
Lauder, Alex., 528.
—— Andrew, 573.
—— Franchis, 455.
—— George, xxxiv, xxxv, 322 *n*, 326 and *n*, 333, 453, 467, 480, 483, 486, 492 and *n*, 493, 495-499, 504, 505 and *n*, 506 and *n*, 511, 513, 516, 526, 528, 530, 534, 535, 570, 573.
—— John Alex., 490 *n*, 503, 504, 505 and *n*.
—— Walter, 573.
Laurens, Prudentia, 227.
Laurent, Louys, 227.
Laurie, John, 12, 571.
Lauwer, Edward, 529.

Law, John, 298.
Lawrence, Edward, 217.
Lawson, James, xiii, 214.
Lecky, James, 580.
Leeuwen. *See* Loon.
Leeuwesthon, col., 404.
Leffingen bridge, battle of, 30-31.
Legner, captain, of Flushing, 132.
Leicester, earl of, xvi, xx, 25, 26 and *n*, 76; commissions granted by, 79.
Leidbout, colonel, 436.
Leighton (Lichton), lieut., 404.
Le Maire, Maurits, 490.
Lennip or Lennie, Joerien van, letters from, 276, 277.
Lennox (Lemice), duke of, 162, 163.
—— James Robert, 502 and *n*.
Lens, Charles Ernest van, 504 *n*.
Leon. *See* Loon.
Lerin, Paschier, 455.
Leslie, hon. Alex., xxvii.
—— capt., 400.
Lesse, Sander, 452.
Lethendy castle, 486 *n*.
Lettelby, Charles, 492.
Leyden, siege of, 8, 576.
Leyn, John, 453.
Lichtenberg, Christian William, 574, 575.
Lier, betrayal of, 23, 26 *n*.
Lieven. *See* Loon.
Lillingston, col., 473 *n*.
—— Luke, 513, 514.
Limburg, 312.
Lincxbey, 321.
Lindores (Laitdois), lord, 161.
Lindsay, David, 228 and *n*, 230.
—— —— minister in Leith, 155.
—— James, 69 *n*, 230 and *n*, 318, 319, 322, 323, 331, 351.
—— John, 139 *n*.
—— William, 201, 328 *n*, 494, 497 and *n*, 526, 528, 530, 533-535.
—— sergt., 579.
Linson, Mathys, 454.
—— Robert, 454.
Littel, Davit, 451.
Littlejohn, Alexander, 450.
Littleton, col., 567.
Livingstone, sir Alex., 452, 480, 504, 506 and *n*, 511, 513, 517.
—— sir Henry, 69 and *n*, 72, 74, 227, 230, 296, 298, 310 *n*, 319 *n*, 325 and *n*, 331, 353, 356.
—— Henry, 505, 506 *n*.
—— sir James, lord Almond, xxxiv, xxxv *n*, 162, 226, 232 *n*, 295, 296, 307, 308, 313, 314 *n*, 318, 322, 325 and *n*, 331-333, 437, 438, 447, 456-458, 578.
Livingstone, John, 325 and *n*, 328, 329, 331, 356, 357, 489.
—— Jonas, 333.
—— Peter, 504, 506 *n*.
—— sir Thomas, 319 *n*, 322, 323 *n*, 324 and *n*, 346, 466, 468, 490 and *n*, 491, 494-497, 499, 500.
—— sir Thomas, aftw. lord Teviot, 324 and *n*, 480, 486 and *n*, 501 and *n*, 503-506, 509 *n*, 511, 513, 516, 526, 529, 530, 532, 534, 535.
—— Thomas, 229 *n*, 319 *n*, 328 and *n*, 330-332.
—— capt., 274.
—— lieut.-col, 582.
Lloyd, Broychwel, 490.
—— Charles, 489.
—— Edward, 503 and *n*, 509, 512-514.
—— Godefroy, 490, 513, 514.
—— Pieter, 498.
Loenen, van, 213.
Lolmach. *See* Talmash.
Longin, Charles, 200-202.
Lonide, Archibald, 217.
Loo, M., 460.
Loon, Anna van, 75, 229.
—— Maria van, 44 *n*, 61 *n*, 67 *n*, 233; petition of, 458, 459.
Lorn, John, marquis of, xxxv.
Louis, count, of Nassau, 3, 30.
Louth, lord, 512 *n*.
Louvain, 312.
Lovelace, sir William, 321.
'Lowlands (the) o' Holland,' 473 *n*.
Luneburgh, count of, 143.
Lungden, Robert, 29.
Ly, M. de, 10.
Lyle (Leyl), John, 491.
—— William, 322 *n*, 329 *n*, 333, 453.

MacArthur (Makerter), Patrick, 454.
MacCallum (Mackalem), Adam, 452.
Macdonald, Alexander, 571.
—— Hugh, 516 *n*, 570.
—— John, 572.
Macdougall, or Mac Dowell, Allan, 570, 574.
—— John, 570, 572, 582.
—— William, 439, 503, 507 and *n*.
M'Elligott, Roger, 512 *n*, 513.
McEwen (Mackwyn), Lachlan, 454.
MacGee, John, 571.
M'Hardie, Charles, 571.
M'Ildowie (Makadiu), Makeu, 451.
Macgillicuddy, Dionicius, 512-514.

Mackay, Æneas, xxi, xxv, xxxiv, 478 *n*, 479, 505, 515 *n*, 516 and *n*, 570, 571.
—— Angus, 479, 515 *n*.
—— Barbara, 516 *n*.
—— D., xxxv.
—— Donald, xxv.
—— George, 571, 572.
—— Hugh, xxi and *n*, xxvi, xxxiv, xxxv.
—— —— of Scourie, xxv, 470 and *n*, 471, 477 and *n*-479, 480, 483-486, 507 and *n*, 516, 564, 566, 570.
—— —— 503, 504, 570-572.
—— James, 481, 483, 504, 505, 508 and *n*, 512, 513, 514, 517.
—— Robert, 480, 515 *n*, 572.
Mackenzie, Alex., 571.
—— Donald, 59, 60 and *n*, 62, 63, 66, 69, 72, 452, 455.
—— John, 60 *n*, 574.
—— Kenneth, 571.
—— Robert, 569.
—— William, 570, 572.
—— capt., 74, 214, 226, 227, 479, 515 *n*.
Mackey, Gilbert, 453.
—— Robert, 451.
—— William, 452.
Mackie, Rory, 504.
M'Kinsh, John, 575.
Macklyn, Hidu, 452.
—— John, 452.
—— Lachlane, 502 *n*.
Mackully, capt., 581.
Mackworts, François de, 489.
MacLean, sir Alexander, 485 *n*.
—— Francis, xxvii.
—— Lauchlan, 504 and *n*, 516 *n*.
MacLeod, Donald, 571-573.
—— John, 570.
—— Neil, 571.
—— Norman, 571.
Macmillan (Mackmillan), Daniel, 455.
Macore, Angnus, 452.
Macpuwel, John, 451.
Macrevaels, Andrew, 205.
MacRonnal, 573.
Maes, N., 531.
Maestricht, siege of, 19, 312, 408, 419, 470, 474, 582.
Mager, Marcus, 452.
Mailsant, capt., 39.
Maitland, hon. John, xxvii.
—— —— lord chancellor, 156, 159, 160, 165, 167-169.
—— 581.
Makadiu. *See* M'Ildowie.
Makerter. *See* MacArthur.
Mammy or Nanning, William, 481, 503, 504, 511 and *n*, 513, 517.
Manderscheidt, comte de, 116 *n*.
Maneton, Ambros, 528
Mangrief. *See* Moncrieff.
Manschet, Jan, 451.
Mansfelt, comte de, 346.
Manson, Thomas, 440.
Mantal, Robert, 492.
Mar, earl of, 162-164, 166.
Marcelis, Hans, 454.
Marischal, earl, 118 *n*.
Marjoribanks (Mario, Ribanckes), Thomas, xxxv, 206, 231 and *n*, 279, 312 *n*, 318 and *n*, 321, 322, 333.
Martens, Christiaen, 454.
Martin, Alex., 575.
—— Donald, 571.
—— John, 452.
—— William, 203, 227.
Masterton, Robert, 14, 29, 40, 71, 73, 74, 228, 230, 320, 333.
—— Thomas, 61 and *n*, 62.
Mathewes, lieut., 347, 349.
Mathias, archduke, 19.
Maulde. *See* Fariaux, Jacques de.
Mauley, John, 490.
Maurice, prince of Nassau, 26, 27, 30, 31, 163, 170, 173, 222, 225, 309, 310, 423, 427, 466; letter from, to the council of state on behalf of sir Francis Henderson, 206.
—— capt., 36 *n*.
—— James, 455.
Maurick, Jan van, 355.
Maurignault, Gasper de, 499, 501, 506.
—— Johan de, 504.
Maxwell, John, 574.
—— Robert, 22 *n*.
—— Thomas, 504, 512 *n*.
May, James, 451.
Mechlin, 19.
Mecklenburg d'Anhalt, count of, 143.
Megen, countess of, 321 *n*, 357.
Mel. *See* Mill.
Meldrum, capt., 49 and *n*, 56-58, 62.
Melo, Franciso de, 316.
Melville, Alex., 49, 51 and *n*, 58, 61.
—— rev. Andrew, 116 *n*.
—— sir James, 155.
—— Mary, 65 *n*.
—— sir Robert, 36, 37, 132, 158, 167, 171.
—— captain, 28, 57, 228, 231.
Menges, Robert, 452.
Menin, 20.
Ment, Robert, 450.
Mentis, Thomas, 490.
Meolis, Henry, 490, 530.

Merck, Robert, 454.
Merlyn, P., 41.
Mestertoin. *See* Masterton.
Meteren, Jacob Kuyck van, 499, 500, 502, 531, 535.
Metsel, Henrick, 454.
Meuries, James, 455.
Michel. *See* Mitchell.
Middelburg, sea fight near, 576.
Middleton, earl of, 551, 556, 565.
—— James, 505, 506 *n*, 511 *n*.
—— William, 503-505, 508 and *n*, 511, 513, 514.
—— capt., 582.
Mijll, van der, 282.
Mill or Miln, Alexander, 453.
—— Patrick, 454,
—— William, 481, 505, 514, 517 and *n*.
Miller, George, 453.
Mist, Jan de, 188.
Mitchell (Michiel), James, 73.
—— John, 31, 39, 54 and *n*, 56, 57, 59, 278, 453.
—— Patrick, 451.
—— Peter, 73, 228, 231.
Mitsiel, Gel., 217.
Mombry, capt., 227.
Monck, Thomas, 512, 513.
Moncour, James, 573.
Moncrieff (Mangrief), Walter, 452.
—— William, 12, 46, 47 *n*; petition of the widow of, 295.
—— 580.
Monmouth's rebellion, 536-541.
Monroy, colonel, 436.
Monteith, John, of Kerse, 5.
Montgomery, Adam, of Braidstane, 14.
—— Hugh, 569.
—— Robert, 7.
—— capt., 51.
Montigny, sieur de, 15.
Montjoy, capt., 370, 384.
Montrose, earl of, 162.
Moore, captain, 33.
Moray. *See* Murray.
Mordaunt, Robert, 527.
Morde, James, 491, 498.
More, John, 194, 492, 528.
—— Robert, 498.
—— Robyn, 452.
—— capt., 64 *n*.
Morgan, sir Charles, 322, 456, 492,
—— Edward, 329, 492.
—— Robert, 498.
—— Thomas, 7, 36 *n*, 489, 492.
—— col., 38, 46, 174, 227, 356, 444, 447.
Mornou, captain, 20.
Morrij, Andries, 454.
Mortagne castle, taken by Parma, 21.
Morton, earl of, xii, xxxv, 311; papers relating to the regiment of, 396-405.
—— George, 490.
—— capt., 346, 349.
Mowat, Andrew, 571.
Mowbray, Isobella, 65 *n*, 230 *n*, 291, 351.
—— Philip, 73 and *n*, 227-229, 310 *n*, 333.
Mudie, John, 516 *n*.
—— Peter, 452.
Mueleman, John, 301.
Muir (Meur), James, 455.
—— John, 535.
—— William, 454.
Muller, Fulmer, 455.
—— John, 451.
Munro, George, 575.
—— Hugh, 572.
—— John, 571.
—— Robert, 571.
Munster, treaty of, 317.
Murdoch (Mirdoch), George, 455.
Murisson, Andrew, 150.
Murray, Alexander, xxxiv, 28, 29, 50 and *n*, 51, 52, 55 and *n*, 58, 62, 89, 106, 170, 325 and *n*, 328, 330, 331, 490 *n*; commission of, 89 and *n*; letter from James VI. on behalf of, 178.
—— Andrew, 31, 57 and *n*, 59.
—— Archihald, 528, 535.
—— David, of Hillfield, 14.
—— sir David, 251.
—— Elizabeth, 233, 320.
—— James, xxvii, 71 *n*, 320 and *n*, 528, 573.
—— John, 64 *n*, 66 and *n*, 230 and *n*, 233, 318 *n*, 320 and *n*, 492 *n*, 493, 496, 498, 503, 506 and *n*, 528, 535, 572, 573.
—— Jonas, 334.
—— Margrieta, 233.
—— P., 531.
—— Patrick, 64 *n*, 319 and *n*, 324 *n*, 331, 356.
—— Philip, 528, 535.
—— Robert, of Melgum, xxvii and *n*, xxxv, 482, 570, 572.
—— Walter, 230 *n*, 319 and *n*, 322 and *n*, 328, 331, 333, 466, 467, 480, 490, 491, 495, 505, 511 *n*, 514 and *n*, 516, 517 *n*, 573.
—— William, 51, 72, 83 *n*, 89, 90 *n*, 103, 104, 114, 481, 503, 508 and *n*, 512, 514, 517, 575.
—— —— of Pickerles, 74, 226, 228, 231, 233, 320.

Murray, sir William of Pitcairly, 50 and *n*, 153; letter from James VI. in favour of, 179.
—— —— provost of St. Andrews, 149.
—— col., 54, 56-59.
Musch, Corn., 401.
Mushet, Robert, 575.
Muys, Jacob, 37, 39.
Mylen, van der, 358.

NAMUR, siege of, 487.
Nannijnk. *See* Mammy.
Nassau, Justinus van, governor of Breda, letter from, to the council of state, 236.
Necke, van der, 120.
Nederhorst, van, 461.
Nering, Jacques, 278, 279.
Newton, Thomas, 14.
Niche or Nysche, Thomas, 58 and *n*, 59, 62, 63.
Nichols (Nikles), Francis, 490.
—— John, 217.
—— Thomas, 217.
Nicholson, Alex., 573.
—— David, 575.
—— sir John, of Tillicoultry, 319 *n*.
—— William, 573.
Nicolay, Jeremias, 492.
Niderey, Archibald, 450.
Niel, David, petition of, 441.
Nielvinck, capt., 38.
Nies, John, 453.
Nieuport, battle of, 32 and *n*.
Nieuwenhuysen, Peter, 452.
Nisbet (Nysbeth), Alex., 572.
—— Arthur, 226, 231, 233, 320.
—— Hugh, 31, 50 *n*, 59.
—— Jannekin, 320, 492.
—— John, 40, 50 *n*, 51, 70-73, 76, 226, 228, 231, 233, 320.
—— Margrieta, 226, 231, 233, 320.
—— William, 50 and *n*, 55-59, 74, 226, 228, 231, 233, 320; commission of, 76.
Nivile, John, 515.
Nobel, M., 361, 362, 365.
Noortwyck, van, 360, 366, 375, 381, 421.
Noot, van der, 33.
Norgate, Thomas, 512, 514.
Norris, colonel John, 17, 18 *n*, 19 *n*, 22, 96, 124, 126.
Nortes, Thomas, 329.
Northcote, William, 571.
Norwood, Raph, 490.
—— William, 498, 527.
—— lieut., 346, 349.
Nory, William, petition of, 244.
Noyelles, col., 38.
Nul, James, 452.
Nyeuport, secretary, 415.
Nysbeth. *See* Nisbet.

OATH taken by English and Scottish soldiers, 519, 525, 526, 531, 533, 534, 535 *n*.
Offeraal, François d', 568 and *n*.
Ogilvie (Ogewe), David, 453.
—— John, 451.
—— Patrick, 12, 14, 36, 38.
Ogle, Cornelius, 527.
—— sir John, 577.
—— Thomas, 241, 279, 321, 328, 347, 349, 489.
Oldenzeel, 310.
Oliphant, James, 14.
—— Laurence, lord, 14.
—— Pieter, 450.
—— capt., 51.
Omkrys, capt., 347.
Orange, prince of. *See* William.
Ordre, Pauwels, 455.
Orkney, earl of, 166, 168, 171, 211.
Ormiston, Andrew, xxxiv, 6, 7, 8 and *n*, 36.
Orrock, William, 70 *n*, 230 and *n*, 318, 319, 321, 323 and *n*, 529, 535.
Orsoy, 312.
Orteil, commissioner, 40; Dutch ambassador at London, 120, 121, 125, 126, 132.
Ossory, earl of, 475-477, 513, 515, 559.
Ostend, siege of, 32-33.
Otmarson, Michael, 66 and *n*.
Otterson, William, 455.
Oudenarde, siege of, 22.
Oudewater, 9.
Oxenford (Oxanfired), Thomas, 217.
Oxford, earl of, 345, 346, 489, 492.
—— François veer, 489.
Oye, Schimmelpenningh van der, 561.

PAFFENRODE, JACOB VAN, 441.
Pagniet, Judith de, 510 *n*.
Pakenham, Philip, 322, 444.
Palmer, capt., 36 *n*.
Palvesyn, James, 528.
Panerey, 530.
Pappenheim, general, 312, 408.
Parado, Andrea de, 316.
Paret, William, 450.
Parker, Gilbert, 451.
Parma, prince of, 15, 17-19, 21, 23-25, 27, 135.

Parsons, Wm., 512, 514.
Paterson, John, 569.
—— William, 451.
Paton, James, bishop of Dunkeld, 174.
Patrick, William, 312 *n*, 454.
Pats, Thomas, 455.
Patton, Arch., 573.
—— Aristotle, xxxv, 26 and *n*, 46 *n*, 47 and *n*, 96, 116 *n*, 118 *n*, 128.
—— Humphrey, 489, 491, 526.
—— Thomas, 217.
—— lieut., 347.
Paverman, Patrick, 452.
Pedralis, Jacobee, 47 *n*.
Pembroke, earl of, 411, 415, 417.
Penbrouck, Henry, 231.
—— Janneken, 231.
—— John, 231.
—— Richard, 231.
—— Thomas, 231.
—— Willemke, 231.
—— lieut., 75, 228, 231.
Penicuik, Margaret, 150.
Pentland, Diones, 6.
—— Jeremias, 493 *n*.
—— John, 36-38.
—— William, 319 *n*, 323 and *n*, 328, 331, 333, 490, 494, 495.
—— Wm. Jeremias, 333.
Penton. *See* Renton.
Peters, Matheus, 453.
—— Olivier, 455.
Peterson, Gerrit, 451.
Pewes, John, 451.
Peye, James, 490.
Philips, John, 527, 529.
—— William, 452.
Piccolomini, duke of Amalfi, 313.
Pierson, Robert, 513, 515.
Pitcairn, David, 253, 321 and *n*, 325; letter from, on the state of his company, 353.
Pithan, Frid., 298.
Plunket, Christoffel, 490, 498.
—— Maurice, 478 *n*, 505, 512 and *n*, 517 *n*, 518 *n*.
Pluoist, Thomas, 37.
Polman, Henrick, 455.
Pomerey, Henry, 329, 492.
Pommeren, count of, 143.
Portmore, lord. *See* Colyear, sir David.
Pottey, 321.
Powell, ensign, 347.
Prefase. *See* Trefuse.
Preston, David, of Preston, 14.
—— Edward, 14.
—— George, 572, 573.
—— John, of Fentonbarns, 134.
Preston, Richard, 16 *n*, 22 and *n*.
Prewde, sergt.-major, 346.
Price (Prys), Greffin, 36 *n*, 329, 491.
Princen, Anthony William, 460.
Pringill, Alexander, 217.
—— John, 454.
—— Thomas, 26 *n*.
Privy council of Scotland, letter from, 280.
Proclamation against the transport of loose women to Flanders, 22 *n*.
Prop, Janneken, 233, 320.
—— John, 25, 49 and *n*, 51, 54, 62, 74, 83, 104, 114, 227, 228, 233, 320.
—— Margrieta, 231.
—— Niclaes, 231.
—— Samuel, xiii, 321.
Prys. *See* Price.
Puchler, Eustace, 571.
—— Margaret, 516 *n*.
Pyl, John, 499, 501, 506 and *n*, 534.

RABENHAUT, general, 581.
Rade, Henry de Caumont, marquis de, 513, 515.
Raess, Jan Joost, 460.
Raleigh (Rally), captain, 26 *n*, 46, 50, 96.
Ralling, Mathias, 52, 174.
Ram, capt., 274.
Ramsay, David, xxix; letter from, to council of state, 208.
—— Gavin, 574.
—— George, 206, 207, 227 and *n*; letter from James VI. in recommendation of, 240.
—— —— of Carriden, xxxiv, 345, 346, 473 *n*, 481, 483, 487, 503, 505, 508 and *n*, 510 *n*, 511, 514, 517, 574.
—— James, 452, 505, 575.
—— John, 14 *n*, 478 *n*, 512 and *n*, 517 *n*, 518 *n*, 574, 575.
—— William, 575.
—— capt., 72 *n*, 283, 400, 404 and *n*, 405, 444.
Rattray, David, 455.
Ravensberg, Meynart van, 453.
Ray, Sandie, 451.
Raynsford, ensign, 347, 349.
Reay, lord, 479.
Recruiting in England and Scotland, 406-437.
Redhall, Midlothian, 49 *n*.
Reed, John, 452, 453, 490.
Reminger, Bartholomew, 276.
Rendu, Adrian, 340.
Renne, James, 454.
Renton or Penton, Andrew, 47 *n*, 50, 56-58, 227, 228, 233.

Renton, William, 46, 47 *n*, 152.
Revolution of 1688, 566-569.
Reynolds, John, 574.
Rheinberg, 312.
Rhind, Remb., 451.
Richardson, Marck, 528.
—— Thomas, 450.
—— (Kirgardhome), lieut., 347, 349.
Rid, Andries, 451.
Riddell, James, 455.
—— John, 328 and *n*, 330, 331, 490 *n*.
—— Thomas, 528, 535.
—— William, 328 and *n*, 331, 490, 495-497 *n*.
Ride, Robert, 569.
Riemsdyck, Floris van, 296, 297.
Rig, Maria, 74, 228, 231.
Rijswijck, Qerlich van, 535.
Risby, Paul, 498.
Ritsy, John, 455.
Robberts, John, 453, 490.
—— Robert, 453.
Robert, captain, 210.
Robertson, Alexander, 451.
—— David. *See* Colyear.
—— John, 454.
—— Matheu, 451.
—— Peter, 451.
—— Robert, 452.
—— Thomas, 5, 36, 37, 454.
Robertsons of Struan, 319 *n*.
Rochusz, Thomas, 53.
Rocoy, Robbert, 454.
Rodersort, James, 454.
Roeck, Robert de, 528.
Romerswall, 576.
Rondney, captain, 240.
Rongardt, Johan, 338.
Rookwood, 321.
Roon, Jan, 333.
Roper, John, 490, 494 and *n*, 497, 526, 529, 530-532.
Roseboom, M., 545, 565.
Rosendael, William, 23, 574.
Ross, rev. Hugh, 573, 574.
Rouke, Andrew, 217.
Roxburgh, earl of, 495.
Royer, 530.
Ruremonde, 312.
Russemburch, 4.
Rycke, John de, 450.
Rymenant, 16.
Ryssel, van der Cappelle te, 519.

Saers, Hen., 451.
St. Amand, Philip, 574.
St. Denis, battle of, 475 and *n*.
St. Leger, chevalier, 348.
St. Marie, captain, 9.
St. Omer, siege of, 475.
Sanckoelt, Rodoff van, 528.
Sanders, Pieter, 514.
Sanderson, Robert, 489, 499, 501, 526, 527, 530, 534.
—— Thomas, 527.
Sandilands, Frederick, 502 and *n*, 530.
—— Hendrick, 454.
—— James, of Calder, 6.
—— sir James, xxxiv, 229 and *n*, 308, 313, 314 *n*, 318, 319, 322, 331-333, 578.
—— William, 489 *n*, 492, 493, 496, 497 and *n*, 499, 500, 502, 526, 528, 532, 535, 573.
—— col., 447, 453.
Santen, councillor of state, 191.
Sas-van-Ghent, siege of, 316.
Sauvourny, Maurice de, 499, 501, 505 *n*.
Sauwl, Richard, 529.
Saxby, William, 512.
Saxony, elector of, 143.
Sayer, John, 489, 527, 530.
Schadij, George, 450.
Schaep, Wilhelm, 504, 510, 515 *n*, 516.
Schaffer, M., 361, 362, 375, 376, 403.
Schele, Carl Otto, 500-502.
Scheltinga, M. van, 561.
Schenck, col., 26 *n*.
—— fort, 312.
Schiel, Georg, 452.
Scholt, Thomas, 453.
Schoock, Elias, 519, 520, 529.
Schoonhoven, 9.
—— Willem van, 530, 535.
Schot. *See* Scott.
Schottenberg, 33, 34.
Schraeffer, Nicolaes, 501 and *n*, 503 *n*, 506.
Schuurman, A. van, 561.
Schyn. *See* Cheyne.
Scott, Alex., 573.
—— Andries, 452.
—— Gebert, 455.
—— George, 451.
—— James, 282, 318 *n*, 330, 333, 455, 489, 495.
—— Jean, 266 *n*.
—— John, 453.
—— sir John, of Ancrum, 325 *n*.
—— Robert, 42, 64 and *n*, 65 and *n*, 69, 72, 74, 226, 227, 230 and *n*, 236, 298, 318, 319 *n*, 322; petition of, 291.
—— Roelant, 455.
—— Walter, of Balweary, xxxiv, 318 *n*, 325 and *n*, 329, 333, 358 *n*, 453,

467, 473 *n*, 491-493, 497, 499-502, 526, 535.
Scott, sir Walter. *See* Buccleuch, earl of.
—— William, 318 and *n*, 319 *n*, 322, 332, 453.
—— —— of Burnhead, 65 *n*.
—— col., 581, 582.
Scroophour, Emanuel, 513, 515.
Seaforth, earl of, 485.
Sebender, Spierings heer van, 535.
Sednytsky, Hester, 70 *n*, 352; petition of, 448, 449, 457, 458.
Segers, van Oerken, 296.
Segerssoon, Egbert, 278.
Selby, Ralph, 64 *n*, 65 and *n*, 66, 68, 71, 187, 197; letter from James VI. on behalf of, 186.
Semmes, Sam, 217.
Semple, lord, 162.
—— Giles, 22 *n*.
—— John, 319 and *n*, 325 *n*, 331.
—— William, 23, 26 *n*, 117 *n*.
Seneff, battle of, 474.
Serooskercke, Flores, 295.
Seton, lord, 158, 161, 162, 171.
—— Crystoffel, 217.
—— Gilbert, 450.
—— Henry, 20 and *n*.
—— sir Henry, xxvii.
—— J., 72 and *n*, 73.
—— James, petition of, 286, 287.
—— sir John, 63 *n*.
—— col., 22.
—— lieut., 24.
—— 75, 227, 229, 231, 322, 333.
Seunrel, James, 451.
Severijns, Gabriel, 336.
Shairp, John, of Houston, 118 *n*.
—— —— advocate, 134.
—— William, 569.
Shaw (Scha), John, 452.
Ships for the expedition of 1688, 566.
Shortes, John, 329 and *n*, 330, 333, 498.
Shuborough, lieut., 347, 349.
Sibsporpe, lieut., 349.
Sidenski. *See* Sednytsky.
Sidney, Henry, 476.
—— Robert, 492.
—— col., 527, 529, 530.
Sikes, Bolfsy, 515.
Sim, Sander, 454.
Simson, John, 451.
—— William, 455.
Sinclair, lord, 162.
—— Daniel, 451.
—— Laurence, 64 *n*, 66 *n*; recommendation of, 194.
—— William, 61 and *n*, 62, 63.
—— captain, 33 and *n*, 59 and *n*.
Skelton (Schelton), John, 512, 536.
Skene, Alex., 574.
—— John, 132-134, 136, 137, 155, 166.
Slator, John, 514.
—— Salomon, 512.
Sloet, M., 461.
Smechelman, Thomas, 452.
Smeth, Mans, 454.
Smith, Daniel, 455.
—— John, 452.
—— Richard, 451.
—— capt., 39, 576.
—— col., 41.
—— lieut., 346.
Smonsie, Edward, 451.
Snaeskerke, 30.
Soeste, Thomas van, 453.
Solms, count of, 461, 486.
Sommerville, John, 481, 504-506 and *n*, 511 *n*, 512 *n*, 515, 518 and *n*, 575.
Somstrom, Daniel, 573.
Sondts, Thomas, 492.
Sonoy, count Diedrich, 50 *n*, 76.
Spacker, William, 452.
Spalding, David, 14.
Spence, John, 65-67, 187, 195.
Spencer, Ri., 241, 242.
Spiedeman, Patrick, 452.
Spinola, marquis, 222, 308-310.
Splitkoff, Susana, 60 *n*, 75, 227.
Spret, James, 453.
Sprey, Edward, 527.
Sproet, Wouter, 452.
Sproussen, 536.
Spruyt, Andries, 344.
Sprye, captain, 346, 349.
Spycken, Chr. ter, 355.
Spynie, laird of, 118 *n*.
Staes, Alexander, 453.
Standish, lieut., 347, 349.
Stanley, James, 513, 515.
Stansius, Mr., 561.
Stanton, Francis, 492.
Steenbergen, 309.
Steenhuysen, Max, 530.
Steinkirk, battle of, 486.
Stevens, James, 491.
—— Josias, 329.
Stevenson, George, 452.
—— John, 571.
Stewart. *See* Stuart.
Stimson, Alexander, 452.
Stirling, Thomas, xxvii.
—— sir William, of Ardoch, xxvii.
Stobhil, Andrew, 217.
Stockdyck, Hendrik, 217.
Stone, capt., 582.
Storcke, William, 455.

Story, David, 455.
Strachan, Johanna, petition of, 533.
—— John, 14, 31, 55 and *n*, 56, 57, 59, 72, 227, 233.
Straelen, Drossaert, 274.
Straffen, James, 452.
Stralen, 312.
Strath, John, 454.
Strathearn, earl of, 418.
Strathnaver, lord, xii, xxxv, 488.
Stretton, Alexander, 569.
Stuart, Alexander, 210, 511 and *n*, 514, 573.
—— Andrew, 21 *n*, 146, 455.
—— Anne, 320 *n*.
—— Arthur, 31, 56 and *n*, 57, 59, 72, 75, 229.
—— Charles William, xxxv.
—— Cornelis, 503, 504 *n*, 507 and *n*, 528.
—— David, 243.
—— Edward, 328, 489.
—— Frederick, 118 *n*.
—— George, lord d'Aubigny, recommendation of, by Charles I., 443 and *n*.
—— J., xxxv.
—— James, xxvii, 21, 117 *n*, 146, 299.
—— John, 218.
—— Margaret, 74, 226.
—— Patrick, 314 *n*, 334, 445, 454, 492 and *n*, 493 and *n*, 495.
—— Peter, xiii, 187, 188, 211.
—— Philip, 320 *n*.
—— Robert, xxviii, 185.
—— Thomas, 454.
—— sir William, of Houston, xxxv, 16 and *n*, 17, 21, 38-41, 46 and *n*, 115, 142, 165, 175 and *n*, 211; claims and embassies of, 115 *n*-154.
—— William, 208, 323 *n*.
—— serjt.-major, 400.
Styrom, count of, 461.
Suderman, Wm., 75, 228, 231.
Sussex, earl of, 164, 165, 168.
Sutherland, Hugh, 571, 572.
Swaen, 530.
Swany, William, 490.
Swartsluyce, 582.
Swavbridge, duke, 578.
Swynborn, Ant., 574.
Sygers, Barent, 501 *n*, 503 and *n*, 504 *n*.

TAFFIN, J., 38.
Talmash, col., 473 *n*.
—— Thomas, 514.
Teeck, James, 455.
Temont, François, 174.
Temple, Roger, 347, 349, 490.
Tendel, Davit, 451.
Tenger, Robert Malice, 451.
Tenning, William, 452.
Tenston, Sanders, 451.
Tenuys, Wichard, 451.
Ter, Henry, 452.
Terlandt, Alexander, 451.
Terra Nova, 488.
Teuper, James, 451.
Teuwen, Robert, 451.
Thaylor, Willem, 512, 514.
Thencas, Philip, 451.
Theusten, Themos, 451.
Thielburgh, Johan van, 260, 265.
Thomas, Hendrick, 454.
—— Pieter, 450.
Thomson, James, 454.
—— John, 450, 452.
—— capt., 21 *n*, 47.
Throgmorton, Herbert, 321, 329, 490.
—— William, 490.
Toledo, Ferdinando de, 17.
Tolloch. *See* Tulloch.
Tolmach, Thomas, 514. *See* Talmash.
Toulemonde, Bartholomaus, 534.
Tournay, siege of, 22.
Touw, Frans, 403.
Traill, Andrew, 14.
—— David, 37, 49 and *n*, 51, 83 *n*, 101, 151, 152, 174.
Trefuse (Prefase), lieut., 346, 349.
Tremmelle, Alexander, 451.
—— George, 452.
—— Gewin, 453.
Trete, William, 489.
Trettray, Dadat, 454.
Treuwe, Jan, 454.
Tronand, Jan, 174.
Trottar, capt., 47.
Tubbe, capt., 346.
Tullibardine, marquis of, xxxv, 166.
Tulloch, Alesser, 450.
Turck, Johanna, 353, 356.

UCHTENBROOK, col., 33.
Udny, Oliver, 72 and *n*, 74, 226.
Ulrighson, Ulrigh, 511.
Urie of Pitfichie, 443 *n*.
—— William, 443 and *n*, 451.
Urquhart, Elizabeth, 509 *n*.
Utenhove, Antonius, 339.
Utrecht, union of, 18.
Uttison, capt., 400.
Uttwegen, Ph. van Maumaker en, 569.

VALCKE, JACOB, 120; report of his embassy to Scotland, 154 and *n*, 174, 176 *n*.

Valckenhaen, Erasmus van, 499.
Valckesteyn, Franchoys, 36, 37.
Vane, Patrick, 527, 528, 530.
—— Walter, 470 *n*, 489, 491.
Vaudemont, prince of, 487.
Venlo, 312.
Verbaas. *See* Forbes.
Vere, sir Francis, 33.
—— H., 241.
—— Horace, 30.
—— col., 381.
—— general, 188, 189, 192, 444.
Vianen, 10.
Viersel, chateau de, 23.
Vijgh, Adriaen, 440.
Villegas, col., xxxv.
Viloorden, 21.
Viner, Thomas, 491.
Viry, Anthony, 453.
Vits, John, 455.
Voecht, Aert de, 344.
—— Leonard van der, 120, 126, 132, 144; report of, rel. to col. Stuart, 121; report of, on his embassy to James VI., 132.
Volkerse, Gerard, 504.
Voorst, Younker H. van, 529.
Vosberg, M., 360.
Vosbergen, Mr., 418, 419, 421, 429, 430.
Vriese, Thiman, letter from, to the council of state on captain Erskine's creditors, 276.

WABBE, W., 273, 274.
Wach or Wachem, John, 451, 454.
Waddell, Archibald, 233.
—— John, 233, 320, 321; his action against the countess of Megen, 357.
—— Robert, 28, 54 *n*, 455.
—— William, 49 and *n*, 51, 54 and *n*, 56-58, 62, 101, 104, 114, 233, 320; commission of, 82.
—— capt., 74, 226, 228.
Wales, James, 455.
—— Thomas, 12.
Walgraff, Robert, 455.
Wallis, Robert, 453.
—— William, 454.
Walraven, lord of Brederode, report of his embassy to Scotland, 154 and *n*-174, 176 *n*.
Wals, John, 455.
Walsdorf, Gertrude, 319 *n*; petition of, 459.
Walsingham, lord, 122-124, 126.
—— Thomas, 513, 514.
Walson, John, 454.
Walta, M., 361, 362.
Walter, Walter, 528.
Warck, Jan van de, 132, 144; report of, on his embassy to James VI., 132.
Warnaer, Robert, 498.
Warren, lieut., 349.
Warwel, John, 515.
Wassenaar, 21.
Wassy, Philip, 492.
Waterson, George, 451.
Watkins, John, 490, 511.
—— Peter, 479, 494, 499-502, 509, 516, 526, 528-530, 534, 570.
—— lieut., 347, 349.
Watson, Arsbalt, 454.
—— John, 300.
Watt, James, 452, 455.
Wauchope, James, 509 and *n*.
—— John, xxxiv, 473 *n*, 478 and *n*, 481, 503-505, 507, 508 *n*, 509, 511, 513, 517 and *n*, 567 and *n*.
—— Robbert, 454.
—— William, 508 and *n*.
—— capt., 581, 582.
Wayle, Eldert van, 453.
Wedderburn, David, 573.
Weede, Cornelia van, 377.
—— Everard van, 537, 541, 567.
—— Wilhelmina van, 377.
Weir, John, 453, 528, 535.
Welderen, Willem van, 501.
Welreen, Thomas, 455.
Wemyss, earl of, 138.
—— Cornelius, 60 *n*.
—— James, of Caskieberran, 60 *n*.
Wesley, Patrick, 503 and *n*, 509.
Westmeyer, Herman, 248.
Weston, K., 417.
Westwatter, Robert, 450.
White, William, 569.
Widdrington, capt., 582.
Wight, capt., 65 *n*; petition on behalf of, 455.
Wiijt, Andries, 452.
Wijfferinge, Albert, 439.
Wilberichhoff, heer van, 534.
Willemsen, Jan, 217.
William I., prince of Orange, 3, 4, 5, 11, 18, 19, 22, 24.
—— II., prince of Orange, 309, 466.
—— III., prince of Orange, 469, 470 and *n*, 474, 475, 478, 537, 566.
—— Henry, of Orange, xxii.
—— Lewis, of Nassau, 77, 78.
—— count, of Nassau, 27, 313.
Williams, Archibald, 338.
Williamson, James, 312 *n*, 328 *n*, 330 and *n*.
—— capt., 579, 580.

Willoughbie, William, 346, 349, 498.
Wilmstadt, petition from the municipality of, on behalf of William Nory, 244.
Wilsep, Michiel, 451.
Wilson, Andro, 450.
—— Edward, 512.
—— Eewwe, 454.
—— John, 571.
Winde. *See* Wynne.
Windebanck (Windebaugh), sir Francis, 449.
Windgom, David, 504.
Winwood, Ralph, 191, 235, 241, 242, 250, 251, 257, 258, 260, 266; letter from, on behalf of the earl of Buccleuch, 188.
Wishart (Witsert), Adam, 454.
—— Alex., xii, 48 and *n*, 69 *n*, 150, 151, 166, 167, 221, 226, 231-233, 253, 270-272, 276-278, 528; commission of, 81.
Wisser, Joris, 455.
Withipol, Henry, 491.
Witsen, N., 567.
Witt, John de, xxix; letters from, rel. to capt. Gordon, 236, 239.
Wodney. *See* Udny.
Wolfsaert, Lenaert, 454.
Wolthelt, Edward, 491.
Wood, James, xxxv, 452.
—— Thomas, 329, 491.
Woodfield (Woedfild), Godefroy, 498.
Woth, John, 452.
Wotton, lord, 262.
Wrayt, Jck Wil., 217.
Wright, John, 455.
—— Richard, 450.
Wrohy, P., 504 *n*.
Wrrie. *See* Urie.
Würtemberg, count of, 143.
Wylde, Anthony, 493 and *n*, 499, 501, 505 *n*, 526, 528, 530, 534.
—— Henry, 492 and *n*.
Wymerbeeck, Thomas, 214.
Wynne, Henry, 329, 489, 491.
Wytheral, Henry, 490.

YERHORST, capt., 274.
Yongston, Thomas, 454.
Yorke, Rowland, 24.
—— captain, 346, 349.
Yorstoun, William, 37 *n*.
Young, John, letter from James VI. in recommendation of, 240.
—— Margaretha Egger de, 492.
—— Robert, 454, 574.
Younger, Edward, 329, 491, 498.
Yuil, William, 573.

ZIERICKZEE, 10, 576.
Zulyaert, Thomas, 513.
Zwolle, magistrates of, petition to the council of state, 204; letter from the magistrates on Erskine's cavalry company, 215-217.

Printed by T. and A. CONSTABLE, Printers to Her Majesty
at the Edinburgh University Press

Scottish History Society.

THE EXECUTIVE.

President.

The Earl of Rosebery, K.G., K.T., LL.D.

Chairman of Council.

David Masson, LL.D., Historiographer Royal for Scotland.

Council.

Rev. John Hutchison, D.D.
D. Hay Fleming, LL.D.
Right Rev. John Dowden, D.D., Bishop of Edinburgh.
J. Maitland Thomson, Advocate, Keeper of the Historical Department, H.M. Register House.
W. K. Dickson, Advocate.
David Patrick, LL.D.
Sir Arthur Mitchell, K.C.B., M.D., LL.D.
Æneas J. G. Mackay, Q.C., LL.D., Sheriff of Fife and Kinross.
Sir John Cowan, Bart.
J. Balfour Paul, Lyon King of Arms.
G. W. Prothero, Litt. D., Professor of History in the University of Edinburgh.
P. Hume Brown, M.A., LL.D.

Corresponding Members of the Council.

C. H. Firth, Oxford; Samuel Rawson Gardiner, D.C.L., LL.D.; Rev. W. D. Macray, Oxford; Rev. Professor A. F. Mitchell, D.D., St. Andrews.

Hon. Treasurer.

J. T. Clark, Keeper of the Advocates' Library.

Hon. Secretary.

T. G. Law, LL.D., Librarian, Signet Library.

RULES

1. The object of the Society is the discovery and printing, under selected editorship, of unpublished documents illustrative of the civil, religious, and social history of Scotland. The Society will also undertake, in exceptional cases, to issue translations of printed works of a similar nature, which have not hitherto been accessible in English.

2. The number of Members of the Society shall be limited to 400.

3. The affairs of the Society shall be managed by a Council, consisting of a Chairman, Treasurer, Secretary, and twelve elected Members, five to make a quorum. Three of the twelve elected Members shall retire annually by ballot, but they shall be eligible for re-election.

4. The Annual Subscription to the Society shall be One Guinea. The publications of the Society shall not be delivered to any Member whose Subscription is in arrear, and no Member shall be permitted to receive more than one copy of the Society's publications.

5. The Society will undertake the issue of its own publications, *i.e.* without the intervention of a publisher or any other paid agent.

6. The Society will issue yearly two octavo volumes of about 320 pages each.

7. An Annual General Meeting of the Society shall be held at the end of October, or at an approximate date to be determined by the Council.

8. Two stated Meetings of the Council shall be held each year, one on the last Tuesday of May, the other on the Tuesday preceding the day upon which the Annual General Meeting shall be held. The Secretary, on the request of three Members of the Council, shall call a special meeting of the Council.

9. Editors shall receive 20 copies of each volume they edit for the Society.

10. The owners of Manuscripts published by the Society will also be presented with a certain number of copies.

11. The Annual Balance-Sheet, Rules, and List of Members shall be printed.

12. No alteration shall be made in these Rules except at a General Meeting of the Society. A fortnight's notice of any alteration to be proposed shall be given to the Members of the Council.

PUBLICATIONS

OF THE

SCOTTISH HISTORY SOCIETY

For the year 1886-1887.

1. Bishop Pococke's Tours in Scotland, 1747-1760. Edited by D. W. Kemp. (Oct. 1887.)

2. Diary of and General Expenditure Book of William Cunningham of Craigends, 1673-1680. Edited by the Rev. James Dodds, D.D. (Oct. 1887.)

For the year 1887-1888.

3. Panurgi Philo-caballi Scoti Grameidos libri sex. — The Grameid: an heroic poem descriptive of the Campaign of Viscount Dundee in 1689, by James Philip of Almerieclose. Translated and Edited by the Rev. A. D. Murdoch. (Oct. 1888.)

4. The Register of the Kirk-Session of St. Andrews. Part i. 1559-1582. Edited by D. Hay Fleming. (Feb. 1889.)

For the year 1888-1889.

5. Diary of the Rev. John Mill, Minister of Dunrossness, Sandwick, and Cunningsburgh, in Shetland, 1740-1803. Edited by Gilbert Goudie, F.S.A. Scot. (June 1889.)

6. Narrative of Mr. James Nimmo, a Covenanter, 1654-1709. Edited by W. G. Scott-Moncrieff, Advocate. (June 1889.)

7. The Register of the Kirk-Session of St. Andrews. Part ii. 1583-1600. Edited by D. Hay Fleming. (Aug. 1890.)

For the year 1889-1890.

8. A List of Persons concerned in the Rebellion (1745). With a Preface by the Earl of Rosebery and Annotations by the Rev. Walter Macleod. (Sept. 1890.)

Presented to the Society by the Earl of Rosebery.

9. Glamis Papers: The 'Book of Record,' a Diary written by Patrick, first Earl of Strathmore, and other documents relating to Glamis Castle (1684-89). Edited by A. H. Millar, F.S.A. Scot. (Sept. 1890.)

10. John Major's History of Greater Britain (1521). Translated and edited by Archibald Constable, with a Life of the author by Æneas J. G. Mackay, Advocate. (Feb. 1892.)

For the year 1890-1891.

11. The Records of the Commissions of the General Assemblies, 1646-47. Edited by the Rev. Professor Mitchell, D.D., and the Rev. James Christie, D.D., with an Introduction by the former. (May 1892.)

12. Court-Book of the Barony of Urie, 1604-1747. Edited by the Rev. D. G. Barron, from a ms. in possession of Mr. R. Barclay of Dorking. (Oct. 1892.)

For the year 1891-1892.

13. Memoirs of the Life of Sir John Clerk of Penicuik, Baronet, Baron of the Exchequer, Commissioner of the Union, etc. Extracted by himself from his own Journals, 1676-1755. Edited from the original ms. in Penicuik House by John M. Gray, F.S.A. Scot. (Dec. 1892.)

14. Diary of Col. the Hon. John Erskine of Carnock, 1683-1687. From a ms. in possession of Henry David Erskine, Esq., of Cardross. Edited by the Rev. Walter Macleod. (Dec. 1893.)

For the year 1892-1893.

15. Miscellany of the Scottish History Society, First Volume—
The Library of James vi., 1573-83.
Edited by G. F. Warner.
Documents illustrating Catholic Policy, 1596-98.
T. G. Law.
Letters of Sir Thomas Hope, 1627-46. Rev. R. Paul.
Civil War Papers, 1643-50. H. F. Morland Simpson.
Lauderdale Correspondence, 1660-77.
Right Rev. John Dowden, D.D.
Turnbull's Diary, 1657-1704. Rev. R. Paul.
Masterton Papers, 1660-1719. V. A. Noël Paton.
Accompt of Expenses in Edinburgh, 1715. A. H. Millar.
Rebellion Papers, 1715 and 1745. H. Paton.
(Dec. 1893.)

16. Account Book of Sir John Foulis of Ravelston (1671-1707). Edited by the Rev. A. W. Cornelius Hallen. (June 1894.)

For the year 1893-1894.

17. Letters and Papers illustrating the Relations between Charles ii. and Scotland in 1650. Edited, with Notes and Introduction, by Samuel Rawson Gardiner, LL.D., etc.
(July 1894.)

18. Scotland and the Commonwealth. Letters and Papers relating to the Military Government of Scotland, Aug. 1651—Dec. 1653. Edited, with Introduction and Notes, by C. H. Firth, M.A. (Oct. 1895.)

For the year 1894-1895.

19. The Jacobite Attempt of 1719. Letters of James, second Duke of Ormonde, relating to Cardinal Alberoni's project for the Invasion of Great Britain. Edited by W. K. Dickson, Advocate. (Dec. 1895.)

20, 21. The Lyon in Mourning, or a Collection of Speeches, Letters, Journals, etc., relative to the Affairs of Prince Charles Edward Stuart, by the Rev. Robert Forbes, A.M., Bishop of Ross and Caithness. 1746-1775. Edited from his Manuscript by Henry Paton, M.A. Vols. i. and ii.
(Oct. 1895.)

For the year 1895-1896.

22. The Lyon in Mourning. Vol. iii. (Oct. 1896.)

23. Supplement to the Lyon in Mourning.—Itinerary of Prince Charles Edward. With a Map. Compiled by W. B. Blaikie. (April 1897.)

24. Extracts from the Presbytery Records of Inverness and Dingwall from 1638 to 1688. Edited by William Mackay. (Oct. 1896.)

25. Records of the Commissions of the General Assemblies (*continued*) for the years 1648 and 1649. Edited by the Rev. Professor Mitchell, D.D., and Rev. James Christie, D.D. (Dec. 1896.)

For the year 1896-1897.

26. Wariston's Diary and other Papers—
Johnston of Wariston's Diary, 1639. Edited by G. M. Paul.
The Honours of Scotland, 1651-52. C. R. A. Howden.
The Earl of Mar's Legacies, 1722, 1726. Hon. S. Erskine.
Letters by Mrs. Grant of Laggan. J. R. N. Macphail.
(Dec. 1896.)
Presented to the Society by Messrs. T. and A. Constable.

27. Memorials of John Murray of Broughton, sometime Secretary to Prince Charles Edward, 1740-1747. Edited by R. Fitzroy Bell, Advocate. (May 1898.)

28. The Compt Buik of David Wedderburne, Merchant of Dundee, 1587-1630. With the Shipping Lists of the Port of Dundee, 1580-1618. Edited by A. H. Millar. (May 1898.)

For the year 1897-1898.

29. The Diplomatic Correspondence of Jean de Montereul and the brothers De Bellièvre, French Ambassadors in England and Scotland, 1645-1648. Edited, with Translation and Notes, by J. G. Fotheringham. Vol. i. (June 1898.)

30. The Same. Vol. ii. (Jan. 1899.)

For the year 1898-1899.

31. Scotland and the Protectorate. Letters and Papers relating to the Military Government of Scotland, from January 1654 to June 1659. Edited by C. H. Firth, M.A. (March 1899.)

32. Papers illustrating the History of the Scots Brigade in the Service of the United Netherlands, 1572-1782. Extracted from the Government Archives at The Hague, and edited by James Ferguson. Vol. i. 1572-1697. (Jan. 1899.)

In preparation.

Papers on the Scots Brigade. Vols. ii. and iii.

Papal Missions to Mary Queen of Scots. Documents chiefly from the Vatican Archives. Edited by the Rev. J. Hungerford Pollen, S.J.

Macfarlane's Genealogical Collections in the Advocates' Library. Edited by J. T. Clark, Keeper of the Library.

Macfarlane's Topographical Collections.

Journal of a Foreign Tour in 1665 and 1666 by John Lauder, Lord Fountainhall. Edited by Donald Crawford, Sheriff of Aberdeenshire.

The Diary of Andrew Hay of Stone, near Biggar, afterwards of Craignethan Castle, 1659-60. Edited by A. G. Reid from a manuscript in his possession.

A Translation of the Statuta Ecclesiæ Scoticanæ, 1225-1556, by David Patrick, LL.D.

Sir Thomas Craig's De Unione Regnorum Britanniæ. Edited, with an English Translation, by David Masson, LL.D., Historiographer Royal.

Records of the Commissions of the General Assemblies (*continued*), for the years 1650-53.

Register of the Consultations of the Ministers of Edinburgh, and some other Brethren of the Ministry from divers parts of the land, meeting from time to time, since the interruption of the Assembly 1653, with other Papers of public concernment, 1653-1660.

Papers relating to the Rebellions of 1715 and 1745, with other documents from the Municipal Archives of the City of Perth.

A Selection of the Forfeited Estates Papers preserved in H.M. General Register House and elsewhere. Edited by A. H. Millar.

A Translation of the Historia Abbatum de Kynlos of Ferrerius. By Archibald Constable, LL.D.

Documents relating to the Affairs of the Roman Catholic Party in Scotland, from the year of the Armada to the Union of the Crowns. Edited by Thomas Graves Law, LL.D.

The Loyall Dissuasive. Memorial to the Laird of Cluny in Badenoch. Written in 1703, by Sir Æneas Macpherson. Edited by the Rev. A. D. Murdoch.